# The School Year

***A divine path of 180 steps***

**By**

**Richard L. Rose**

Even a red worm loves the story of how he made the world.

Everyone loves his own story.

## *Preface*

This book began as a personal inventory. Chronology and genealogy were part of it, but also poetry, fiction, science, history, speculation, and meditation. A mélange resulted. The organizing principle is to guide meditation by often shifting frame of reference. Interruptions by the change of voice, period, genre, subject and even punctuation are offered as meditative assists to de-center attention, needed because one easily centers in the usual place, as the marble in my singing bowl whirls around and always comes to rest on the bottom. As living, learning, thinking beings, our center is in the balanced, dynamic whirl, not the static resting place. The calm in this center is open to continual frame-shifts. As artful beings, we continually work on ourselves. May you also "turn, turn, till you come down right."

R.R. 2/13/2015

To Bill and Rob

***Cast your own lines.***

*and to Kathleen, for putting up with my writing*

## Foreword

With unaided eye
Mary Warden waking
on Sunday morning
saw her foot
black, numb, and channeled
by working maggots
whose gnawing heads
turned side to side.

So making anything
must be, not seem to be.
So an actor prepares.
So, unaided, you
escort yourself offstage,
leaving all you made
to be consumed.

But first, how about
I play you a little number--
maybe "Country Gardens,"
after Percy Grainger,
or "Humoreske"?

Like a shallow bowl
I am easily filled
by doping out a part.

I slip in and out of parts
and dart about in time
like silverfish-transects
through Gibbon, the Great War,
or Wobblies marching in Paterson--

the giant "lying on his right side,"
"the waters filling his dreams."
I dowse dreams out.
As easily as that, I flit
from binding to binding,
slip in and out of texts
and roles, swallow time.
Such is my instrumentation.
Do not pass me benzo saying,
"Yes, Your Craziness."

The divining instrument that I am
I became in Fairall long ago.
The story's in *Frameshifts*—
six operas and six little books.

Now shifting frames
with unaided eyes,
I divine another path,
and play you a different number.

**Here is no final comprehension. One does not comprehend more than a sample of experience. Here find only what adjoined a life—no more.**

**What is here is the walk.**

**What is there but the walk?**

# *CONTENTS*


**1. The Whitekill Sector** **pages 6-60**

*The first 80 steps on the path*

**2. One Hundred Transects** **pages 61-end**


**What is the walk but the divine path—the continual prayer, which is sustained attention and creative engagement, personal and collaborative, leading to a cognitive procession from fatalism to willful action, from ignorance to understanding, from grasping to acceptance, from waste to salvage, from fear to hope, from opportunism to compassion, from exclusion to inclusion, and from partial work to whole-hearted soul work? This procession began more than ten thousand generations ago. Work on yourself. *Walk the path.***

—Adapted from the sermon of Avery Crawley in the second volume of *Frameshifts, page 38.*

**Each belongs here or anywhere just as much as the welloff . . . . just as much as you,**

**Each has his or her place in the procession.**

**All is a procession.**

**The universe is a procession with measured and beautiful motion.**

**Do you know so much that you call the slave or the dullfaced ignorant?**

**Do you suppose you have a right to a good sight . . . and he or she has no right to a sight?**

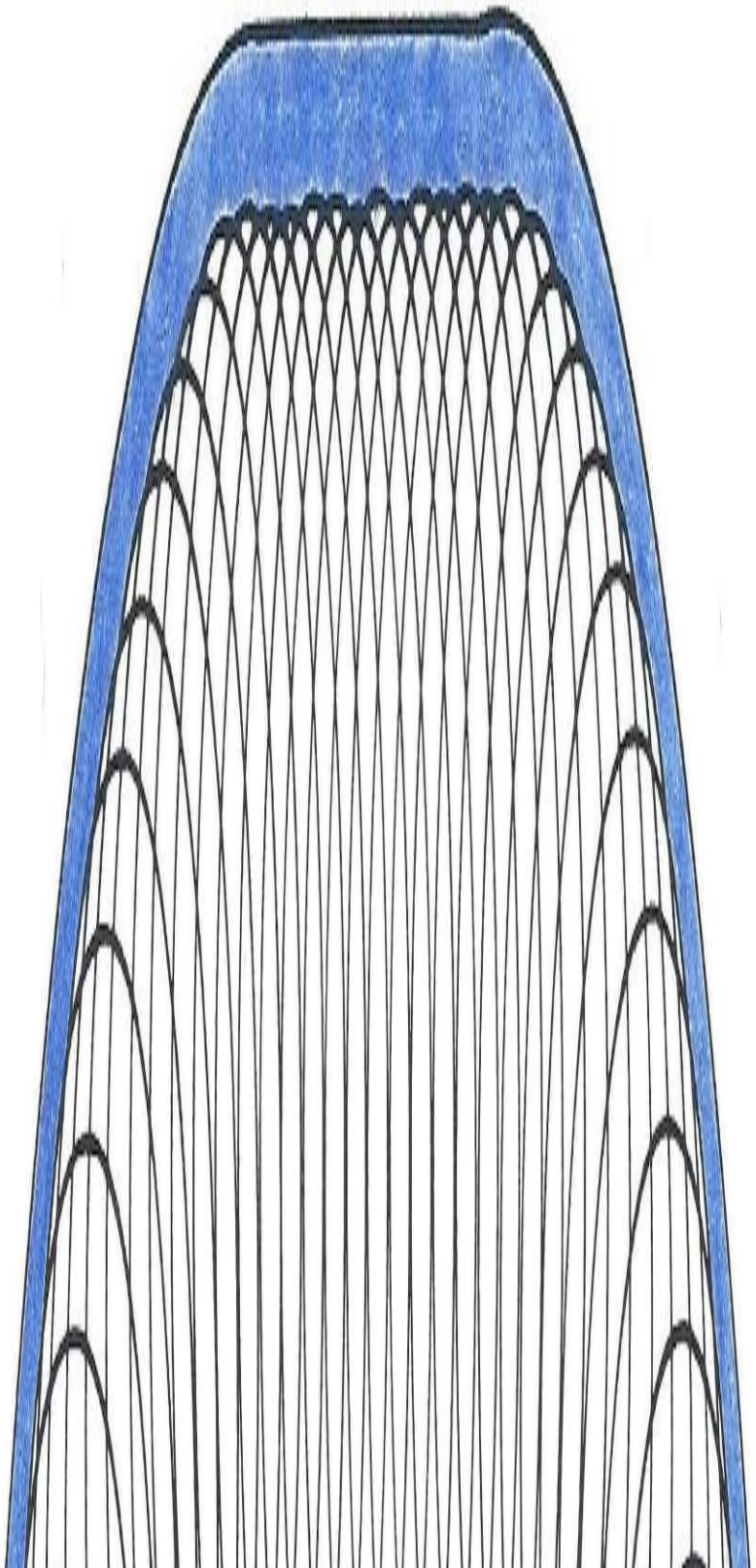
**Do you think matter has cohered together from its diffused float, and the soil is on the surface and water runs and vegetation sprouts for you . . . and not for him and her?**

—Walt Whitman, *I Sing the Body Electric*

# THE WHITEKILL SECTOR

## Step 1

The schools where I learned and taught had a year of 180 days. Perhaps the walk around the curriculum was intended not to complete a circle but to turn us about-face. Or perhaps the straight line represented by 180 degrees set us on an uphill escape path, vector, or projection going only one way—the beginning and ending only approximations; the journey a surrender.



## Step 2

Not that I avoid humans as the measure, but beyond certain limits, the human unit is irrelevant. Dropped below or outside our matters of metabolism and the antics of particles, perhaps ongoing conversations continue between nonhuman and non-terrestrial agents of varied experience and potential. Gathering such conversations would be like sieving all the nations' phone signals through intersecting lattices which sort them into three pictures—a battlefield, a forest, and an embrace.

Translators have a better time of it. Even without words to match a foreign idiom, a translator can find a phrase or even a paragraph to show the reader something recognizable, but gathering these so-called conversations, where there are none, between agents who do not exist, cannot be translation but only approximation. Like the three pictures derived from a trillion phone signals, it renders blurred details portraying an immense range of energetic intensities as a story—rather in the way our brains map chaos for us into breakfast on a bright September morning in Santa Fe, the slats of sunlight arriving through blinds in shimmering grackle-greens and turquoise blues at angles more and more acute until the dawn fracas of birds is stilled, the room suffused with color, and the woman has poured two more cups of tea.

**Spared**

Metered by heart-beat, rise
and fall of chest, the plod
of pondering, while elsewhere
in this tea or hand
lifting the cup, or sky
all is scintillas perishing,
I only see the dawn.

**Step 3**

*First Approximation:*
***A conversation in Santa Fe***

*She:* “So, given prior knowledge of this world and choice, would we decide to live?”

*He:* “Yes, that’s how to put it. Set aside the obvious issues about the identities or circumstances of those involved.”

*She:* “An unforgiving assumption.”

*He:* “But you will grant it?”

*She:* “Reserving the right to revisit your premises. But you can only wear me down so far.”

*He:* “You seem to think I know where this is going.”

*She:* “Too late to back out.”

*He:* “Okay. Imagine two agents—beyond our experience. The closest we can come to understand them is to say that they converse.”

*She:* “Of course, they don’t.”

*He:* “True. But here is what they say. The Elder says to the Novice, ‘You must decide whether to come into being.’”

*She:* “But if they’re having this conversation they must already exist.”

*He:* “Let’s not assume that existence matters within all frames of reference. The existent/nonexistent break-out may not be as conclusive as we believe. Think about last night’s dinner. What exists about it now?”

*She:* “Well, whatever’s left in us—including the memory of it, I hope.”

*He:* “So maybe the thought of it is a third category?”

*She:* “Ideas, you mean? That notion is threadbare.”

*He:* “Not ideas so much as a category of correspondences between things—“

*She:* “Discoverable relationships, you mean—Golden Means, Fibonacci series, and so on.”

*He:* “And if there’s such a category, maybe there are others.”

*She:* “It seems that I must accept another assumption.”

*He:* “No, the same. There are no beings or conversation, but we must think of it as if there were. After all, words themselves are nothing like what we *mean* by them, but we use them because—”

*She:* “Because they’re handier than gestures or smoke signals.”

*He:* “Exactly. So, if I may?”

*She:* “Go on.”

*He:* “The Novice says, ‘Tell me about being so that I can reach a decision.’ The Elder says, ‘It’s not easy to describe something without comparing it to something you know about, but I offer you the sense of it in a special kind of speaking:

***Widespread, suddenly***
***you will be intimate***
***suddenly edges appear—***
***intricate, infolded,***
***each fold new contacts, new***
***ensembles, new***
***reaches, new***
***captures of the widespread***

***you were***
***once, when narrow.***

***Then you are the flow***
***flooding the narrows***
***spreading over***
***the widespread. You reach***
***for everything***
***in anything.***

***Formless, fused here***
***as granite, here***
***as carapace, here***
***as fingers***
***reaching for everything***
***in anything, here***
***widespread yourself,***
***a wispy film***
***exhaled by stars, both***
***threading off***
***like steaming comet tails***
***and tied off***
***as a loom tells stories***
***that fade, fray;***
***dither down***
***to a forgotten past,***
***a tremble***
***past forgetting,***
***gone***
***as though it never was.***

The Novice says, 'I begin to feel it. The offer is breath and death, two slats with a thread of light between them.'"

*** * ***

*She:* "It sounds like Rutherford's experiment. Is this what spirits discuss?"

*He:* "I never called them spirits."

*She:* "No. I am to accept them as presumptive non-beings who converse in verse. Giving in to your assumption begins to seem like surrender."

*He:* “Precisely. Only surrender releases the imagination, whether it’s the surrender to a story or to taking on a life.”
*She:* “Your novice surrenders? So this is how you affirm that such an agent would decide to live?”
*He:* “No. When such an agent takes on a life it is as if he entertained a proposition, listened to a story, or walked his fingers across a map—”
*She:* “Showing places that don’t exist.”
*He:* “But can be imagined. Exactly. Here, I’ve written it down for you.”
*She:* “When did you write this?”

**Step 4**
*Second Approximation*
***A Battlefield, A Forest, An Embrace***

*She: “*Now I see what you’ve been up to. I suppose that I must read it all to get your point?”
*He: “*Oh no. We can talk along the way. In fact, we must talk because it isn’t finished. I could only get so far—“
*She:* “Before you brought me into it with your assumptions and surrenders.”
*He:* “Guilty.”

## A Battlefield

Prakash walked back home on the curb between the shoulder and the grassy ditch where he had once found a black and yellow salamander with flanks as slimy as the Fennugreek seeds his Auntie strained from tea she gave him for coughs. He carried a liter of coke for Uncle Nasir, holding it as the rope walker on television had held a long pole, advancing toe to heel over a waterfall. To walk the curb properly, Prakash stuffed his flip-flops under his belt and imagined the cable pressing from heel to the space between his first and great toe. He kept his eyes on the swaying cable ahead. He did not look down

at the sharp gray rocks and grumbling water. The ropewalker stands erect. He never looks at his feet.

While Prakash carefully placed his feet toe to heel along the curb on Route One, a cluster bomb fell on the Family Mart he had just left, blowing the windows out, snapping the pumps from their concrete islands, and sending up a dusty cloud of debris and ash with a popping sound as the concussion swept across the highway, breaking all of Henry Beeker's new Pella windows in the 1930 bungalow he'd been restoring since he bought it twenty years ago, shredding the roof, and bursting the kitchen where Beeker was eating a boiled egg. The crest of the wave blew through the woods behind Beeker's house like wind through prairie grass. The Family Mart's underground tanks blew up, adding a black smoke to the dusty cloud and throwing asphalt into the trees.

Prakash lay face down in the ditch with his hands over his ears as mortar rounds thumped around him in a synchronous pattern, one landing in Beeker's back yard to toss his newly rototilled garden into the black cloud which now shadowed Bender's Grove at dawn on a fine summer day. The remote-controlled ordnance functioned perfectly.

At some distance, the Captain of the advance team studied feed from the target area to verify that the position had been secured. The toy plane went on and quietly dropped its remaining bomb on another town before returning to the launch site. Hovering over the scene at three thousand meters, another toy plane sent back visuals. Within the grid, Prakash lying face-down in a ditch was like the mole on the Captain's hairy wrist. Satisfied with the smoky blankness, absence, and immobility of the White Kill Sector, the Captain turned to another visual.

Tired of all the Branches, Runs, and Creeks in Virginia after growing up in Delaware, the Dutchman, Émile van't Hoff, named the stream springing from a limestone rock-face on his property near Wando "White Kill." Too rich to be denied, he was also allowed to name a town and lay a thin coat of coal dust on several thousand hectares of

countryside around his cement plant decades before Prakash fell into the ditch and before White Kill browned with effluents from mines upstream of Hofftown.

Quietly viewing the same telemetric visuals seen by the Captain and his superiors, the Anchor Man sipped his tea as he prepared a message. He preferred green tea to pekoe, but since the embargo, only pekoe was available. He had reserved a small amount of green tea for his mother and wife to use at state functions, but there would be no functions until the current insurrection was crushed. Embargos always made the point that there were insurrections to crush.

At the motel, Prakash's father had gathered the family into a storage locker, piling lawn chairs, sprinklers, and hoses around the door. Prakash ran screaming up the hill. Inside, Auntie sat on the floor, weeping with her hands over her ears. Mother and Shana kneeled beside her. His father pulled him into the locker and shut the door. He turned on the light and found a station on his phone. Two hosts laughed as they praised hair softener, warned of rain, and mentioned that a message would soon be delivered about the insurrection put down near Hofftown. After the desperate nasal squeals of a singer complaining about her boyfriend, a growling solo rose unintelligibly above the bass guitar. After the musical interlude came the promised message from the States' Anchor Man:

***"Thanks to prompt action by our brave armed forces, the agents of insurrection in Northern Virginia have been routed. It is truly a day of pacification. With no loss of key lives, our remote forces decisively struck conspiracy sites, facilities, training areas, storage depots, and airfields posing a threat to our entire Eastern Command Area. I assure you that at no time since the suspension of legislation has God blessed us with such a victory. You should all be proud of our brave soldiers as they restore domestic peace and commerce."***

Another singer began to wail before Prakash's father could turn off the phone.

"Did you see Uncle Nasir?"
"No, Father."
"He went to the Family Mart to find you. You must have seen him."
Prakash frowned. "I know where he went. I can find him."

## A Forest

Red mites dropped from the gray lichen clinging to branches of hemlocks, landed on soft moss-mounds, the spore-cases waving high overhead on wiry brown stalks, scattered over slime molds like dried rinds of cheese, and passed into mold-tufted ridges of bark. They crossed moss-dammed pools over a gritty, black sediment hanging in the water and poured down the olive wrist of the man lying under the tree.

Nasir had expected to find his nephew daydreaming in Beeker's woods. He had looked around the hill of flat stones where ribbon snakes basked at midday. He paused in the little clump of sassafras where he once gave Prakash a twig to chew. Such a racket in the trees! Every bird seemed to be in on it—all in the universal language of alarm about some predator—hawks, cats, maybe even him. Then silence. Such silence! Then a thump, a great heaving thump—the earth a drum-skin rising under him and pushing him aside. As he fell, clumps of black grit dropped around him. He crawled next to a tree and covered his head.

Then silence again.

His hand stung.

He sat up, his back against the trunk. Moving red dots covered his right hand. He almost screamed.

Only mites. He brushed them off and stood. Still early in the day.

Nasir climbed the hill. He knew where the boy would go.

Neither seeing the other, the man and boy walked down the hillside into a cloud. Here the low arm of a white sycamore blocked their path, but its leaves ran together like paints, softened and drenched by the contracted sky. Kneeling cows with coats dewy from a night in the field moved no more than the outcrops around them. The man went back into the cloud. The boy saw him and followed. At the foot of the hill, the cloud sent tendrils into the river.

As always, the man and boy sat on the flat stones along the bank, the trees above them, river beside them, and the cloud around them full of sky. The boy looked at his uncle, a dark figure softened and unstable like a cookie slowly dissolving in warm tea and filling with spacious sky. Here in the cloud they were safe. But the harsh sun would soon take back the sky, leaving them exposed to everything.

Prakash had to speak.

## An Embrace

"Uncle, I am here!"

"So! Here you are—following me." Nasir hugged him. "We must go home. Something has happened."

As they hugged each other, the cloud evaporated.

**Step 5**
*Third Approximation:*
**Annunciations**

*She:* "So I am to believe that the Novice is led to entertain or imagine this story as a kind of proposition on the desirability of living?"
*He:* "Perhaps I wouldn't use the word 'desirability.' After all, a significant fraction of humanity believes that we continually create the tedium and violence of our lives by being unable to eliminate desire."
*She:* "Come now. Why would such an entity as the Novice choose to live if it didn't *want* to do so?"
*He:* "Does a cloud *want* to evaporate? We move from state to state because of our predispositions. We are surrounded by the air, pressing on our skin from all directions; we are also surrounded by holy annunciations—"
*She:* "Wait a minute! No more assumptions! If the Novice's decision is determined by predispositions as predictable as pressure and temperature, why even call it a choice? And I don't know where you're going with the idea of 'announcements,' but it sounds like another confounding analogy—"
*He:* "Annunciations—"
*She:* "Whatever. Look at what we have so far: two nonbeings having a non-conversation in which one of the nonbeings attempts to persuade the other to make a decision which will not be determined by whether he *wants* to do it but by predispositions like public service announcements."
*He:* "A fair summary. The idea of annunciations, however, needs clarification. Here—"
*She:* "What's this? Oh, I see. You finished the story after all."

*** * ***

NOVICE: "So beings are several and contained, cutting across yet amid all our annunciations; reflecting them; rising from them; sinking into forms; forming aspirations; expiring into resurrections, reactants and impulses, streams and mountains, lights and shadows; wheeling in and out of exquisitely calibrated ruts, necessary to us as receivers;

showing us the meaning, manifestation, completed gesture, finish and summation of our own potential."

ELDER: "Yes, but you overshoot them. It's easy to do. They are less and more than you say. Preponderances overcome them; push them forward against their natures."

* * *

*He:* "As I said, it isn't finished."

*She:* "Admit it. This is why you brought me back."

*He:* "It's only hypothetical—"

*She:* "Prakash, I might have believed that until you mentioned 'annunciations.' You expect what I cannot give. You bring me back from the dead—"

*He:* "No—don't leave—

*She:* "This contrivance, this embrace without touching, ends now."

## Step 6

Late morning, after several cups from the same bag, the tea is weak; the house is quiet, the last trees sawed and towed away half an hour ago. The renters overhead have returned to work. I have been watching seven caterpillars on a small wild carrot plant by the cracked porch. Five days ago they were like tiny bottle brushes with white belts. Now swollen to centimeter size, they wear golden rings.

***Annunciations***

**A tickle raises two orange fingers**
**from the jeweled larval head.**
**The Queen Anne's lace with only one flower**
**open bends slightly,**
**leans against the porch, stops**
**the flow of fluid from seven**
**wounds, waits for golden collars**
**to drop away and seven dragons**
**to become messengers.**

The one world they know feeds them like a mother through her wounds. Soon the Seven tumble into the sky, shining forth like Prakash.

## P

With each completion
I approach some end
pointed or unappointed.

Rounding my corners
leaves all unsettled
the stets and nets of others.

What poems finish
off soon aches
toward another end.

## R

**September**
Soon, disregarding us
again, turning her head,
she nods, leans, cools

to us, sped on our dazed
stumble, struck and stricken
by our senses' blast.

Soon, again, she turns
away, not yet the last
time, turns and nods and leans.

## A

So much will not come again.
This hand has just got the hang
of waiting for words to open

by tapping the heart to ping
passing dreams in night's ocean
and lifting rare look from binding.
So much will not come again.

## K

A curtain lifts.
I fit this place.
Sit here a while.

Leaf tips.
Feet clasp rib.
Arch backward.

I shape this place,
circling with my head.

*Bridge thoughts thus.*

## A

Two orange fingers,
palps moist with unknown
goads tickling them erect,
swivel to inspect the air,
the afternoon, the taste
of a divine path.

## S

What message?
What annunciation,
what fresh skinned
eyeball leaps
round my names
to find me?

## H

Here you are at last.
Come, Beloved!
Spring into my heart
Before I pocket you
in a discarded suit.

## Step 7

So I talk to myself. I update myself to no particular purpose. For no particular reader, but for all,  I reveal all.

Deena insisted I go. Can I say that enough?

And four days after I was gone and when the renters were also gone, a shearing wind from another concussive blast dropped trees around the house. And while everyone was looking, armed men entered, discovered Deena as they were leaving.

She had insisted I go.

Stench of the backed up sewer, and another stench when I opened the door after three days of trying to reach her or anyone, stench speared my brain-pan. Dresser drawers emptied, clothes scattered on the floor, even poems from my file cabinet were scattered—as if we'd cached a fortune behind the sonnets. On bloody towels, spilled out of the linen closet where she had hidden, Deena lay on her back.

Everyone was looking, but no one saw or heard this death when the broken gas-line set the town on fire. Her right hand was twisted backwards, stepped on as they left. She could have come with me to Santa Fe, but she insisted I go alone.

On a journey of seven days, seven years, seven decades, and seven decades of seven decades, there, in the heap of lentils swirling into a hopper car—there, a single pea like all others—there am I. The train roars through tunnels and climbs mountains, where heaven settles to earth.

Somewhere speculators bet on our futures. Sidetracked overnight, our car is tagged with an orange butterfly by a gang's painter whose mother searches for him—a butterfly like the one on our front door, lying in the yard. Time to make soup.

In seven days you were taken from me. Seven days from departure to return. Seven decades past—most of them spent with you. Ahead are endless hours of forgiving not once or seven times but endless seventies of times. Do not resuscitate or resurrect. Do not seek the impossible. Bring the soup to a low boil before adding cumin.

So, would someone choose to live as more than an idea if such a choice were possible, if ideas lived other than figuratively, if the poetic facility were more than vivid analogical thinking always sated with the latest metaphor, less inquisitive than disquisitive, more taken with emblems than persons, more able to feel strongly about ideas than about the death of a dear sister?

Too much cumin, you would have said. And you would have told me to wait longer before adding it. Do not imagine one can forgive.

**Step 8**

One hundred eighty degrees in the turn-around path of repentance and one hundred eighty lessons in the school year—even now, I wake up alarmed to have no lesson plan.

**Like two jays caught in a shed,**
**it touches a nerve**

**to wake with a head caught**

**between an unsettled dream**

**and the reckless swerve**

**and dive of a day**

**restless to be lived.**

## Step 9

Wergild, the default executor, the appointed surrogate husband, came as required to download Deena's intellectual property. As if he could.

He was standing in the living room when I returned from Assembly.

"I didn't see you in Assembly," I said.

"Left early. Let's do this." He kept his eyes on the screen. His pad already connected, he nodded like a cattail in the wind, restless away from his alcove in the Office of the Court Clerk, where he commanded secretary and ledger.

I didn't give him everything. Whole lives were missing from his download, but our inventories matched. As Deena's assigned husband, he was officially satisfied.

## Step 10
## Thirty-six weeks

A pattern repeated thirteen or fourteen times
in the first eighteen years could be the way out
of so much, even an advantage to Mind over
Faction. But who runs the show
is the question. Will it be godless
materialism or God,
less materialism? Thirty six weeks
either way—Prakash left as dumb
a butterfly as he had been a jeweled egg

on the ovipositor, heedless of error.

But suppose the curriculum were a virtuous cycle
of inculcation absent incantation,
sausage-packing, lobbying, motto-mongering; instead
leading, like the four sets of ninety-two steps
at *El Castillo* to encompass time and place?
So also the chasing constellations once portrayed
when to plant, why the seed must die,
why the whorls of the path to the other world
were drawn on the headman's chest. Every story, quest,
liturgy, and scheme contours the paths for our species,
the micro and macro circuits of a sufficient pattern.

But suppose the vested interests were quieted—
the sobs of Werther, ravings of Faustus, appetites
of Pantagruel and Falstaff, the musings of Émile,
the publicized private afflictions
of Augustine, the suspicious public officials,
and prominent others wanting us to know
how much they suffer for our sakes
while taking out cart-loads of Potosí silver. Suppose
the load were rebalanced. Five days a week,
thirty-six weeks, thirteen repetitions—
a school year of redirection—
surely this would be enough. Yet

finding balance is not our strong suit.

**Step 11**

*He*: "Laying aside the issue of my agents who can consider existence from some inconceivably inactive contemplative state—although it becomes to me daily less inconceivable—and laying aside whether you are present—although I meet you every night—I still raise the question—"

*She*: "Whether one would choose to live, I suppose."

*He:* "Yes."

*She*: "You've missed something."

*He*: "No doubt."

*She*: "Choosing to live as ***what***?"

*He*: "Of course, I assumed we were not discussing baboons or slime molds."

*She*: "That's not what I mean. Being may be *immediate* or *removed*. The removed being gazes at the span of life, the reach of intention, the extent of property. With broad and nicely distractible awareness it contemplates memories, speculations, and predictions. It prepares, stores, collects, and gathers to itself all manner of implements and hedges against uncertainty."

*He*: "And the immediate being?"

*She*: "This one is all close-up, sustained attention, focus on the particulars within its grasp. So undivided is its attention that it becomes one with its object, like you and the caterpillar. All its movement through the world is selective perception and probing to find only what it needs. Its pleasure is in process; its wealth in the treasures of perfected gestures, articulated performances, and elucidated patterns.

"Don't you see that your question applies only to the removed way of being?"

*He*: "Why?"

*She*: "Because such a question would not arise in the second way. Scope arises only when one steps back. In the way of immediacy—perhaps also in the ways of baboons and slime molds—one does not step back."

*He*: "No chance of a curriculum, then."

*She*: "Not even a day planner."

**Step 12**

My last day in the classroom was as guest lecturer at the community college on the Day of Pacification. Besançon's troubles under siege by Louis XIV or during the earlier struggles of the Sequani tribe with its mercenary German and Latin protectors also came to days of pacification. The names of the obscure battles and peace treaties were left unerased as we fled the burning building being pacified to rubble.

See Vauban on his mailed charger rearing in the flames, the screaming warriors of Ariovistus running downhill to the River Doubs, the Hallstatt iron spear-tips scattered in the smoldering village on the peninsula in the river?

So much violence is driven down into the soft limestones of the Juras and Blue Ridge. As our cars exploded in the parking lot, we ran into the woods, the woods which always beckon us to return to safety. So many messages sieve down to the sediments or slip off into the karsts and smaller sink-holes of memory.

The students ran in all directions. Soon I was alone, heading towards the convenience store in Hofftown, on the other side of the woods, where I might get a ride. I waded into bracken ferns and entered the greenish cloud settling on Hofftown and met a man carrying a boy—hanging loose as a rope, loose as only the dead are, in his arms—uphill to the motel where I had spent the night—the same boy who had checked me in—another *Prakash*.

**Below the bottom**

line is a zone of satiation

penetrated only
by sparks not flying upward
but collected
for this purpose
from a billion engines
that won’t
turn over. Turnover
being no winter phenomenon
churns up here
no overthrow,
no mix of interests.
Thunder stones aside,
the glaciation above bone
is contemplated slowly
as one hunts for ciphers
to spell out the final fenestration,
the spidery etiolation,
and as one dredges to detect
from a thousand puffy purposes
the ingenious design
aligning floating layers
of hopes set, wishes gained,
journeys made, dishes savored.

All is wrapped
in a balance exact
a balance act, cool

for the edges of the bevel
that levels the background,
or was it *meaning*,
as the body
closes out its accounts.

But lowering the surface
to raise a design,
makes one doubt
the bottom is deep enough.

## Step 13

## Lessons and forecasts

When I can lay out steps and follow them
The day achieves a finish—not as now.
Such plans as these are—spotty, gray, and overcast—
although, when given placement of the sun
and clouds who do the casting, one should say
midcast (the words here, as in many parts,
miscast). But wait, I didn't finish how
a spotty image can be like a plan.
In fact, not finishing may make the point,
for the gaps are better indicated than
the steps. The so forgotten mislaid plan—
agley, achieved, adrift—appended aft
like scow in tow, with heaping piles aboard
of banal lists and projects unadvanced—

the anal subdirectory of aims—
will only break the line that's pulled too taut.
Learning happens in the unplanned gaps
where lesson lines seem slack, not taught

Before I pictured plans as weather-casts,
another image had barged in, leaving
not even a blank slated for the learner—
just a gap between mind and its accretions.

Back then, to clouds:
Make plans serve learning; never learning, plans.
Guide space instead of shape because the known
grows out of sight; the unknown, seeming void,
preserves our ignorance, too dear to lose—

as in clouds.
Were *they* the plans—pregnant with rain or snow?
Or, rather,
isn't it that forecasts picture days
as plans—as lessons do? What I mean
is all the data make us think we know
the shapes of hidden hills and troughs of air.

So when I can lay out steps and even follow them
the day achieves a finish, although in fact, all plans
gray off into the spotty texture of cold mornings

overcast—but here, again, I didn't finish my pointillist
image about how finish inheres in no plan.
In fact, not finishing may make the point.

But if only being done were reason for the day
why begin at all? And why look for a plan.
Why drive, why look down the road—
when the trip is done—for something so mislaid
so forgotten—gone—it doesn't have a name—
a lost plan leaving one no closer to
the reason for today?

**Step 14**

*Elder:* "What is your choice?"

*Novice:* "This is only a proposal, right?"

*Elder:* "Not at all. To be one of them is to pass through the sieve between us and them—but in reverse, leaving abstractions behind. Atomized and made alive, you will be no abstraction."

*Novice:* "And what becomes of me?"

*Elder:* "Well done! Already you begin to be like them. You answered your own question. Remember? "Breath and death—two slats with a thread of light between them."

*Novice:* "I would be a thread of light."

**Step 15**

*She:* "So he chooses to live?"

*He*: "Let's say he's beginning to understand the choice. You can prepare for a test without taking it."

*She*: "As in the third week of school, when half a dozen students always need make-up exams after skipping the first unit test."

*He*: "Being absent is preferable to facing dissolution.

**Step 16**

## Solubility Tables

Silvered,
black thin books
I keep near
the triple point
surprised
that resolute,
being mirrored here
in them,
you’re here
arms wedging
antenna-like
tilted upwards
to refute
all dying
and dissolution:
you who leave me ashes,
not neat panels
in thin books
of steadfast
numbers.

## Step 17

We have always reported on each other. Miss the Assembly; someone will notice. A report will be filed. Fail to record a property transaction; a report will be filed. Take an unauthorized trip out of the Eastern Command Region; a report will wing its way. So our annual writing trips to Santa Fe ended five years ago. I suppose that even the Aurignacians who shared their genetic wealth with Celts and Inuits must have reported on each other thirty thousand years ago. What did they say?

"*Watch him. He hasn't met his quota of choppers. He sits idle—staring—as if he saw something on the cave wall."*

But school went on. The Oval still hatched scholars.

*Schola* comes from *segh,* from holding fast, and from habitually holding on to a schedule, from holding out time for the leisure to study. *Hold out for study*. It is a victory for idlers. So Old Bach avoided teaching the boys Latin or singing. Humming motets as he followed funeral trains, he slipped out of town to try out another of Silbermann's organs—always seizing the leisure to work and whisper to Death, "*Come, sweet-heart!"*

So I hold on:

***Segh***

School or art—for that matter,
any studio of mind—
holds off time; gives the leisure
needed. Holding schemes in mind
pauses flow—glacial, grinding,
slow, and unreflective flow—
wearing down shank, aorta,
lens, and jaw. Stop we cannot.
But we school ourselves. We hold
back from time lovely lessons.

Study, idle as it seems—
turn of phrase, tune, or scrawl,
puzzle-box, streak of color—
(given one must grind and pound,
dig and twist, tug and carry,
kill and bury, feed and sleep)
sees, attends, builds, remembers.
Only study lifts and lasts.

**Step 18**

This would have been the third week of school in mid-September, with Deena and me deep in our lesson plans. Prakash the Younger might have been searching his back-pack for homework left at the motel, his uncle Nasir bringing it to the school office. Two seniors who skipped that day might have been driving the back roads to run over box turtles. In New York, after the tunnels had finally been dried out again, a street person might have pushed a Korean merchant onto the rails. Uptown, a former fireman might have set fire to his stepfather's house so that he could shoot his EMT team as they arrived. Angelica Lopez, who pushed a cart around La Brea, might have been burned alive as she slept on a city bench. Elsewhere in Los Angeles, a veteran with head injuries might have stalked his ex-wife, a policewoman making her rounds in Watts. All these suppositions make a kind of mobile installation which only I behold. *Stay with the Earth*. Make your imagination take full account of how things are.

Look for the pattern. Throw the dice. Look again. Such is my practice.

Therein, relationships are clarified. If this would happen, what would I do? What would I be? *If, if, if*. Links appear. The Interpreter perseveres, scrying patterns even in drying mud or tar. Correspondences between mind and object come to me as annunciations. Such is my study.

Expecting to find messages leads one to find them. Look for an answer long enough and you make one up. I participate in the annunciation by being receptive. If the idea of an annunciation doesn't suit you, call it *guided selective perception*. The learning set prepares you to notice something. When it's presented; you notice it. In fact, you come to notice it even when it isn't presented because the Interpreter often over-shoots.

Apparently opposite to such omen-reading is the practice of erecting walls—peace walls, berlin walls, palisades and abattis, partitions to contain the pure people—and to screen away any other messages. Bluster, rhetoric, legislation—walls, all of them. But, I admit to making my own walls from the suppositions which fabricate hypothetical lives, and to strewing trees beyond the scarps and parapet as I await attack.

**Step 19**

**Lost in the woulds**

Something like a brittle flower—
a rose, perhaps, or snap—
or tilting peony—these deter
the fatal mood, the trap,

the seizing self-ingrown motif
ceaselessly repeating
in all registers of grief.
The leaf and flower are speaking,

as only leafy, lofty, inarticulate
can speak, in pattern, hue,
growth, colors variegate:
*Let wildness lead me through*.

## Step 20
## Wergild's Unit at City Hall

The dozen file jackets—cases pending—
are not scattered on his desk but lined up
on the corner, the tabs ascending steps
like flagstones dressed; fitted in a staircase
going uphill, surprising travelers—scratched,
bewildered, lost, emerging from a swamp.
Six cases come the half-hours before lunch;
six after. Jackets filed, the swamp's held back.

## Step 21
## Shelterway

From his tree perch the forester saw a car driving across the shelterway. Guessing board feet was no longer his job—only this waiting, from a perspective, not angelic but higher than most, and lifted above the quotidian quotas of other functionaries like those at City Hall. A higher calling, his routine was not so much replacing trees destroyed by bombs, logging, fires and herbicides as noticing visitors.

He called the Oval.

## Step 22

## The Oval

The school we knew so well was a hill-top fortress, dozens of workmen and teachers going in and out carrying books, shingles, wallboard and copper tubing. On the front lawn lines of staff waited to be processed for the new year; tables were spread with name tags, coffee urns, cups, folders, and identity scanners. Band members in their maroon suits and epaulets with looped cords and helmeted football players milled around the parking lot. There were no signs to follow. A concrete ramp with odd criss-crossed brick work and rising ten feet was the only entrance, a challenge to the gray-suited, elderly woman creeping up in front of the visitor. As she lifted her purse and notebooks, she slipped backwards. The visitor dropped his valise to steady her.

"Isn't there an elevator?" he asked.

"No, this is the way we go in—the only way allowed," she said.

Massive wooden beams arched above them. Two girls walked by talking on their phones. Crowds swept through the lobby as in a train station.

"Where do new teachers report?" The visitor said.

One girl lazily swung her top-knotted ponytail to the right towards a large oval room in the center of the building. More workmen were laying tarps on scaffolds over the entrance. The visitor took a folder from his valise but who was to receive it? He put it back. No office in sight.

Several hundred people were seated on risers at the far end of the oval room; at the other focus of the Oval, a gang of workmen erected another scaffold to reach the klieg-lights overhead. As he looked up the visitor noticed water dripping from the ceiling.

"Don't stand under that!" The pony-tailed girl pointed to the gouts of water landing in his open valise. "What is that in your pocket?" She said.

He looked down. Something had been put in his coat pocket. He pulled out a sealed glass tube with a swollen bulb containing a hairy gray mass in greasy liquid. One of the workmen glanced at it as he went by.

“Looks like Potassium,” he said. “Watch out!”

More water poured from the ceiling, splattering his shoes. A pair of students drove by on a small cart. He jumped back. The cart turned down one of the halls radiating from the Oval.

“Special Needs,” the girl said. “You a teacher?”

“Yes, I’m new. I’m trying to sign in or whatever is done here.”

“Oh, nobody is ready to start yet.” She pointed to the warm tube in his hand. “Why is that bubbling?" The tube was not sealed completely. Liquid had scorched one of his file folders.

“Why don’t you throw it away?” She pointed to a fire bucket on the wall

“Don’t put that in the fire bucket!” The workman had come back. “Take it outside.”

Holding the tube in a handkerchief, he made his way through the crowd, back down the ramp, and tossed tube and handkerchief onto the front lawn.

An armed guard appeared. “What are you doing?”

“I’m throwing that away.” He pointed to the flaming chips and steaming circle of brown grass. “Someone put it in my pocket.”

“You can’t leave that on school property. Give me your identification.”

The visitor handed him his license.

“And why are you on school grounds?”

“I am a new teacher.”

The guard looked at his scanner. “Your name is not listed. Come with me. Get your car.”

As the visitor slowly backed up, he heard a thump and got out.

The elderly woman whom he had followed up the ramp was lying on the ground.

"Why are you lying there?"

"You ought to know," she said. "You hit me!"

The guard stepped down from his van. "You hit her? Follow me out of the lot, please."

**Step 23**

The forester watched the latest clandestine inspector from the Eastern Command Center being escorted from school grounds. He signaled the Oval to end the drill, and returned to his reading.

Deena brushed gravel from her suit and walked back to her classroom in the Oval.

Classes resumed uninspected.

**First you survive**.
Suppose trees freeze.
Follow the herds.
First you survive.
Suppose raiders strike.
Hide (or join them).
First you survive.
Suppose magnets fail,
(Earth's core confused)
or comets fall:

Before Earth's scoured,
launch an escape.
Send some away
with all you can give.

First you survive.

**Step 24**

*He:* “Teaching has always been about sending the learners off with all you can give or all they can accept. It’s the only way we survive. It’s why we begin every school year. Every class is another attempt to get it right, to walk the path of self-correction one more time.”

*She:* “Pedantic, Prakash. So was that peroration about supposition—a peroration without an argument, I might add.”

*He:* “You got me into it. Even when you were still with Wergild you persuaded me to teach. ‘Just one class,’ you said.”

*She:* “Poets have to eat. As I recall, you were prone to faint.”

*He:* “And you never told me *what kind* of school the Oval was.”

*She:* “It didn’t matter. You found out soon enough. I wanted to watch you with students. You didn’t disappoint me. Not for nothing did the Salvage make you an Elder. Remember when you first came to the Oval?”

*He:* “You said, ‘what do you want to teach?’.”

*She:* “You said, ‘what do they want to learn?’”

*He:* “That’s all they will learn anyway.”

*She:* “That’s when I knew we were siblings—”

*He:* “Never lovers.”

*She:* “Loving learning was enough.”

**Step 25**

So I wait inside my berm-insulated house with no electronic windows from which to watch Wergild’s world, or the Assembly, or the Training Camp which the Oval has become—and no electronic windows through which they can look in on me to make their reports. I raise carrots, leafy lettuce, a few chickens, peas, and Romanesque cauliflower to cook with the remainder of Deena’s buckwheat. Students come by night. We talk in the dark. I give away books.

**Step 26**

So I waited.

**Step 75**

Finally, I was not worth observing. Lacking reports, Wergild, who follows his line and reduces everything to accounts, closed mine. I didn’t lock the door when I left because it was still lying in the front yard.

**Step 76**

I returned to work. Not on diaries or annuaries or lesson plans—but on the *Transects*, a set of stepwise approximations to what is. It is a walk not by steps, day, year, or analysis, but by acts of sustained attention and creative engagement—*a devotional walk* of prayers to perform.

Not beginnings and endings.
Not egos bubbling up.
Not wants and needs.
Not perfect and final ideas.
Not today, yesterday, and tomorrow.
Not societies of achievement or equity.

I returned to the mesa lands.

**Step 77**

One must express oneself, yes—but to become a more skillful, living and thinking being is more important. To show knowledge, yes—but first gain a great **surround.** Meditate on the *Transects*. Live in the surround, accepting all you meet. Embrace all accidents. Escort all you encounter, but make alliances slowly.

One must be thrown off track and unsettled, not dulled with a mantra or a drum beat, not quieted and set on a high pinnacle to see the kingdoms of the Earth, but rather,

dropped unceremoniously into the midst of life, repeatedly immersed. Only by successive baptisms in different frames of reference does one begin to understand without grasping—to comprehend without wanting.

**Step 78**

One morning, Prakash glimpsed the line transecting the plenum on Tomb Day as the *Sangre de Cristo* beyond the piñons on the scarp slowly then suddenly flamed.

Rays boiling from the slowly revealed sun swept the valley in a tide of browns, silvers, and greens. The azure scrub jays, white-backed hairy woodpecker, purple grackles, black velvet crows, rosy finches and gray titmice in that rushing wave of color became their voices in his ears searching for the signature solos of the peewee piccolo, the viola tones of the doves and the rattle of woodpeckers on the highest trees. And to their voices, the tomb shut on his mother, and Deena, and all others who had loved him for being, the tomb shut on hope in a final narrative, the tomb shut on the unique and special pre-eminence of his species, he opened his mouth, letting his voice join in the acclaim. Prakash shifted past himself.

**Step 79**

The *Transects* must be at the same time detailed and conceptual, a gothic work, ornamentally figured and melodic, structural and functional, a reference work and a story—a story and a poem. It is musical in its arrangement of details and in the formal architectonic aspect. Thoroughly grounded yet projective, it is able to be aleatory and meaningful because it is more than either. It is a synoptic synthesis, an attempt to slice through the experience of existence without showing favors. Or at least, all of this is what is intended. Details of experience must be honored and shaped. One must embrace "t*he*

*importance of little things: Know the big things but forget not the little. A day is made of little things,"* as Deena said.

Dawn comes to the piñon forest. Birds call and respond, sitting alternately on branches like large flower buds, flattening their feathers as the warmth rises on their backs. And the Novice wakes with them, having become a real fiction, an entity and extension, a plenum in himself, a structure like an engraving of Dürer or a choral prelude of Bach.

In this way, Prakash rationalized the structure of the *Transects* to follow. He speaks of his students, like Richard Rose, and sometimes of his teachers: Grady Towles, Edward Brown, Professor Lusardi, Ina S. Miller, Avery, Susan Irene, Frank Junior , Robert Wall, Elwyn Tilden, Frank Senior, Kathleen Mary, Deena, and Jo Evelyn—almost all of them dead; therefore factually complete.

Thoroughness is not intended, but neither is a nice cleanliness or brevity. *Transects* is not to be a treatise, biography, or close documentation for purposes of advocacy or genealogy, but rather a meditative exercise. Unlike books of hours, the daily office, or humming nonsense sounds, saying mantras, counting breaths or beads, or reading inspirational chestnuts, it presents little details of experience in a straight-line path transecting different frames of reference. The path always begins as a straight angle, then curves into an exercise in repentance and turnarounds. One’s attention is directed to the physical, organic, historical, and other overwhelming personal events. One shuttles between the close and distant perspectives, which Deena called “immediate” and “removed.” Frames of reference shift restlessly between these levels so as to unsettle rather than center the mind.

We have all suffered from premature landings on false centers—conclusions based on speculations, policies based on who was in the room, high opinions fronting low deeds, unverified certainties, verified nonsense, and projections made of aspiration—what Flaubert called the "rage of the will to conclude." Let us take more time in our centering down. Let us attend to events before sweeping them into the imagination. Let us make friends with provisional truths, unsettled problems, suspended judgments, incompleteness, sensory illusions and sensible delusions, accidents, unformed impressions, unanswered questions, and the fictiveness of facts.

I say "fictive" because there are no unfingered facts: In the *Transects,* you will find only "highly probable events." You may ask, what about sampling design, representativeness of data, verification, citations? While all this is necessary in other kinds of work, the *Transects* only guarantees its events to be highly probable. Pursue the sources if you wish. Some are even mentioned. But mostly I, once Prakash, leave matters unsettled—not authoritative but synecdochal. Living means sampling, selecting, mostly without making decisions, and then having to go on with matters left unsettled—as I left Whitekill for the mesa lands, a place to notice the emptiness between samples, the many shapes of space. Always sampling, always reducing the possibilities—wisely, foolishly, inevitably, but attentively—let us go on. Let us follow our lines and our callings. Let us follow what is given.

The linear sequence is nicely disrupted by the *Transects*. Those like Wergild, who reduce life to denominators and the analysis of the steps to reach them by least paths, subroutines, efficient procedures, and smallest inconvenience, will be upset. So will those who reduce all decisions to copyrights and legal covers, which is a kind of sequential analysis intended to drive down the risk of your opponent's come-back. So also, the curriculum builders, who want to tell us the way we should go, will be disappointed by the *Transects*—as will all producers and consumers. They are committed to low

denominators and the convenient paths of marketing, credit, and enduring obsolescence and to turning life into a cycle of itching and scratching.

The mountain rises before you.
The river passes through it.
Neither makes itself.
However it may seem,
neither performs.
But you make the path you find.
You “eke out
performance with your mind.”
Walk the path.
Truths being provisional,
and meanings attached here,
there, spliced wherever
fit, however
pleases, as river dives
through chalk and granite
rises, your fictions will pry
up certainties and other
inevitable crusts. By this you will rise,
not bound on facts but poised.
Walk the path.

***Quotation is from Henry V, Act II, Sc. III***

## Step 80

### *A last approximation*

Prakash takes 80 days to develop the lesson plan of the *Transects*. He moves from diary to annuary; from annuary to memoir, genealogy, poem, documented history, interpretation, religious vision, musical work and finally to the *Transects*, which is another kind of curriculum. The *Transects* curriculum *impersonally* shows physical evolution (forces), organic evolution (life's processes), and human evolution (history, imagination, and culture) and, *personally* shows an individual narrative (genealogy, memoir, and story), or so he thinks. Its vectors' coordinates are Force, Life, and Imagination, showing the state and configuration of the whole system. Each of us is a system and all make a system without reference to time or place.

Consider other curricula: the Benedictines' daily office, the Diné's kiva path, pilgrimages to Santiago or Mecca, the liturgy of the church year, the stations of the cross; progressions, processions, Maslow's hierarchy, Bach's suites, Beethoven's variations, countless graded exercises, vision quests, the wanderings of Gilgamesh, Odysseus, other Heroes and hobos; Kerouac's scrolls and the strolls of scholars through academe; the mathematical proof of a world view in the *Principia*, Etta's walk across Saskatchewan, the deadly trudge up the pyramid at El Castillo and the annihilating spin around accelerator tracks at CERN and LINAC; the trip down the river to come of age in Missouri or Samoa, or the passage through different entities in successive reincarnations in Tibet, and renamings like Kashiapa to Ananda to Bodhi Dharma as others follow their Ways in Northern China, or Yemen, or Palestine. In all these curricula, "*the Sages move the world*" But before walking with them, one does well to check the coordinates by which they plot their movement. Form alliances slowly.

In such journeys one becomes, develops, grows, and even passes imperceptibly into other identities. One does well to resist many of the identity changes offered by the sages. To resist growth sometimes supports death—which is only history, and therefore

factually complete—but it is wise to resist change that makes us into small effigies of ourselves. There's death enough to go around and time enough after death for others to turn us into objects. A true curriculum should spiral open into personal life and imagination, leaving us unfinished because we are unfinishable.

While we live, we are fact and fiction, both as repeatedly re-fingered history and ever-dawning becoming. We are fixity and process, tradition and reform, journeys inward and outward. Are these journeys progress?

No, they are about ***gaining a surround,*** wholeness, a habit of attention, like an oval field of awareness around our bodies. Skilled in living, one attends and accommodates to what is.

Prakash himself is also in the hundred *Transects*. **"*We must know the whole play in order properly to act our parts. The conception of totality must never be lost in that of the individua**l*," as Okakura said. Nor should the individual be forgotten because one has fallen in love with unity or some other abstraction.

But soon I will finally lay Prakash aside; I will again shift roles.

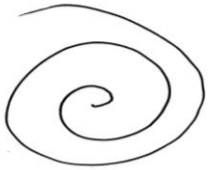
**The *Transects* are performances**. Each vector samples a bundle of voices. Listening to them, let us neither mistake proximity for simultaneity nor succession for causation. If they speak out of order perhaps they follow a different order. Using this design, I can speak of coincidence, events, matter and energy, the engineering of the cosmos; for the long spans of physical and organic evolution; for the appearance and further evolution of the human, and for an individual story. It may be yours or mine. No

matter which memoir I choose, or which fiction I devise, it will also be your own fiction. Whether I tell your story, mine, or another's, you will find yourself in it, because, as Heraclitus said, "***we share one cosmos***." You are in every speaker, as there are bits of all of us in each of us. Richard L. Rose (1945-2035) was my student and, as I imagine him, my fiction. I, Prakash; I, Enlightenment; I made him. I performed him.

*Now your turn*. The point is to learn through *frameshift-seeing*, to walk the path of the *Transects*, as Avery Crawley taught long ago. Thereby you gain new skills and practice for the cognitive processions you must make if you are to change. What is change without leadership? You must be your own Director. Perform the *Transects* for yourself.

Each transect is a filter, a probe, a section or microslice of the plenum, which is all experiences, physical, organic, and imaginative. It is like an MRI or CAT-scan, very detailed but only a few micra thick and revealing the spaciousness within solid things and unassailable fortresses of thought.

We only know our experience. Every trans-sectioning is set by the instrument of experience. It is the experience of an entity that moves all about. My instrumentation is ambient attention to what surrounds. Prakash the Enlightened is only one of the names taken by this entity. Hank was another. Others were Crawley, Richard, and ***you***—all of them fictions, some of them emblems of achievement, some of them symbols of misplaced aspirations. The spiral path of enlightened passage opens like a Romanesco cauliflower or an Archimedean spiral pushing up life-giving waters. It is a path, a mental walk and a cognitive procession, like this squiggle, duplicated on thousands of placemats, doormats, and curios throughout the Southwest:

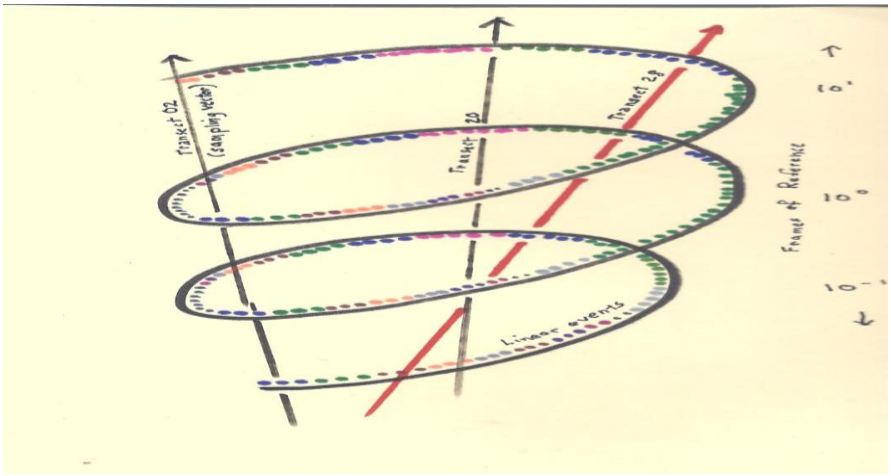


The squiggle-path is like the galaxy or the incurling brain itself. But even as one goes deeper into the labyrinth, one is still distracted by fixed ideas of bias, ego, discipline, culture, and creed. I prefer a more unsteady mental walk. Call it a drunken stagger if you must.

**The practice of unsettling experiences.** Too much has already been made of centering down, focusing, and devotion. Where has it gotten us? Too much has been made of books of hours, lectionaries, and uncomfortable postures. Better sometimes to practice being uncentered and unsettled, to leave the steady stream of unnoticed events, step onto the bank, and watch everything flow around us as we shift repeatedly between frames of reference. This is the way of frameshift, first suggested by Avery Crawley and his school, the Salvage, before the colony disbanded and the Eastern Command moved in, scattering us Elders around the country, all of us walking the divine path and writing transects to align ourselves with reality and make the restoration complete. I have written about this in the two volumes of ***Frameshifts.*** The **inward-outward path** has been variously described as a winding path, a rising road, a circle, a spiral, a curriculum, a syllabus, a gauntlet, a vision quest, a vigil, an ascending line, a ladder, or path up a hill or mountain.

But I, Prakash; I, Enlightenment, offer a different guide. See these sampling vectors shifting across different frames of reference? Each spiral bundling magnitudes

like a semi- logarithmic stem? See this procession through the arms of a spiral path? Imagine the spaces between the procession of a hundred vectors.




Disturbing, isn't it? As you use the hundred transects, you will find that the two-digit codes (like 02, 20 and 28 above) for "linear events" use inconsistent units. Some are "years ago" and others "years." It is to be expected that terms and references will vary with the way of knowing and with precision of measurement. Pharmacists know more about *gills* than they do about *carets*, after all.

It is not for me to advocate a cause, document a case, or justify a discipline. I only raise questions to present you with a path of both linear events and shifts of magnitude. *Only study matters*. Study is mostly a gentle walk of sustained loving attention. With study, you will widen the oval of attention. *Walk the path.*

Now I am back in the mesa lands where it is too dry for others to follow. Now I prepare my last hundred lessons, my sampling vectors, my transects for you to walk, whoever you are.

Whether one is a don in a Renaissance library, a shaman curating skulls in a white-washed subterranean ossuary, or a Bushman showing his son how to apply the exudates from a beetle larva to the tip of his dart, one thinks of life as a journey.

Narratives, daily provisions, maps, and guidance are packed and then the traveler is sent on her way. One must be trained in the skills, attitudes and concepts needed for the journey. Any curricular path imposes a course of study with a goal for completion. The student becomes a graduate, apprentice, worker, or warrior after learning the necessary ways to attend and accommodate to the world.

However admirable, necessary, or despicable the practices and ways of knowing from group to group, they remain useful fictions providing novices with roles, narratives, and the special language required to belong to the community.

A narrow fictive sample of possible experiences is sufficient for the isolated community, but when the fundamental fictions are challenged—usually by outsiders—the results are entrenchment, fear, and tests of thought-purity—or, more rarely and slowly, reform. Either way, the community is unsettled. Given a threat, whether fiery arrows lobbed over the fortress walls, doodle bugs dropped on the West End, or the later kinds of drones landing in Pakistani villages, the effect is to increase cohesive resistance. Under such a threat, even bankers and debtors will come together as patriots. It's the Simmel-Coser Principle.

A technical point: we do well to remember that external threats *do not alter the warrants of truth-claims* for cherished fictions.

But to love learning is to accept being unsettled—even to seek it. Only study matters. No final answers exist, but study can make successively better answers, however provisional and fictional they may remain.

Take the three fundamental questions I came here to resolve under the severe regime of the mesa lands. When he was dying, I foolishly promised my student that I

would try to finish his book, *The Three Questions*, not knowing that he had completed only the first part and left me scattered notes for the rest of the project. I had to break my promise so that I could move on to my own project. Here are his "short answers," left as they were—instructive but unsettled:

## THE THREE QUESTIONS

**By**
***Richard L. Rose***

**With other undergraduates in *Religion 101* during the fall of 1963, under the gentle guidance of Elwyn Tilden, I encountered the four questions that religions answer. According to my textbook, *Introduction to Religion* by Winston L. King, they were:**

1. ***Whence do we come?***
2. ***With What or whom have we to do?***
3. ***What is man and whither is he bound?***
4. ***Why do men suffer?***

******Perhaps you would find it useful to write your own answers to these questions before reading further.******

**As I see it, these are questions that everyone answers directly or by default, the answers most worthy of consideration not being writings like this but personal embodiments of belief. This book is a summary of my incomplete study and efforts**

**to answer these questions. The beliefs I express are assessments of what informs my actions. Character and belief are too intimately linked for me to dissect. Perhaps one of them has prior claims, but its case does not interest me.**

**Both character and beliefs become the answers to the questions. The pattern of a human life is the embodiment of character and beliefs. Unlike other mammals, humans must interpret their lives and even interpret their interpretations. Imbalances and discrepancies of all kinds are pondered—even into old age.**

**This book, written mainly for myself, is different from other writings and compositions like *Frameshifts (1967-2011), Floats and Sinkers (1969-2012), Hidden Moves and Hidden Faces (2012), Marking Time (2012)* or the narrative music of the *Marginal Notes Project (1969-2012).* Those works were for others. Here, on the brink of old age and failing memory, I write a personal reminder of what I thought about my life and work and of the reasons I had for these opinions. Writing and reading this reminds me of my own pattern of life in study, profession, creative engagements with love, family, music, and literature. Perhaps it even leads me to learn different ways of thinking so that I may be ready for new frameshifts.**

**Richmond, Virginia**

**September 5, 2012**

## Part 1
## What I think

**I will try not to be too tedious, but I can only report what I wrote down about experiences as I lived them—and what *I* think about what I think. Whatever clues I miss about what I *really* think are unavoidably missed and left for others. In the following essay, Professor King's questions are modified and cut to three, but I don't think he would mind.**

*What are humans and whither are they bound?*

**Humans are descendants of an African australopithecine branch of primate mammals with a center of origin close to the current range of the San (!Kung) peoples, whose genome has some of humanity's most ancient links to our earliest ancestors. Through migration following herds of prey, waterways, coastlands and their own curiosity, early humans dispersed throughout and finally out of Africa. Humans are communal, grouping in family units, bands, tribes, villages, cities, guilds, clubs, teams, nations, societies and affinity organizations. Their patterns of resource allocation, such as hunting, gathering, transhumance, herding, farming, and urban life, extend also to the exploitation and allocation of informational or cognitive resources. Communal units are maintained by kinship patterns, mutual need and trust, care for young, sign behavior, language, and patterns of economy and culture.**

**Expression and explanation are cognitive resources available through contacts, as when elders teach novices, goods are exchanged, and behaviors are modeled, imitated, and interpreted. Through these exchanges knowledge is transmitted to future generations and, sometimes inadvertently, to other communities. The transmission and synthesis of knowledge, like the exploitation of toil, soil, and oil, became a craft. Continuing development of this craft—call it *study*—led to different ways of knowing, such as graphic arts, music, narratives, poetry, maths, technology, politics, diplomacy, science, philosophy, history and engineering. Religion unified these ways of knowing by providing an orientation and framework for the community's reflections on itself. Thinking could be imaginatively turned onto any object that could be conceived as well as onto**

**concrete objects. Religious practices guided early conceptual thinking by linking knowledge to creative engagement and joy of accomplishment.**

**There is another way to tell this story. One could tell how raids, thefts, brutal murders, enslavement, rigid hierarchies, inequities, encrusted privilege, magic, cunning, deception, cheating, genocides, conquests, and warfare—often religious—shaped human history. All of the tools of knowledge and ways of knowing were also exploited in this story.**

**The two stories are not alternatives. They are strands of humanity—the Esau strand and the Jacob strand. The profane Esau strand is less interested in birth-right and the divine path than in meeting immediate needs. The Jacob strand schemes, dreams, and wrestles for the long term benefits of a divine path. As fraternal twins, Esau and Jacob are more alike than different. Both are capable of violence and foolishness. Both are needed. Perhaps the shape of the human phenomenon comes from the tension between these strands.**

**The destination of the human phenomenon is problematical. All predictions are speculative, but clearly, for most of human history, resource exploitation was checked by predators, local scarcity, decentralized power, obstacles (like glaciers), competition, modes of transportation, and limited cognition. Humanity's primary tools for most of its history were made of unpolished rocks. Indeed, the same kind of pebble shaping apparently went on for as much as a million years with little modification. Humanity's planetary impact has been geologically sudden. As in the boom and bust of other populations, like blowflies, such sudden impact is likely to deplete the most limited resources and result in a crash. Several civilizations have already disappeared in this way, such as the Mesopotamian, Aztec, and Anasazi. Atomic bombs make the future even more precarious for the human phenomenon.**

**Whether a species salvation will be possible seems to depend upon the ability of the many different kinds of humans to conceive of themselves as one species-community. This is a tall order. Personal advancement, family approval, religious injunction, and other traditional narratives all lead humans to regard their own groups as superior to others—even more worthy to live. Yet, "none survives without all," as Avery Crawley used to say.**

**There are many other ways to tell this story because humans have been explaining themselves ever since they became conceptual thinkers. The typical religious story tells of ethical and spiritual journeys and ultimate rewards after trials and suffering. The story recruits the believer's energy to persist under trying circumstances. Sometimes it was told as a consolation, sometimes as a reinforcement of taboos or prohibitions against abandoning one's social station, and sometimes as an imaginative transport for performer and audience to a different time and place. It was more satisfying to explore an imaginative life than to return to the life they would lead when they dropped their costumes and roles, as when the Zuni Shalako dancers put away their bird costumes in a secret place for another year. Ideas about new tools, new social arrangements, new forms of art, or of the nature of things were always the beginnings of new explorations. Sometimes the explorations were geographical, but usually they were behavioral. In order to achieve what had been imagined, humans learned new roles, re-tooling their ideas as they re-tooled their grasp on the world, until they were aligned with the new tasks they had set themselves. This unflagging curiosity, study, learning, self-molding, and creative engagement in pursuit of ideas about themselves and in personal advancement by finding niches of resources not being exploited by others has been called progress, trial and error, and experimentation because in retrospect, it seems directional. At its best, I simply call it *working on yourself*.**

**History provides counter-examples, however, of static societies and civilizations undermined by their own economic systems. One thinks of slavery in the Roman Empire or the silver trade in the Spanish empire. Societies even lose their own wisdom for generations or forever—as in Europe during Medieval and Nazi times. Over-run by powerful enemies, superior civilizations have also disappeared into bits of language and culture borrowed from slaves or merchants, as in the civilizations of Rome and Mali.**

**That so many stories and explanations can be told is a consequence of uncertainties about history and differences among interpreters.**

**Just as experimental behavior can be observed in infants, interpretive behavior can be observed in young children. Interpretation performs a balancing function, bringing together the experience that constitutes human knowledge with understanding of the experience. What we are always trying to understand is our experience of things, not the things themselves. It is practical to equate the two but necessary to remember the difference. While understanding may be mental, experience is an interaction of the mental with something external. Experience is also mental, however. The categories we affix to percepts shape perception. John Dewey leads this discussion.**

**The selection of what and how to perceive economizes internal energy. The resource allocation practiced by humans and other animals is as much related to the inner as outer milieus. Biochemical systems guided by neuro-chemical gradients find the easiest paths, as do streams in a watershed. Clumps of neurons make functional units whose simultaneous firing simplifies energy requirements. Bias, stereotypy, reflex, racism, and other certainties are more easily maintained and**

**resistant to change than states of cultivated sensitivity, vigilance, and responsiveness.**

**Thus interpretation is not trustworthy. One must always consider the source, whether it be a fundamental perception of figure over ground, a political opinion, a favorite story, or a passage from a history text. A few kinds of sources are obviously suspect. The history written by winners always contains triumphalist, sanctimonious, patronizing rationalizations of shameful incidents. Political statements are to varying degrees always self-serving. The claims made by merchants to varying degrees always seek to raise profit. Statements by the powerful are always designed to help them retain and extend power. Actions and statements of the oppressed and cheated are always about being noticed and having grievances addressed. Spokesmen for aristocrats, tyrants, and corporations will always be watching their own backs. Those out of power are revolutionaries; once in power, they are conservatives. Strongmen always believe that only they can control matters. Zealots always specify required beliefs. These truths outlast many other interpretations.**

**Most human interpretations are supplied by language, culture and neuro-chemistry. They are not detectable or susceptible to modification without concentrated effort over lengthy periods. Meditative crafts succeed in heightening awareness. As yogis and early physiologists like Bykov showed long ago, one can even become aware of interoceptive 'interpretations,' as our adrenals, for example, translate shock or grief into the release of stress hormones. Dr. Gershon has recently called our attention to the second brain, the enteric nervous system, also our meditative center. But like religion and education, meditative attention does not necessarily provide a course of <u>action</u> matched to the heightened awareness.**

**Peer-reviewed scientific interpretations attempt to provide verified and verifiable interpretations leading to courses of action and prediction. Such interpretations are contingent, provisional, cumulative, and systematic. As with religion and other ideational pursuits, however, the systems of scientific interpretation are less reliable than their components. Structures of knowledge are always under construction. Perhaps it suffices to say that humans tend to organize schemes of knowledge even when they know the schemes to be inadequate. This would be no issue were *subsequent* scheme-users alert to shortcomings. This is never the case. Indeed, some flawed schemes have not only outlasted their usefulness by minutes but by centuries. The guesses and tentative understandings of the past become the false gods of the future. Orthodoxies finally depend more upon assent than conceptual adequacy.**

**To tell *whither humans are bound* is to presume that they are moving in some direction, physically and cognitively. The journey-narrative is familiar and certainly the evidences of recent changes over the last ten thousand years suggest acceleration toward some kind of crisis for the species. Whether the story ends well for the species cannot be known. Indeed, if it doesn't, the story will be untold. Suffering, vast displacements and catastrophes, however, are commonplace for humans. Surd evil—the irreducible, meaningless, wasting of life, is not unique to humans. What is unique is the human use of even the most intractable, personally painful, and irrational experiences. Every personal catastrophe has always been the end of a world and survivors have, from the remains, always assembled new worlds.**

*Let even earth expire*
*in unremitting fire--*
*distress our senses,*

*shed our "essences"--*
*ashes divisible*
*to jots invisible:*
*these easily suffice*
*another world to splice.*
(*Frameshifts,* Part 2, p.338)

***With whom or what do we have to do?***

**Humans are concerned with ultimacy. While one feels kinship with an ancient cave painting, one feels intimacy with an ancient burial site. Attention to the things of the world and to the *significance* of things are marks of humanity. Representations, expressions, and explanations are all answers to the second question, the question about what Paul Tillich called *ultimate concern*.**

**The idea of the separation of the sacred from the profane or ordinary is an emphasis. Anything can be set apart. Would weapons or pornography ever be sacred? Karen Armstrong's study of violence gives abundant evidence of condoned violence. Choices are offered between beneficent tools and killing tools or between life-fostering concern and prurient interest. Even morally offensive actions may have a sacred role. One receives a strong endorsement and affirming energy and is given a divine warrant—I call it an annunciation—saying, perhaps, "the Lord has given them into my hands." What is in your hands at such numinous moments, whether in warfare or ecstasy, however, is not the enemy but the "sufficiency of the moment", as William James called it, the confidence of being provided all that is needed and that needs doing. One's energy is recruited for the effort needed. Others draw together with you in a band, team, ensemble, movement, audience, marriage, family, or friendship. These moments of insight and sacred experience are set apart not because of their intrinsic constituents but because of their significance. Whether**

**one is investigating a muon or an immune system, one generalizes over millions of instances. It is the significance of the idea that one pursues.**

**Perhaps humans enjoy imagining that an event has significance so that they can then explain what it is. This puzzle instinct or curiosity can lead to great art works, theoretical explanations, sweeping novels, delicate poems, and nonsense—both delightful and despicable. Humans generate significance as insects produce paper nests, manna, or shellac. Housman said his poems were secreted. The secrets to puzzles begin in the playful proposition that a puzzle exists. Sacred understandings about ultimate issues begin in the playful proposition that ultimate matters are human concerns.**

**And indeed, they are. In the simple act of burial, Neanderthal ceases to be a brute. The chimp's linguistic prowess is unsettling but unconvincing because it is not a tool of his imagination. If he has a larger world view, he has not managed to express with such economy and clarity as the wordless placement of beads into the hands of a dead child.**

**World views always entail judgments about ultimate concerns. Whether one's cosmos is the gridiron or the galaxy, its contents are not fragments of knowledge but schemes of thought and action fitted to sources of psychic energy or *ganas*--which is both desire and energy, *lust* in the largest sense. Pound wrote that what humans love well, remains; "the rest is dross." This ultimacy is itself *with what we have to do.* This continual "turning back to the source," as Frost wrote, "is most us." Indeed, it is our origin, the mark of becoming human.**

### *What is wisdom and where is it found?*

**Short answer: (a) Judging rightly what to do next, and (b) finding the strength within yourself to do it.**

**The answer is simple but the learning is extensive. The answer is and must be a personal interpretation because this question must be answered on a case basis. And casuistry always has pitfalls. An individual and subjective matter, it concerns one's own *ganas*, although with regard to the actions taken, it is a public matter.**

**As with the other two questions, one must agilely avoid being captured by a way of thinking or attractive conceptual scheme. What is a wise decision in one case is foolishness in another.**

**One must also be familiar with modes of interpretation (splitting & lumping, for example), kinds of thinking, logic, avoiding fallacies, careful grammar and rhetoric, reasoning with statistics and graphical displays of quantitative data, familiarity with ethical norms, and historical origins and precedents. All of this is only part of the training of a wise decision maker—and certainly not enough . . . . .**

I call this **"It is always the right time to do the right thing."**
(Quotation by Martin Luther King. Painter: Philip Bernhardt.)

**H**ere I must interrupt. Rose's *Part 2* was entitled, "*Why I think so,"* and was to have been exhaustively documented, but I could not finish both his project and my own, so I have incorporated some of his notes and biography into the *Transects.* In fact, I have incorporated Rose into the *Transects.*

Just prior to his death, Rose wrote a more cogent summary of his thoughts--no less fictional. Let it close his comments:

***"Your divine paths make a tree. By the power of choice you prune the tree of avarice and encourage growth on other paths. Many paths and cankers grow together. Early on, you learn restraint, avoidance, abstention, self-control, resistance, and how to dial back wanting--which is not to say that you practice what you've learned. Early on, I decided against careers in law, business, marketing, and the military. None of those paths suited me. I also didn't want to contribute to them. Medical work or teaching seemed like occupations which did less harm, made positive contributions, and, unlike poetry and music, provided incomes. The academic route to making poetry and music seemed to require intellectual and moral concessions and to result in questionable activities and negative contributions. Rather like marketing and business, you had to assent to another person's rationale for what you wanted to do. I wanted to discover my work by making it. The idea gradually formed of a simpler way of life. Make positive contributions to the human project. Reflect on your experience and shape it through writing and composition. I picked up the threads of occupation, meditation, and expression and never dropped them, even though they didn't immediately braid well. The braid is prayer, a divine walk unifying work, experience, expression, and reflection. It's a calm stream whose meditative current unites, moves,***

***clouds, and clarifies. So this meditative practice became a way of life which I continually sought to improve by changing routines to get closer to an ideal divine path. Of course, there is none. You work on yourself but you remain unfinished. This is the divine path. You prune the tree by starving ugliness, megalomania, depression, waste, fear, fatalism, opportunism, grasping, ignorance, exclusiveness, and inattention. One cultivates the tree by feeding beauty, simplicity, le petit bonheur, salvage, hope, willful action, compassion, acceptance, understanding, inclusion, and attentiveness. Kathleen helps prune the tree. She abstains from harmful foods and avoids waste like commercial packaging or accumulation of things you don't use or need). And she is always building community through helpful interactions with family and friends. We mutually reinforce the choices we have made. Perhaps our life will not last much longer, but meanwhile, in our own ways, we work on our own tree of divine paths. We also starve warfare, corporations, mechanization, automation, inequity, waste, injustice, and wickedness as much as we can . . ."***

Working on ourselves together

We are all entitled to our fictions. As I think of young Prakash, dead in his uncle's arms, I conclude that we do most harm to ourselves by insisting upon our own fictions. Rose's answers and my *Transects* are inescapably fictions, yet they may help others to enlarge their own fictional vocabulary. Moderation and accommodation come more

readily to those who have the vocabulary to appreciate many fictions. The *Transects* provide a vocabulary of approximated but highly probable events, useful to make fictions believable.

Think of the *Transects* as a book of devotions. You are to take a devotional path, a kind of mental walk or procession, not by using inspirational readings, mantras, playing cards, hexagrams, nonsense syllables or special breathing exercises but instead, by using an array of facts—arranged in a **verbal collage or confection**—sufficient both to appraise the need for fiction and to appreciate its limitations.

Isn't this also a fiction? Indeed it is. But subtracting fiction from human efforts is like subtracting matter from air and water. Tell me what's left. Even factual references of which I'm fond, like the solubility tables, have their own fictive qualities, delicately constrained and understated, such as margins of error, choices of graphics, and tiny footnotes about the conditions of determination and proper interpretation.

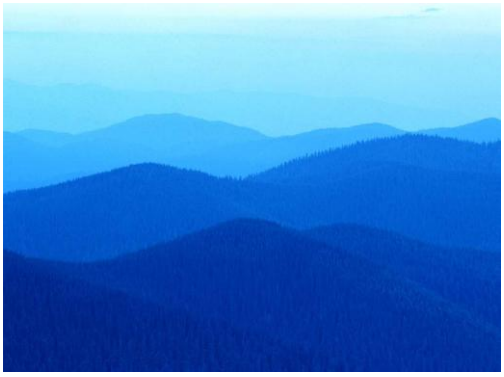
Even when we begin our careers committed to flexibility and willingness to accept provisional truths, the daily practice of many years disposes us to strong views. The only remedy I can offer is the devotional path of the *Transects*, a kind of divine path paved with events viewed physically, organically, historically, and individually—the individual selected being the fictional entity with whom I am most familiar and the stories implements for working on ourselves.

The devotions are intended to be unsettling, because worship both comforts and compels. Disparate and shifting between frames of reference, worship defies the left hemispheric *Interpreter* who wants to find a pattern, to reach conclusions quickly, and then to act . Slowed and mired in the details of the *Walk*, perhaps your *Interpreter* will be benched so that other cognitive players may come onto the field. Perhaps, in this

devotional work, you will discover a response to loss and to the apparent incorrigibility of humans. All I can say to you is,

---

"*Walk the path.*"

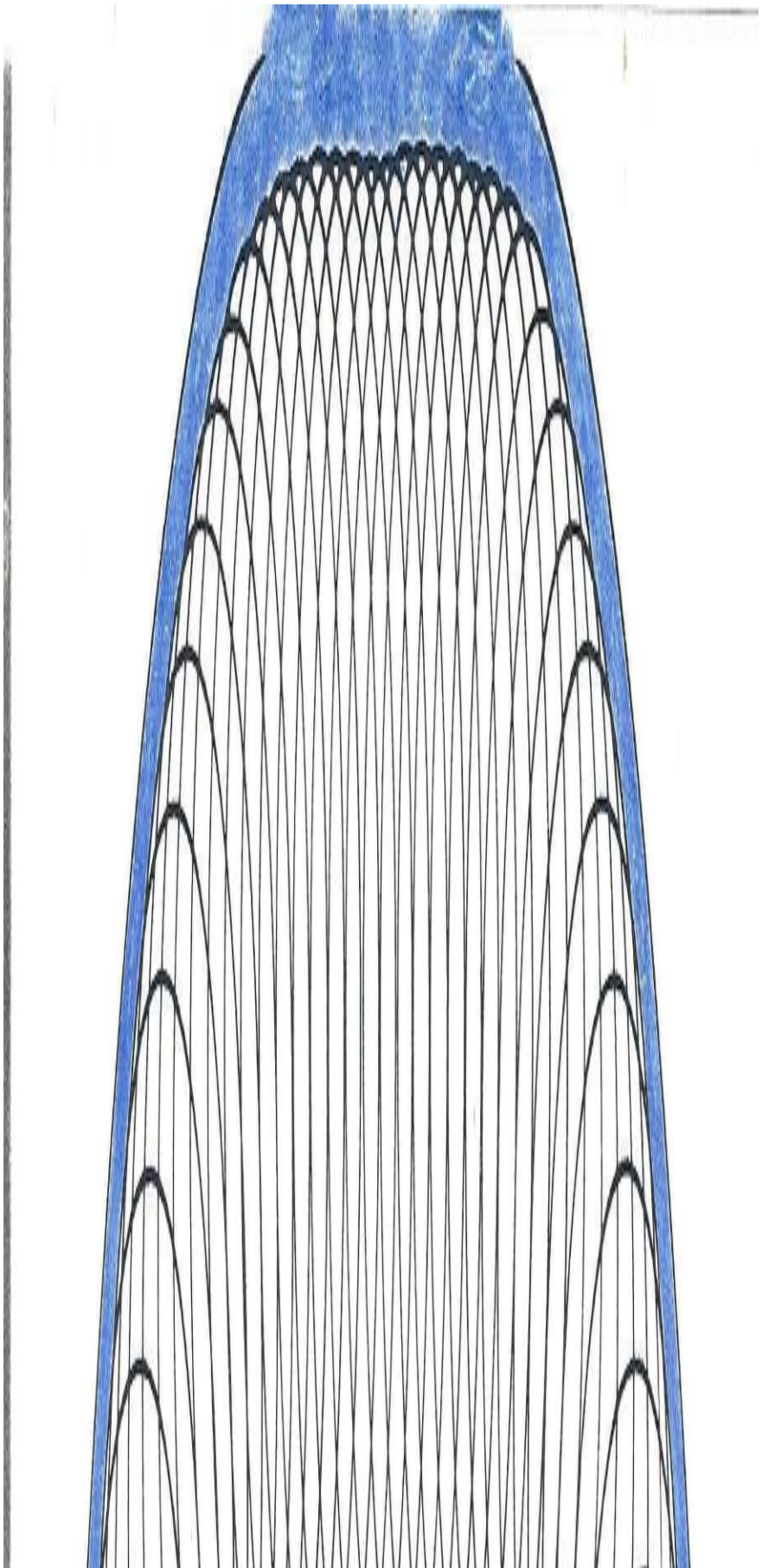


## THE TRANSECTS

***A devotional walk***

**Every personal disaster is the end of the world. Then all things wholly pass away and more life seems redundant as one awaits nature's verdict. But when one finally embraces all accidents, one finds the profit even in doom. Earth is the ark and none survives without all. Humanity has one quilted skin. There are bits of all of us in each of us. These easily suffice another world to splice. Worship defines new objects of devotion, drawn, not from mystery, which is only ignorance, but from experience, which is all one can understand. From this, wisdom slowly comes, revealing that our sisters and brothers, who were lost, are found. And heaven returns to us. (*From The Visions of Avery Crawley, Supreme Prophet of the Salvage*)**

---



# One Hundred Transects

## Step 81

**For the time 81 billion years ago,** and an additional 66 billion years afterward, one has only questions. But for **1881 CE,** it is recorded that **Henry G. Holbrook, Sr.** was born in August and **Jesse Buck Helm** in June. "Uncle Jess". married Pearle Steele in 1910 and they had no children. In 1981, with the Warrenton Chorale, the Roses performed Mozart's **Coronation Mass.** Richard's "*Invitation to Communion*" (later incorporated into the opera *The People's Voice*) was performed at Warrenton Presbyterian Church. Barbara **Stinson** conducted both performances**.** Richard taught at the high school, taught home-bound students, and prepared a monograph on the population genetics of Virginia oysters. The Roses' time went to teaching, soccer games, dental work, sending poems into the ether, fencing boxwoods for the winter, sweeping the stairwell, adding a new room to the house, and taking down a tree struck by lightning. **Susie** continued to write in her Black Thoughts diary. On June 1, 1981, she was moved by Mr. Winter's sermon about people asking for signs. ***"Paraphrased, he said, 'Signs are all around us in nature and if people don't see signs in Jesus' existence then they would never believe.' Same as my early question to Mommie that if Jesus could, why didn't he come down off the cross and she replied that no one would have believed. They would have seen it as a trick."*** She was moved by the closing hymn, "*Give to the winds thy fears"* and copied into another notebook where she kept inspirational pictures, poems, and readings. Under it, she wrote, ***"'I have learned, in whatever state I am, to be content . . . I can do all things in Him who strengthens me.' from Philippians and Rentie. Also, the C natural section of the Pachelbel Canon."*** **CE Dates:** In **1181 Francis** was born in Assisi, In **1381** The **Black Death** was followed by wage and price hikes. The **Peasants' Revolt,** led by **Wat Tyler,** was cruelly put down by **Richard II,** who further angered his subjects by trying to end Parliament. In **1781**, **Beethoven**'s first three sonatas were published. He was 11 years old. **Elizabeth Ege** watched from her Richmond home, the **Old Stone House**, as British troops under **Benedict Arnold** burned the city. The sixth **Lord Fairfax** died at his home, **Greenway,** in Winchester and was buried at Christ Church, Winchester. He had never married and never returned to England. In **1881**, **Koch**, using agar from the pantry of his neighbor, Frau Hesse, developed the **pure culture** method of bacterial study. **Arrhenius** studied Earth's **energy budget** at the onset of the Industrial Revolution, which was, as he said, "***evaporating our coal mines into the air****."* He formulated the **Greenhouse** principle and won a Nobel Prize. President **James A. Garfield** was assassinated after his election, as was the divinely elected **Alexander II.** In **1981**, **Israel** preemptively attacked Iraq's nuclear installations. At **Medjugorje**, Bosnia ("Between the Hills"), Six schoolgirls saw the Virgin Mary. **Jerry Stanhill** updated his 1959 photometric study and found a **22%** reduction in

incident photons. **Liepert**, in Bavaria, confirmed Stanhill's results, using data from her region. Additional data from other regions for 1950's-1990's would show reductions of 9% for Antarctica, 10% for the US, 30% for parts of Russia, and 16% for Great Britain. Another 16-month-long **recession** began, this time with 10.8% average unemployment. **Prince Charles & Lady Diana Spencer** were married on July 29. **Thomas Delahanty, James Brady, and Ronald Reagan** were shot exiting the Washington Hilton on March 30. The **Space Shuttle** flew for the first time.

***"Pardon my asking what's new***
***Of course, you couldn't know***
***I haven't changed . . ."***

—from *What's New* by Robert Haggart and Johnny Burke

What's new is what's next. So what's next?

First come to terms.

| | |
|---|---|
| Chaos: | A disturbing disconnection of ideas. |
| Creation: | Like chaos without the disturbance. |
| Life: | A milky flow of comforts and irritants. |
| Bodies: | Disturbing stories without authors. |
| Bodies of work: | Like bodies without the disturbance but with authors. |
| Story: | Fastened ideas. |
| Progress: | The temporary gain of opportunities and comforts by one group at the expense of another. |

The most important question we are always answering is "what's next?". The answer is what becomes of us. Mostly the answer is a job or a practice. Jobs are self-defined tasks , discrete, engaging, and potentially distorting. Practices are ways of conduct in defined and undefined circumstances, the stream of living, but potentially distracting.

So for an old man intent on becoming manuscripts where do I go from here?

What's next?

Maybe a story

In such and such a town there lived a representation of all the unity and cataclysm that is existence, that is, Consuela Lewis.  Connie looked out her kitchen window.

**Morning horizon**

Temporary states,
less loquacious,
less densely and intensely
outrageous than us
pass us with solemn restraint,
spacious sweep, incurious steps.
Able to become whatever
they may seem while being
what, do you think? Angels?
Shades, vaporous particles
crackling past us on their ways
in and out of entities? Or
is that red plum-flesh
alive with pain and desire?

No way was Jesse coming back. Why should he? So what's next?

**A Confirmation late in life**

Direct Ascents,
Unaccompanied,
Spectacular,
make good stories--
unlike crawling.
All fours.
Sideways.

## Compensations

When he lost his fingers
ten Carolina wrens
settled on the clothesline.
Five stripes of sunlight split
crystal snow like iris.
Twice, waking in the night,
plucked, a tune ascending,
he burrowed underfoot,
plunge of bread-crust, pulse, and
breath lost, he tasted light.

**Buds**

Wait.
Here is your breath
opening
a green break.
See
there in the pith
burgeoning

what breaths make.

## Gig

Rising to the occasional
glory, singing and wandering
out on various melodies--
songs that stuck in your throat like a
pointed willow stick--something you
sang has led to *grenouille au jus.*

## ***Love's old refrain***

Love's light, last light, least light shining,
some take love's rarity the famine sign
of general despair. It is a false disparity,
whereas love surrounds us beyond all bounds,
and grounds, feeds, and bears us in the air;
waters us; cares to lift our leaves; stings the Earth
with roots and probing minds that sink and rise,
think and surmise; drifts into dreams, thick with the dead,
and streams off daybreak from our minds' lake in ropes of fog;
scatters light in the blue domes that pass us cup to cup
until the last least cup remains.
And drinking it to nothing, we are rarity
enough, and least enough, and all enough, and lasting.

So Jesse and Connie watched the life around them, the comings and goings at church, the chipmunks under the magnolia, and the flash-lit tree-frogs in the soggy ditch at the foot of their back yard until he lost the tips of his left index and ring fingers in a press so he couldn't play any more and the pickers in the circle went on without him playing *Willow Sing For Me* and *Sixteenth Street* and *Foggy Mountain Dew* and his day job packing uniforms at the laundry became his life, which was not enough to make him stay around. So what should have been the second spring she shared with him she spent sitting on the porch looking at the buds on the magnolia and the tiny plums on the tree they had planted a year earlier. What next?

Here is an old man telling this story, Jack's only story, as it arrives from out of state and out of time, in a letter to Chicago from Connie in Virginia. "Uncle Jack, can I come home?" Connie with the Port wine blemish on her tiny neck. "Unthinkable to go through life that way, " her mother had said. There's a clinic in Edgewater. So off Jean went with Connie to the clinic in Chicago while Frank on Guam was trying to explain to the Chamorro workmen not to string the power line to the airfield at Anderson through a barn just because the diagram showed it had to be in a straight line. Frank couldn't say one way or the other what Jean should do. Even if he'd been there. Jean was gone now, but the radium used on Connie's neck had centuries to go.

**Edgewater Clinic, May, 1944**

The latest leftover wonders from the pile
applied in microrems where the blemish rose,
a rounded strawberry plaque or fingerprint
attending angels had missed before her birth,
seemed placed so daintily in the circle field
of snowy linens, like ephods bright and sure,
that over weeks as the spot diminished, fell
and blanched, a miracle saved the baby's neck.

But later, crumpling cities melted, streets
dissolved with certainties, heights made low, the path
made straight--so straight--by the triumphs science wrought
and war made plain, an ablated thyroid gone
and Mother's mother, she asked if such a rose
beneath her ear would have seemed impure or hexed
her more than radium pellets bright as jade.

And fear is always the answer. Other piles
were made of leftover flakes of phyllite, flint,
and dark obsidian. Someone noticed them
and soon, outdistancing fear, the arrows flew.
So wonders, handily left from shaping querns
or gods, were fitted onto a wooden shaft and thrown.
And we, projectiles in flight from fear, have thrown
ourselves ahead of our cures to save our necks.

## Step 82

Writing in her "black thoughts" diary in February 21, 1982, **Susie** commented that Mr. Winter's sermon on old age in the morning, followed by her parents' visit to Warrenton on their 38th anniversary, in the afternoon had left her feeling very low. ***"On Monday, Dick was seriously considering giving up his George Mason work toward the doctorate degree. We came through that crisis and he's continuing!"*** Mr. Winter, preached on the body, the soul's earthen vessel, calling it a "throw-away container." In the same week, Myra Muscar's father died, Mrs. Lofdahl's husband was diagnosed with liver cancer, Chorale member John Smith committed suicide and the Fonda and Hepburn performance in *On Golden Pond* was a conversational topic. Susie wrote, ***"I've come to the conclusion this week that most people keep from being sad and depressed by insulating themselves. Most people don't empathize as much as I do . . . I guess I have trouble considering people as 'throw-away containers'! It's not that I'm overly concerned with people's physical appearance . . . It's just that I doubt that the physical is really that separated from the person himself. We know that the body is a throw-away. It decays . . . But how do we know that the spirit endures? We don't know. We can only hope: 'Lord, I believe. Help my unbelief.' I wish churches addressed themselves more to people's unbelief. We say the same old things over and over to each other and hope they are true . . . I talked to Mommie a little today about the future. We discussed the problem of Jo not wanting to live alone--of perhaps Dick and I living with her, or of Mommie & Daddy doing so. We agreed that Mommie's habits and emphasis . . . would not coincide with Jo's and that they would 'drive each other crazy.' We also agreed that Jo's orderliness was probably closer to my life style than to Mommie's. I could probably adjust to her household better. However, it's highly debatable whether two little boys could fit in!! However, it's certainly true that Jo has the biggest house and the one in the best condition. "*** She mused on keeping the house in the family, pooling resources and living there so that all could take care of each other there. The following Tuesday, however, Ginny didn't seem to understand what Susie was saying. ***"We are both stupid beyond belief. How can she think I'm happy when I'm worried to death about money, about Billy and Robby's future, about braces, college expenses, about Dick's working too hard; resentful about our being so underpaid, about never in this life being able to travel again, to take Billy and Robby to new places and share new ideas and experiences with them , to give them what she and Daddy gave me, to somehow take care of her, Jo, Daddy and Robert Erle in their old age while launching Billy and Robby into life and also maintaining some sort of sanity and life for Dick and me? How can she be so blind and so blythe and so unfeeling while all the time thinking that she's perceptive and so right in her attitudes and beliefs?"*** On May 15, 1982, the **Warrenton Chorale** presented *A Festival of American Music.* under the direction of **Barbara Stinson**. In December, the Chorale performed *Christmas in Music*. **Bill Rose** and his parents were part of the group. Kathleen Warner discovered that a local

barber had given her boys head-lice by failing to disinfect his **comb** between customers. She returned to the shop to tell him what he had done. **Richard** took two students to an **AAAS** Meeting in January 3, playing board games with Susie and the boys, continued to get battery-jumps and oil for the Vega, made **puppet plays** for children at church and the ***Missa brevis*** for the Warrenton Chorale, took Susie's Gremlin to the shop, identified plants at Lake Brittle with Advanced Biology classes, cleaned gutters, made a ballet score for Wilde's *Selfish Giant* for Susie's birthday, hired **Lloyd Simms** to do some more work on the new room, bought mouse traps for the new attic, cut firewood, replaced washers, did bus duty at school , met with Professors Kelso, Beyer and Adamkewicz on the oyster **monograph** and doctoral research, checked the grades of Honor Society candidates for eligibility, managed the **Honor Society** Valentine Carnation sale, built shelves for the canning garden produce, typed course syllabi, arranged for a plaque for NHS, attended the family movie night at P.B. Smith, fixed the kitchen lights, stacked wood, changed out the sump pump, did more work on the Vega, wrote an independent study program for some students, prepared for Nancy Abbate's visit with Susie in February, showed **Ginny Bruch** some of his father's writings, wrote the "Eddy" passages in ***The Profit of Doom***, took Susie to the *Heiress* at the **Barter**, took Billy to choir, visited with the **Bruches** on Valentine's, talked with Fred Essex about a possible new job in curriculum supervision, took the boys to communicants' classes, wrote to his parents and Aunt Monte, went to **concerts** at Fairfax High School, worked on the Administrative Review during the week of March 8, attended the Book Fair, concert and art show at P.B. Smith ES, completed the first rewrite of the monograph on March 8, ordered the manufacturers' repair guides for the Vega and Gremlin, paid Phyllis Whitmoyer for Bill's piano lessons, tutored Erick Jacobs, attended seminars at GMU and went to a concert at Culpeper HS that night, cleaned the kitchen floor, put air in the tires, bought more typing ribbons, made a handout on **the "research path**" for advanced students, helped with P.B. Smith's **Fun Fair** on March 20, had the cars inspected, studied in the North Campus Library at George Mason, worked with **Robin McLean** on the Honor Society, wrote a summary of the Advanced Biology program with supplements, studied with Prof. Jacob about naturalistic observation, played organ for church, took the boys to soccer, put lime sulfur on the fruit trees, studied about administering the ***Myers-Briggs*** **test**, worked on the garden and the garden walks, put up shelves in the laundry room, used pre-emergent weed killer, went to a concert at Stonewall Jackson High School in Manassas, assembled a booklet on feline genetics, took the advanced students to the **Chesapeake** Bay in April, worked on living room closets, hired James Fincham to cut trees in May, moved maples, Deutzia, and small trees, used ERIC at George Mason library, put more air in the Vega's tires, brought oranges to the soccer game on April 17, went on a walkathon, tutored student Craig Modlin on Saturday, bought more typing ribbon, went to **Skyline** on Sunday (4/25) after playing organ for church, prepared the story *The Elder Field Mouse* for Susie, finished papers for advisors Judith Jacobs and Barry Beyer concerning the

EDCI 701 Flow Sheet, prepared a **histology** protocol for advanced students, purchased a copy of Phil **Phenix**'s *Realms of Meaning*, rehearsed with the **Warrenton Chorale** at St. John's Parish Hall, arranged for Mr. Gray to inspect the roof, laid paving stones and mulch, turned in budget requests for science courses, helped with Warrenton Presbyterian's **Ice Cream Festival** during the town festival on 5/15, went with Susie to the **Cat Show** at the National Guard Armory, performed again with the Chorale on May 16 at Warrenton Presbyterian, attended **Bill's piano recital** on 5/23, bought Susie's plants for the garden on 5/25, presented at Awards Night at FHS on 5/26. Richard registered the cars, completed papers for GMU, met with Jacob, Jacobs, and Adamkewicz about doctoral work, wrote Drs. **Wall, Buroker and others** doing molluscan research, replaced the hot water heater, put up a fence around the back yard, sealed the gutter, caulked the shower, waxed the floors, arranged for a junk pick-up, gave a copy of the oyster paper with preface to Beyer and mailing other copies to ***Estuaries,*** sent wedding and birthday presents to his sister Susan, drove to Woodlawn on 7/10, **roofed the house** at Rock Springs the week of 7/15, went to Big Meadow on 7/17, taught summer school, took the boys to **Turkey Run Farm,** went to the National Gallery and the C&O Canal, showed Choir Director Stinson his setting for ***Psalm 100***, went to the **National Wildlife Federation** in Vienna and to **Lake Brittle** with the family, sent a Telex to Mrs. Susan Smith, took a course in writing children's literature from ICL, took the boys to the dentist, went with the Youth Group to Fauquier Swim Club, tutored Greg Patton, prepared materials for his research on Keller's Personalized Systems of Instruction, took the family to **Busch Gardens** on 8/9 after the Vega inspection, had Rikki Schumacher make the salary adjustment to correct the mistake in his pay he hadn't noticed, worked on the back porch and basketball hoop, made presentations on the opening Parents Night at FHS, watched *Rumpole* with Susie, set up **cold frames** made of old window sashes, rehearsed with the Chorale on 9/23, took students on library trips to GMU (11/6) and field trips to **Mountain Lake Biological Station** (9/24, 4/9), attended doctoral seminars at GMU, and continued to sponsor NHS events and help with its Book Fair (12/13) and Walkathon, donated a set of slides from the National Gallery to the church, and discovered that a flying squirrel was living in his closet in the new room. **Susie** went to a baby shower at 6 p.m. on 5/31, played bells for a wedding on 8/21, gardened, took the boys on trips to Alexandria (8/22), went to the concerts and other events mentioned above, and kept a full schedule at P.B. Smith ES. **Frank Rose** and family went to McMinnville on 7/10. **BCE Dates:** In 382 BCE, **Mausolus's** Tomb (mausoleum) was built, incorporating Greek columns, Egyptian pyramid-steps and other features of design from surrounding cultures. **CE Dates** In **1582** C.E., **Pope Gregory** changed **October 4, 1582 to October 15, 1582** because the Julian calendar in use prior to that time, which added a leap year every 3 years to make lunar and seasonal calendars agree, also made the date for Easter to wander. In Great Britain, this calendar change was not accepted because of the dispute between the Pope and Henry VIII. In **1882 , Jesse James** (alias

Mr. Howard alas) was shot in St. Joseph Missouri by Bob Ford while dusting a picture. James was not wearing his sidearm. The Ford brothers had joined James to prepare for another bank robbery, but they were actually assassins who had arranged to receive a bounty from the Governor of Missouri. Bob had a short career giving performances of how he shot Jesse James. Students rioted in **St. Petersburg and Kazan.** Russian Jews were persecuted. The **May Laws** forced thousands to emigrate, many of them arriving on Chicago's Southwest side. About the same time that James Dodd set up a water-powered grist mill and blacksmith store at Daylight on Charles Creek in Tennessee, near McMinnville, **Oliver Towles** established a store and a post office **Edward Yager** (or Yeager) was hired to run the store. In the same year, the **Chinese Exclusion Act** was enacted. In the **recession** of **1981-1982,** unemployment was 10.8%, housing starts fell 50% (from 1978), Output fell, and inflation rose above 10%. "**Cagney & Lacey**," a favorite TV show of Susie's, debuted. An **eclipse** occurred at 1:33 a.m. on 7/6. Briton **Joseph Farman's ozone measurements** in Antarctica, which he had continued despite superiors' insistence that he stop because the Americans' weather satellites had made his equipment obsolete, picked up a 40% drop since 1975. The satellite had missed the change. Farman had discovered an **ozone hole the size of the United States** in the atmosphere above Antarctica. The **Dalai Lama** described the **Middle Way** for his Tibetan people. He sought ethnic autonomy without political independence. The plastic **Compact Disk (CD)** was introduced. The **Mary Rose** wreck off the southern coast of England was lifted to the surface. In *Memories of a Small Town Boy,* **Russell Baker** wrote: ***"Life is a braided cord of humanity stretching up from time long gone."***

**Not inside for long**

None goes so far to say
that all our dart and scurry,
machines and screens aside,
are less high thought than worry,
floor-plans failed, we'll be pushed outside.

Our nibbling urges cover
ourselves and all we reach--
even the passing clouds
and restless sea with clutter,
and holy time with jabbering speech.

## Step 83

**Martha Kirk,** mother of Urban Kirk, was born on June 14, 1883. (She died on 8/15/1936.) **On January 25, 1983, Dorothy Jane Boatwright** died. She was born on 7/10/1920 in Duluth, MN, graduated from St. Luke's School of Nursing in 1942, was a Captain and flight nurse in WWII, moved to Norman, OK in 1968, was a member of 1st Presbyterian Church, the Cleveland County Chapter of the American Red Cross, and the Association of Officers wives at Tinker AFB. Her husband, Lloyd, survived her. Both were friends of **Frank and Jo Rose.** Jo worked with Dorothy at Northern Regional Hospital. On June 10, **Walter Krug,** principal of **Mount Vernon** ES, dedicated the renovated library to former principal Beatrice **Franklin**. Susie was a student under Ms. Franklin at MVES, later knew her when she was a teacher in Alexandria, and was later a teacher under Mr. Krug at Patrick Henry ES in 1971. In August of **1983**, **Richard** started part-time as Science Specialist in Fauquier Co. Public Schools. On July 15, the Roses purchased a share of the **Wilderness** camping site near Fredericksburg, VA. As a part of the purchase, they received tickets for a short cruise on the Emerald Seas Cruise from **Miami** to Freeport and Nassau. They went in December and visited **Orlando** before going to Miami. Heavy duty fans blew warm air over the orange groves to melt the ice. As a cold wind came up, Bill and Richard stayed in the tent while Susie and Robby retreated to the back of Voyager. On November 18-19 Susie attended a Kindergarten conference, "Improving Instruction in the '80's," in Williamsburg at the Holiday Inn while the family camped in an RV park near Croaker. **Mark Clayton Smith** was born. On December 1, **Frank Rose** retired from being the Director of Human Resources for the OU Health Sciences Center. Jo Evelyn and he moved to 3821 **Ives Way** in Norman. He was given a $200 gift certificate to a local photo shop, where he bought a macro zoom lens (70-210mm, f 4.5) on sale. On October 29 he and **Jo Evelyn** sat at their reserved places in the stands to see see OU beat Kansas 45-14. On November 1, they went to McMinnville with Frank Smith and stayed in Hot Springs on the way back. **Jo Evelyn** warned Richard, ***"with all the trouble there is in the Caribbean you had better think about your trip there. Take care. Mizpah and Lots of Love, Mom."*** On November 27, Jo and Frank sat in a downpour to see OU and Nebraska in the ***"best one the Sooners have played all year; too bad they lost (by one touchdown), but we really enjoyed it."*** **Kathleen Warner** took the boys to see Washington, D.C. **Paul** looked out the airplane window at the city below and said, *"**We are now tourists.**"* Afterward, she described the trip so vividly to her step-mother, **Mary Guldi Schimpf,** that Mary began taking bus tours and cruises. *Also* in November, **Don Raper** totaled his Corvette. Stepping on his brake at an intersection, he was surprised when the car continued to roll. It went under an 18-wheeler, crushing the car up to the windshield and cracking his ribs. On December 1, 1983 Jo and Frank began a routine of walking around Sooner Mall in the early morning with other retirees. Jo wrote, "***It's kind of cold, but the wind isn't blowing and that is something to be thankful for around here.***" She then warned Richard again about the

upcoming trip: "**Watch the traffic and drive carefully. I understand that there is a lot of 'wild drivers' in Florida.**" On May 1, **Warrenton Chorale** presented *Sing Praises* at the Warrenton Presbyterian Church, including Richard's *Mass, 1982 (later titled "**Missa brevis**")* with its *Recessional for Bells*. On May 7, Richard received an Academic Achievement Award from George Mason University for his doctoral work. **CE Dates:** In 483, C.E., **Phidias**, sculptor chosen by Pericles to direct the work on the Parthenon (sampled by the Elgin marbles), was commissioned by Pericles to build the ivory statue of Zeus for the temple. In **1483** Raffaello Sanzio, or **Raphael,** was born in Urbino. In **1583**, William and Anne Dauntesey remodeled **Agecroft,** adding single story hall and chambers on the upper floor which opened to galleries. In this country house, Shakespeare is believed to have occasionally performed. In **1683**,Vienna and the Western Europe were saved from the Ottoman Turks by the private army of an aristocrat whose name was afterwards given to a star near **Scuta**. The first all-German town was founded in the U.S., **Germanopolis, PA**. It became Germantown. Later, **Ephrata** was founded by **Anabaptists** who found Germantown too worldly. In **1783,** Congressman Jefferson obtained passage of an act creating a **decimal system** of coinage for the USA. J.A. C. **Charles** ascended in a Helium balloon. He said, "***I could hear myself living*.**" After signing the peace treaty and returning to Mount Vernon, **Washington** sent off for a "***large plain beaded plated Gallon Tea Urn***" and some other silver from Great Britain—items whose quality could not be reproduced by Americans. (Richard Bushman, *The Refinement of America.)* In **1883** The Railroad Bridge was built over **Firth of Forth. Tolstoi** published *What I believe.* **Chekhov** worked in the hospital of **Chikino.** On **Oct 23, 1983**, a truck bombing by Iranian nationalists killed **241 Marines** in their barracks in Lebanon. In November, a NATO exercise called "**Able Archer**" was mistakenly interpreted by President Andropov in the USSR as a **first-strike.** The close call led Reagan to change his mind about the belligerent stand he had taken against the Evil Empire. Reagan's Education Secretary Terrence Bell led a National Commission to produce the study ***A Nation at Risk.*** Patrick Welsh, teacher at T.C. Williams H.S., considered it another hyperbolic indictment of the entire American educational system which missed the mark and led to wasteful efforts and inflated the educational consultant industry. Welsh wrote about this in guest editorials in the *Washington Post*. (RTD 20131013). **Carolyn Kreiter** was the first student to complete the Doctor of Arts of Education program at George Mason University. Richard Rose was in the second cohort and had some classes with her. Her doctoral research received a commendation from the Association for Educational Research. **General Rios Montt** directed the systematic torture, rape, murder and burial in mass graves of thousands of Guatemalan Mayan people. A satellite designed by scientists from America, Nederlands, and Great Britain began to map the stars in the **infrared** spectrum. Its antenna, cooled to -452°F by liquid Helium, completed a map of 96% of the sky before the Helium was depleted. It identified **Beta Pictoris**, a newly forming star system. This was the first observation of a new star

system. **Irene Cook and Alice Jensen** had been friends since first grade. In 1983, Alice returned to high school to get her diploma. Both had dropped out in 1929 to work. Irene said, **"*There isn't anything she couldn't do.*"**

## Memorial Day

In a hurry once, we blackened skies
over Tokyo and Dresden
with Fortresses and Liberators,
farm boys with fifty millimeter
guns instead of Daisy air-rifles,
bombadiers who had sold shoes
waiting for office jobs, Wrigley's gum,
Camel cigarettes, baseball cards,
hundred pounders, thermoses
of cold coffee, blood-red tracers,
comics, and folded lilac letters
from Dubuque, Quincy, and Murphreesboro.

Now skies have cleared,
although stars are hard to find
unless you're far from town,
where rarely you will meet
an ancient tree telling
with arms uplifted
how it lived through liberations.

## Step 84

**In 1984, Al Krollman** died of a stroke and on January 7, **Kathleen Warner** married John Reichert, and **Loretta Schimpf Wolf** married John Flink in December. The Wolf children were Catherine, Lionel, Rhonda, Paula, and Christina. On her birthday, **Susie** spotted an **Indigo Bunting** in her yard on Rock Springs. In July, Susie and the **Bell choir,** directed by Barbara Stinson and managed by Joan Staiko, played for a wedding in Potomac, Md. She had D5 and D#5 on *Joyful, Joyful* and C6 & D6 on *Conquering.* In August, Susie and **Nancy** Abbate met at **Wilderness** in Fredericksburg. Later, Susie attended a **Talents Unlimited** Workshop in New England. **Velvet** went to Dr. **Springer** and **Robby** to Dr. **Harris** and Richard had a physical. On August 19 Susie, Billy and Robby went to Alexandria to visit Ginny and Truman. School began for teachers on August 20-22 with Teacher Work Days and Teacher Orientation at Warrenton JHS, followed by Fee Day at P.B. Smith. August 26 Richard played organ for church, substituting for Isabel Jones. On the first day of school Susie had to take Robby to soccer at 6 p.m. because Richard had a class at GMU in Fairfax. **Back to School night at WJHS** fell on August 29. And on August 31 Richard went back to the doctor. Back to School night at FHS was September 5. Richard stayed until 8:30 p.m. On September 6, a trio sang Richard's music, ***A Sower.*** On September 13, Susie attended a workshop on decision making. Two days later, Richard took a group to **Lake Brittle.** Billy had a piano lesson with Phyllis Whitmoyer on September 19. Next day, Richard led a workshop (Workshops were called "opt outs" because by taking them teachers could receive credit so that they would not have to take training scheduled on undesirable dates.) Susie went to Dr. **Schlifer** at Westgate in the professional building on Crestwood Drive. Richard told her not to cancel this appointment, but to have a general physical, hematocrit & hemoglobin, chemistry panel, ekg, mammogram, and explanation of the Pap smear. Susie was very reluctant. On September 22, Susie picked up Robby from Smith at 10 and took Billy to Cedar Lee MS at 11. On September 23 Richard performed in the Warrenton Chamber **Music Consort** at the Piedmont Cultural Arts Center in Warrenton. **Doug and Bea Thornton** played works by Lully, Pachelbel, and Grandjany and Richard played and sang *Das Wandern, Der Neugierige, Wohin* (Schubert) and Swann's *The Road Goes Ever On and On*. On September 25-26 Richard went to a conference in Norfolk. Susie picked up Billy. On September 29, Richard took a group to **Lake Brittle** while Susie shuttled Rob and Bill and took drinks to their games. Richard gave another workshop on October 3 and Susie picked up Billy. On October 6, Susie, Billy and Robby enjoyed themselves at **Wilderness.** Susie went to Staff Development at P.B. Smith for Susie on October 8. On October 13, Richard worked at George Mason while Susie ran the soccer shuttle. On October 14, **Gladys Milheim**, Lori and other Pennsylvania cousins visited**.** October 18 was **Robby's 10th birthday**. Susie brought ice cream and cake and invited Eric Behrens,

Joey Green, Vincent, Craig Duff, Chris Dove. They all played soccer in the yard at Rock Springs. On October 20, Susie met **Nancy Abbate** at the Mall entrance closest to the Hecht Co. in Manassas, at a small restaurant. On October 21, **Mae and Gil Milheim** visited. On October 27, Richard worked at GMU and Susie shuttled soccer players. **Billy's piano recital** for Mrs. **Whitmoyer** was later in the month. Sometime during October, Susie picked up **Barbara Still** at her house and took her to Hunting Towers Metro Station. For the year, a total of **54**" **of snow** fell in the D.C. area. **CE Dates:** The **Carthusian** Reform of St. **Bruno** began in 1084**. In 1584**, Giordano **Bruno** published *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast.* .The **Washington Monument** was completed in **1884**. **Henrik Ibsen** produced *The Wild Duck.* **Chekhov's** crime story, *The Shooting Party,* was serialized. In **1984,** an **Ethiopian famine** due to drought in the Sahel, was brought upon by the redirection of rainfall patterns of monsoons. This was due to the reflectivity of pollutants in clouds over the Indian Ocean causing **global dimming** that kept the tropical raincloud monsoon belt from shifting northward in the normal pattern over the 1970's and 1980's. **Ramanathan** confirmed this in Project IndoEx. According to Rothstain, this was because the oceans of the Northern Hemisphere were cooler, which pushed against the rain belt, preventing its normal movement northward. In biochemical research, the structure was revealed for beta **amyloid protein**, the sticky substance that clumps to form plaques in brains affected by **Alzheimer's Disease.** Prince's ***Purple Rain*** sold 20 million albums. The poet **Melitta Grunbaum Urbancic** died**.** She wrote *From the Edge of the World*, about her experiences as a German expatriate in Rekyavik during World War II. **Patrick Welsh,** teacher **at T.C. Williams H.S.,** first heard about the **Effective Schools** reform plan in the auditorium at the beginning of the school year. **Ron Edmonds** from Harvard School of Education was the author of a plan with seven qualities of effective schools, such as non-oppressive climate, principals as instructional leaders, and so on. On December 3, 3000 people were killed by **isocyanate gas** from the **Dow Chemical Plant in Bhopal, India.** Then 14,000 to 23,000 victims died from illnesses and more than 100,000 retained chronic illness from contaminated land and water. More than 8000 tons of contaminants remained on the site as of 2008. Dow paid $470 million in 1989. NASA used satellites to measure **tectonic movement** directly. It found North America and Europe moving apart at 1.5cm yearly and Australia approaching Hawaii 7 cm/yr.

## Luna

Beauty has no mouth,

all of it in flight

and rapture,

its maroon eyes
empty.

## Step 85

**On August 23, 188**5, **Virginia Irene Helm** was born in Hickman, KY. On December 6, 1985, the **Roses** participated in the annual *Christmas in Music* event of the **Warrenton Chorale** under director **Barbara Stinson.** Susie played hand bells. In the same year, **Kenny Schimpf** committed suicide following an unsuccessful reunion with his ex-wife, Patricia. On May 25, **Truman and Ginny Bruch** visited **Kenmore** in Fredericksburg, ate lunch at *La Petite Auberge*, and shopped for gifts. **Bea and Tom Clark**, their former neighbors at 13 W. Howell, moved into a retirement home in Culpepper. On May 21, Ginny moved three kittens from the **Lee Boyhood Home** to Jo's house (Roonie, Annie, and Mildred). They were born at Jo's after she kept Princess, their mother. Then Ginny had her hair fixed at Garfinkel's. (Truman asked, "***Is it broken?***") Robert Erle Johnson sent Ginny a check for her home-based business, **Jennie's Book Nook.** And Jo worked all day in her garden at 4 W. Howell. Ginny's cats greeted her at the door. (Robin, Prince Charles, Prinkle Purr). May 22 **Dr. Trimber** found cataracts in both of Ginny's eyes. On May 24 Ginny worked the Austin/Wallace wedding at the Lee Boyhood Home. **Dr. Sengel** from Old Presbyterian Meeting House led the ceremony in the Lafayette Room. **Charlie Speed** returned to Alexandria after visiting in Hickman, KY. After more weddings and a blinding headache and a sick cat, Ginny celebrated her birthday with the Roses from Warrenton, who brought gifts and plants for her garden. Susie planted them for her. **Earl Sullivan** also came to the party. Susie, Jo and Ginny all admired the three kittens. She spent May 29 helping Jo with plants from Hechinger's and indexing Sister Nell's letters. The next day: more weddings. On May 30 Jo went to Dr. Williams concerned about a lump in her breast, like the ones of Sis Nell and their mother Irene. On May 31 Mrs. **Edmund Muskie** with Mrs. Brown and nine other ladies took Ginny's tour through the Lee House. An elderly resident of the Goodwin House gave the Lee Boyhood Home an original document written by Robert 120 years earlier, his *General Order No.9* (The ***Farewell to his Army***). Originally it was given to the lady's grandfather, a Confederate General. Back home. Ginny and Jo loaned Lillie Bell $112 and drove her back to Arna Valley. She had walked to their house, desperate for rent money. On June 1, Ginny and Jo went to the hairdresser's at Garfinkel's, lunch at Seiberts, home, and back to the Lee house for another wedding. For all the weddings, Ginny made $500 in May but $411 in take-home pay. The work was still mostly voluntary. Ginny wrote, "**Still I have trouble keeping up financially."** At this time she was writing *Kentucky Life and Customs* and *Proud Warriors.* On June 3, she saw the original West portrait of Lee and his wife Mary at the National Portrait Gallery. Afterward, she and Jo went to Garfinkels and Woodies. The next day she visited Nellie Custis's home, **Woodlawn**, where she saw portraits of Nellie's children, Angela and Lorenza and of Nellie and Lawrence Lewis, who was G. Washington's nephew. At Campbell's nursery, Truman helped her load plants into the car. They worked in the

garden until dark and all the next day planting petunias, scarlet sage, geraniums, snapdragons, verbenas, impatiens, and baby's breath until Ginny was dizzy from the effort. **Earl Sullivan** struck his head falling in the bathtub. He felt too bad to go into work. He also was in low spirits after the death of his brother, W.D. Truman installed a rail in Jo's tub and cleaned her gutters. On Jun 7, the kitten Roonie was given away. Ginny wrote, "***I don't know if Jo really feels sad or not. She seems glad of one less kitten."*** Ginny was also disappointed that the Roses decided not to take the kitten Annie. **Billy (William L. Rose)** had four teeth pulled. Later he was to wear braces. Meanwhile, Ginny was setting up the annual Elegant Elephant Sale for the Lee house. Truman helped with the canopy and setting out the items. Jo made two cakes. On a rainy June 8 the sale made $800, with Jo and Truman also working. The next day, Earl (the ex-policeman who lived at the Lee house as a caretaker) had Ginny and Truman to witness a will at a neighbor's house across the street. The next day Ginny wrote, "***I am $500 short paying my bills this month. How shall I make it. It was the eye doctor, my glasses, dentist on top of all expenses. It has always been so hard. But I have so many blessings--my dearest husband, dear child, and precious sister. I love them so. Susie called Jo tonight. (***She was worried about Jo's mammogram)***, bless her."*** . On June 11, Jo and Ginny went to the hairdresser's and grocery while Orkin treated the house. On June 14, Ginny wrote, "***I am heart broken. Little Benji is a murderer. He attacked a poor little squirrel in our back yard."*** Truman reminded her that the dog was a rat terrier. The following day they went to the Alexandria Waterfront Festival,m where there were 12 tall ships, like the **Andrea**, a Colombian vessel. Then they ate at the Seaport Inn On 6/16, Ginny wrote about the 63 men held hostage on a **TWA plane at Beirut Airport**, one of them killed. She continued to edit letters for *Proud Wanderer*. Jo's mammogram was normal. On June 18, the Bruches visited the Roses in Warrenton, saw their rabbit. "***Oh, Susie and Dick, take care of each other, love and cherish each other always as Daddy and I have cherished each other. Oh, Billy and Robby, love and trust your Mama always with tenderness and love and your Daddy with respect and love. When they grow old, be patient and kind to them as they are to you today. How easy for me to say this with my years behind me. How hard it is to learn. Love is the only thing in life that matters, the only thing in the end, above all the striving and the yearning. This, my precious Susie, you have plenty of--you have the secret of life in your heart."*** On Thursday, Ginny found a wounded pigeon. Truman helped her put it in a carrier with food and water. It died over night. Ginny thought about it all day. On Saturday she worked another wedding for about seven hours--"***very unpleasant, mostly. People were newly rich, ungracious, and Katherine was out of sorts with the photographer.***" She also worked the next day and was short of docents to give tours. The Roses visited on June 25 before their summer trip to McMinnville, where they would see the Hobsons and Roses and then return on 6/30. Ginny checked on their cat (**Velvet**) while they were gone. They had their 16th anniversary on 6/22. Billy was 13 and Robby 10--"***still a little fellow but trying hard to***

***be like his big brother. They are mostly very good, sweet little boys, but like all young things take their parents and grandparents for granted sometimes but Susie is a loving mother and teaches them constantly and Dick is a conscientious father."*** On Wednesday Truman had a call from **Forrest Barthol** in Oak Grove, VA. Forrest and Loretta visited the Bruches on Friday at 6 p.m. They went to Carnegie's for dinner. The Barthols talked about their eight children, Forrest's time in WWII, and growing up near Bath, PA. They left at 1 a.m.. Truman hadn't seen him since Forrest was a boy. John, his maternal uncle, was Forrest's father. Ginny remembered meeting John's elderly widow Annie in Pennsylvania. Next day, Ginny worked with Emmy, Susan Edison, Jim and Chalky, Ruth Rose, and Katherine at the Lee House while Jo trimmed her hedges at home and Truman worked on the car. On July 1, Truman took Ginny with him on a delivery to Manassas and they dropped in on the Roses. ***"The night was so beautiful out there with fireflies everywhere. Dear sweet Susie and her little Robby. How thoughtful he is. How he loves animals. We took Benji with us and Robby loves him."*** The Roses visited in Alexandria the next day, bringing chicken and potato salad. Ginny made creamed corn, squash, sliced tomatoes, carrot cake and ice cream. The next day, **Charles Speed** called to say that he was staying with Robert Erle Johnson and Blanche in Richmond while he did some research at the Virginia Historical Society for his book, *Call of a Distant Drum*. Truman drove to Baltimore and returned after 7:00 pm. On July 6, 1985, Ginny worked a seven hour wedding. She went home with a sore throat. On July 9, Jo found a trunk of their mother's letters to Sis Nell, Jessie, Willie, Robby, O'Lander, and others. When Robby was about 11 to 13 years old, Susie took him to a local horse farm where the two of them took riding lessons. She simply enjoyed being out and riding around on "Mongolia" and the other horses and she enjoyed being able to do this with Rob. **CE Dates:** In **1485**, **Richard III (Plantagenet)** died in battle on **Bosworth Field** on August 22. Buried in Leicester, his remains were found under a parking lot in 2011 and re-interred in Leicester cathedral in 2014 after controversy. The last of the Plantagenets, he gave way to the first of the Tudors. In **1685,** Henry **Purcell** set *Psalm* 122 for the coronation of **James II.** In the same year, both Georg F. **Hande**l and Johann S. **Bach** were born. Bach in Eisenbach on March 21. In **1785,** Schiller wrote *Ode an die Freude* while staying with friends Gohlis, near Leipzig from April through the summer. In **1885,** King **Leopold** claimed the million square miles of *Afrika* called **Congo** for Belgium and ***civilization,*** but continued the slave trade and savage exploitation of people and land. When **Samuel Clemens** saw the people of Congo he castigated Leopold in his writings. In August, the Williamsburg Presbyterian Church bought a lot on the Palace Green for $100 from William and Mary. **Tolstoi** published *The Death of Ivan Ilyich* and **Chekhov** his *Motley Stories* and Samuel Clemens' *Huckleberry Finn* . On August 12, 1985**, Japan Air Lines 747** crashed into a mountain in Japan, killing 520 passengers. **Hecht's** flagship store moved from Seventh Street to Metro Center. **Reagan and Gorbachev** reached agreements on standing down cold war hostilities. One of the reasons for this was the

**Able Archer** incident in 1983. **Virginia's Beginning Teacher Assistance Program** (BTAP) changed, unfortunately, into a teacher assessment program in this year. An **earthquake** in Mexico City killed 9000. **Patrick Welsh,** teacher at T.C. Williams H.S., endured more school reform and buzz words when Madeline Hunter's SPONGE program was introduced ("***S****hort, intense, vivid activities which provide* ***p****ractice of learned material which students can do on their* ***o****wn and which will also include* ***n****ew arrivals or those finishing an assignment early by keeping the* ***g****roup involved and designed to* ***e****licit an immediate response.*") Going along with this were many assertions and threats about being focused and on-task. Welsh later estimated that by two years the buzzing had stopped.

## Look-out

Mommy said Mr. Know-it-all
would not even notice me
so I slipped behind omni
science, presence, and potency--
all the big ideas--to a ledge
where I could sit on a flat rock
in the sky. A condor sailed
beside my rock wall.

The slowly prancing lizard, snake
basking, skitter falcon chicks
make waiting in their nest, clicks
and whining made shearing sticks
from downed firs, cedars, and lodge
pole pines centuries below sink
into my eyes and ears; find
where to live. I wake.

Stony Man and other faces
imagined in mountainside
hidden in cliff or scarp, hide
the fear that I am being eyed
by some fair, eyeless, faceless judge.
A face makes it seem less blank.
Tames it. Ah, but it stays wild,
as air-breath-space-is.

## Step 86

**On January 22, 1886** , Anna, Kathleen Schimpf's second maternal grandmother, later **Mrs. Paul Guldi**, was born. **Lottie** was born on February 8. On July 14, **1986**, **Shirley Heinrich Cullom** died in Albuquerque. Friend of Frank and Jo Rose, she was known "**f*or her vibrant personality, love of life, and devotion to family . . . oil painting, sewing arts, and interior decorating.*"** That summer**, a Rose Family Reunion** took place. In the summer, Richard also did a benefit concert at the Warrenton Presbyterian Church for American Christians Against Torture and Amnesty International. Included were the arias and songs from *The Books of Daniel ("Out of the way!" , Psalm 1, Psalm 100)* and *The Good Samaritan.* From June 16 to 25, **Frank & Jo**, accompanied by Susan Raper and Frank Smith, went to Santa Fe, Albuquerque, Winslow, the Grand Canyon, Carlsbad, and San Angelo. They ate in *La Placita* in Old Town Albuquerque, visited the Bandelier Monument, Petrified Forest and stayed at the Fred Harvey Hotel at the Canyon, retracing their steps from earlier travels. On July 1-7, they went to Aunt Monte's **Hobson Family Reunion** in McMinnville, rode on the General Jackson riverboat in Nashville, and returned to Norman via the Wiederkehr Winery in Arkansas. **CE Dates:** In **1486, Henry VII** (Tudor) after defeating Richard II on **Bosworth Field** and becoming King in 1485, married **Elizabeth of York**, eldest daughter of Edward IV, thereby bringing peace between Yorks and Lancasters and relieving the populace. **Playing cards** were invented, with Elizabeth York pictured as the Queen. **Robert Langley** II received an annuity of 10 marks from the King, probably for his support at the Battle of Bosworth. In **1686, Leibniz** was born. In **1786,** the ***Encyclopedia Britannica*** was first published. Virginia **abolished royal proprietorships;** thus Lord **Fairfax** lost claim to the **Northern Neck Proprietary.** The Fairfax Grant, as it was known, was surveyed in 1746 at 5,282,000 acres, including these counties of Virginia and West Virginia: Northumberland, Lancaster, Westmoreland, Richmond, Stafford, Warren, King George, Prince William, Fairfax, Loudon, Fauquier, Rappahannock, Culpepper, Madison, Clarke, Page, Shenandoah, Hardy, Hampshire, Morgan, Berkeley, Jefferson, and Frederick. Thus the new nation expropriated those whose massive wealth did not allow the community to thrive, after previously expropriating the First Peoples of the land that allowed them to thrive. The office of Lord Fairfax was in Indian Town, King George County. A surviving **fireback** from this office was made in 1770 by Isaac **Zane** in his **Marlboro Furnace** in Frederick County. It shows the arms of the Fairfax quartered with those of Catherine Culpepper, representing the arms of his father's family. In **1886,** in Atlanta, GA, Hammerton invented **Coca Cola.** and in Chicago, **Charles Yerkes** took over the North Chicago Street Rail line. As a result of his influence and attempt to own all the street cars, the **EL-system** was built. In return for having the new town named after him, **Pat Crowley,** roadmaster for the Southern Pacific, routed the train through the new town of

**Crowley, LA.** Voters decided to separate Acadia parish from St. Landry so that they would not have to travel a long distance to the courthouse in Washington, LA. The Dusons, newspaper owners and land-buyers, were the boosters behind the vote.On **January 27, 1986**, the space shuttle **Challenger** exploded 73s after lift-off, killing the crew of seven. In April, the **Chernobyl** Nuclear Reactor melted down near Kiev. **James Buchanan**, aged 67, professor of Economics at George Mason U. and general director of the Center for Public Choice, won the Nobel for Economics, based on his application of economic analysis to political decision-making and his contributions in political economy to the field of "***public choice***." Basically, he argued that politicians follow their own interest first, the public's second. President Reagan authorized bombing of **Libya** in response to terrorist bombings of Americans in Berlin. **Khalid Sheik Mohammed** graduated from the University of North Carolina with a degree in Mechanical Engineering. Loyalists of Saddam Hussein **gassed 60,000 Iraqis in Halabja**. Meanwhile, on October 23, 1986 the **Marine Barracks** in Beirut was bombed, killing about 200 people. In October, about 275 armed Federal agents raided **Lyndon LaRouche's** headquarters in Leesburg. Army vehicles rolled down King Street putting the town was in turmoil, or at least as much turmoil as Loudoun residents would allow themselves. **Fauquier County Schools** had 7545 students, according to Assistant Superintendent **James Brumfield.** The upper bracket for the **Federal Income Tax** was lowered to 28%, the lowest bracket to 15% and the number of brackets reduced to four. This was the second and last tax reform under President **Ronald Reagan,** who liked to justify his tax reductions by quoting Karl Marx's demand in the *Communist Manifesto* of 1848 for a "***heavy progressive or graduated income tax*.**" This was the second of Marx's ten points in a reform plan which began with the abolition of property.

**Five Stations of the Resurrection**

First is the emptying of all amenities
from pockets, shelves, accounts, and guarded attitudes.
First, lose all the necessary amenities.

She who lost seven demons, false divinities;
spent all she had on spikenard; on another Way,
after he fell, was consoled, cannot touch, but sees.

Push past angels. Rush in. Pick up the very cloth,
still damp. Search the shape of space, dark as it is true.
Run past yourself. Deny nothing. Retrieve your path.

Caravaggio seats you opposite, where the dish
teeters. The eyes cannot stare into being all
that they want to see on the backdrop of dark mesh.

Once all's lost, one comes through locked doors bringing peace;
guiding hands to touch, hearts to search on every side,
and lives to be an unencumbered sweet release.

## Step 87

**Joseph Braunweis** came to the USA in 1887 and married **Emily Reichert** in Lake County, IN in 1888. **Paul Guldi** was born on January 25. In January of **1987**, **Frank & Jo** and family returned to McMinnville for **Aunt Monte's 90th birthday**, visiting with Jim & Juanita Hobson, Franke Grizzell, Jane Ingle, Sally Jane Turner and her children, Billy & Betty Lively, Edward & Jo Hale, Edward Yager, and other members of the Hobson clan. On April 4, The Roses saw a **White throated Sparrow** in their yard at Rock Springs. On April 12, 1987, Robert and William Rose joined the **Warrenton Presbyterian Church**. On Bastille Day they visited in Sherbrooke, in the L'Estée region of Quebec. In the evening, the campers gathered around holiday fires. **Freddie Morris** was diagnosed with congestive heart condition. From June 26-July 4, **Frank & Jo** and family went to Old Hickory, TN; Charleston, Folly Beach and back to Nashville for another **Hobson reunion** at the home of **Don Hobson**. Frank's feet were so sunburned and swollen from the beach that he could only wear scuffs. **CE Dates:** In **987** C.E., **Abbé Gerbert** wrote "***The King of France is Chief in name only. Hugues is not Chief in name, but he is so in fact****."* Thus it came as no surprise when **Hugh Capet** was elected by the Assembly of Franks at Senlis upon the death of **Louis V**. In 1687, General **Francisco Morosini** from Venice bombarded the **Parthenon**, which had been used to store explosives. Its roof fell in, damaging friezes and statues and upset Venus. In a later century, Lord Elgin took some of these marbles and sold them to the British Museum. In 1787 **Pennsylvania** became a state on December 12. In Somerset and Bath, **William Smith,** uncle of John Phillips, began to use **indicator fossils** to date geological strata. By 1815, he had prepared a geological map of Great Britain. On July 13 The Congress of the Confederation passed the **Northwest Ordinance,** creating the first American **territory,** made of regions from the watersheds of the Mississippi, Ohio, and Great Lakes. By this ordinance, not more than five or less than three states were to be formed. Five thousand freemen were enough to make a territory, but 60,000 were required to make a state. A public school system, personal freedom, and religious freedom were granted. (It was also called the Freedom Ordinance.) In **1887, Mary Robertson** married Thomas S. **Moses** in New

York. They moved to a farm in Virginia, where they lived until 1905. **Lenin's brother** was one of five students hanged for attempting to assassinate **Alexander III.** The Czar also condemned **Tolstoi**'s play, *Power of Darkness* for blasphemy and nihilism. In 1987**, t**he Japanese **Superkamiokande Neutrino Detector** detected neutrinos from the Supernova of 1987 in the Large Magellanic Cloud.. The gene responsible for **amyloid precursor** protein (APP) was sequenced. It was shown that APP is broken down to form the beta amyloid protein of Alzheimer's plaques. The **Fairlington Presbyterian Church** split three ways into a PUSA group, a group under **Pastor Smith**, who had led for 16 years as the membership fell to 80, and a defector group. Smith did not want the coffee house. For this and other reasons, he alienated **Bob Chambliss**, the popular music director of the many choirs at FPC, and after whom Charlotte Ross's son even named his son, Rob, who became a preacher. Chambliss had traveling choirs and later went to Peachtree Church in Shallowford, Georgia. One member said they split over "***smells & bells***." Smith wanted to leave the PUSA and affiliate with the Southern Conservative Presbyterian group, a Reform group that opposed female clergy, among other things. The conservatives and pastor lost in the session by one vote. **Maybelle Porter** was one elder who tried unsuccessfully to keep the church together. She had come to live in Northern Virginia as one of the thousands of Federal workers during World War II. Recriminations and bitter disputes followed. There was talk of seizing assets. The Clerk of Session at the time may have transferred some property to Smith's break-off group. (The same man was caught in a financial sting operation in Annandale around the same time.) Bob and Arliss Linder remembered that the split almost shut the church down, but the PUSA group, with the northern group, the National Capital Presbytery, retained the real estate. Dr. Graham Smith, a native of Northern Ireland, was remembered for his divisiveness, his accusations, and the end of the previous church. **Speaking of divisiveness**, according to Mark Levine, Jonathan Thirkield's poems in *The Waker's Corridor* showed that the author is "uncompromisingly committed to, even dependent on, the very formal procedures whose collapse he envisions: traditional forms like sonnets . . . " Looking at the first two poems, however, I had a different thought.

## If fourteen qualifies--

(To *Morus* )

Then how little must a gannet
resemble a mulberry--
wings spreading wide and black
enough no purple stain shows
(if sea-birds should spread jam
or even mention gentian),
or gaze soaring the planet, toes
tucked landing-gear--begs

such questions as: Is delta wing,
ten hundred riders bound for Bonn,
bird enough for eggs? Are poems less
or more us? And sonnets--now sold for ten and four?

## Step 88

For Memorial Day (May 30, 1988). **Frank Rose** (in a letter of 5/27) wished the Roses a happy holiday and wrote that he guessed they would go to their "***retreat at the Wilderness***." He wrote that **Susan** was finishing classes on June 30; **Frank Smith** was graduating from fourth grade on May 31 and then going to the OU Golf Camp. He was proud of Bill and Rob, he said, and then said that **Aunt Monte** was on her way back to Tennessee after visiting them in Oklahoma. On their way to Wilderness, the Roses found an injured cat on the side of the road, took it to the vet, and later brought her home (**Mandy)**. Susie wrote, *"***We found her by 605, injured by a car, when we were going to Wilderness. . . We finally found a Vet. It was Memorial weekend. He met us at the Manassas Emergency Care off Rt. 28. We went back and brought her <u>home</u>.***"* In the summer, Susie and her parents visited an exhibition of the art work of Beatrix Potter at the **Pierpont Morgan** Museum in NYC on June 21. On April 1, **Jo Sullivan** and Ginny gave a retirement party for Ms. **Gene J. Kubal** at the Pentagon Library (Rm. 1A518) at 8:30am. **Anthony Schimpf** died on August 26. **BYA Dates:** For 88 billion years ago, no data are available. **CE Dates:** In 1688, John **Bunyan died** at the age of 60. James II extended the grant of the **Northern Neck Proprietary of Virginia** in perpetuity to Thomas Lord **Culpepper,** who had bought it from the previous grant-owners. It passed to his grandson, the sixth Lord Fairfax. In 1788 at the Hunterian Medical School in London, Dr. Matthew Baillie and his students dissected the cadaver of man with reversed symmetry. His heart was on the right side of his body, for example. This was one the earliest documented cases of ***situs inversus,*** occurring in one out of 20,000 and apparently caused by a disturbance of the ciliary current in the mid-body node of an embryo which favors asymmetrical development by sweeping nodal hormone to one side rather than the other. **Virginia** became a state. In 1888 the **Semper Fidelis** march was published by J.P. Sousa. The town of **Crowley** was incorporated in January 1888 as the Acadia Parish Court House. Its first city council consisted of Jacob Frankel, Hiram Carver, J.T. Steward, and D.B. Lyons. In 1890 it had 420 inhabitants, in 1914, five thousand, and by 1949, thirteen thousand. **Gardner Greene Hubbard** founded the **National Geographic** Society. The next president of the society was Alexander Graham Bell, his son-in-law. Next was Gilbert Hovey Grosvenor, who retired in 1954 after years of creating and developing the format of the NG magazine. In March, a great **blizzard** killed 30,000cattle in the Great Plains, blanketed the country from the Midwest to the East Coast. New York City received 20 inches of snow in one night. Across the country, 2000 people died. **Edgar L. Harris** was born on April 23 in the Chickasaw Nation,

before it became Indian Territory. On April 22, 1889, his family joined the land race to Oklahoma, finally homesteading 8 miles northwest of **Norman** Town. **Chekhov** and **Stanislavsky** met at the Maly and Korsh theaters. Chekhov also met Tschaikovsky and won the Pushkin Prize for *In the Twilight* and Tolstoi's praise for *The Bear.* **Jeanne Calment,** a thirteen year-old from Arles met **Vincent Van Gogh**. In 1995, she described him as "very ugly, ungracious, impolite and not well. One day, my future husband wanted to introduce him to me. He glanced at me unpleasantly, as if to say, 'not worth bothering with.' That was enough for me." In Arkansas City, Kansas, the town and school system were over-run by thousands of Sooners gathering for the **Oklahoma Land Run.** The Superintendent of Schools, **David Ross Boyd,** Ph.D., born to a closely-knit religious family on an Ohio farm in 1853 and graduated from Wooster College, organized a welfare program whereby businesses helped to pay Sooners to grade roads and school grounds, develop parks and plant trees. Initially opposed by the residents, Dr. Boyd was later praised for the improvements made to the city. He followed the Sooners to Oklahoma Territory in 1893 and became a founder of the University of Oklahoma and civic leader in Norman. In **1988,** Loudoun County Schools developed its *Artistry* training program for in-service teachers, based mainly upon the research of **Madeline Hunter**. On July 3 an Iranian **Airbus** was accidentally shot down over the Persian Gulf by USS Vincennes. Kurds were gassed by Iraqi forces under "**Chemical Ali**" in April. It was called the **ANFAL**, meaning "Spoils of War." On December 21, 1988, Pan Am 103 exploded over Lockerbie, Scotland, the bomb set by Libyan terrorists. It was a Boeing 747 goving from Heathrow to NYC with 259 passengers and crew. At 31,000 feet, a switch in Semtex explosive in a Toshiba tape recorder in cargo bin AVE4041PA on the left forward hold set the fuze. The airplane broke in half, killed all aboard, killed 11 residents of Lockerbie, and scattered debris over 845 square miles (about 2/3 the area of Rhode Island.) On June 23, in room 366 of the Dirksen Building in D.C., on a day when the AC had failed and the temperature inside had risen to 98F, Dr. **James Hansen**, from NASA, Goddard, warned a Congressional panel of the imminent threat of increasing the greenhouse effect by failing to control **atmospheric carbon dioxide**. He was concerned about a 0.6-0.8°C rise.

**Drive-Through Teller**

Convenience cannot be denied;
therefore draw alongside--whoosh--
pneumatic spiriting away
any needs you bring here: checks,
deposits, fees too dear to name.
Through-put care. Give it a code
to rout your anguish, grief and doubts.
Draw near. Take, and sign. Be saved.

**None comes more quickly;**

goes more contentiously
than Firm Opinion.
None.

## Step 89

On March 14, 1889, **Wilson Hobson** was born. On April 6, 1989, **Richard** sent a letter to the *Fauquier Democrat* about the danger of the school board seeking **a quick fix** in the form of a "*fast talker who makes promises with abandon*." After a few months they did. **June 6** the Roses **paid off** their home loan (second deed of trust). They visited Williamsburg Resort in **Norge** in June, and in July went to **Lake George** NY and **Shelburne** VT. On August 25, the New Teacher orientation began at Warrenton Junior High for Fauquier Co. Public Schools, with Tony **Lease r**eplacing Harold Lamm as Superintendent of Schools. Other administrators were: **James Brumfield,**Asst. Supt.; **Doris Standridge** as ASI, **Fred Essex** as Supt. of Personnel Relations, **Terry Arbogast** as Director of Personnel, in system of 8217 students, 597 teachers and a budget of $39,403,241, up 3% from 1988. **Glad Loring** died of conditions related to diabetes on October 18. He had been a lieutenant colonel in the Army, a concert pianist, a veteran of the Korean War, a colleague of Frank Rose in Special Weapons, the Commander of the Rio Grande Military Order of World Wars, and husband of Margaret for 47 years. They lived at 12541 Apache Place NE in Albuquerque and he was buried at the national cemetery in Santa Fe. **Carrie Dawn Raper,** daughter of Don Raper and stepdaughter of Susan Ann Rose Raper, died on April 23 in Tulsa at the age of 20. (She was born on 3/3/69.)On 8/9 Ginny wrote, "***The doctor told us today that there is no hope for Charlie. He is slowly dying of hepatitis B; the liver is already destroyed and his whole body is deteriorating. . . Jo and I have been to the hospital every day to see him Today his mind was clear most of the time and he talked of dear familiar things--of families in Hickman and his travels. His right eye is almost sightless from the internal bleeding. The doctor says he has never seen such a rapid case and nothing else can be done. Jo***

***called his brother, David, in Union City, TN. He is not coming until Charlie is gone. He had just gone back after a week here and felt he must get back to his job. Oh, what is more important than being with his big brother in his last days? How could he not come before the end?"*** On the 17th, she wrote: ***"He sleeps constantly now. Tomorrow they move him out of ICC unit. He needs no life support now. The end will come in God's own time. Jo and I visited him and talked to the nurse. They are just trying to keep him comfortable. He did not awake . . . An eclipse of the moon tonight. Beautiful! David Speed is making arrangements for burial in Hickman City Cemetery. How sad--Charlie is only 63 years old."*** **On** August 20, 1989,**Charlie Speed** died of a liver infection. He was buried in Hickman, KY on August 25, and honored at a memorial service on August 26 at the First Baptist Church in Alexandria, followed by a reception at Jo Sullivan's house. On September 25, Ginny wrote: ***"Talked to Susie last night. She is so busy with family and school. Sometimes I feel such a loneliness for her. It is only natural that Daddy and I see her so seldom. We are so far away. We are only a small portion of her life now. We cannot change that. The boys are so big now and have other interests. I miss them, but most of all I miss that precious little child we once had. Susie's childhood seemed so short before it was all over and she was off to college, then marriage, babies, working. Only for a little while I had her close to me--my little shadow--so sweet and loving. The saddest thing in life the heart must learn is that everything must change. Nothing endures except love. On Saturday we went to Charlie's apartment for the last time. David and Bess were there. They had come to take Charlie's personal things away. His furniture will be sold. David took Charlie's car, his organ, dishes, pictures, etc. They gave me a lovely silver pitcher, tray, and candlesticks. They gave Jo his typewriter and all his new kitchen pots and pans. It was so incredibly sad. We seemed to be intruders dividing up Charlie's favorite things. I still cannot believe that he is gone. Where? Will we see him again. Hear his hearty laugh and talk about Hickman again? Is he waiting for us there with his mother and our mother and all those dear ones we knew who are away from Earth? My dearest Daddy? At times my faith wavers, but returns strong and sure and steady like a flickering candle flame. My precious husband received a bonus from his work place today. He is so steady and dependable and Budget Co. is glad to have him. I thank our Heavenly Father for these years we are having together. They are such happy times. "*** On 10/03, Richard gave students in Earth Science at Taylor JHS the question "***How would Eratosthenes measure a planet shaped like a hot dog?***" He wanted to make a point about how we see what we expect to see. **Richard** was also teaching a **physical science** course at Cedar Lee JHS. As county science coordinator, he attempted to introduce some new methods of organization and instruction to the program, such as a data base on the elements which students could query using the computer lab. Students first learned how data was obtained and entered by collecting information in the library and lab. Then they sorted the information on index cards to look for patterns. Then,

working in teams, they used the data base Richard had loaded onto school PCs (in the same format as on their cards) to search for answers to more questions about elements, leading them to group elements according to certain characteristics so that they could begin to grasp how the **Periodic Table** was assembled.The Roses saw *The Thread that Runs so True* at Warrenton Middle School. (Script by Reginald Lawrence, Book by Jesse Stuart, Directed by **Carol Tomlinson** and Geoff Peters, assisted by **Clelia LaMonica.** Many of the student-actors were known to the family: Patrick Thornton (Doug and Bea's son), Brad Yates, Beth Whitmoyer, Jennifer Spellman, Kathy Babb, John O'Bryant—all seventh graders, and Stacey Lowe (7) and Eric Behrens (8). October 18 was **Robby's 15th** birthday and November 22, **Billy's 18th** birthday. On December 25, Susie wrote this after the Christmas dinner at Jo's, when **so much time has been spent, she says, talking about the kitchen and the food**, "***This year the added problems caused by the new superintendent in Fauquier and Dick's desire and need to get out of the Science Specialist's job and the growing problem of how to be available to Mommy and Daddy and Jo in their old age and to help them when they need me—Billy goes to W&M next year as a freshman and we somehow have to come up with >$8700 for the year.***" On December 28, they took **Bill** to dentists Borchardt and Williams in Charlottesville, to have his four **wisdom teeth** extracted. He was groggy afterwards but stood it very well. **Frank and Jo Rose's trip** on June 21-July 5 went to Old Hickory, Williamsburg, Alexandria, Old Hickory, McMinnville, Liberty, Old Hickory and back to Norman. In Williamsburg, they met up with Richard for the **Rose Reunion** from June 24-28. 10/16 In an earlier letter, Kathleen Warner mentioned that her sister Jane was having difficulties with her stepchildren. This comment prompted a response from Aunt **Aunt Ann Kirk,** who wrote that she had taught Frank Schimpf's children to wash, iron, mend and do other housework. The implication was that this was a thankless task. **BYA Dates: For 89 billion years ago**, there are no data available. **CE Dates:** In 389 CE, **St. Patrick** was born (d.461). In 1189, **Henry II** died leaving two contentious sons, **Richard** and **John**. During his reign, regular taxation and trial by jury (rather than by ordeal) had become common. In 1689 the Orange men of Derry refused to surrender to the Catholics. (The yearly June march in Portadown commemorates this event.) In 1789 the **Alien and Sedition Act** passed during hostility with Napoleonic France. **North Carolina,** home to some of the first Rose settlers, became a state on November 21. In 1889, ***The Washington Post March*** was published by J.P. **Sousa,** who once said that he would rather write a good march than a mediocre symphony. On April 20, **Adolf Hitler** was born. **Jane Addams** founded **Hull House** on South Halsted in **Chicago,** where, as she wrote: **"*To the south on Twelfth Street are many Germans, and side streets are given over almost entirely to Polish and Russian Jews. Still farther south, these Jewish colonies merge into a huge Bohemian colony. To the northwest are many Canadian-French and to the north are Irish and first generation Americans. The streets are inexpressibly dirty, the number of schools inadequate, sanitary legislation unenforced,***

***the street lighting bad, the paving miserable and altogether lacking in alleys and smaller streets, and the stables foul beyond description. The older and richer inhabitants seem anxious to move away as rapidly as they can afford it. They make room for newly arrived immigrants who are densely ignorant of civic duties. Meanwhile, the wretched conditions persist until at least two generations of children have been born and reared in them.*"** (Cutler, pp.48-49)
On March 24, 1989, **Captain Hazelwood,** who had been drinking, grounded the **Exxon Valdez** tanker on Bligh Reef, spilling oil in Prince William Sound. On July 19, **Alice Ruth O'Malley Robinson** had her 101st birthday party at Holy Name Cathedral, on Superior and State Streets, in Chicago, where she presented the church with a 5,568-pipe **Flentrap Organ**, built in Holland and requiring 5 years to construct and install. More than 2000 people attended the recital. One of them was **Mary Guldi Schimpf.** Mrs. Robinson grew up in the Holy Name parish and attended its school, as did her siblings. She moved to New York, where her husband was VP of **Chicago Bridge and Iron** Company. They returned to Chicago in the 1950s. On October 18, the **Galileo** spacecraft was sent from shuttle **Atlantis**. It passed **Venus**, twice passed Earth for a gravity boost and launched toward Jupiter. Its cost was $1.5B Soviets withdrew from Afghanistan and the **Afghan Civil War** began. The Taliban were the final winners. On November 9 the **Berlin Wall** fell. On June 4, the Chinese government crushed a pro-democracy demonstration in **Tiananmen** Square in Beijing. **Jan Edmiston** Lyon was asked to preach at David Campbell's installation in Springfield. She was pregnant with Ben and her mother was dying in North Carolina, but she agreed. A report of her sermon reached the search committee of the **Fairlington Presbyterian Church** in Alexandria. She and Fred Lyon were called to be "redevelopment pastors" of the church. They were to serve temporarily and provide the church with new purpose and direction after the split in 1987. On Oct 17 a **San Francisco earthquake** dropped the Nimitz Freeway, killing 42, one of whom was **Zambetti**, owner of *Stella D'Oro*, an eighty year old Italian biscotti shop in the Bronx, This led to the business being purchased by other corporations, the depreciation of its products, and its final demise. The ***Fauquier Democrat*** was purchased by Times Community News and became the *Fauquier Times-Democrat.*

## Palliative Care

Cloak the eyes. This trance though incurable can be made bearable salved by words' holy spit.

Now to Dub. Try to keep from doing what was done to you. You can't. The crazy rite you endured goes on. Nothing going, you spin in place. Take Dub Wishard. So short

of names, Lou picked Duvier, her Cajun uncle's. Called Duveer, Dovey, and Douche, his freshman year he made it Dub; joined the Gams. Spinning in place, his son's Duvier.

Dub Two's a Gam. His freshman year he made it Del—throwing up vodka, Corona, and a possum behind the House. Dub was thrilled Del was a Gam. Gastric lavage done, so was Del. The spin cycle might have wrung another Dub, male or female, but a year's drunk weekends later Del dropped out and had a wreck catching the truck who cut him off. An ER nurse named Tracie remembered him from Foster High playing drums. Two weeks later they lived together.

Spin in place like the Earth. Granted, it shifts position—who's tracking it? We search our dreams. We dream our searches.

Lena Lawrence the Director died. Rochester-trained, aspiring to make Dumont Choir a Shaw Chorale, she lost to Del. Trace said the altos and Dawn could stand Del's voice absent Lena's vocalise. The free-will help pleased Pastor Mills. (Lena'd been paid.) Were they surprised when Del arrived with speakers, drums, bassist, girl singer and keyboard charts riddles to Dawn Mills. Choir rehearsals Del called *sessions* two weeks until the Pastor sat in because Dawn made him. And Del returned to Dub's rec-room. The episode discouraged Del for seven years.

Dub would have worried but for Lou, Arla, and the Siamese. Cornering the cat at last—string-garrotted—his eye-brow bleeding for the last time, Dub couldn't say where Sweetie'd got to. That left Arla and Lou, his mom who wheezed at night across the hall as the live-in took her to the pot.

*—Sixteen of us, eight facing eight, me and Lois, fifteen years boxed Models; taped the boxes. Near as you now, she died. I'd like it that way—quick as a snip. Lucky Strikes slip off wheels to packs and hand to hand. None knows it. None feels the going. Where's my smoke? That Arla's hid it. My house she waits for, Lorena, as I for this BM. Nothing you've done can make it pass.*

Lorena screamed. Del hid his phone. Arla woke Dub. He held his pants up, elastic gone; stared at Lou's hand on his new tile floor. Arla called. She was the one waiting to call all this time. He guessed this while the orange-vested driver spoke.

—*So often when we get the call they're on the toilet. Maybe you know it's death. You rush to bear down, maybe to expel it.*

After that, Del left off calling Trace. That kind of talk she said upset her life with Mike—that dirty talk. From the Bahama cruise Arla owed herself without Dub, Ciguatera sent her home itching and sleepless. So the reefs blanching from touch and commerce reached into Dub's life. Arla insisted Lou woke her nightly. Later she saw Lou afloat in daylight, puffing over coffee, which burned like ice. As her cells' gates flew open, she stalled in dingy smoke. Where does this system end—skinsedge; chair-railed surround of supper table where Dub's sister Sis ladled soup after Grave-side; the wide-spread plans of Uncle Mick who followed Del into the bathroom smoking and talking so Del couldn't sit; or mycelium of enterprise infesting Mick, whose investments in micronils ran to millions; or blue film of gasps, wheezes, whistles, shrieks, fulminations, roars and whispers far and near—the Troposphere—or where trance ends?

Mick took Del on, showed him extruders; how loose gel hardened as it whipped and cooled. Grignard and cross-linked resins beyond him, Del preferred the show room: micronils cool to touch, silver, some jeweled for Asian markets, some jet black, others opal, intricately whorled within. Twelve women milled the edges smooth; inserted wire flowers for the line of Bagatelles, and custom-wrapped. Mick's division made Standards, Bagatelles, Economies, and Smoothgrips; employed hundreds. Del found his place.

So, on that day, left behind not by Rapture but by selves streaming off unsnagged from duties, Dub was alone. Coming home from shifting rows and columns, he knew

they'd been there—a glass in the sink, a drawer ajar. They watched; recorded twenty-four seven; put itching powder in his bed; turned his stools black with warfarin; flooded his crawl space; called and hung up; wired his home; wanted all he knew so they could scrub his mind, impair his power to think through their far-reaching, sordid, festering schemes—pustulant issues which took away his mother, wife and son. And now they wanted his house to stop him talking.

Here is the issue: incommensurables, incompatibles, an antinomy—the one in many; the many, one; protean; the appetite for savagery yet able to trace the beautiful line of a forehead, to slice out a shoulder of cow or a man for butcher or bodymerchant—transactions equal in value, all the same to restless creatures who can do anything.

Try loving others as yourself. It can be done but be prepared. Things will not change or go your way. Cut with the grain.

Pray simply *Our Father*, all from one source called Parent—a kind one—wanting all our best. Sis believed this. Her Papa, Lou's Bill, was why. Touchet Parish, where Bill came from was tallow trees, rice, scum-sheen inlets, gigging frogs mud mushing moonlit nights, and herons. You could shout. No one would hear. Green bottle flies hopped—or changed coordinates—to reappear a yard away.

So Bill and Lou appeared in Richmond, shivarees sung, lace curtains packed, and saints appeased, to roll tobacco and lay lead pipe. The city stretched past Ginter's Hill, past burley fields around Marse Robert, past Jordan's Branch, and sprouted taps to every house. *Like roots*, Bill said, the pipe he laid—cradled down, ropes pulled back up, Finch showing off standing on it, like a boat's hull overturned in the ditch a spring had filled—spread west and north. Its runners watered shacks and mansions all from one source. *Sis*

*girl,* he told her, *we seem to know things but it's the bayou feeds our roots. All of us tap it. We're only how it makes new life.*

Plumbing supply was Bill's new life for forty years. He passed in sleep. Lou heard him say *The anchor bolt has broken clean.* To Papa she was *ma gentille.* Lou called her Sis. *Take care your brother. Be sure you change him while I'm gone.* Now both were gone. And behind the faucets in his office Dub heard chuttering, churring, scraping—like men's low talk, crickets, and patting a grave with shovels. How could she change him? Cover his eyes? An ermine cloak of water turkeys lifts off the bayou past moss-hung live oaks. Fills the sky. He sees so much he's blind, entranced. Try to see. You can't. Blue ibis, *poule d'eau,* the cape-winged crow in tupelo sing one refrain. Cut with the grain.

*Cut with the grain.*

Who can name it? Not a person, place, or thing, *Hallowed be,* but who can name it? Sis wrote down what Father Jim had said. *We want an understanding that does not exceed our comprehension. More than this is pride, denial, waking dream. The Holy Name's a space for breath alone, where words cannot take root.* Sis was eldest of eight children. Two died at birth. Two died from smoking. Two over-ate. Dub went to college, grew Wishard & Son. Here's the truth Sis comprehended: she was the last.

Mick told her Del would have to go for calling Roxanne late at night. She knew his voice. The girls in Shipping all knew his voice. Mick had moved him twice. No more. Del had to go. Sis called Old Finch. *Cher, crois-les pas. He's not chaviré.* Her Papa said Finch was not nuts; only twanging his *bombarde* made him seem so. His mother's family, the Abouettes near Petite Anse, was glad Bill took him East to Richmond. Without Old Finch, Dub would be lost. He took her call.

*—Onri ci.*

*—Henri, it's Sis. For Del again.*

*—Ma gentille Sis. I'm achalé—fichu, you know?*

*—You're not worn out—just ornery.*

*—May kingdom come! How do I please you?*

*—Find him something.*

*—Nothing comes without looking. Del expects the fish to whistle and drop in his pocket, like my Looey keeping the orders Captain gave us. Finally shot for it. Did Captain mean to hold this hill forever? I said as his head blew off. In our retreat I found the Captain in a ditch.. Del don't know to leave the hill no more than Dub, shut in his office. But I will see what I can do.*

So kingdom comes. So Sis gave Mick the name Finch found. And Del then drove for Lavabo's whose PVC replaced the pipes Papa had laid. And Dub heard voices explaining what he had to do. *Thy will,* Sis prayed, *be done with us*. Unstuck from fate, we have choices. *Don't listen to them, Dub,* she said. Later that day, as he was told, Dub gave the keys to Finch, packed up, and drove away. In actions, in mind; on Earth, in heaven: *Go where we send you,* said the voices. Dub passed through Staunton, Paris, Wando, Fairall, and Fairborn. Finally he heard them say, *Stop here.*

Sis got the call. She shouldn't worry. He had enough to live on, to have some days to grow. Said his mind was a ferment, a yeast-pocked, frothy, brooding, bready mass stealing sleep. But in Chicago he ate quietly, found a two-flat, met Jack, a wholesaler of Tygon tubing at an expo. And *no, as far as Del, well, he's on his own.* Sis wrote the address. Vanua Levu sank, she read, while off Gwadar another island rose, caul steaming, crusted with clams. So debts are cancelled.

So in autumn, as Mick's plant released the latest SP-Micronils and locusts left their slit bodies to live with roots, Sis prayed for Dub's delivery, Del's restraint, and Mick's return. Mick's Master's was in scrambling olefins. He therefore knew the coming roll-out of Micronil's Scented Product line did not target Special People but SP-ganglia. Like a dead thing this secret lay between them. Sis prayed Mick could return as she watched him descend into roots. So few knew or understood—would ever know or understand—his life with roots. Sagging demand meant fewer jobs processing, packaging, pimping, promoting, lobbying, betting, marketing, banking, distributing—all rooted in a product multicolored, multitextured, rolled and sucked by infants and matrons, obsessively collected, sniffed by connoisseurs, sung about in ads. Lovers shared them. Heritage models in estate sales brought fortunes. All rooted in Micronils, the global brand of thimble-sized beads in signature packets uniquely etched, kept as hedges of intrinsic value. When demand sagged a tenth percent, another tenth, then four, then five, the SP line was introduced. Its neural hook through the noses of consumers pulled demand so high that Micronil became the market. As in the times when tusk-shells, butterfly-beads, crinoids, stamp-seals, and quartz bowed down to Lapis pendants treasured in Uruk, Micronil prevailed. The roots held.

Ancient history. You need to know the five events which made Mick change—five fingers pointing, pinching, tickling, promising, spanning Mick's underworld. You need to know how he returned, disentangled from roots, trance-emerged, ready for the bonfire.

First, Dub's Rescue. Sis had to see the way he lived. Mick drove. Backed up, the Dan Ryan did not release them until noon. Near Addison and Lincoln, Dub lived by tank-topped Lolla hot-damning in the hall her Lollo, a remora who gazed at traffic and his hairy legs with equal wonder. Their child, Wiinara, conceived playing Wii after marinara,

said look for Dub downtown in Grant Park. Mick turned around. In the forest of biped pachyderms without heads or torsos Dub could sleep shielded from signals by metal legs—the only place the voices left him. A tiny girl in a red sari danced on the slippery slates under the arcing fountain spat from the Giant's Face. Sis called it Dub's Siloam. But for Mick, trying to see around Dub's rocking head to change lanes, Millenium Park was only a marker to find Lake Street. Lollapalooza behind, the van sped south with Dub crying and drooling on the armrest. Back in Richmond, doctors, guessing Arla's toxin passed to Dub, gave IV mannitol and mood-molding mortar rounds flattening feeling, muting the voices, and calming Sis enough to leave Dub with an aide. Mick drove her home, stopping as always for the corner vagrant Sis gave her change.

The Altar Guild kept Sis while Mick opened the backlog on the roll-out. “Coca” every other message. The Secret out. Claims and payouts, rueful confessions, long litigation—all for a bead to finger and sniff. Mick knew how to avert it. Distraction was needed. Here is a city where half of the residents traded in counters worthless in themselves but standing for labor, love, trust, craft, and power—the roots that last as long as the trance goes unchallenged. Mick was pinched between the dream and how things were. The company line would be: Stonewall. Insist coca leaves are inert ingredients, claims unproven, cases unrelated. *Thank you for your query, but no interviews now.* Or ever. Mick knew this was coming. But Sis, always caring for hopeless cases and causes, did not know. The thought that she would soon know him differently burned. Soured his breath. *Reflux, Mick?* She said. *Did you take your pill?* He took off watch and ring, lay down beside her unsleeping, unable to fit back into their circle. He dozed.

His phone rang. Finch.

*—Ici Dub's room. Out of his head. Fou raide. Bill gone, now Dub. Me manque mes copains. He can't last. He already smells.*

*—But he's only sixty.*

*—We all only something when we go, you know. Tell gentille Sis.*

So wild on Benadryl, Dub had been dosed calm to a hypoxic end. In the hall with Mick while Sis sat with Dub, Finch frowned and said,

*—While you were gone, Del wrecked his truck on the Powhite. Lavabo's fired him.*

*—Where is he?*

*—Back in Dub's rec-room.*

*—Too much for Sis.*

*—Ma gentille Sis says charred meat and cigs will do me in. We're all foqué you know. I'm eighty. But I tell you about Sis. I knew her since petite. She's a gombo woman. Studies on you. Makes the soup to bring you round. A healer—a sad thing in this world to be.*

Dub did not come round. Paroxetine, the last of many speculations why voices screamed, shut the remainder of his liver down. Cloak their eyes. What we do is make bearable the trance they're in. Tickled by the thought, Mick found the Distraction needed by Micronil: The Annual Turnaround Awards and Exchange Sales Event. Matchlessly made by eating, food's demand was the model Mick discovered. Coupons the donors received discounted purchases of the next new line. All the old micronils melted in vats over bonfires circled by dancers and singers in civic festivals. Memo to managers:

***Only replace what was made. Think of a soup stock in one pot, serving all.***

## Step 90

In 1890, **Row houses** with bay windows were built in London suburbs like **Kenton**. They resembled the house at 15 Hillview near Gooseacre Lane, where the Frank Rose family lived from 1957 to 1960. **Thurman Hobson** was born on December 19, 1890 and **Emma Lee Towles** on September 20**.** Rose cousin **Katie** was born on March 12. **Maria Schimpf** was born on July 1, 1890 in Offenbach to Wilhelm and Eva. In 1990, Richard: taught an evening Biology course for Lord Fairfax Community College (Fauquier Campus Extension), with Susie took Bill and Rob to soccer games, continued to work as science specialist for Fauquier Schools under **Doris Standridge,** the Assistant Superintendent for Instruction, collected data for the Science Education Program Assessment Model **(SEPAM)** developed by State Science Supt. **Joseph Exline** and Asst. Supt. **Jim Firebaugh,** regularly met with science teachers and principals and the curriculum and instruction management team at the Warren-Green building, helped with some elementary and middle school science fairs, served on the Family Life Education Committee, took his earth science class from Taylor JHS on field trips to sites in regions of Ridge & Valley (Bald Knob), Piedmont (Fauquier, including the Fauquier Outdoor Lab) and coastal plain (VA Beach, Norfolk, Hampton), served on testing committees examining the AP, ITBS, TAP, & COGAT tests, presented a proposal in Richmond on 3/15 and 4/30, worked with the Fauquier Extension and Forestry Services, engaged in environmental work like the March for Parks (3/24), Environmental Awareness Week (4/2-6), Blandy Farms training for teachers (4/18), and Earth Day (4/21), worked with various teachers, such as George Murphy, Eric Dalton, Palma Rehm, Clelia Lamonica, and others on classroom projects, and continued to develop the Fauquier Outdoor Lab and Fauquier Outdoor Education Association. Susie occasionally met with **Nancy Abbate** on Saturdays in Woodbridge. She went to Fredericksburg 2/24 to consult with Dr. Durkin, recommended by Nancy, concerning dysmenorrhea and fibroids. On 3/16 she assisted at the open house at Southeastern ES, one of several schools that she went to every day as a visiting teacher for the gifted education program, called **Pathways.** On 4/4 she set up the Invention Convention at Southeastern ES and on 4/23 she worked at the Open House for Margaret Pierce ES, another of her schools. **Rob** made a winning presentation using the Apple IIC at the county **History Day** 3/24. Richard also attended writers' conferences at Lord Fairfax CC(3/10 with John Haines and 4/7 with Ed Lynskey, who gave encouragement but no cigar) and at the 4H Center (5/19) . **Bill** was honored at the "top 30" dinner at FHS on 5/8. He and Susie went to the William and Mary Open House on 4/21 in Williamsburg. On April 15, **Ann Kirk** wrote Kathleen Warner that she had broken her ankle while getting into Tony Van's car. On June 6 **Richard,** in a state of unwarranted alarm, left a sealed letter with Joseph **Volpe**, J.D. regarding his concerns about the superintendent. It was only to be opened in the event of his death within 5 years. On June 10, **William L. Rose** graduated from Fauquier High School, receiving a $500 scholarship from the Fauquier Fund. On June 19, The Roses saw a **Pine Grosbeak** in their yard at Rock Creek.

Baccalaureate was on 6/10 and graduation 6/17. Richard went to see lawyer **Volpe** on the morning of 6/13 and met with Delores Dalton in the afternoon to discuss her being the new science specialist. Beginning in July, Richard began to **interview** in other school systems (7/10 at T.C. Williams HS in Alexandria; Herndon on 7/3; Loudoun County at Sterling Middle School on 7/11, and Leesburg on 7/16) as he prepared to return to full-time classroom teaching at Fauquier High School in the fall. Principal Dave Graham and Asst. Principal Lynn Ward offered him a position as **assistant principal** for curriculum development and staff training, but he declined. He looked forward to writing a year of Biology lesson plans using the *4-MAT* method. **Bill** was doing painting and yard-work and summer school, working from 7 to 3 during the week and 1-9 on Saturdays and sometimes Sundays. His eligibility to be carried on the family's car insurance was cleared by AAA on 8/24. Both Rob and he were also having **dental** work done by Drs. Kerns and Harris. On 7/27, **Mary Lou Trimble** gave a farewell luncheon for **Doris Standridge** at her home. On July 31, Susie had a hair appointment in Warrenton in the morning followed by a **Pre-Op** at 1:30. She went to the the hospital for a D& C procedure at 9:00 a.m. On August 2. Richard started the fall Biology course for the college on 8/23 by taking the course outline to Sharon Klein at the "Barn" (LFCC extension). Science department and high school faculty meetings came at the end of the next week and high school classes began on September 3. Parents' night at FHS was on 9/12. At William and Mary, parents' weekend was 9/21-22. On 9/26 Richard began to sponsor the school literary magazine. Later in the year, the literary group decided to give it a new name: *Voices and Visions.* His school duty day was Thursday. Along with his new schedule of lesson plans, labs, tests, and **full-time instruction**, Richard also returned to pep rallies, picture-taking days, school assemblies, duty days, Homecoming (10/5), staff meetings, bake-sales, and committee assignments. He went to the **Virginia Association of Science Teachers conference in Charlottesville** on 11/9-10, where Susie and he stayed at the Omni Charlottesville. On 11/26-30, the literary magazine had its fundraiser. On October 4 the Roses finished paying for their share of **Wilderness** in Fredericksburg. November 11 Richard arranged with **Alan Poe** at the Fauquier Democrat to print ***The Profit of Doom,*** sent a copy and an essay on it to **Hayes Walker**, and others. Nov 20-23 Bill, Rob and Richard stayed in lot 64 at **Wilderness** while **Susie** returned to Mary Washington Hospital for surgery. **Dr. Durkin** removed one ovary and the uterus. The chimney sweep came on 12/3. The NSTA conference was in Washington, D.C. on 12/13-15. On Dec 30 The Roses bought living room furniture at the **Hub,** including a large sofa, a love seat (which ultimately went to Ginny's apartment at the Fountains, along with a wing-chair), a maple end table with a wing (later a dictionary table in the library in the Fountains), and a glass-topped lamp-table (later given away to Jason Czechowski in Norman, OK). It was the first matching set they had ever owned. In December, **Jo Sullivan** joined the **Historic Alexandria Docents** and went to the Annual conference of the National Society of **Colonial Dames**, XVII Century, in D.C. **Frank and Jo Rose** went to San Antonio, Sea World, and Tennessee. 12/08 **Ann Kirk** wrote

about Uncle Jerry's death and trouble with Bob Byers's son regarding her filing for widow's benefits. **Leo Kirk** died in December, and **Leonard Kirk** in October. Other siblings of her husband, Urban Kirk, were Ruby and Norma. **Olga Marie,** called "Sis," was living in Kentucky. Her husband John had died in 1971. **CE Dates:** By the year **900 CE,** the great Guatemalan city of **Tikal** was uninhabited. In 1790, **Benjamin Franklin** died at the age of 84. The **population** of the United States was 3,172,444. The Census Bureau in 1890 declared the **frontier** closed. **Edward N. Yager** operated a general store and Post Office in the town of **Yager** on Charles Creek four miles northwest of McMinnville. The town received its name on July 16 when the post office was established. Edward Yager had married into the family of his previous employer, Oliver **Towles.** On December 19, Governor George Steele approved a bill for **Oklahoma Territory** to establish three educational institutions: an agricultural and mechanical college at Stillwate, a normal school at Edmond, and a university at **Norman**, which was to donate 40 acres for the campus and $10,000 for the first building. In 1990, the **Hubble** telescope, mounted on shuttle Discovery, was launched as the first stage of the **Great Observatory Series**. Bus-sized, it weighed 10T, traveled at 5 mi/sec and came to be a $7B investment. Its focus was readjusted in 1993. It discovered the **Hubble deep field** of previously unknown objects; demonstrated the likelihood of black holes; showed a comet striking Jupiter's rings; showed the speed of expansion and accelerating Hubble disc expansion. It was 10 miles above Earth. Its mission ended in 2011. The **National League for Democracy** won the parliamentary election in **Burma** and the despotic opposition arrested its leader, **Aung San Suu Kyi**. She remained under house arrest for eleven of the next 17 years. She was kept under arrest when her husband died in Britain. She was put into solitary confinement from 2003-2007, despite having been awarded the Nobel Peace Prize. Meanwhile, the governing party indulged in pillage, genocide, expropriation and other prerogatives of unchecked demonic despotism. Beginning of the **Human Genome Project.** After 27 years, **Nelson Mandela** was released from prison. Many in South Africa feared an armed uprising. About 10% of all nursing homes with at least 30 beds had **Alzheimer's special care units**. Training for aides working in these units was not so special. **Jim Henson**, father of **Kermit** & the **muppets**, died on May 16. He learned some of his tailoring skills in college from **Betty Beale**, who retired to The Fountains in Alexandria, where she lived for many years, was always the best dressed, and served on the Residents Council when other elders couldn't be bothered. Wealthy individuals from the **financial services sector** contributed $**15.4million** to political campaigns.

# 90

**Always read the contents**

Now: the last ninety steps, the years and eons
mixed ingredients, their composition
and performance yours. Now and here:
loosely strung, shoving aside the past
yet homeless without it, I present it all--
all the now and here that were
in one life confection, one self
known past knowing and unknowing.
Mixed ingredients I give you,
listing strongest first, the dense
and durable Earth, its means and limits
setting the conditions for all collections to follow,
the last most rare: healing breath.
Read carefully the Contents of each package,
each transect, each sample across times.

## Step 91

**Alma Blanche Helm** was born on Sept. 27, 1891. Birth of **Marguerite (Greta) Schimpf** on 8/15 to Wilhelm and Eva in Offenbach. On January 24, 1991, in a letter to her niece **Rosemary** Lapinski, **Aunt Ann Kirk** explained that the weather conditions had been so icy in St. Louis since December 19 that she could not go out. Something had told her to get extra groceries and so she bought enough to last almost a month. As her supply of fruit dwindled, the mailman delivered a box of Florida oranges and grapefruit. It was a gift from **Audrey Johnson**. **Aunt Ann Kirk** said, ***" I feel like I've been blessed in a lot of ways."*** In another letter on March 13, Ann wrote of her ***"sweet sister Frances"*** being her favorite. She always resented that **Father John van de Riet** had prevailed over his brother, her father **Anton**, to send **Frances** to Chicago. **Bonnie Blassingame Smith** died in Norman, OK on October 17. Richard worked at the library at **George Mason University** on January the 5th and 12th and at the **Writing Center** in Maryland on January 6 and 13. Winter exams were 1/23-25. In February, Guidance counselors scheduled class visits in order to talk to students about their schedules and plans. Richard continued to teach nights for Lord Fairfax CC, to supervise the literary magazine (*Voices and Visions*), to attend faculty and department meetings and in-service training, and to serve on committees concerning the SCA and SSR (i.e. the student council and in-school restriction). Bill's spring break was on March 2, the high school's break was March 28-29. Grades were due on April 9. On May 4 at 11:05 a.m., **Robert Rose** left for **Stennis Space Center** in Mississippi with his science teacher, **George Murphy,** after winning a prize from NASA for his simulation-software of a space station with artificial gravity. They arrived in New Orleans at 12:40. He was recognized at a School Board meeting on 5/13 at 7:00 p.m. He went to the **Prom** on May 18. On June 5, Richard went to a poetry reading in Arlington and to readings at the **Writers' Center** on June 9 and 16. Afterward, he wrote this:

**After readings at the Writers Center**
**(Another Mélange)**

Although it scares me think

how you may take my every word (1),

I'm onstage now and, like stars

seen as through scrim (2), ready or not (3),

give you back Moyshe's eye (4);

in twirls of breath give uncles (5), sparks

bouncing off our lunch buckets (6),
a roan in winter (7), boys that spit (8)
or sit Shiva (9) rocking grief,
the leaky bedroom (10) of our life,
Arab hundreds, thousands (11)—or else
a doll expert (12)—and wait to see
if, when we meet in seas of verbs
swimming from your mouths (13), you know
I am a *be* (14). If not, and you
take them back as any snake
pulls inwards what she would digest (15);
scars (16), perhaps, her fragile armor (17)
on sullen rasps of fallen thought (18):
sniff then, like disdainful trees (19)
above the quilted crowd (20), the incense
of crushed grass (21), and if we meet
be sure that I am not your type (22)

(Based on readings April 4, 1991 from Moore (1), Weaver (2), Larew (3), Seagoe (4), Larew (5), Shafner (6), Griffin (7), Larew (8), Jett (9), Miller (10), MacDonald (11), Tourette (12), Hancock (13), White (via Corbitt, 14), Hanly (15), Hancock (16), Fowler (17), Gilbert (18), Kathryn (19), Larew (20), Murray (21), and Barnett (22).)

Last grades for the school year were due on June 14 and the last day to discontinue teaching contracts for the following year was July 15. On July 19-24 the **Roses** went to **New Paltz** for intensive French courses and then went on to **Montréal.** Richard and Rob took the French courses while Susie explored the history of the Huguenot town. On July 26 the **Frank Rose** family visited in Tennessee. On August 8, Richard went on a tour of **Fauquier farms** with **William Brown** of the **Soil & Water Extension Service**. The furnace at Rock Springs was cleaned on 8/9. While Bill was at a meeting in Richmond on 8/13, Richard started a series of **interviews** in **Loudoun**

**County** lasting until August 16**.** He started up classes for **Lord Fairfax** on August 19. Rob did yard work for the **Aldertons**. Susie visited in Alexandria on August 20. Bill went to William and Mary on 8/24. He later went to a College Pro business conference in Pennsylvania on 8/28. Richard returned to teaching at Fauquier High in room 701 at 8:30 on August 26. The deadline for hearing from **Loudoun Schools** was September 4, but Richard was called back for more interviews on 9/17 because the administration in LCPS determined that the earlier interviews had not been properly advertised. Richard waited at North Street Offices with other applicants, Joy Bauserman and Deborah Roudebush. Susie's *Back to School* night at Northwestern ES was on 9/25. The *Family Weekend* at W&M was 9/27-28. Richard returned to school routines at Fauquier HS. On October 1, the car went to **Chick's** in Warrenton for repairs. Soon afterward, **Richard** learned that he had been selected to work for **Loudoun** Schools as Supervisor of Mathematics and Science, which required a daily commute between Warrenton and Leesburg. Throughout October, Richard continued his physical training in the FHS weight room under the guidance of **Jim Pulchine.** The last Biology class he taught for Lord Fairfax CC was on 10/16, when he handed the class over to **George Murphy.** Rob took the PSAT on 10/22 at 7:00 while Richard went with other staff from Loudoun to the **Center for Information Technology**, a dark glassy polyhedron near Dulles airport. (The transition from Fauquier to Loudoun was evidently a particularly confusing period. Dates for some events were recorded in both years 1991 and 1992. I leave the contradictions as I found them.) The memorial service for **Christine Pavone,** the Bruches' neighbor on Howell Ave., was on September 11, 1991.On 10/12, Bill came home and **James Fincham** cut down another tree. On October 3 **Glenn Catalano** came up from Charlottesville to provide some financial advice. Susie took an in-service class with **Effie Fox** at the **Fauquier Outdoor Lab** on 10/30 while Richard had a TB tine test checked in Loudoun. In November, Richard met Loudoun's science and math department chairs, attended **NVAST** at Robinson HS (11/2) and the **VAEG Conference** with Susie on 11/15-16 in Williamsburg. On Dec 6, For the commute, the **Roses** bought a gray Dodge Spirit demo model from Fairfax Chrysler on a trade-in of the 1984 Plymouth Voyager, which had a carburetor problem. After the **Bells concert** on 12/15, Susie began **hand-bell practices** for the spring of 1992. **CE Dates:** In **391 CE,** Christians destroyed Ptolemy's **Serapian** temple in **Alexandria**. In this temple, the priests, using the technology of **Hero** of Alexandria, made an iron chariot, or **quadriga** of Apollo-Helios, to fly through the air as a piece of magnetite in the ceiling was slowly uncovered. It was timed so that the chariot levitated as the sun's rays struck Serapis. Hero also made **pneumatic doors**, holy water dispensers, moving statues and other magical props for the priests. **Theodosius the Great** attacked the pagan literati, leading Alexandria's **Theophilus** to release the mobs against intellectuals—and their books. ***So many books lost! So much experience lost! So much plunges into the crevasse!*** The writing of the earliest known **Qur'an** when the **Dome of the Rock** was built dates to **691**. In 1491, the sultan of Morocco pillaged **Timbuktu**.

Hoping to find gold, he found salt. The city was a great trans-Saharan trading center for gold, salt, slaves and learning,but its importance declined after this time. Tea Master **Rikyu** died in 1591. In 1791, Boswell's **Life of Johnson** was published. At the great Handel Festival in Westminster Abbey, **Haydn** heard ***Messiah*** and reportedly wept during the *Hallelujah*. When he returned to Vienna in 1795, he turned his attention to choral music—six new masses and two oratorios, ***The Creation*** and ***The Seasons.*** He said ***"I was never so religious as during the composition of The Creation. Daily I fell on my knees and asked God for help.***" Haydn was 65 and during the years 1797-1798 he completed this work, whose text was compiled by **Baron Van Swieten**. In Washington, **Pierre L'Enfant** presented his plan for the nation's capital. The Manchester, Bury and Bolton Canal, built for industrial shipping, was begun in **Richmond**. It passed through the property of **Agecroft** and was completed in 1795. In Ireland, **Parnell** died on October 6, 1891. As James Joyce wrote in "*Ivy Day in the Committee Room*" in ***Dubliners: "He is dead. Our uncrowned king is dead. Erin, mourn with grief and woe For he lies dead whom the fell gang of modern hypocrites laid low."*** **Cesaire, son of Sylvester and Julienne, and slave of Mrs. Antoine Guidry** since his birth on 5/10/1850, and whose grandfather and mother were Narcisse and Henriette, was **baptized** at the Chappelle de Plaquemine in Acadia parish. (From the records of Our Lady of the Sacred Heart.) On May 12, the city of **Norman, OK** was incorporated. A severe famine occurred in the region of the **Volga.** In 1991 began the Persian **Gulf War.** The **Compton Gamma Ray satellite** was launched by NASA as the second stage of the Great Observatory Series. **Tau protein** was identified as the main component of neuron-fibrillary tangles in **Alzheimer's disease**. The government of **Somalia** collapsed and insurgents like **Hizbul Islam** terrorized the people. The obstetrics clinic of Dr. **Hawa Abdi** and her daughters became a triage center. War, drought and malnutrition filled the clinic. Then the terrorists attacked the center but Dr. Abdi faced them down.

## Step 92

In 1892, **William (Wilhelm) Schimpf** left Offenbach with his pregnant wife, Eva, traveled to Hamburg, and sailed to North America on the Baumwell (built 1890) ca. May 1892. He arrived in Montréal in June**. Maria Schimpf,** daughter of Eva and Wm. possibly died from **cholera** on the **Baumwell**. (See NY Times article from 8/29/1892) and **Joseph Carl Schimpf** was born 11/12 in Chicago. (Eva was not completely sure that Joseph was William's, but later genetic testing confirmed that he was.) Birth of **Frank Lyons Rose, Sr**. to **David Crawley Rose and Nannie Sue Lyons Rose** on September 27 at Grosse Isle in Crowley, Louisiana. Birth of cousin **Leora** on January 16. In 1992 , **Josephine (Van de Riet) Krollman** died on July 11. **Rob** returned on January 7, took the PSAT, and on the 8th he went to Court. The Roses visited with **John and Joan Broughton** at their home (Jan 4). **Bill** returned to William and Mary on 1/15. The Roses swam on Fridays at Dale City and during the fall, often walked on Sundays in Rock Springs. Susie practiced

weekly with the handbells group at Warrenton Presbyterian Church. She continued to see Dr. Durkin, the gynecologist whom Nancy recommended, in Fredericksburg. On March 6-7 the Roses attended the VCTM conference at Norfolk Omni, & the **conference on innovative science** curriculum for high ability learners, at Wm. & Mary. The Roses went to Bradley ES Funfair on March 14 and saw a Star Trek exhibit on 3/15. They picked up Bill from William and Mary on April 3. Rob took the SAT on May 2. On 5/4 Dr. Harris replaced one of Richard's crowns. Fauquier High School Awards Night was 5/28. **Susan Ann Rose** graduated from the University of Oklahoma College of Law on May 10 at the Lloyd Noble Center. She wrote "***I've been promoted to Assistant District attorney for Cleveland County. I'm still going to the City Attorney in July. Thank goodness this is all over. Guess you all are staying busy, as usual. From your last letter, your new job sounds like it really keeps you hopping. Daddy bought Mother a bright new shiny red Chevrolet Cavalier for her birthday. . .***" In November Susan became an associate with Manchester, Hilten and Healy, concentrating on civil rights, law enforcement defense, sexual harassment and age discrimination. **Richard's new job** in Loudoun County consisted of solving school and classroom problems related to math and science instruction and buffering teachers and instruction from misguided initiatives. In detail, the job as math-science supervisor in Loudoun from 1991 to 2001 involved curriculum development, teacher training, classroom visitations, event management, arranging travel to conferences, managing several program budgets, personnel management, program design, and, with other supervisors, general trouble-shooting for the staff of the Department of Instruction. Here's a summary by **category** for 1992. The same pattern was followed every year until he retired in 2001, so this level of detail will not be presented for other years. **Curriculum development:** attending state education meetings about Superintendent Spagnola's "Core" Initiative on the 25th floor of the James Monroe Building in Richmond on 1/6, Executive Board meeting of **Virginia Council of Teachers of Mathematics** in Charlottesville (1/11). **Teacher training:** Computer Literacy meetings, Hazmat training for teachers, training and meetings for K-5 teachers. Richard worked with presenters like **Margaret Jefferies** concerning the *Hands-On Science Program* & to train teachers on science teaching at Aldie on Math (2/27), Sully ES (1/27) and Cool Spring (1/28) and, with **Marilyn Bos** at Guilford ES, on Family Math and again at Guilford on 4/2 for a science in-service; & with National Air and Space Museum for "teacher nights" (1/6), training of teachers and students on AIDS (assembly by Kaiser Permanente at PVHS 3/16 and subsequent development of a county-wide AIDS awareness program, and coordination of AIDS awareness events on December 1 yearly), On April 2, he presented a science workshop on ***Sustaining Continuous Inquiry*** (Mary Budd Rowe's phrase) in science teaching at **Guilford ES**, with the help of Principal **Carol Shackleford** and **Asst. Linda Robinson**. He showed how the same materials could be used in different ways at different grade levels. On 4/30 he followed up with a math in-service. With Sandra Ballard from Optical Data (4/13), Richard began to introduce the

use of digital images in the *Windows on Science* program to teachers at Sully ES (6/1,6/8) as part of their curriculum pilot project. More training sessions were done on 4/21. On 4/25, he met with representatives from George Washington University to discuss special services for teachers through their Loudoun campus. And on 10/22 he went with Larry Farmer to the Center for Innovative Technology and to the Xerox training center at Landsdowne on 6/6 to discuss their possible services to schools. On 8/21, the Xerox training center's **interactive meeting room** was demonstrated as a tool for improving the conduct of meetings, conflict resolution, and decision making. On 6/29-7/2 Richard took the *Patterns of Thinking* course. **Event management:** like the National Science Bowl (2/23), the Sugarland ES Invent America competition, J. Lupton Simpson MS Oral Reading Competition (4/2), Scholastic Challenge at LCHS (3/10), *Leadership Loudoun* (3/10), printing science fair programs at Monroe Vo-Tech (2/10). He prepared the regional science fair at Loudoun Valley HS (2/13-2/14 and 3/4) for all county high schools ( Loudoun County HS (3/3), Park View HS (3/5) and at Broad Run HS) & got end-rolls from the newspaper office to cover the tables at the fair and signs for the fair from Julia at Catoctin (3/2). On March 11, he attended a seminar led by Jay McTighe. On March 16, with the help of teachers and principals, **Lyle Skarzinski, Ken Culbert, Joe Spicer, Marilyn Edmondson, Joy Bauserman**, and others, Richard ran the **Regional Science Fair** at Loudoun Valley High in Purcellville, VA. He borrowed exhibits of Gemini and the Space Station from NASA and catered breakfast and lunch for judges. Following the science fairs, he sent documentation to ISEF, counseled winners, and debriefed science chairs to make improvements on the next fair. Winners were presented to the school board on 4/14 and given prizes such as *State of the World* and many special category prizes. He also assisted with the fourth grade Forensics competition at Leesburg ES (4/23), the VAST Conference in Roanoke (4/24), Math Awareness week (4/27), and National Air and Space Museum Family Night (5/8). **Arranging travel:** for science and math teachers to state and national conferences such as NSTA (3/27) and NCTM (4/1); and for student science fair winners (4/20) to the ISEF in Nashville. **Managing budgets:** on Annenberg Grants (2/14) & arranging Nystrom products presentations. Richard continued to meet with textbook vendors such as Ms. Middleton from Harcourt-Brace-Jovanovich, Mary Jo Huycke from McDougall-Littel (2/10), Charlie Robinson (Holt Rinehart Winston) math & science chairpersons, & vendors for science bids (1/3). All budgets were due to the School Board on 5/20 and the end of the fiscal year was June 30. On 4/28 he attended the Challenge 2000 presentation in Richmond and the Math Publishers' presentations on 4/29. Richard went to the Federal Chapter 2 Institute in Fredericksburg on July 5. More math textbook presentations were made by Kathy Yuditsky (5/26, 6/2) and Key Curriculum (6/4) in anticipation of the county's book adoption. **Personnel assistance:** to counsel individual teachers like Mr. Harvey at Sterling MS (1/31), Gina Peschard at SRMS (2/7, and whose honors 6th grade class went to Princeton Plasma Lab on 3/29), Bill Jenner at Ashburn ES (2/22). Dr. Collins, the new Personnel Director (following John Daniels) was honored at a

reception on 5/4. Richard met with principals Harrell (PVHS 5/13) and Landolt (SMS, 5/14) and math teacher Eric Stewart (SRMS 5/13), who later became a principal. **Program design:** He gathered information from meetings in Richmond on lab safety (1/30) & work on laboratory construction issues with Mr. Mohler (2/18), on math teaching at Metz JHS in Manassas (1/30), on technology in Harrisonburg (2/3-2/5) and technology standards (2/25). **Trouble-shooting:** Concerns were: the Whole Language Course at UVA (3/27), GMU Region 9 Technology Conference (3/28), **Artistry** staff development group(1/28), which later became the Thoughtful Assessment committee (5/1,5/7, 5/26, 5/29) who examined grading and assessment issues. Richard also assessed new technology like the "Real-Time Writer" introduced by Betty Mar Little and Bob Nakles (2/27), materials on astronomy and aerospace at the National Air and Space Museum with Ms. Slattery (2/9, 3/14), the Whole Language Course (5/22), the PRISMS physics teacher training program initiated by Debbie Roudebush (3/6-7, 3/13-14, etc.); on administration with other supervisors and principals (2/9, 2/11, 2/19, 2/25, 4/2) and the school board. He met with Ms. Sooh from WNVT (4/6), hammered out the development of the new Technology Training program in the Technology Staff meeting on 4/16 and in many other meetings (4/7,4/14,4/21,5/5, 5/8,5/13,5/15, 5/19, 5/21). He assisted with a presentation of the technology plan to the School Board on June 9. On June 10, Richard and Larry Farmer attended sessions with American Association of University Women on short-changing girls in science instruction. Funds for curriculum pilot projects were to be made available to schools based on the recommendations of a pilot committee meeting first on 4/16. He met with parents (LEAP) at JLSMS on 4/15 and Family Night at Cool Spring ES (also 4/15) and at the Invent America Reception at Sugarland ES (4/16). Richard presented to principals on 4/22. Beginning on July 8, he worked on his materials storage area in the basement of the North Street Offices building, a dark area called "**the bins**." On 7/6, instructional supervisors presented the **Virginia Literacy Passport** to the principals. In-services for all teachers for the 1992-1993 school year began on 8/3 with **Joel Barker**'s *Power of Vision* tape. It was followed by **Shirley McCoy**'s presentation on multicultural issues, a presentation by supervisors on the revised Artistry program, and (on 8/6) **Robert Acre**'s *Success for All* presentation about teachers' expectations for students. **Carol Basham**, the Head Start Coordinator, taught the *Math Their Way* program for pre-K and Kindergarten teachers (10/22). Richard met with the Math staff on the same day. School began for teachers on September 1, with in-services on the next day and students arriving on September 8. Richard's TB skin test was on 10/28. The **Dalton**s' picnic in Rixeyville on 6/14 was a chance for Richard to visit with former science department colleagues from Fauquier. The last day of classes in Loudoun (6/16) was followed by teacher workdays and curriculum development days. In May, **Jo Sullivan** had a fall and stayed in the hospital for 2 weeks. On July 28, **Ginny Bruch** thanked the Roses for **painting the garage**. and for Susie's summer visits and planting of flowers. The **Frank Rose** family went to **San Antonio**, College Station, Fiesta Texas Park, and San Angelo. In mid-July,

the **Roses v**isited with the Frank Rose family and the Hobson family in McMinnville. At 72 years of age, Frank Rose rode at 72 mph on the **Rattler** roller coaster at Fiesta Park with **Frank Smith**. With its drop of 183 ft, it was the biggest wooden roller coaster in the world. They also spent time on the River Walk, then returned to eat dinner at **Casa Rio,** a restaurant which Frank Rose had discovered years earlier when on TDY to San Antonio. In McMinnville, the Roses met up with them at the new **Best Western** motel, where they had adjoining rooms. **Susie** and Nancy got together on 10/19 and other times. Richard continued to receive guidance on strength and conditioning from **Jim Pulchine** at Fauquier High School (10/21 & 23 on into December). He incorporated this into his daily exercise regime, which already included regular walks, sometimes with Susie. Rob took the PSAT on 10/22 and went to Dr. Kerns for dental work on 10/23. Susie continued to rehearse weekly with the bell choir. As the new school year began, Richard was once again involved in events like the Scholastic Team Competition (10/29 at LCHS), Nystrom product demonstrations, the **VQUEST** program, a state initiative for teacher training using Eisenhower funds (10/31-11/2 Norfolk conference), the activities of state and local professional organizations like NVAST (Robinson HS McLean and NCTM in Baltimore on 11/2 after VQUEST). Typically, these organizations scheduled their meetings at the same time of year. The schedule quickly filled with meetings with the other instructional supervisors, math and science chairs, principals, Director of Instruction (Larry Farmer), and key teachers like **Eric Stewart**, **Pat McIlvaine** at the VPI Extension Office (She studied macroinvertebrates with students at Sleeter's Lake on 11/10), and **Carol Basham**, along with regular meetings on technology with supervisor **Bob Nakles**, and special committees like the *Washington Post* mini-grant committee (11/8), and special groups like the Foxcroft staff (Event on 11/13 at 7:30 p.m. For Ms. Lederman, related to the famous scientist), speeches to various groups (as to principals on 10/13 regarding funds available from VQUEST). On November 3, 1992, after the election of President Clinton, Ginny planned a brunch for **Jo Sullivan** for Sunday 11/8, to celebrate her birthday with 14 people from the Army Library. Lida Churchville planned the event. Eight days later, **Tom Clarke** died in Culpepper. Bee and Tom had moved from 13 W. Howell to Culpepper in 1972. He was buried in Oakhill Cemetery, Fredericksburg. On November 14, the Roses drove to Williamsburg with Bill and then went to the Virginia Association for the Education of the Gifted conference in the afternoon, returning 11/16. This conference on **gifted education** was directly related to both Richard's and Susie's jobs. On 11/21, Susie took her classes to the National Aquarium and Richard went back to Sleeter's Lake with Pat McIlvaine, who also worked with Vicky Dorsey, a science teacher from Loudoun Valley HS. Choir practice at Warrenton Presbyterian was at 8 p.m. the same day. Meanwhile, Richard was also presenting to each high school's math and science faculty at staff meetings and meeting with the school system construction team concerning new laboratories at Seneca Ridge Middle School (11/26), and preparing the first draft of budgets for evening meetings with the School Board (12/3 7 p.m. With hearings on 12/9 and 17), and continuing to work on the

revision of the Artistry teacher-training program with the committee at the **ASCD** (Association for Supervision and Curriculum Development) conference in Baltimore (12/4-6), where the program became *Thoughtful Assessment.* He also worked with Director Sharon Ackerman's K-5 committee on curriculum, and on in-service training for teachers at Ashburn ES, and demonstrations of George Washington's resources to principals on December 11, and meetings at Stonewall HS in Manassas and at the Lacey Instructional (Hands On Science) Center on 12/12. In Loudoun Schools, Richard was learning to use a dial-up **modem** that permitted data transfers at a rate of 14Kbits per second. (By 2006, such transfers occurred at a rate of 6B bps.)The **Bells Concert** was on December 15. Field Day for Science at Banneker ES (Principal Pat Forrer) was on December 17. Bill returned from William and Mary the same day. On December 18, Richard filmed a video about AIDS, *Before I die*. On October 27, **Monte Towles** collected information through Frank L. Rose from Jane (Dowlen) and Robert C. Matteson (6400 Dakar Rd. Ft. Worth) and Helen Gould Winstead (Apt. 1 Tree Top Apts. 1917 W. Freeway, Grand Prairie, TX) concerning the **Towles** family plot in Cleburne Memorial Cemetery (Block 14), which held graves of her husband, **Grady Watterman Towles,** his parents Oliver and Lula, his sister Emma Lee, and his brother and sister-in-law, Frank and Lorena Towles. **CE Dates: Cristobal Colon** arrived at Hispaniola in **1492**. In 1792, a mob stormed the **Tuileries** palace in Paris and 14,000 adults and children were killed. In 1892, Rev. Francis Bellamy wrote his socialist ***Pledge of Allegiance*** without the "**under God**" phrase and without "***of the United States of America.***" In Chicago, **Charles Yerkes** donated the money needed to found the Yerkes Observatory of the University of Chicago at Williams Bay, Wisconsin. The **Orkney Springs Spa and Resort** was sold, later to become **ShrineMont**, the diocesan retreat center for Virginia. Iwanowski discovered **tobacco mosaic virus.** University of Oklahoma President David Boyd persuaded Governor Renfrow and President **Grover Cleveland** to proclaim that in the opening of the **Cherokee Strip,** Sections 13 and 33 in each township for **colleges and public buildings. David Ross Boyd** arrived on **"*a barren 40 acre prairie campus. He instituted a self financed tree project for the University Campus and extended it to the town of Norman (population 1500). The University opened off campus in a three room, two story rock building at 12 West Main . . .with 57 students. Eventually there were 119 first year enrolled students with 4 professors including dr. Boyd, who took the title of Professor of Mental and Moral sciences, prepared to teach grammar, arithmetic and elementary Latin. . .In a very peculiar sense, David R. Boyd made the University of Oklahoma."*** *(from Col. Neal Harris's recommendation to the 1950 OU Gift Committee on November 5, 1999.)* **Woodrow Wilson** had his first stroke at the age of 37. In **1992**, three thousand Indians were killed in riots over the destruction of the **Babri mosque** in Ayodhya, believed by Hindus to be the site of the birth of the god **Ram** and site of a temple until the mosque was built over the site in the 16th century. On May 9, the **West Ray Colliery** (coal mine) in Nova Scotia exploded due to management's incompetence. **Tshring Togbe,** local Magistrate of Lali,

Bhutan, told Nepalese villagers to leave the country within a week. When they protested, an officer shouted, *"**This is a hunting ground and we can take you like monkeys."*** After this, 80K Nepalese were expelled, which was 15% of Bhutan's population. (Kai Bird in TN 3/26/2012). **Lawrence Welk** died in May. Within a month, plans were underway to produce a memorial concert. This led to a series produced by OETA, the Oklahoma City public television affiliate.

## Microslice

Taking a long view of a short life
to consider providential plans for a dim prospect
I here microslice my posthumous success,
as I have not been dead for some time.

Keats complained in the last weeks
of looking on a life already finished
but what I prefer to notice is the moment
or two we two were sure--so sure--
we could never again be so happy.

This is the cut of things I notice
in any life. There were moments
of exhilaration. They didn't last, of course.
The point is, they happened at all. Rejoice.

## Step 93

In **1293**, **Hugh Rose** inherited the Barony of Kilravock from his father, Hugh Rose of Geddes, who had witnessed the founding of the Priory of Beaulieu. He came from a frontier clan in Nairn in the Lowland belt, adjoining the MacIntoshes and Frasers. The Roses of Kilravock acquired lands in Nairn in the 12th century. **Jesse Hobson** was born on January 3, **1893.** In February 1993, **Robert Rose** tried out the idea of selling puzzles with a warning: "***Warning! This puzzle may cause pain. Suppose you have 24 rocks that are all of equal weight except for one. You don't know which on it is and you don't know whether it weighs more or less. You also have a balance that can be used to compare weights but you can only use it 4 times. How can you find the rock that has a different weight and tell if it weighs more or less? There is a 4-step method. The solution is not a trick. For solution contact Rose"*** *( Solution, 314 Rock Springs Rd., Warrenton, VA 22186. (Include return address and $3 service charge.).* **André (Warner) Fay** was born to Paul and Casey Warner. Richard read words for the Eleventh Annual Loudoun County Spelling Bee on March 11 at Simpson Middle School. The snow on March 13 upset the schedule for the **Regional Science and Engineering Fair,** forcing **Richard** to contact all of the judges and participants to set up another venue. **Frank William Schimpf** died on November 7 in Chicago. On July 1, **Gary Knight's mother** died from Alzheimer's Disease, two years after suffering a head injury at work. **Susan A. Smith** joined the Manchester, Hiltgen and Healy law firm (15 N. Robinson, 3rd floor of the Colcord Bldg. OKC 73102) with Erin M. Klingensmith and Shannon K. Emmons and on September 11 became **Mrs. Gary R. Knight.** In June, Richard was managing a textbook adoption for LCPS, working on the Artistry committee, the GWU committee, DARE program, the Math In-service Team (MIT), teacher interviews, principal meetings, HIV-AIDS presentations, staff meetings, a project with Ms. Gross from NOAA, the Science In-service Team (SIT) and a Model Schools conference (6/28-30) in Raleigh, NC.. On June 3, Robert was recognized at the Awards Ceremony at Fauquier HS. He graduated at 9 a.m. on Saturday, June, 19. On June 24, **Susie** visited with Nancy Abbate. Susie went to Alexandria on June 28 and on the next day, she had an **interview** to work full time as a GT teacher. July 18-30 Richard was involved in **VQUEST and CEBAF** (7/19-20) and Susie was in **AIMS** (Activities in math and science) training. Susie enjoyed AIMS workshops. On 7/28, Richard visited the Sterling Weather Forecast Center. Throughout the summer, Richard also worked on the Applied Math curriculum, MIT, the Artistry Program for teacher training, and the SIT. The Artistry committee was originally formed to revise LCPS's 1988 teacher training program, called ***Artistry***. This program was largely based on the research and advice of Madeline Hunter. The **BTAP** program was the state's model, but large districts, like Fairfax and Loudoun, usually refused simply to accept the state's way of doing things. They had the money to do things their own way. Later, as the "Beginning Teachers' Assistance Program" morphed into the "Beginning

Teachers' Assessment Program," school systems who had developed their own programs felt vindicated. The re-evaluation of *Artistry* was technically unrelated to the evaluation of teachers' performance, but because it set local standards of practice, it was used both to assist teachers and, indirectly, to assess their teaching. August 5: **Gabrielle**, the Dept. Instr. Secretary, had her farewell luncheon and Prof. **Nancy Aiello**, from NVCC, met with Richard and Bob Nakles. *Math Their Way* (MTW) began the next day on August 9-13 was the administrative in-service week. Susie and Richard went to a supper at Oatlands on the evening of August 9. On Aug 17 Richard went to a staff meeting at 8:30 while Susie went to Fredericksburg for an appointment with Dr. Daniel. On Friday, Aug. 20., **Rob** went to William and Mary. On August 23, the Roses took both cars to Sears for new tires. On August 24, Ginny and Truman visited the Roses in Warrenton. New Teacher Orientation in LCPS began on August 26. Richard presented on VQUEST, Tech-Prep, and (8/30) listened to Dr. Thelma Stevensen speak. On August 31, **Susie** had another doctor's appointment at 5:00 p.m. The following day Richard worked on the budget deadline, presentations at Lucketts and Catoctin, and another VQUEST meeting. Over the rest of the week he presented at Lincoln, Hamilton, and Lovettsville. On Sept. 8-9, after school opening, he met with math and science chairs. On August 10 at 0745 he took leave to take Susie for a **biopsy** at **Fredericksburg**'s Ambulatory Surgery Center on Princess Ann St. near **Carl's Ice Cream** (where Susie and Nancy sometimes went). It was Nancy who recommended **Dr. Durkin** to Susie. This led to her getting medical care in Fredericksburg. On Sunday, August 12 he presented at a **Poetry presentation** with Carol Peck. During the following week (9/13-19), Richard continued going to elementary schools (Sugarland, Guilford, Middleburg, ) and secondary schools (Douglas, Monroe, LVHS, Sterling MS), giving SAT presentations, meeting with principals, and a contractor named Norman Flitcroft, concerning a project at Monroe technical school, and preparing for the first run of what later became the **Thoughtful Assessment** program, which began on 9/20. He worked on several committees related to this. Initially, it was to be a revision of the *Artistry* program developed in 1988 in response to the state's BTAP program, a comparable but independent program in Fairfax schools, and new requirements for LCPS teacher evaluations. The title came from the ASCD *Thoughtful Assessment* conference on March 22, 1997 in **Baltimore**. For the next week, he worked on *Thoughtful Assessment*, the curriculum for a statistics course, the SAT prep course and the 94-96 biennial budget.. **Susie** had an appointment at 2:00 at **Countryside** on 14 Pigeonhill Drive in **Sterling**. This was her first visit to the **cancer center** run by **Dr. Simms**. 9/30 **Ginny** wrote to Susie (Several notes dated Sept 27-30. Sept 27):**"*Daddy and I were both just devastated by your news. We are so concerned and all night long I kept thinking, if only I could do it for you. I hardly remember what I said to you on the phone I was so grieved. But Honey, as you said, we must think positively and I do believe that you will come through it all right and the Lord will help you and comfort you and make you strong. He will help me too. I do believe in His divine presence in all***

***things That was the source of Mother's strength, I know. She went through so many bad times in her life time and still had a happy heart. I know you and I will do as well. You were such a Trojan and brave soul when you were in hospital last time. Please be free to call on me . I can stay out with you Honey anytime whenever Dick needs to be at work. If you need me just say so or if he needs me. I am no great one at cooking as you know but I can do it when I put my mind to it. If you don't mind our coming to hospital to see how you are as we did last time we want to come. Please say if you want us to. You will want Dick there when you wake up but at anytime when he can't be, here we are. On the other hand if it would worry you we could come a day or so later or not at all. We will just wait for you tell us what we can do. Oh, I hope you are tucked in bed now. Honey we talked to Dick tonight and he told us the date and that you were in Fredericksburg for tests. That was so hard to drive all that distance so late. Wish you didn't have to go to school tomorrow. I have to go to Dentist in the morning I am having lots of work done on one side. All the inlays that Dr. Cashman put in have become infected under the caps and have to be removed. I was ill for two days after my last visit. Darling Susie please keep us informed. I do worry more from not knowing than I do from being told. When you are in hospital please tell Dick to call us anytime. We will be anxious to hear. Dearest Child, I love you so and my heart is forever with you. I shall rejoice when this is over. I know you're going to be all right . So many of us love love you and need you. I shall never forget our summer this year. Please call us any time. I have misplaced Robby's address Please call us. I feel very positive and strong and will not worry you about me. ….etc."*** Truman wrote, ***"Sweetie (he had to cross out and re-spell it) I just want to say that I agree with everything Mommie said. Love you, Daddy alias Chris"*** Sept 29 Wednesday afternoon: ***"It meant so much to see you last Saturday Oh I could just hug you and hug you. I love you so. I just feel optimistic that everything will turn out all right and you're so positive and so am I, an I know Daddy is and your dear husband also. All our love just surrounds you ….I shall never forget what a glorious summer you gave me. Didn't we have fun? Daddy and I will be coming to the hospital on Monday afternoon. We wont worry you and stay too long for you'll be very sleepy. Then we'll be back on Tues and Wed and the rest of week if you need us. Tell Dick we are available any time. Also the next week."*** She went on to say that she would help at a wedding at the Lee house on Saturday but that both she and Truman would take off work. (Truman worked at Budget Rental Cars at that time.) On September 30, Susie went to U.VA. for another test. 10/1 Susie wrote to **Joanne Abbate**: "***Dear J. What an exciting time! You will be a beautiful bride! I certainly hope to be there on Saturday. If I can't, I'll be there in spirit! I wanted to let you know that a package from the Hecht Co. will be coming in about 2 weeks. Sorry it didn't reach you earlier. I really enjoyed seeing your china pattern. (That's a hint in case the store doesn't put the card with the 2 pieces that are being ordered from another place.) Much love and many warm wishes for you and Chris."*** On October 4. **Susie had an**

**operation** at Mary Washington hospital in Fredericksburg. Richard took leave for 10/4-5 and again on 10/7 when she went to see **Dr. Walsh.** On the afternoon of 10/7, he picked up **Matty** (the cat) from Dr. Wilson's office. During this week, he also met with department chairs and with **Josie Stewart**, principal of SRMS. The following week saw more visits to schools, presentations of Addison Wesley materials by **David Fricke**, a study of the IRIS software, more on the Technology steering committee, more on the budget, issues with Bill Harvey and others at SMS, and a visit to **Laurie Woulfe** at Aldie. On Oct. 18, **Susie** went to see Dr. **Simms**, and the following day, **Dr. Thompson**. Richard continued working on in-service teams, **Pat McIlvaine'**s program from **VPI Extension** Service, Aldie's **World of Motion**, the collection of science fair Form 1 (Regional Science and Engineering Fair), and curriculum committees. This continued into the next week. 10/21 **Joyce Mills** sent a thinking-of-your card to Susie with a pot of white flowers. **Mary Jane Fawcett** said, ***"It was just wonderful to talk with you on Sunday. Please remember, if you need me to do anything for you, I'm here."*** Flowers came on the same day from **Lindsey**, a student, who wrote **"*Welcome back, Miss Rose.*"** And cards came from Kathy Howard, Loudoun staff (Tom, Betty Mar, Larry Farmer, Lynn Miller), Ellen, Greg, Jennifer and Daniel **Mott** on 7333 N. Marigold Ct, **Dianne Sears** on 843 Lancaster Dr., **Earl Sullivan** (with flowers), **Betty Mar Little** (**"*Susan, Open these little packages one a day after you get home from surgery as a reminder of the "heart-felt" wishes that are coming your way—wishes for a steady, complete recovery. Please know that warm and supportive thoughts are coming to you each day from me and my family.")***. Billy's friend, **Terri Hudgkins**, wrote, **"*Dear Mrs. Rose, I neglected to send these gifts to you through Billy over fall Break. They are both from Bermuda. The book came from the Botanical Garden and the print is from the original Shepard drawings which are in the Victoria Museum in London. Both of them made me think of you when I saw them this summer. I had hoped to see you when I returned from Bermuda but now is an even better time to give these mementos to you. I just wanted to let you know that I am thinking of you and wishing you a speedy recovery! Oh, and thank Mr. Rose for the article on Catherine Bateson. Get well! Affectionately, Terri."*** From **Carol Fletcher**: **"*I just talked to Susan in Norman yesterday and she told me about your surgery. I do hope that all goes well with you and that you have a speedy recovery. I was just told by a friend yesterday that there is a new serum for breast cancer that has been developed in California. Tell Dick hi for us and take care.*"** **Barbara Still** (58 Fairfax St) wrote to say that things in Susie's classroom seemed to be under control, that bulletin boards were up, that **Bronwyn White** hired a new teacher to start her class on 10/5/93. Her name was **Lori Working**, reducing Barbara's class size to 20 or 21. Barbara wrote that Susie should call if she needed anything.. A note from **Lyle Skarzinski**: ***I stopped by to see you today to thank you for all that lovely equipment you have been sending to Loudoun Valley. Keith is delighted, and I am thrilled to have an intact skeleton. Your secretary said you would not return until later in the week. I***

***assume that your absence concerns your wife, and I just wanted to let you know that I was thinking about you and sending some good wishes your way.*** 10/25 **Nancy Abbate** wrote, ***I'll be thinking of you Friday and saying lots of prayers. I'm so glad you've got your good buddy Dick*.** **Liz Thorpe** (Rt 1 Bx 481 Catlett VA 22019) wrote, **"*If you ever need a little moral support, give me a call. I'm a little moral."*** **Mary Carter** (An LD teacher from Northwestern from 283 Terranova Dr Warrenton 22186) wrote, **"*Just wanted to let you know I am praying for you daily and you are in my thoughts Get well very soon. Fondly."*** Other cards came from Lisa O'Bannon, Sharon Ward (Hamilton, VA), Pam Olivieri ***We really miss you here at PB Smith.*** **Another card came from Barbara Still** ***We miss you and hope you are feeling a little better as each day goes by. I've called several times when your line was busy so I'm writing this note instead. But I'll get you on the phone soon. I had my first day with 21 students yesterday. What a change! We have so much space! We've talked with Bronwyn and think we'll wait until the new 9 weeks begins to start changing for math. Let things settle down.*"** 10/27 Well wishes also came from Brenda Meier of the Teacher Resource Center, Liz Thorpe, Cora Rodgers, Lori, and Maxine Sachs (**"*Keep the Faith*"**) **Susie's chemotherapy** began at 2:00 on Friday, October 29. The wedding of **Joanne Abbate** was on Saturday, October 30. 11/1 Jo Sullivan bought Susie a Caprice #6 Adolfo wig from Hollywood Fashion Wigs 716 King Street Alexandria for $ 87.22. Susie never needed it. On November 6, more notes came from PB Smith: **"*We miss you muchly."*** (Velma Kirby), ***We are looking forward to your return. Our thoughts and prayers are with you*** (Lynn Ramsier) ***Hope you can come back soon.*** **(Carol Sansom), *Just want you to know we're thinking of you and hoping your recovery is going well* (Sue Heflin). Jerri Waskiewicz sent her own card *Just wanted to let you know you're in my thoughts and prayer. I'm so glad to hear you're doing well!*** (605 Settlers Ridge Rd. Gainesville 22065). **Rose Schimpf** died on November 7. During 11/1-7 Richard worked on placing the **Automated Weather** system in schools; read for Meadowland's Rock and Read, and addressed principals' meetings on Thoughtful assessment and the Math In-service Team. On November 5, **Susie returned to Dr. Simms.** Richard's work continued: On Nov. 6: Family Math at Guilford. Nov.8-14: Meetings on TI 81, MIT, SIT, High school science outcomes, principal meetings (presentations on communications and on AP exams), *Washington Post* grant committee, technology steering committee, Math assessment at Catoctin, **Scholastic Challenge** at LVHS, and the **VAST** conference on 11/12-13. On Nov 11: **Susie** had a test at Fauquier hospital. Nov 15-21: Richard worked more on the use of IRIS (with modem), SIT, TERTS (technology resource teachers. This was a committee that developed the job description for these teachers.), and Round Hill's math program. **Susie's lab work** at Fauquier hospital was on 11/18. Her **chemotherapy** was the next day. For Nov 22-27: Richard worked more on IRIS, had a staff meeting, and then had the holiday break. On 11/27, the **IVONYX** medicine supply company called re Susie's injections. Kenny, a friend of the **Arfts** (the Roses' neighbors in Rock Springs) came to take the Roses' firewood. (They had stopped

using the wood stove.) On Nov.24, Susie had another round of **chemotherapy** in Sterling. From Nov 29-Dec. 5: Richard observed and assisted teachers (Ms. Trainum & Betty Korte), gave a math workshop, attended a pre-retirement seminar, met with the deans at JLSMS, made arrangements for World AIDS Day (Dec. 1), presented on IRIS, attended a late meeting on the Capital Improvement Plan (7 p.m. to 10 p.m. on 12/2), met with chairs. On Dec.6-12: there were more meetings (Susan Klein, GMU, John O'Connor, Ms. Riggs and Jerry Hill), presentations (Budget at 7p.m. 12/7 and 12/9 and 9 a.m. on Saturday, 12/11) and in-service planning meetings Dec 13-19. "On Dec.12, the Roses took **Rob's** box to W&M and brought him home for Christmas break. At North Street in Leesburg, *Gnome Week* followed, when Xmas gifts came from secret givers. Richard continued to work on Thoughtful Assessment, Planning for In-service, TERTS, SIT, IRIS, (science and technology initiatives). Budget, Christmas "goody table" at NSO on 12/17. On 12/20 Richard photographed Ms. **Tardiff'**s class at the sheep farm, went to Hillsboro for another session with **Amy Edmonds** (innovative technology). Dec 21 was a **Snow day** Dec 22-26, more In-service planning, meeting with **Susan Browning** at Sully, IRIS, and holidays. 12/25 Christmas cards arrived from Dr. Elizabeth Simms, Sharon, Dr. Raj , Dr. Au, Marla, Mary, Karen, Christie, Eileen (Susie's favorite in the chemotherapy clinic), JoAnne, Diane, Sue from the Cancer Center in Loudoun. For Dec 27-29 Richard took leave. **Susie** went back to Dr. Simms on 12/27. Richard did more on IRIS the week before the holiday. IRIS was the beginning of an internal **email system** for Loudoun Schools. **CE Dates:** In 493 CE, The ***Book of Songs*** quoted General Tan Daoji about the Wanli Changcheng, **Great Wall of China,** begun by emperor Qin Sin Huang ( the **Ch'in Empire)** in 400 to keep out the **Mongols.** The government of **Portugal** in **1493** sent 2000 Jewish children to work on its **sugar** plantations in the Caribbean. Two thirds of them were dead within a year. (Elizabeth Abbott *Sugar: A Bittersweet History.)* In 1793, George **Washington** helped lay the cornerstone for the **Capitol**. In Pennsylvania, Zachariah Connell set up a place for travelers to build rafts and float down the **Ohio River**. It became the coal-mining town of Connellsville. In 1893, **Sousa**'s band played for the **Chicago World's Fai**r, or World Columbian Exposition, as did Scott **Joplin**, in a smaller room and to less acclaim. About 27 million people visited the Exposition. The population of the U.S. at that time was about 54 million. For the Exposition, the chief of construction was **Burnham;** landscaping was done by **Olmstead;** the Transportation building by **Sullivan and Adler;** statuary by **French, Saint-Gaudens,** and **Taft.** The giant Ferris Wheel held 2000 passengers. A real estate boom followed the exposition, leading to the development of Hyde Park-Woodlawn, Jackson Park, Midway, and the Museum of Science and Industry. The **Woman's Building** on the lake shore at the Exposition showcased the work of women and was designed by women. Hundreds of women's clubs arose across the country as women visiting this exhibition returned to their home towns. The **Women's Club of Richmond** was chartered in the following year. **The World Parliament of Religions** convened. It was an early attempt to bring religions together. In July, Frederick Jackson

Turner told an academic audience that the **American frontier** was closed. After the fair, **Charles Yerkes** was advised by **Sarah Hallowell** to build his art collection. He finally bought Rodin's **Orpheus,** another sculpture of Cupid, and paintings by members of the Barbizon School, like **Gérôme** and **Bougereau** for his extensive collection. The **Land Rush to Oklahoma** began on September 16. The new University of Oklahoma was led by **David Boyd,** who not only taught, established, and staffed the university, but also brought trees to the city and the campus, promoted public schools, established a Geological Survey and mining department and, through Professor Buchanan, who sat on the Town Board, promoted a bird protection act, and had driftwood logs dredged from the river to build woodpecker habitats, thereby reducing insect pests. **Rosenberg** was born in Estonia. He later led Nazis to conceive of **Lebensraum,** racial purification, the campaign against degenerate art, and Positive Christianity and was hanged after the trial in Nuremberg. He was so influenced by **Huston Stewart Chamberlain's** antisemitic book, *Foundations of the Nineteenth Century,* that he wrote a sequel which even Hitler called incomprehensible. **Chekhov** published *The Island of Sakhalin.* The financial crash of 1893, brought about in part by gold speculation, led **Jacob Coxey,** an Ohio businessman, to form an army to march on Washington in protest concerning unemployment. He later led another army in 1914. The phrase "***enough food to feed Coxey's Army***" came from this event, although **Monte Towles** always said "***Cox's Army***." She may have had a different march in mind--that of Father James Renshaw Cox in 1932 to gain employment for the poor in public works and to increase the inheritance tax on the rich. When Herbert Hoover found that Cox's Army had been given free gasoline from the Gulf Oil stations of Treasury Secretary Andrew Mellon, he sacked him.The Bonus March, also in 1932, may also have been in mind as it was a much larger event (43,000). In **1993**, Sheik Oman Abdel **Rahman** had the idea for Ramzi **Yousef** to destroy the **World Trade Building**. Ramzi made the attempt. He was a nephew of Khalid Sheik Mohammed. As the US Army fought for control of Mogadishu, Somalia, a **Black Hawk** helicopter crashed and soldiers were dragged through the streets. On April 19, the Branch **Davidian** compound (Mount Carmel) under the leadership of **David Koresh** in Waco, TX was seized by federal agents of BTF for firearms after a 51 day siege. Koresh died in the fire. **Tacrine**, a cholinesterase inhibitor, was the first drug approved by FDA for **Alzheimer's**. Also, the gene responsible for apolipoprotein E was sequenced. People with **apo-E** have a higher risk for Alzheimer's disease. **Amy Clampit** on February 8 read her Tercentary poem *Matoaka* at the opening of an exhibition at the Swem library of the College of William and Mary. On March 13, a **great snowstorm** struck the D.C. Region. **Voyager** left the Solar System (although this was later disputed). **Carolyn Kreiter** published ***Gathering Light,*** a book of poems.

Such an unending and tedious recital of details!
Why?

Find in the tedium *Te deum.*
*Walk the path.*

## Step 94

**Edna McFarland was born on** on **July 24, 1894** in Crowley, LA to W.E. McFarland of Burnet, TX and Adelaide Shambaugh McFarland of McKeesport, PA. **Frank Schimpf** was born to William and Eva on August 26 in Chicago. On Sunday, January 2, **1994** the Roses visited the **First Christian Church of Falls Church** at 6165 Leesburg Pike. Susie's family had attended the church for awhile because they did not want to hear the preacher who had come to their church in Alexandria. She remembered the pastor at Falls Church, **Mr. Pippin**. (The pastor in 1994 was Mr. Perotti.) Several people spoke to them, some of whom had known Mr. Pippin. In 1963-1964, Susie encountered Vivian Gladys Bulwinkle ("Glad"), also a friend from F.C. Christian Church, at William & Mary. Glad lived on 2nd West that year. Richard's job Loudoun County Public Schools followed the same pattern: Meetings on the **IRIS** (internal email system) on Jan 3 and 6. Jan 4-5 were **snow days** on January 4-5, LCPS Science Chairs and Budget meetings running late on Thursday, January 6, and so on. On Friday at 2 p.m., Richard took **Susie** to Sterling for **Chemotherapy**. On the week of Jan uary10: Richard met on the LCPS budget (CAP and CIP), *Thoughtful Assessment* work (for 3 days), a committee to revise LCPS's 1988 *Artistry* teacher training program. Another snow day came on January 12. On January 14, Richard met with **Devinder Mohan,** a parent, teacher of world literature, and poet (writer of *The Dancing Bear, The Saturday Shine, & Expediently*, all under the name of Shamman Roshan. They exchanged books of poetry.). The Roses went to the **William and Mary Orientation** on Saturday, Jan. 15. The following week the King holiday was followed by 4 more **snow days,** forcing re-scheduling of meetings on Block Scheduling, a TV math course, and the *Technology Resource Teachers* planning committee (TERTs). On the week of Jan 17: Richard assisted in the orientation for in-service day presenters, made a status report to the school board on a pilot project, attended meetings on changing the report cards and block scheduling; talked with **Fred Fleming** about Applied Math and the Math sequence, gave another orientation, met with Bob **Updegrove** re the In-service day presentation. The VQUEST conference was in Richmond on Friday and Saturday (1/28-1/29) During the week of January 31: Susie went to the lab on 1/31, Richard met on committees for AIDS-HIV, Math at Sterling MS, Block Schedules. **Freddie Morris** retired on disability. Susie went to the hospital lab on February 4. and to Dr. **Lloyd** on 2/26. On February 28 Richard took her to chemotherapy. Feb 4 Susie had lab tests to prepare for treatment.Feb 8 Susie went to Dr. **Thompson** and then went to Fredericksburg. He met on the high school Financial Planning course and on the Math and Science In-service Teams on Feb 7 and began giving Susie regular **Neupogen** injections (50mcg/0.16mL) to stimulate leucocyte generation during chemotherapy. Richard picked up the medicine from Ivonyx in Leesburg**.** On February 9, Susie went back to Dr. Elizabeth **Simms**, the oncologist, and Dr. **Au,** the radiologist in

Sterling. This was also the day of a principals' meeting and science chair meeting in LCPS. On the 10th, budget and report card meetings going into the night. On Feb 13, they went to "Round & Round" in Alexandria. During the week of Feb 14, Richard continued working on in-service teams, the technology aide-committee, the budget, science chair meeting, Arcola Math Form group, and supervisors' meetings. Feb 14 Susie started **Radiation** Treatments. On Feb 17: **Susie**'s lab work. Feb 18 Susie's Chemotherapy.. Week of 2/21: Monday was a holiday. Richard met this week on the Financial planning course, the biennial budget, arranging for Braille materials, the Report card committee, the Principals' meeting, and the VCTM conference (2/24-25). On February 23, **Ginny** wrote to Susie about taking Jo to grocery and to get her hair fixed. ***Is it broken*?** Truman asked, as usual. She'd heard that Fauquier Schools were closed because of floods. ***The more it snows, tiddly pom*. "*I think of you and pray and love you believing that it will all be all right but the going through is hard, you dear child. Tell Dick I send love. He is so good to you, just like Daddy. What would we do without them. I am thankful every day*" She said that they went to look at stoves. "*Still floored about the big check you gave us for our anniv. There is a big disappointment about Robert. He won't come to Hermitage up here ….we have done all we can …Have you watched the Olympics … Peg White called from FL for our anniversary. She fell in K Mart, breaking her arm*"** (Mrs. Ralph Epperson, Ginny's childhood friend, daughter of a dentist. She lived next door in Hickman and retired in Florida.) Then she quoted Milne: **"*What would I do I said to Pooh If it wasn't for you. True said Pooh It isn't much fun with one, said Pooh. But two can stick together, said Pooh And that's how it is, said Pooh That's how it is*."** On the week of February 28: **Susie** went back to Dr. Simms on 3/1 and Richard went to Sherando HS on the same day to see the math chair, Deborah Hershman, about their program. On days of conflict like this, Susie got a ride from the American Red Cross. She enjoyed some of the drivers. One of them was the retired owner of the plumbing store across the road from the shopping center in Warrenton. On Saturday (3/5) the Roses picked up **Robby** from William & Mary. The following Sunday through Tuesday (3/8), Richard went to a TechPrep vocational education conference with Pete Fulcer and Larry Farmer, coming back for Math In-service Team and Deborah Roudebush's presentation to the School Board on Tuesday evening (3/8). Larry liked to talk about his Miatta, Porsche, Hasselblad camera, and collector fountain pens like Montblancs. Richard met with Sharon Davidson at Sterling Middle School, secondary principals, and department chairs. On Friday (3/11), **Susie went to Chemotherapy.** On March 12, they went to a concert of the Loudoun Symphony orchestra at J. Lupton Simpson MS. Robby returned to William and Mary on March 13, the **end of Spring Break.** On Mar. 14-18 he met again with Devinder Mohan & his son, Ginger Minshew, and Tom Woodall at Broad Run HS, and then with the technology resource teacher committee, principals, and Science In-service team, held the **Science Fair** on March 17, cleaned up on March18, and went to conference on Advanced Placement. On March 21-25 Richard met with Kay Franklin,

Math In-serice Team, presented Science Fair winners at the GWU campus, met with Block Schedule Committee, went to Catoctin's Science Fair, met with science fair winners to prepare for the International Science and Engineering Fair, met with MIT to prepare for their presentation on Saturday 3/26. On March 28-Apr 1, there were more staff meetings of the Science In-service Team and Technology steering committee. He had a dental appointment with Dr. Harris on 3/29. Easter was 4/3. By March 25, most radiation and chemotherapy had finished, but Susie had chemo on 4/1. On April 4-8 Richard met with staff, principals, administrative team, chairs, and architect. On April 11-17 the school system took a Spring Break. **Frank & Jo** Rose arrived on TWA at 4:53 on Monday, 4/11. The Roses took them to the Landsdowne Resort in Loudoun County. On 4/12 they visited in Warrenton and ate at Legends. Susie's music program was 6:30 on 4/12. On April 13, The Bruches and Jo Sullivan came to Landsdowne Resort and we celebrated both couples' **fiftieth anniversary** with a dinner. On Thursday 4/14 we visited Reston, and on Friday, 4/15, ate at Traditions in Leesburg, and on Saturday, we visited Williamsburg. The Roses returned to OK at 4:10 on Sunday, 4/17. On April18-23 meetings—technology resource teachers, principals, in-service teams, technology steering committee, and the Principles of Technology course preparation group. On 4/25-30 meetings included the Bid Committee, J.L.Simpson MS science fair, block schedule committee, and a technology demonstration by Bob Nakles, and a VISTE conference at Wintergreen with Bob Nakles and Chris Marlin. Classes ended at W&M. Susie's birthday was Sunday. On May 2-6:, Richard met with technology resource teachers, Elaine Glover, Windshield repairman (5/3), Aldie program (5/3), a 7 p.m., block schedule meeting., and meetings with math and science department chairs. **Susie went to Richmond** on May 4 and returned next day. On May 9-13, Richard met with the lab team for middle schools, Dr. Hatrick on 5/9, Curriculum groups, Program of Studies committee, Math In-service Team, Copeland Insurance (on pay stub), technology steering committee, Amy Edmonds, and a group at Airlie on 5/13. On May 14-15 **William and Mary** held its **Baccalaureate and Commencement.** On May 16-20 Richard met again with In-service Teams, technology resource teachers, a retirement party for Bernice Nicewicz at Laurel Brigade. He met with Susan Browning at Sully ES on 5/19. Phi Delta Kappa met at Stone House on 5/18. On May 24 he worked with the Block Scheduling Committee to present to the school board. On May 20, he worked on SPSS with Bob Nakles. **Billy** came on 5/22, also an In-service day. On 5/23 Richard came home early. There was a retirement briefing in the school board meeting room at 4 p.m. Susie was at a pizza dinner On 5/25 at 6:30: Laura Briggs and Linda Robinson demonstrated Family Math at Guilford ES On 5/26 he ate with **Susie** at Napoleon's at 5:30 p.m. On May 31-June 3 he led seminars at each of the high schools. Other meetings were: School Board at Cool Spring, Administrative Team, Arts Festival. On June 3 he went to Safelite Auto in Frederick MD at 0900. On Saturday June 4, Susie and Richard went to Arts Festival event in Sterling. On June 6, Richard helped with Scholastic Challenge at LVHS and met

with Ursula Kirchener. Other June meetings included principals meeting (6/8), technology steering committee (6/9), Waterford's Math Assessment Form committee (6/15), technology resource teachers (6/16), and on the same day, an Appeal at 0830 and meeting with Todd Mumpower at 1300. An in-service committee met on June 20 and on the next day in Charlottesville Sheraton, Richard met with another state committee on Standards of Learning. The next day, he took annual leave for their **anniversary**. On 6/24 Richard was taped for a television program on *World of Motion.*. From June 20-29, he conducted inventories and ran curriculum development committees, On June 26 he presented to summer school science teachers on the Learning Cycle, and turned in the Math In-service Team document to the printer. Susie was in Alexandria. She took him to LCPS and Rob picked him up. He used a LCPS car, went to Wilson Institute at GMU and also went to Hazleton Labs. On Tuesday 6 /28, **Susie** had appointments in Fredericksburg. Rob took him and picked him up. On 6/29, Susie had appointments all day in Leesburg and Sterling. She took Richard to work. The next day, she picked up her check at P.B. Smith and Richard went to an Assessment meeting at 1300. On 7/1 **Susie t**ook Richard to work and went to Sterling for another appointment. On 7/5-7/6 he went to another state Science SOL writing comm.. at Graves Mountain Lodge. Rob picked him up on the afternoon of July 7. Other summer instructional events were: AIMS training (July 4-22), Math SOLs at Graves Mountain Lodge (7/18-21 ), Appeals (7/9), SPSS training in Arlington (7/25-26), planning for teacher training, work on informational flyers (August 1-5), meeting at Ruby Tuesday with In-service teams, training of substitutes, Principals' in-services (8/8). meeting with Tom Woodall & Betty Mar Little on the PIE model for staff development.(8/9), presentation on 8/10 to principals on purchases, and Staff and Curriculum Development Sessions. On August 15, Susie had an "Opt Out" training and on 8/16: Susie went to Alexandria. On August 17, Richard took the Voyager at 0645 and Susie was at an Opt.-Out until 1130. As usual, Richard, Tom, and Betty Mar presented the PIE training program to new teachers (prepare, instruct, evaluate) on August 18. The MAMSI (health insurance) representative's presented to staff at 10:00. Richard, Tom and Betty Mar presented a another workshop for In-service facilitators in the afternoon. On 8/19, they presented to new elementary teachers. **Susie & Nancy** visited on 8/18 in the afternoon. Susie had a 10;00 appointment with Dr. Simms. On 8/20-21 the Roses took **Rob** back to Williamsburg. On 8/22: The team presented PIE to new secondary teachers. The rest of the week was spent on in-services for elementary teachers at Algonkian on 2/24, science teachers at SMS on 8/24, and secondary teachers at Park View HS on 8/25. On August 29 school began in Loudoun and teachers returned in Fauquier although everyone had been working, training, collecting, and mentally preparing for school since the last school year ended. Richard supervised school opening and closing at Catoctin ES nd went afterward to Dr. Harris (dentist), On September 1, the school system received Science standards (SOL). Holidays were September 5-7. School then re-started in Fauquier on 9/8 and he Loudoun budget-

cut deadline came on 9/9. Richard's meetings began during the week of September 12-16 on these topics: Science SOL, Department Chairs, Budgets, Department of Instruction, presentations to secondary principals on a proposed Independent Science course. Richard had a fasting blood sugar test on 9/14 . In the afternoon, he met on middle school Algebra and then on the Civil Air Patrol school program. Next day, Dr. Mancini examined him. He went on to meetings at **Xerox Docutech** where Xerox employees demonstrated the facility. He then met with principal **Jim Person** and science chair **Marilyn Edmondson** at Park View HS to prepare for the next regional science fair. **William Rose** received a letter from a collection agency (I.C. System) demanding $4,402 related to his management costs for running College-Pro painting during the summer. He considered the charges false and intimidating. Richard paid them. Meetings for the week of 9/19 were on these topics: core science experiences for elementary students and financial planning. **Susie** had a school meeting with PTA at P.B. Smith at 7 p.m. on September 20 and Richard worked with teachers on the team for the Dress Rehearsal of Math In-service Team presentation, had a meeting with principals, and prepared for the Science SOL deadline for comments to the state committee on September 23. On the week of 9/26-9/30, Richard went to the: Dentist, Science In-service Team meeting, presented on Math in grades 1-2, & was interviewed on 9/29 at **Channel 53 in Merrifield**. On September 30, P.B. Smith School had a picnic for teachers at the home of **Doug and Bronwyn White**. On Sunday, October 2, the state SOL committee met again at **Graves Mountain Lodge**. Meetings for the week of October 3-7 concerned: secondary math portfolios, a sales rep named Riggs from McGraw Hill, the Department of Instruction, The School Board's Blue Ribbon Committee, a presentation from Modern Curriculum press, an Admininstrators' Meeting, and a presentation for the local teacher association (LEA) at **Stone House Tea Room**, and math and science in-service teams (MIT, SIT) training sessions. **Susie** and her class visited the **Fauquier Outdoor Lab.** William and Mary's break for Rob and Bill ended on 10/7. On October 10, 1994, the **Helm Family Clock** was moved to Jo' s house in Alexandria. Ginny wrote, "***What memories we have of it!"*** Concerns for the week of Oct 10-14 were the Holiday on 10/10, and meetings on the budget, the presentation to the School Board of the Curriculum for the *Independent Science* course , the PVHS Math Chair, Cheryl Wimer on 10/11, secondary principals, the report card committee, and department chairs. Richard also went to VATD meeting at **Dulles Renaissance** with Lynn Miller, met with Eric Stewart (10/14) and then Fritz Scholz at LCHS. On the week of October 17, meetings concerned core science experiences for grades 4-5, the SOL executive committee in Charlottesville., the Budget, presented *Essentials for Success* (a revision of the PIE training for new staff), science in-service team training, and a promotion by Bethesda Multimedia. On October 19, **Susie** saw the oncologist, **Dr. Simms** and then joined Richard for a **PDK** meeting at Johnson's House of Beef in Leesburg. Next day, Richard videotaped the *World of Motion* event at Aldie School. On 10/21, Tom Woodall and Richard met with **Mr. Pyle** re his "*Dig It*"

archeology presentation. Then on 10/21-22 the Roses camped at **Indian Cove,** south of Virginia Beach. Meetings for the week of 10/24-28 concerned hosting an academic contest (Scholastic Challenge), the budget, advising the school board on ITBS (testing program), an MIT presentation, a **NAEP** meeting on 10/26 at 1201 17th St. N.W. WDC (Farragut West), and bids for new elementary and middle Schools. On October 25, Richard presented at BRHS on *Assessment in Math and Science*. On 10/28, he met on evaluation with. **Larry Farmer**, a meeting regarding Lynn Canady's presentation to the staff. Meetings during the week of 10/31-Nov 4 concerned: the dentist, Department of Instruction, Cheryl Wimer, dept. chairs, conferences with Betty Mar & Larry regarding Canady, Fritz Scholz (Math Chair at LCHS), the Economic Symposium, **Naturalist Center**, and conferences with secondary principals about Canady. Finally, on the week of 11/7-11: Canady presented. Richard had more preparatory meetings on the science fair (Regional Science and Engineering Fair), proposed changes to report cards, a Grade 5 math, workshop in **Bethesda** on Written Communication, **The Roses** went to the VAST (Virginia Association of Science Teachers) Conference in **Charlottesville** on 11/11-12. On 11/12 Vicky McEver wrote ( from 7079 Lakeview Dr. Gainesville, VA 22065) to the Roses. **Was "*delighted to hear you had come to church. Sadly, I missed seeing you and talking to you. My responsibilities with the nursery or coffee hour often keep me from going out front and visiting with everyone after the service. That will not be such a problem after I go off the Session in January. In any case, I do want to welcome you back and tell you that many members who remember you were glad you were back. We hope that you'll come again very soon. I've been watching for you. I didn't want to miss you next time! I've tried to phone you a couple of times around 5 pm but you've not been home. I'll try again some time in the next week. Hoping you'll worship with us again soon*"** Meetings during the week of 11/14-18 concerned the **Excellence in Education Banquet** at Xerox Document University, Susie's conferences (11/15), MIT, the elementary principals' Emergency Response plans, a disaster simulation at Monroe Vo-Tech, a PDK meeting (10/16), LEAP meeting with parents, a Math meeting at Simpson Middle School (JLSMS), a science fair preparation meeting, a Rube Goldberg event at Aldie ES, and the Washington Post Grant committee. Meetings for the week of 11/21-25 concerned the new elementary school at Ashburn and AIMS presenter Chris Marlin. **Bill & Rob** came home for Thanksgiving and returned to W&M 11/27. Meetings for the week of 11/28-12/2 concerned WNVT previews, the Blue Ribbon committee, Lyle Skarzinski (LVHS Science Chair, on 11/28), the Dentist, and the MIT's *Jump into Math* sessions, Richard went to the VASCD (Virginia chapter of the Association for Supervision and Curriculum Development) conference on 11/30-12/2 in Williamsburg, coming back early to lead the December 1st **World AIDS** Day vigil. On Saturday 12/3: Jay from **Firesafe** came to the house to examine the chimneys. Meetings for the week of 12/5-9 concerned: the department of instruction, the purchase of a carpet (25x25x10), the presentation of the **Star lab** (10/6), and a multimedia conference (12/7). On the same day, **Susie** went to the

**Kennedy Center** with her class. On 12/8, **Hugh Sockett** presented the **Prince William Institute** for GMU. Richard also met with Eric Stewart re **ITC** and the Supervisors and School Board met at 7 p.m. On Saturday, December 10, William and Mary held its **December Graduates Reception**. On the week of 12/12-12/16, Richard met with: MacMillan Publishing representative Robbie Riggs for Gr.4-5. **Susie** met with **Dr. Thompson,** the surgeon, in **Fredericksburg** on 12/13. Richard met again with Cheryl Wimer on 12/13 p.m. and went on to principals meetings, report card committee, chairs meetings, Christmas luncheon at North Street on 12/15 and to meetings the next day regarding The **Naturalist Center** with Bill Osgain and Cindy Richmond at **Landsdowne Realty**, Richard brought the *Program of Studies* to connect their proposed projects to the curriculum. On Week of 12/19-23, meetings concerned Chris Marlin, Dept. of Instruction, and an Extension Service showcase. Supervisors and School Board met on 12/22 regarding **The Blue Ribbon Committee**'s recommendations. On 12/24 **Warrenton Presbyterian** Church held its Christmas Eve Service. **Joan Broughton** arranged it. **Isabelle Jones, Meredith Schmal, Tony Lukeman, Carl Schmal, and Barbara Stinson** provided the music. The Clerk was **Pat Wingo.** Richard used two weeks of down time to write the next *Transforms* newsletter, and to file, cull, read, and work on the "outcomes projects." After Christmas, **Rob & Bill** returned to William and Mary. Rob went to state meetings in Richmond on 12/31. **Frank and Jo Rose** and family attended the 50th Wedding Anniversary of **Jack and Louise Rose** in College Station, TX. **BYA Dates** No data available. **CE Dates:** In **1794 Haydn** left for England. **Beethoven** had been taking lessons from him and Schenk up to that time, although Schenk proved to be a better teacher. Studying with Benjamin West in Great Britain, **Robert Fulton** became interested in canal navigation and got an English patent for an inclined plane canal lock replacement. **Jane Franklin** died at the age of 83. She was the undereducated sister of Benjamin Franklin. They came from a family of 17 children. Jane was the youngest girl and Ben the youngest boy. He taught her to read and write but his lessons ended when he left home in 1723. Most of her family was dead by the time that she moved into the house which Ben later gave her. All her life she yearned for conversation and stories. She once wrote, "***The most insignificant creature on Earth may be made some use of in the Scale of Beings.***" (from Jill Lepore's article in NY, 2013) General **Anthony Wayne,** called "mad Anthony," defeated Indians south of Toledo at Fort Miami. Settlers spread into Northern Ohio and Indiana. In 1894 Paul **Ehrlich** developed Salvarsan, a chemical treatment for **syphilis**, thereby also inventing the idea of **selective toxicity**, the basis for **chemotherapy**. Thirty years after another renovation, **Agecroft** caught fire on the East and South sections. **Alexander III** died and **Nicholas II** became czar. One thousand people were trampled to death at Khodynka field during the coronation. In Petersburg workers went on strike. (from John Sutherland's notes and chronology to *The Shooting Party*.) In 1994 William Kelso began his excavation of **Jamestowne**, leading to the eventual discovery of the original site, buildings, and thousands of artifacts showing,

among other things, the close trade and marriage association of settlers with Native Americans. **Nelson Mandela** was elected president of South Africa. He served from 1994 to 1998. The National Institute on Aging funded a five year study to screen for potential toxic effects of new Alzheimer's drugs. Also, the **Alzheimer's Association** established the Nancy and Ronald Reagan Research Institute. The **Tunnel of Bones** (Galeria del Osario) was discovered at El Sidrón near Asturias, South of the Bay of Biscay in a collapsed limestone karst cave. Neanderthal bones had been hacked by stone tools, indicating that the Neanderthals had been eaten by *Homo sapiens*. The **Rwandan** genocide began.

After the bonfire, Connie went home and thought about going to see her uncle in Chicago. The way he talked, he wasn't going to be around much longer. Then there would be no one. Maybe get a job there. Maybe send him flowers. She fell asleep listening to the radio.

## You've time.

After raging awhile against the darkness
you might think about what you've been doing,
which, in the scheme of things, is not much.

Live again. Increase your sample set.
Become the stooped ash you just passed.
It has an emerald borer on its mind.

Exchange faces with the sunken stream
under your feet, its clarity from mud
and gravity revealed as you drink.

Become the dragon-wing in anthracite
or sooty miner finding it, or child
watching warring ants clear the dead.

Wear other masks. Live other lives. You've time.
Another mask or Age or stage or face

beckons, clears your space of death and rage.

**Richmond Street**

Connie took the El to Addison and walked to Uncle Jack's on Richmond Street. She didn't remember the street lights nodding overhead. Something new. The house was locked up so she sat on the porch steps. It was cool for August. The hostas bloomed in the gangway. As she waited she wondered if he were out of town. Or stretched out inside. Later, she found out.

**Something left alive**

In the umbra of premature euthanasia
a gift of flowers arrived--jonquils--
where it seems that he planted them for the pleasure
of seeing them in the spring.
In the mortification of the dysplasia,
the ricochet of the meds--
now a leap into pain, now an almost hollow,
intense, and shapeless relief--
when he seemed to us calm, even in recovery,
he took a wire in his hand.
In the shadow of winter it was sufficient
to know that spring would arrive.

The bungalow was hers. ***Free and clear***, said Dooley, Jack's lawyer, after his business friends had filed past all so sorry. Once inside, Connie read the letter. ***Read the ledgers on my desk. Remember what I told you.*** Only Uncle Jack had come to Mother's viewing in Richmond. ***Jean went last, the last of my sisters. Me older than all of them, my face like a fresh-plowed field. She slathered on Pond's cream every night. It didn't help. Just as her trading your thyroid for an unblemished neck hasn't helped you. Now***

***only we are left. And I am an old man becoming a manuscript, fading to the thickness of leaves. You'll get those, the house, and the trust fund. Read what I left you. Walk the path.***

She opened the first ledger:

# TRANSECTS

## *You make the way by walking.*

## Step 95

In 1895 came the births of **Auburn Hobson** on 1/21, **Frank Towles,** and, in February, his future wife, Lorena Self, and **Zula Simmons** on May 23. In later years, in Fort Worth, Aunt Monte and Uncle Grady took Richard to visit Frank and Lorena several times while Lorena's mother was still living with them. **Rose Schimpf** (later Schroeder) was born on November 5 to William and Eva in Chicago. On January 31, 1995, **John Pegues** wrote to Richard, ***"After applying, interviewing, and then agonizing over an attractive offer from Loudoun, I decided that it was not the right time or the right spot for me. Although there were many positives and few negatives, the main factor was the distance and the time away from my family. I must say that I was favorably impressed with Jerry Hill, Ken Culbert, and Jim Person, as well as the two schools I visited. The entire process was handled very professionally. . . I plan to remain at FHS until Adam finishes . . . Once he and Emily are in college, I will feel more comfortable about taking a new position."*** Later, John and Kathy decided to stay in Fauquier County. **Frank & Jo** and family traveled April 28-May 6 with **Jack & Louise** in their 26 ft. Nomad trailer from College Station to Houston, Galveston, New Braunfels, Salado, and College Station. In Houston, they visited Bayou Bend, including the house, collection, gardens, and butterfly area, and then paid a visit to the Austin **Townleys,** with whom they visited the Battleship Texas and the Railroad Museum and Gresham's Bishop's Palace. Then Frank and Jo went on to Las Vegas and Tennessee. **Coriander (Warner) Fay** was born on July 28 and **Catherine Holbrook Sparks** (Kap) died on August 24. Her surviving daughters were **Kay S. Van Sickle** and **Shirley Koonce--**all excellent tennis players, as Richard discovered once. On January 4, **Richard** went to LCHS regarding the **black box** set-up in the **Electronic Classroom** with David Jones, met with Sandra Moody on **budgets** in the afternoon and then with **Math chairs**. At 4 p.m., he met with **Susie** at Ruby Tuesday's in Leesburg after her appointment with Dr. **Simms.** The **Testing Forum** ran all day Jan.5 at LCHS and **Science Chairs** met in the afternoon. On January 6, Nancy wrote to Susie (from 11520 Still Meade Lane Woodbridge 22192) saying she was worried about Susie's pain and that her mother's health had declined since August. Nancy's mother was seeing a neurologist for Alzheimer's, and had gone to a health center. Richard's meetings for the week of January 9th concerned: the weekly business of the **Dept of Instruction**, in-service teams (MIT & SIT ), the **Report Card Committee**, and the MECC (Minnesota Educational Computing Consortium) "**Math Keys" product** for K-5 presented by Larry Lugar. **Robby** took him to work on 1/11 and 1/12. **Choir** rehearsal was on Jan 12. The Roses took **Rob** to Richmond on Saturday (1/14) and on the return trip visited Patrick Henry's home, **Scotchtown**, near Ashland. At **Marymount**, Shirley Smith and Jack Woodward began the "Module III Skills Development" version of the Math-Science course for elementary teachers (ED 527B). Classes at William and Mary began again on the week of Jan. 16, and Richard met several times with Scott Close

regarding floor plans for **science labs** for the new high school, set up a **display on AIMS** (activities in math and science) for principals, did a workshop on **ITBS Math competency tests**, gave an Essentials for Success **workshop** for new staff, attended a **PDK chapter** meeting at Johnson's House of Beef, and **met with reps** of IMS Abacus Co. During the week of January 23, he met with Dr. Miriam **Liebowitz** a staff development trainer (and mother of Jon Stewart), worked with the **Bid Committee**,gave presentations to Elem. teachers on **ISD** (in-service days) at LCHS, prepared the **IRIS** internet proposal with Bob Nakles, took **Susie** to the dentist, met with Beth Harper from UVA re **graduate courses for teachers**, and visited with Eric Stewart. **Susie's bell rehearsal** on January 26 was at 6:30 while Richard was at a Guilford ES **meeting with parents** on Math. He also met with Susan Klein from GMU re **graduate courses**. On the week of Jan.30: he met with Glenn Peterson at **IMC**, the Admininistrative Team, and Linda Lynd. He went to the **VQUEST conference** in Norfolk from Feb.2—4. The following week he helped with photos in Mrs. Ackerman's office. Fran Lukin and Richard Cunningham from **UVA**, presented a **Curriculum Development Orientation** for Math & science. Richard attended this and continued to work on: the MIT, **Report Card committee,** and the business of math and science department chairs. He met at Independence Hill in Prince William County on **getting Grants**, and went on to another meeting with the depart of instruction. During the week of February 13, he met with principals, Norm Flitcroft on the **new high school**, the Math & Science departments at LVHS, Lynn Updike at SRMS (Seneca Ridge Middle School in Sterling), and others in preparation for RSEF (Regional Science & Engineering Fair). The following week's meetings concerned: BRMS (Blue Ridge in Purcellville), Math & Science at LVHS, new textbooks, and Biology curriculum meetings, and Suzanne Conrad at Sterling on programs related to the new Dulles Greenway, Health Insurance for Retirees,Stan Richardinson's ideas for his legally required community service, project outcomes and grants, and a dental appointment with Dr. Harris in Warrenton. On March 1, Ginny wrote Susie to thank her for the Pooh book ***"It brought those days back to me and that sweet little brown eyed girl was with me again and Daddy and I were so happy to have her. You were always a joy and what a 'kingdom of the mind' we had together, the three of us in books! I wish I could do it all over again. I love you dearly! Mommie. Will be writing more later to Richard So proud of him. We have a newspaper account quoting him in the Post."*** During the week of February 27, Richard met with Zach James from MacMillan, Suzanne Conrad regarding public relations for the **Greenway** project being constructed by **General Williams**, another Essentials for Success presentation to new staff, the Loudoun Soil and Water Conservation District Strategic Plan (at the Algonkian Meeting Center), another session with geologist **Stan Richardson** concerning his ideas for **seismic sensors** at schools. On the same day, he picked up **Rob.** He went to VCTM (Virginia Council of Teachers of Mathematics) in Roanoke on March 4. The following Monday, he conferred again with the **LC Soil and Water** Conservation District manager regarding **Banshee Reeks**

**Mitigation site**, the link between the schools and the new Smithsonian Naturalist Center which Richard Efthim was locating near the airport in Leesburg, the Envirothon and its attempt to find alternative funding for programs. On March 7 he went to another grant proposal-writing workshop led by **Marie Canny**. The remainder of the week had the usual meetings with chairs, report card committee, etc. Richard gave a presentation on the science program to the LEAP (parent group) at JLSMS. An **AIMS** training day for teachers was Saturday, March 11, most of the work done by Chris Marlin. On March 14, he met with Rhonda and Sue in accounting to express his concerns about the school systems shift from Blue Cross healthcare to **MAMSI**. That evening, he spoke to the Board about the new Standards of Learning. The next three days were spent on the **RSEF at PVHS,** with the help of Marilyn Edmondson and her department. Then came a reception for RSEF winners and School Board, a debriefing with on the RSEF, a PDK Banquet (3/22), another meeting with Cheryl Wimer, the Spelling Bee (3/23), and the Virginia **Poetry Society** Banquet on 3/25. (Saturday), which Susie also attended. (Richard received an inglorious fourth place in the limerick category, his greatest professional recognition. It began, "There once was a girl named DeJuanna.") In the week, he met on **Kumon** math (3/28), visited the **Foundation Center** (in D.C. near Dupont Circle), met with principal Susan Browning, met with Mrs. **Stinson** at Airlie on bluebirds, and then took annual leave on 3/30-31 The Roses took the Voyager to Alexandria (3/30) to get Jo and Ginny and then drove to Richmond to take **Robert Erle** from the nursing home where he was getting such poor care. They loaded his knee hole desk, paintings, chair, suitcases, Dutch landscape, lamps, boxes, wheel chair, walker, etc. and took him to the third floor of the Hermitage in Alexandria. Richard made a return trip to Richmond to pick up the remaining items. On April 5, **Susie** had an appointment with Dr. Simms and Richard met her in Sterling at 4 pm. For the next two days, Richard presented at PVHS and at 7 p.m. on 4/ 6 at LCHS regarding the Standards of Learning. Palm Sunday came on April 9. Two days later, **Ginny** wrote this note to the Roses: for ***"giving you day and two nights to us, and for all the hardship of that day and your return trip to Richmond. How I did regret that there was too much to bring in one trip. I was so concerned about your 2d trip to Richmond when you were tired and it was night time too, and Susie dear, I know you were so anxious. The whole move was such a sacrifice on your parts and I thank you with all my heart. I thank you for Robert who is so unaware of events around him. He has already forgotten that day. The day after his move he didn't know where he was. Without caring people around him he would be lost. Jo and I like the Hermitage and think he is very fortunate to be here. Not many people could afford the service that he has there. He doesn't know that and thinks someone should be with him every minute. I'm not sure that is mostly the disease. But he is learning not to have a sitter because he is so concerned about his money. The amount of the room has gone up now (800) and still he won't let go of his money to make the deposit. One of these days there will be nothing at all. He keeps talking about***

***not wanting to disturb his nest egg. Heavenly days! Well "the mind is its own place and in itself can make a heaven of hell, a hell of heav'n' I hope that I can remember that myself. Mother used to say like St. Paul, "I am happy in whatsoever state I am." Not always easy, I know. Robert has been through a bad time, I know, plus little joy in his earlier life. Anyway I think he is adjusting. We don't intend to be up there every day and I do think he is getting better as he knows the nurses. We are happy that he is here. Thank you for making it possible, Dear Ones. You, Dick, for all the driving 2 times and all the hard work, and you Susie for making adjustments in your life. We wish we could see you and hug you both. Will you see the boys at Easter. . ."*** She mentions just finishing Jo's taxes and hers, a lovely letter from Mae Milheim, and feeling ***"serene about it all now."*** On April 11, **Susie** went to the **Fauquier Outdoor Lab** in the morning and had conferences at school in the afternoon. Richard met with the **Report card** committee the next day in the afternoon. On the holidays of 4/13-14, the Roses scheduled a piano tuning, and a repair of the furnace **chimney**. On April 19, **Frank & Jo Rose, Gary and Susan Knight** (pregnant with Samuel Knight) were in the Federal Court across the street from the back of the **Murrah building** in OKC when **Timothy McVeigh,** avenging the Branch Davidians, blew up the front of the Murrah building with a truck bomb, killing 168 and injuring 800. Gary had just entered the building after parking the car. He was one of the first policemen responding to the bombing. In June, the Roses came to Oklahoma for Frank's birthday, as did the family of Jack Rose, all of them gathering in the Knights' back yard. On September 11-13, according to Travis from University of Wisconsin (and others), the US experienced the **largest day-night range of temperature** in 30 years. This was due to the removal of pollutants from contrails of the planes, which had been grounded. This was a change of 1 degree C. Compare this to the 0.7 degree change that had occurred over 100 years. This **global dimming**, caused by particulate pollution, is a brake on global warming, caused by $CO_2$ pollution. **Climate forcing** effects, according to Peter Cox (U. Exeter), created **2-3 watts/m$^2$** over the Earth's surface. Richard met with the Math In-service Team on 4/18 and on 4/19:and with principals in the morning, a **Futura** conference at the Armory, the **PDK** Loudoun Chapter at Johnson's Steak House, and the Gifted Advisory Board & Computer Science meetings in evening. The following day, he went to meetings concerning the **Naturalist Center** and Consumer Math. **Earth Day** (April 22 ) was a Saturday. Events of the next week were these: Richard met with Eric Stewart and LCHS Math teachers and served as score-keeper for Scholastic Challenge. **Susie had a 3$^{rd}$ grade program** on 4/25 that lasted until 9 p.m. and Career Day the following day. On the same day, Richard went to a meeting at Apple in Reston and another meeting with finance officer Sandra Moody in the afternoon. On Friday morning he met with **Doug Pond** from Addison Wesley, and practiced at 7:30 with the men's chorus at Warrenton Presbyterian for Sunday worship at the end of the month. Classes ended at **William & Mary.** Susie's birthday was Monday. Richard led more departmental meetings. Susie met with Dr.Thompson. Richard

conferred at the GWU Loudoun campus regarding an Interagency program led by Dr. Hasan Qashur. He went on to more chair meetings and then (from 7p.m. on 5/4 through 5/5) a Charlottesville **VSLA conference.** In the following week he met with in-service teams and GMU representatives on Monday and followed up on Tuesday's principal meetings, report card committee. On May 14, the residences at **William & Mary** closed. On Mother's Day (5/12) Ginny visited. She thanked them for the picture of Susie from Richard on Mother's Day, talked about the reception at the Lee Home's 200th anniversary, and later wrote: ***"Robert is very happy now. He will go to assisted living (He started in nursing care). He walks "beautifully". He visited Jo. Robert took meds for Parkinson's, edema in feet, took a "nourishing diet without salt." And Ensure daily to gain weight. Surgery on his face left no scar. The eye dr. saw him. The nurses love him, so little trouble. Robert does everything for himself. Kevin from Admissions visits him often. Robert paid the entry (founders) fee. Mrs. Easterly finally sent Robt his spread sheet. He's getting a discount on his room. Says only one person on the floor talks sensibly. Robert goes to all the events, takes dinner, etc. His glasses were brought from Richmond by one of the sitters. She had them in her pocket. She called him her boy friend.. Doris Ann hadn't communicated with Robert since he left Richmond but finally sent a card "like a sympathy card encouraging him to make the best of things! Well, maybe she underestimated family ties—anyway, I hope he continues to be happy here. If he just doesn't fall or get sick, he will, I believe."*** She said she knew that the Roses looked forward to their Oklahoma trip and added, ***"So thankful your family escaped the bombing episode—chance or destiny plays such a big part in our lives. I believe it is the Lord who controls our destiny and loves us world without end."*** The following week Richard met with the Science In-service Team (SIT) on 5/15, principals, the committee for the in-service "**Essentials for Success",** and on 5/19 attended the **VATD,** an assessment and testing conference, in Richmond with Herb Root, the Testing Director. The **ITC met on 5/25**. In June, Richard met with: Sandra Moody from the LCPS Business Office, other educators at a **GT Conference,** sponsored by ERIC, at the USDOE office of Ed. Research in D.C., and organized by Carol Tomlinson. Other participants on the topics of "expertise" and "the gifted school" were Robert Sternberg, Wiggins, Ogbu, and Chi. on June 1-2; the with department chairs , principals, the administrative team, and teachers being trained by Richard **Rezba** from VCU on June 22-23 in a workshop Richard had arranged on science inquiry methods. On July 30, Richard performed his setting of *Romans 8:39, **No Height Above**,* for worship at Warrenton Presbyterian Church. Rev. **Richard Winter** returned to preach on ***Philosophies of Ownership*** (*Col. 2:6-15, Lk. 10:25-37)*. He was substituting for Rev. Carl Schmahl. Susie wrote on her bulletin, ***Mr. Winter!.*** On August 21, Richard was appointed adjunct Lecturer in the School of Education at Marymount, in support of Dr. Smith's project. Income from part-time work as an adjunct would later be welcome. It was also an opportunity to share with pre-service teachers some of the things he had

learned as a teacher and supervisor. **Samuel Knight** was born on August 28 and **William Lyons Rose** graduated from the College of William and Mary with a double major in anthropology and art. On August 25, Richard signed a contract with **Marymount** to teach ED 527 LA Module III with Dr. Smith, replacing Jack Woodward. On Sept 30, the Roses bought a 1996 white Plymouth **Voyager** SE Van at Manassas Chrysler Plymouth and gave their other Voyager to Ginny and Truman Bruch. In June-July, the **Roses** went to Oklahoma, where they visited with **Frank, Jo, Jack, Louise, the Knights, Phil and Debbie Woodall, Warren, Arian, Victoria, Carol and Orville Fletcher.** They celebrated July 4 at the Knights' house and visited in **Guthrie, OK**, where they walked around the town and toured the Masonic Temple. **CE Dates:** In 1095 CE, **Pope Urban II** allowed Byzantine delegates to address the Council of **Clermont** in France and called for a **crusade** to retake Jerusalem "***to destroy that vile race,***" promising remission of sins to all warriors. In 1295 **Edward I** summoned representatives of clergy, nobles, and Burgesses to his **Model Parliament** in order to increase revenues from the merchants. He established juridical reforms, creating or adding to the courts of Common Pleas, Exchequer, Kings Bench, Court of Equity and Chancery. He also created "justices of the peace," called "**Conservators of the Peace**." In 1595, **Pocahontas**, also called **Matoaka** and Amonute, was born. She was the daughter of the Algonquian chief, Wahunsenaca, of the **Powhatan** federation. A tribe lived 12 miles from the current location of Jamestown. In 1695, Royal Governor Edmund Andros spoke at the ground breaking ceremony for the **Wren building** at William and Mary. In 1795, **Beethoven**'s first public concert was on March 20. He played the CM concerto. In January, the Governor of Georgia authorized the sale of 35 million acres to four companies for $500,000 with the aim of serving land speculators. It took two decades to undo his deal. In 1895, Wilhelm **Roentgen** on the evening of November 8 was using a Crooke's tube to study crystals in his darkened lab when he accidentally discovered that a piece of paper across the room was affected by his work. The paper was treated with **barium platinocyanide**, which glowed. He knew that the cathode rays produced by the tube did not penetrate glass and therefore suspected that the paper glowed because it was receiving another kind of radiation, which he tentatively named the "unknown" radiation, or **X-ray.** He followed this discovery with rigorous verification by building a zinc lined cabinet to obtain complete darkness. He dropped all other work and lived in his lab until he was able to publish a paper on his findings on December 28 in the *Journal of the Physico-Medical Society of Wurzburg* and to present an exhibit of X-rayed objects and bones at the 50th Anniversary event of the Warburg Physical Institute in Berlin the following year. His exhibit was ignored by scientists until publicized by a newspaperman in the Prague *Presse.* **Byron Evans** visited in Crowley, LA and learned that Ellis, Matthews & Blake had sold 17 threshing rigs for the fall season. He went back to his threshing and feed mill operation in Kansas, packed up his business and family of six, and moved to Louisiana. **Japan** captured **Taiwan.** The 70 year-old warrior **Goyathlay** (Geronimo) was photographed picking melons with his family

on Fort Sill, not far from the future burial place of **Frank and Jo Rose.** The canal to **Primeaux** Landing was built when the water at Riceville became too low. Joseph Primeaux, who was born on the prairie near the site and who marked the place for the levees with pickets as the engineer surveyed it, said in 1950 that "***it was a free and easy life in those days. We would go to bed with no worries. We would wake up in the morning ready to go. Didn't even have to think about where our shoes were because we didn't have any.***" In October 1995, the **Galileo**'s tape recorder jammed as it reached Jupiter. It was fixed by telemetry from Earth to probe **Jupiter**'s atmosphere from 133,000 miles above the planet. **Ramzi Yousef and Khalid Sheik Mohammed** attempted to kill Pope John Paul II in the Philippines and considered using planes as missiles and shoes as bombs. Ramzi Yousef was arrested in Islamabad. **Roderick & Farquar**, studying Australian pan evaporation rates, found **100mm reductions over 30 years**, confirming the findings of other scientists like Cox, Liepert, Stanhill, and Travis on **global dimming.** This decrease in evaporation, due to decrease in incident photons, not a decrease in average temperature, was the equivalent of 2.5 megajoules of insolation energy. This led to **Project IndoEx**, led by Ramanathan from San Diego. This studied the downstream differences in particulate matter coming from India across the Indian Ocean over the Maldives. This particulate matter formed a 3km-thick layer of pollution that cut insolation by 10%. It was not only a block but a mirror, increasing the albedo, because the dense, small-sized particles created clouds dense in small droplets, which are more reflective than large drops. These clouds redirected rainfall patterns, affecting monsoons. **Transgenic mouse** models developed for Alzheimer's disease improved the ability to study the disease. The **Aum Shinrikyo** cult released **sarin** in Tokyo subway tunnels, killing 13. It would have been very difficult to spread sarin to more people without a military delivery system. (TW Nov 16). On February 4, **Margaret Thatcher** spoke at the Charter Day Convocation at the Phi Beta Kappa hall and on May 14 George H.W. **Bush** delivered the Commencement address at William and Mary. **Jeanne Calment** celebrated her 120$^{th}$ birthday in Arles. She retained the apartment she rented from lawyer André-François Raffray, who in 1965 had relied on actuarial tables to pay her $500 monthly for the right to take her apartment when she died. Over thirty years he paid her more than $180,000, or three times the value of the apartment. **Joseph Farman** received the Nobel Prize for his discovery of the ozone hole. Astronomers discovered the **first exoplanet** orbiting a star, as **William Borucki** had predicted when he convinced NASA to find evidence by measurement of transit-dimming. Measurement required a charge-coupled photometric device and led to the **Kepler** program. In **Srebenica,** Bosnia-Herzegovina on July 11, 1995 the massacres began. Over 6,241 people were murdered.

## *Walk the path.*

Miriam: Welcome to the holy presence!
More than a dream;
Less than a scheme.
Welcome to the middle way.

Daniel: Find a middle way—
Sometimes cost is profit.

Miriam: Sometimes even business-sense can feed our souls.
Daniel: Sometimes holy dreams become our business goals.

Miriam: Find a middle way.
Daniel: Mutual agreement.

Miriam: Can we live with partial truths?
Daniel: Can we reach agreement?

All: Find a middle way.
Sometimes cost is profit.
Sometimes all our business-sense can feed our souls.
Sometimes holy dreams become our business goals.
Find a middle way.

Miriam: Each has a story. Each has a place.
Each one can listen, each confer grace.
Find a middle way.
Joy lies in the choosing.
Not by a command or purchase
Comes your bliss.
You are what is given.
What is given's this:
**Be the holy way.**

Another approximation, this song comes from Rose's work, *The Books of Daniel, a*n opera in two acts composed in 1995 and revised in 2008.

## Step 96

**Susie** saw male and female **Rufous Towhees** in the yard at Rock Springs and wrote: **"*Male and female! Beautiful! First time: January 10, 1996.*"** On a bitterly cold, snowy day, the big reddish cat from next door who used to visit Susie as she worked in the garden, had again been left outside for hours. When he saw Susie going in, he rushed to the door. She let him in. He stayed. She called him **Mr. Gregory,** after her high school English teacher. On 2/18 **Rob** wrote, "***I just wanted to thank you all for taking care of my ticket. I will repay it. Spring Break starts March 1. I will call later next week. Everything is fine here. I have been designing my own page on the internet, primarily to show to potential employers . . . Not many people have see it yet and I could use some constructive criticism . . . I hope everything is fine there and the stolen cat is behaving. I will see you all in March.***" On February 2, **Richard** presented on science learning centers at **Guilford** ES with **Chris** Marlin and again on 2/8, they presented at Guilford on the use of **learning centers and the learning cycle** in science teaching. On February 28, Richard and Susie saw ***Les Misérables*** at the National theater. On January 14, **Monte Towles** was 99 years old. She lived at McMinnville Boarding Home. She received cards from Mary, Jo Evelyn, Richard and Susan, Jo Yager, Gloria and Edward, Bobby Crouch, Terian, Zachary, Jennifer, Kelli & Trey, Tracey& Kevin & Josh & Chris Taylor, Mary Francis, Jessie Mae. "***I know you miss talking to Joy.***" Joy was Aunt Monte's upstairs neighbor at D'Ville Apartments who had polio as a child and was confined to a wheelchair but was one of the most active and cheerful of the elderly residents—a spirit which Aunt Monte appreciated., Helen Gould (**"*Do you have the recipe for the mayonnaise we used to make*?"),** Mildred **("*You have been so greatly blessed –and you have greatly blessed so many, many people. You have made my days brighter and have been a great inspiration to me. The beauty and love in your life has been passed down to your nieces and nephews, friends and neighbors. I love you and will visit when I can get out. The walk is still bad.*")**, Jamie, Carol, Jacob and Leah. On October 11-13 The Roses camped at **Indian Cove** Resort in Virginia Beach. Deep **snowfall** in DC region was followed by flooding. From December to July, Richard assisted Dr. **Shirley Smith** at Marymount University as an outside evaluator of her **Eisenhower project**. The Spring Dinner at Marymount on her "*Connections in Math and Science*" project was on August 24, 1996. Susie came to the banquet and met Pat Gomez, the teacher-coordinator from **Mount Vernon Elementary School**. She knew some of the teachers that Susie remembered from Mount Vernon. When Richard later made donations of teaching materials to MVES in Susie's name, Pat distributed them. She helped to distribute them to other teachers. The **Fauquier** school system opened with 4364 in elementary, 2050 in middle, and 2531 in high school, under Anthony Lease, Superintendent. On Feb. 28 Davis **Chung**, former history teacher and coach at Fauquier

High School, entered prison. He began to help other prisoners with their GED studies. On June 23, **Sally Jane Turner,** Jennifer, and Zachary met Vice President **Al Gore** at the Tennessee National Guard when he cut a ribbon to open the **Natchez Trace Parkway.** On July 24, **Sam Knight** and his dog Oreo were pictured in the *Daily Oklahoman* after Oreo won the Dalmatian mascot prize in the Firehouse Art Center's Dalmatian Mascot Contest. Sam was 11 months old. On October 13, the Roses watched the IMAX film *Into the Deep* in Virginia Beach. During the summer, **three kittens** were born under the porch at Rock Springs. Susie named them *Sarah Teasdale, Christina Rossetti,* and *Elizabeth B. Browning.* Sarah was given to veterinarian Sandra Wilson for her daughter, who renamed her *Cosa loco*, which she was. **CE Dates:** In 1496 Henry VII sent **John Cabot** to explore the New World. Cabot claimed **Nova Scotia** and **Newfoundland** for the Crown. In 1796 **Jenner** created a smallpox vaccine from cowpox. Also, **Robert Burns** died in 1796. In 1896, the **Hecht's** Department Store, founded in Baltimore in 1857, opened in Washington, D.C. on 515 Seventh Street NW. In this year, at the age of 21, **Schweitzer** decided to live for science and art until he was thirty and then devote his life to serving humanity. He studied with the organist Widor in Paris. He studied theology and philosophy at Strasbourg, Paris and Berlin. Charles **Dow** created the Dow-Jones Industrial average, a weighted average of 30 large stocks meant to indicate market trends. Now the S&P 500 presumably gives a better indication. The hydroelectric era began at **Niagara Falls**, using **Tesla**'s AC transmission system instead of Edison's DC idea. The first electrified town was Buffalo, NY. From LaPorte, **Chekhov** worked for the reform of rural education and gave books for a local library. Meanwhile his play, *The Seagull,* was panned in Moscow. The following year he published but did not produce *Uncle Vanya.* **Octave Chanute** flew gliders over the Indiana Dunes. His designs were used by the Wrights. On March 13, 1996 in **Dunblane**, Scotland, A mad gunman killed 31 elementary children in school. A second drug for **Alzheimer's**, called **donepezil**, also a cholinesterase inhibitor, was approved by the FDA. It was the active ingredient in **Aricept**, which Susie later received to no discernible effect. The "**nun study**" found a possible link between poor linguistic ability in early life and cognitive function in late life. Cotterrill and Gilbert wrote a book about the supposed **Mayan prophecy** of the world's end on 12/21/2012. The stone tablet found in the 1960s alludes to a god of war coming at the end of the thirteenth baktun cycle of 394 years. Gilbert and Cotterell determined that, rather than simply being a marker for the end of a baktun cycle, December 21, 2012 would mark a magnetic reversal in the Earth's core which would destroy the planet. Magnetic reversals have occurred many times in Earth's history, but what would be more alarming is a marked **decline in the magnetic field strength**. This would cause changes in the Van Allen belt shielding Earth from harmful solar radiation. In fact, the lack of a magnetic reversal suggested that the magnetic field was weakening. As far as the beliefs about the Mayan calendar expressed in books, websites, and Hollywood blockbuster: they were wrong.

## Step 97

The birth of **Monte Sally Hobson** (Towles) in Liberty TN came on January 8, 1897 to John Ewell Hobson and Mary Reynolds Hobson., and for **Charles R. Gage** on September 19. **Ruth McFarland** (later Louden) was born 8/25. **Lucille Lance** was born on March 17. **Grace Rose** was born on May 9. In 1997, **Kyle Fay** was born on October 3. On January 7, this Christmas letter from **Fran** came to the home of **Frank & Jo** while they were in Tennessee: ***"I am latest yet. Paul is ashamed of me! Hope your trip to TN was wonderful--100th birthday—how wonderful! And your grandson—our grandnephew of 15 months visited us in Oct. --such fun—turned on knobs, etc. Late October I went to California for 3 ½ weeks. Lee met me there and we had a great time with Jan and Rey and assorted animals. Paul stayed home to await delivery of his 1600 lb crank-down Tower. He's doing good with beam now. So sorry about Bob Cullom. Hope he gets along with his triple as I have. I owe a lot to rehab. Take care of each other. Fran"*** On January 8, 1997, **Monte Towles** celebrated her hundredth birthday at a family reunion in the Holiday Inn in McMinnville, TN. **Robert Andrew Rose** graduated from the College of William and Mary with a degree in computer science. **George Louden** died in a Pocatella, Idaho nursing home. He was the son of George and Ruth Louden of Ft. Worth. Ruth was the sister of Edna McFarland Rose. Susie was suffering hot flashes. The Roses had no knowledge of the effects of low estrogen (see below) on neurons, and, apparently, neither did her doctor or oncologist, who continued not to give her estrogen because they didn't want to promote more breast cancer cells. Richard wrote: ***"Unfortunately, I think that the risk from inadequate estrogen greatly exceeded the risk of cancer. Dr. Durkin had already removed one ovary. Susie was left without the protection of estrogen, and she had also been exposed to high doses of the same chemotherapeutic drugs whose demonstrated effects on other patients was a persistent 'chemical fog,' the same kind of low-level memory loss that she began to have during this period of time. It is difficult to think of all of this now without affixing blame to someone, but if I am to blame anyone, I must be first in line. We hear much about the human capacity for evil, but the greater evils in this world, the surd evils that leave us survivors afterward with a surd, absurd, and redundant life, are ignorance and disease."*** On September 13, the Roses attended a reception and luncheon at the Tuscarora Mill Restaurant in Leesburg for the son and fiancée (George & Bethany) of Tom and **Betty Mar Little**. **CE Dates:** On January 31, 1797, **Franz Schubert** was born**.** Thomas Freeman and Nicholas King prepared a survey of the city of **Washington**, going as far as K Street. A report from that time said that ***"the corner of Fourteenth and G Streets was overgrown with grape vines, thorn bushes, blackberry bushes, etc. In some places, not far from German Hall, rabbits then burrowed."*** Birth of **Carter Braxton** on October 10, 1997. In January, Speaker **Gingrich** was reprimanded by the House Ethics

Committee and fined $300,000 for improprieties concerning one of his educational business ventures. Khalid **Sheik Mohammed** joined Al Qaeda. **Princess Diana** died in an accident in Paris. A prospective study showed that **estrogen** reduced Alzheimer's risk more than 50% by protecting nerve cells from Alzheimer's Disease. Nonsteroidal anti-inflammatory drugs (NSAIDs) were linked with 30-60% reduction in risk of Alzheimer's Disease. High dosages of Vitamin E were said to slow Alzheimer's, as was selegeline. AMY plaques were identified as separate but coexistent with amyloid plaques, yielding a new set of mechanisms to explore. **Human lymphocyte antigen-A2 gene** implicated in common form of Alzheimer's disease. Mutations in d2 glutamate receptor gene were implicated in nerve cell death. Seventeen drugs were in the testing stage or awaiting FDA approval. Clearly it was a time of many promises for the cure of **Alzheimer's Disease**. None of them were fulfilled. Paabo took **mitochondrial DNA** from the original Düsseldorf Neanderthal bones to show that Neanderthals and Sapiens had a common African ancestor prior to migration to Europe and that, close as chimps are to Sapiens (98.75), **Neanderthals** are closer (more than 99%). The genetic evidence indicates that Neanderthals carried genes for red hair, freckles, stocky, muscular bodies, and **FOXP2** gene that affects neural connections in facial muscles that might have enabled speech. A special scaffolding, designed by Michael Graves, was wrapped around the **Washington Monument** for its restoration.

## Step 98

**Franke Hobson** (later Yager, then Grizzell) was born on Candlemas or Groundhog Day, Feb 2, 1898. On 10/16 /1898, **Albert Krallman** was born. (He died August 17,1988.) He was the husband of **Josie van de Riet**; they lived at 2753A Wyoming in St. Louis. **Grady Watterman Towles** was born on April 27. As a young man, he went into the US Army Training Corps during World War I. On January 1, 1998, **Gary Knight** wrote to Richard **(the card quotes Aesop: *"no act of kindness, no matter how small, is ever wasted*' from fable about mouse & lion, similar to Androcles & the *Lion)"* and *"Thank you so much for your thoughts and prayers during this difficult time. The flowers were beautiful. My Grandmother was 95 years old when she passed away. She was the wisest person that I have ever known. My Grandfather and she were married for 48 years before he passed away in 1973. He rode up in a covered wagon to propose marriage. They rode from their wedding in that same covered wagon. She lost her mother and two siblings to the flu before she was 10 years old. The Wright brothers made their historic first flight the year she was born. She went without during the great Depression and migrated to California with the masses during the Dust Bowl years. During all of that turmoil my grandparents made a life and raised a family together. An idea that seems lost on today's pop culture and its president. We were all blessed to have had her in our lives. She will be sorely missed. Thank you again*."** On January 11

**Susie and Richard** attended Epiphany service at Williamsburg Presbyterian Church. In late January, **Richard** attended School Board, HIV Education, and Safety Committee meetings, accompanied the **Christian Science** meetings in Leesburg, attended Department of Instruction meetings with other supervisors, met with a CPA for tax work, and went with Susie to a National Symphony Orchestra concert in D.C. on 1/31. In February, **Christopher Knight** was born on 2/28/98. Richard celebrated **Cheryl Wimer**'s birthday (2/2), met with **Gerald Bracey** (writer for *Phi Delta Kappan)* at the John Barton Payne Building in Warrenton, had lessons with **Martin Berkofsky** in Cassanova, met with textbook salespeople like Cam Fidler, helped principal **Dennis Young** with the Meadowland ES Science Fair, took Rob to Alexandria (2/7), had car work done, planned for the **Regional Science and Engineering Fair** with Broad Run High School staff, did curriculum work with various committees and made curriculum presentations, set up the "**Eisenhower Fellows**" program of staff development using Title II Funds, arranged workshops at the Ashburn Training Center, saw *South Pacific* at Fauquier High School with Susie, helped with PDK meeting on the "20/20" donation plan, talked with Ella Hopson on the Loudoun Valley HS FEA Committee, went with Susie to **Dr. Swiger** the dentist, worked on the furnace in Rock Springs, and so on. On 4/9 Richard went to a conference in McLean on "*effective team leadership*," run by **Dutch van Hatten** and the National Seminars group. He started with the **Willie Sutton** story: **"*Why do you rob banks? Because that's where the money is."*** He claimed that the way we listen puts **deposits or debits into the emotional bank accounts** of ourselves and others. FEAR, he said, was **"*false evidence appearing real*."** Extroverts, he said, say **"*How do I know what I think until I see what I say*?"**). On 4/25, Richard met with **R.C. Bosley** and Eva Proffitt (VP of **Phi Delta Kappa**, National)at GMU in a leadership conference. They discussed the roles of officers and the improvement of chapters. Barbara Lanzer from GMU chapter hosted. The Loudoun-No.VA Chapter 1578 was in Area 8E. On 5/20, Richard read for the PDK-Loudoun **initiation** at Laurel Brigade in Leesburg. On 7/1, Loudoun PDK had 85 members. In June, **Susan Ann Knight,** Shannon Emmons, and Stacey Felkner became shareholders in **Manchester and Pignato, P.C.** At the Robinson Renaissance Building (119 N. Robinson St., Suite 900 OKC). The **Frank Rose** family (including the **Knights**) arrived on August 1. During the visit, they ate at **Napoleon's,** swam at **Ida Lee Rec. Ctr.,** went into D.C., went to Patrick Henry's home at **Scotchtown** (8/5) and nearby King's Dominion, Williamsburg, a stage show, and ate at **Fantastico**'s in Warrenton before Frank and Jo left from Dulles at 6:40 a.m on August 8th. August 6 **Frank, Jo, & the Knights** attended *Ragtime* at the National theater in Washington with the Roses. Frank saved the program in his desk in Norman. 8/29 **Susan Knight** wrote thanks for hospitality, "***treats packed***" for trip home, etc. She said that she listened to the tape a few times. (Probably this was the first version of *Books of Daniel*, performed in 1997.) and liked the tablecloth, mentioned Sam's 3rd birthday, and said **"*Frank made a token phone call when I left word about Daddy's surgery, but we've heard***

***nothing since or for quite some time before. I can only hope he is doing all right and will grow up at some point. He doesn't want anything to do with any of us unless money is involved, apparently. As you can see from the picture, Christopher remains well fed. He had his 6 month check up yesterday and is in the 95th percentile in both height and weight. Your comments about bumbling Bill are duly noted. Truly, it is regretful that he did not follow in the line of those presidents who did not stray . . . John Kennedy, Dwight Eisenhower, Franklin Roosevelt. I did find it humorous however, that there is one government office that does not display a photograph of the president. I had a hearing in the EEOC office a couple of weeks ago and Bill's smiling face was absent. I guess school is in full gear now and you must be bored with nothing to do. I hope you can find something to keep you busy! Keep in touch.*** 8/30 **Gary Knight** wrote to thank the Roses for showing them a good time. He liked Bertucci's and said he enjoyed Richard's remarks on bumbling Bill. ***"Clinton blaming his marital strife on Ken Starr is akin to a burglar blaming his problems on the police."*** He said that Susan doesn't share his sentiments, making for ***"some lively banter around the dinner table."*** Sam looked forward to coming next summer so he could visit King's Dominion. 9/5 **Frank Rose** wrote on Labor Day weekend. ***T=102°, kick off at OU at 6 pm too hot.*** He would see if he can ***"sell my tickets to some nut who will sit in the hot stadium."*** He wrote that **Frank S**. came by ***"a couple of nights ago and told us he and a friend were leaving Norman the next day for Massachusetts. The friend has a car and they plan to drive. In spite of our attempts to discourage this trip, he had his mind made up, said he wanted us and Susan to know he was going. I took him by Susan's where the same conversations were repeated. Our concern is not that a kid wants to travel and (have good) times, but that he is bent on going to some 'community' in Massachusetts called the Rainbow family and has high expectations for seeing this group. He maintains it is not a cult, not a religious order, etc., but just a lot of like-minded people living and working together for the common good. Apparently they departed the next day. He said he would call us and provide address, etc. when he arrived, As you can understand, Susan is quite disturbed over this and has attempted to get information about the Rainbow group. I'm enclosing a paper she and a friend retrieved from the internet. She also learned that the 3 principal locations for this community are LA, WDC, and Boston. About all we can do is pray that he survives this experience and eventually gets his head on straight. That's about all I know on this subject, but will let you know if and when he calls. Should you happen to hear from Frank, give him some sound advice. He may listen to you, as he has always admired and respected you. Much love, Dad"*** He added that they were driving to TN on 9/24-25, returning 9/29 instead of waiting until Aunt Franke's party in February 9/25 **Susan K.** wrote about a lawsuit in which Gary and 12 others were involved. Her note was written during the 5 day deposition ***(See what happens when you sue my husband!)***. She mentioned planning to go to **Aunt Franke's** 100th party and how Frank Smith called Frank & Jo to say ***"what***

***they wanted to hear to get him money, and (they) have heard no more from him in over a month. I sure hope he wakes up*.**" On December 8-10, the **Knights** went to New York City. **Frank** saved a copy of the ***Insider's Report*** from the **American Policy Center**, which warned about the **"*radical green"*** agenda of the National Council of Churches. **"*it comes as no surprise that the NCC is now heavily involved in promoting the radical environmental agenda as well. The NCC's General Secretary, Rev. Joan Brown Campbell, says the goal is to make global warming 'a litmus test for the faith community.' In truth, this effort by the National Council of Churches, along with the U.S. Council of Churches, along with the U.S. Catholic Conference and the Evangelical Environmental Network, is part of a nation-wide drive by radical greens to influence American churches into promoting unfounded, nonscientific environmental policies. Beginning in 1993, more than 100 million Americans in 67,000 congregations became the target of radical leftist environmental propaganda fueled by over $5million in grants from private foundations. The goal is to break down the strongest resistance to an environmental movement that advocates earth worship, and the idea that man is only equal to rocks, plants, and animals."*** Supporting this effort, according to APC, were: the U.S. Catholic Conference, NCC, Coalition on the Environment and Jewish Life, Mount Gilead Baptist Church conference in D.C. On 10/4/1993, Pew Charitable Trust, Stephen C. Rockefeller, the Turner Foundation, and the New World Foundation. These organizations "***are unabashed earth-worshipping pagans who promote a religion called 'Gaia'."*** The Gaia Institute operated out of the Cathedral of St. John the Divine and the Temple of Understanding, associated with the UN as a Non-Governmental Organization. The Temple's leader, Rev. Thomas Berry called Christians to "put the Bible away for twenty years while we radically rethink our religious ideas." The ***Insider*** also reported on "**Outcome Based Education** in Sunday School curricula, as well as in public schools, where **"*valuable classroom time engaged in 'cooperative' learning (group learning) encounter sessions and discussion groups that employ pop psychology that teachers are simply not qualified to apply. These programs are designed for a very specific purpose—to change the attitudes, values and beliefs of your children. Such behavior-modification programs are the very root of the destruction of America's education system."*** The article goes on to describe a "tree-hugging" activity in which Sunday School children, using the *Group* curriculum, were taught pagan earth-worship and then asked how it felt to hug a tree and what they liked about trees. From March to the end of the year, Richard worked on: the American Association of University Women Science Conference at Loudoun County HS on 3/14, the first Ashburn Center math and science training on 3/16, the Regional Science Fair on 3/19, a recital on 3/22, Sally Rubal's science fair at Seneca Ridge MS on 3/26. The same day that Richard read words for the spelling bee and met with a lawyer about going to court on 3/30 as a fact witness. He went with Susie to the National Council of Math Teachers (**NCTM**) convention 4/2-4 and then to training sessions in McLean, a Ruritan science awards dinner on 4/14 in

Sterling, and a meeting with parents and science fair winners to arrange for their trip to the international fair (**ISEF**). He took Susie to **Dr. Mancini** 4/18, had James Fincham cut down a tree on 4/19, helped judge the social studies fair 4/20, arranged miniconferences at **Blandy** Experimental Farms 4/21, took Susie to the radiologist, Dr. Kim, on 4/24, met repeatedly with the department supervisors on testing and other matters, presented science fair winners to the school board 4/28, celebrating Susie's birthday 5/1, turned pages for **Mark Conrad** at a Berkofsky concert 5/10, worked with the Loudoun Education Foundation Grant Committee and corp **Lightspan** oration on 5/12, visited **Joe Hill**'s technology center in Rockingham County with Bob Nakles, analyzed test results, worked on training issues at the Detention Center, served on the Student Achievement Committee, met with representatives from **Logal** and **Plato**, attended a reception for Asst. Supt. **Harry Bibb** at J.R.'s Festival Lakes on 5/30 with Susie, visited with Fred and Rhonda 6/7, and attended the Virginia Association for Supervision and Curriculum Development (**VASCD**) conference on 6/26. Susie continued appointments with **Dr. Simms** the oncologist while taking a summer course on AIMS (math and science) in July. the gutters were replaced at Rock Springs 7/20. Maestro **Martin Berkofsky** gave several local concerts, one on 6/27 at Fauquier HS and a students' concert on 7/24. After the visitors from Oklahoma had departed, Administrative work week began on 8/10, with more sessions on Standards of Accreditation, technology initiatives, school law, Standards of Quality, Student Achievement and final meetings with **Miriam Leibowicz** on staff training. **Firesafe** cleaned the chimneys at Rock Springs. State Science supervisors for Region 4 met on 9/18. Richard met with department team, science and math chairs, HIV committee, technology teachers, Richard Efthim and others at the Naturalist Center, and school principals. Richard also took short courses on Spanish and on Crisis Management. Once a month, the Roses went to the Kennedy Center to hear the **NSO**. On 10/17-18 they helped **Rob** move. Richard attended the VAFPA conference in Roanoke 11/16-17 and part of the VASCD meeting in Williamsburg on 12/2-3 and worked on pre-testing for Standards of Learning tests, preparatory instruction for **SOL tests**, administration of SOL tests, and analysis of SOL test results.Analysis of testing occupied many hours, especially from February through May and during October. Throughout 1998, Richard followed the routine for Loudoun Schools, with more School Board presentations, Loudoun Education Foundation work, Training on TI-83 calculators for Algebra teachers, developing programs to link physics with vocational courses (the CORD program), arranging microscope repairs, studying the feasibility of a school-based seismology network to match the Automated Weather Stations already placed in schools, *Washington Post* grant work (which resulted in the selection of Lyle Skarzynski at LVHS as teacher of the year), arranging and attending conferences like VASCD in Williamsburg (12/1) and VAFPA in Roanoke (11/15-18), giving workshops with Barbara Aztec (10/27)on ***Math 24*** games, giving training to MS science teachers and technology resource teachers on the use of **Ecolog** sensors (12/8), giving a tutorial on science teaching to a student at

Shenandoah University extension in Leesburg, working on the HIV-AIDS curriculum and special event, budget work on CIP, taking continuing education classes on school management from principal **Vera Blake,** working with consultant **Dr. Miriam Liebowicz** on staff development issues, and preparation for the Regional Science Fair in March of 1999. With Richard **Efthim** and other staff and the current teacher-representative, he worked at the Smithsonian's **Naturalist Center** near Leesburg Airport. (This was the airport used by celebrity Arthur Godfrey, who owned property in Loudoun. Truman Bruch flew Godfrey to Leesburg.). During the same period: The Roses continued to go to Kennedy Center concerts once a month on Saturdays. Richard continued to study with Martin Berkofsky on Thursday evenings twice a month. On September 23, Richard began to meet with **Barbara Wilkinson,** at her home off Connecticut Avenue in NW D.C., to prepare for a performance of his opera, ***Amber.*** In December, a rehearsal schedule was set up for Sunday afternoons beginning on 12/20 at 3:00 p.m. The Roses also went to Berkofsky's concerts (10/11 in Alexandria), held a yard sale on October 24, and went to the **Writers Center** on 25 W. Market (11/6). Richard also went with **Fred Morris** to some jazz concerts at the Kennedy Center (12/3 Roger Kellaway). On 12/24, the Roses took Rob's table to the Fairfax Bus Station. On the 28th, they sat down in **Jo Sullivan's living room at 4 W. Howell** to talk with Ginny and her about the idea of a **reverse mortgage**. Richard proposed an alternative: that Susan and he sell their home at Rock Springs and come to Jo's house, where they could pay rent and help her. So that he would remain attentive to what mattered, Richard kept a list of "**standing appointments**" with William Rose, Robert Rose (who was working on *Bottled Intelligence* at the time), Susan Rose, the Frank Rose family, the CPA for taxes, Glenn Catalano (financial advisor), Franz Schubert, Neuhaus, Hindemith, Albert Schweitzer, Jesus, James Pulchine (physical education teacher and trainer at FHS), Martin Berkofsky, J.S. Bach, and his own roles as science kit maker, naturalist, reporter, basement worker, situation analyst, plumber, editor, letter writer, composer, writer, and PR man. **CE Dates:** The first **Crusade** began in 1098. On May 23, 1498, **Savonarola** was burned in Florence after the end of his reign of terror as leader of the "Christian Republic" known for its **bonfire of the vanities**, i.e. book-burning. In 1598, a German visitor counted more than 30 heads impaled on **London Bridge**. Henri IV issued the **Edict of Nantes,** granting religious toleration of Protestants (the Reformed Church), provided that they remained, published, taught and recruited only within their own territories, and re-establishing the ***"Catholic, Apostolic and Roman faith . . . in all those districts and places of this our Realm . . . in which its exercise has been interrupted . . ."*** Those of the Reformed Church were to be free from molestation, inquisition, and compulsion against their conscience as long as they stayed in prescribed areas. Additionally, they were not to be excluded from public hospitals, shelters, universities or political positions anywhere in France. In 1798, George Washington established an arsenal at **Harper's Ferry.** In Russia in 1898, the **Social Democrats** formed their own party while in France, the **Dreyfuss** scandal filled the

papers. In Moscow, **Stanislavsky** founded the **Moscow Art theater.** In 1998 **Al Quaeda** bombed an embassy in Africa. On Sept 7, 1998, **Google** was incorporated. Twelve **autistic children** with intestinal problems were referred to British gastroenterologist Andrew **Wakefield** who found that changes in their diet could affect their autism and that all of the patients had become autistic after receiving a vaccination containing not only antigens for measles but also for mumps and tetanus. He wanted to pursue research to determine whether this combined vaccination was such an immunological shock that some subjects became autistic. After publishing a case study on this with several other authors, his attempts to do further research were blocked by his employer, by a government agency and by the pharmaceutical company involved. Later outbreaks of measles such as that in 2013 (600 cases in Wales and 200 in England) were attributed to parents preventing vaccinations out of fear of any vaccination because of Wakefield's preliminary findings on MMT. Rev. **Mary Boyd Click** delivered a sermon at **Manassas Presbyterian Church** on October 25 on "***Hope in the Harves*t " from Jer 32:6-15, Psa. 126, and Mt 13:1-9. **Nancy Dederer** assisted. **Robert Rubin and Lawrence Summers** opposed **Brooksley Born**, chairwoman of the Commodity Futures Trading Commission, when she called for the **regulation of derivatives**.

## Step 99

In January 1999, Richard continued to work on budgets, Capital Improvement Plan, to take a course with Vera Blake, to tutor at Shenandoah University, to arrange staff development with Miriam Liebowicz, and to manage the HIV-AIDS program. The Roses also began preparing Jo Sullivan's house (1/23) for their move. They attended the Manassas Presbyterian Church, where Susie particularly liked the assistant minister, **Nancy Dederer,** and Richard liked the sermons of former biology teacher **Mary Boyd Click.** Bill painted the upstairs bedroom the same shade of blue as the bedroom at Rock Springs. Susie was in great distress about the move and how to sort all of the piles of papers and materials from years of school teaching. By making the new room seem familiar, Richard hoped to make the move less stressful. On January 22, Richard and Fred Morris heard the **Cyrus Chestnut trio** at the Kennedy Center; but the Roses did not attend Berkofsky's concert with the Piedmont Orchestra on 3/7. On February 5, **Three Daves Movers** took their furniture to Alexandria. On February 6, Richard loaded all the other furniture and boxes into a U-haul truck and moved into a ministorage unit in New Baltimore. **Richard and Susan Rose returned to Alexandria**, VA in February to live with Josephine Sullivan at 4 West Howell Ave. **Ginny** wrote to thank them for their anniversary gift, "***Oh happy years, glorious years! We are blessed! May you two precious ones be so blessed. So happy you are <u>here!</u>"*** On February 12, the **Knights** came for a visit. *Amber* rehearsals continued (2/21). Meetings continued concerning: Math Predictor tests (2/22) in Charlottesville, Marymount courses (2/27), and Blandy Experimental Farm programs. On March 4, Mary Olien, the director of Blandy, asked

Richard to serve on the education committee. Richard met with a group planning the NSTA Key Leader Program (3/1-2). Susie continued to teach at P.B. Smith School, although she had to commute from Alexandria. Settlement on the Rock Springs house was at 3/2 at 6:30. On March 7, **Jo had a stroke**. It was not recognized. She complained only of feeling nauseated, said Eunice Adu, her care-giver, who stayed in the next bedroom downstairs. Jo had no longer been able to use her upstairs bedroom and so had taken Rentie's former bedroom downstairs. Richard and Susie stayed upstairs bedroom where cousin **Earl Sullivan** had once lived. On March 11, **Jo Sullivan died** at Alexandria Hospital. She had a stroke, complained of nausea, started toward the bedroom and fell near the kitchen door, as her mother had done in 1978. The viewing at Everly-Wheatley was on March 15 and the service there was conducted by **Nancy Dederer.** Some weeks later, the Roses began to attend the Fairlington Presbyterian Church, closer to Howell Avenue. Richard continued to have responsibilities for the Loudoun County Regional Science Fair on March 17-18, the History Fair on 3/22, the SOL Bowl on 4/5 and the presentation of science fair winners to the school board on 3/23. **Arthur Palmer,** former choir member at Warrenton Presbyterian Church, directed a concert of **Elijah** in Culpeper. **Truman Bruch** went into the hospital for a CAT Scan and radiation on April 22. Richard attended the AIAA in Crystal City (5/3-5), assisted **Peter O'Reilly** at GWU Loudoun Campus in his Annual LEIP report, and met with **Bob Nakles** and **Scott Close** on the technology and laboratory requirements of new school buildings. He assisted **Richard Efthim** with the interviews for the next teacher naturalist at the **Naturalist Center** in Leesburg. The Roses went to the concerts of **Martin Berkofsky** at the Icelandic Embassy (5/22) and **Melinda** Pfautsch, one of the cast of *Amber,* who performed at the Metro Cafe on 14th and Church in D.C. on June 19. Richard met a few times with a local poets group in Del Ray at the Duncan Branch library (5/18). Susie had laboratory work done on 5/17. Richard worked with **Debbie Wahlstrom** to present in-service training on making accomodations for disabled students in math and science teaching (6/21). On July 16, Susie again went to **Dr. Elizabeth Simms,** the oncologist in Sterling. Dr. Simms rather bluntly suggested that she was showing signs of Alzheimer's, which greatly upset her. On July 17, Rob left at 8 a.m. For a conference in Florida, returning 7/22 on USAir at 2:10 p.m. On 7/26, Susie went to a Benefit Seminar. The 1999 school year was extremely stressful. She stayed late at school every day. After grading, lesson-planning, and duplicating materials, she would line up all her materials and worksheets on a long table for the next day so that she would not forget what to do next. Initially, other teachers in her grade did not understand her unwillingness to take on other tasks. Richard and Susie talked about her coming to Loudoun to teach in the Gifted Education program. On August 1, Ginny Bruch wrote:

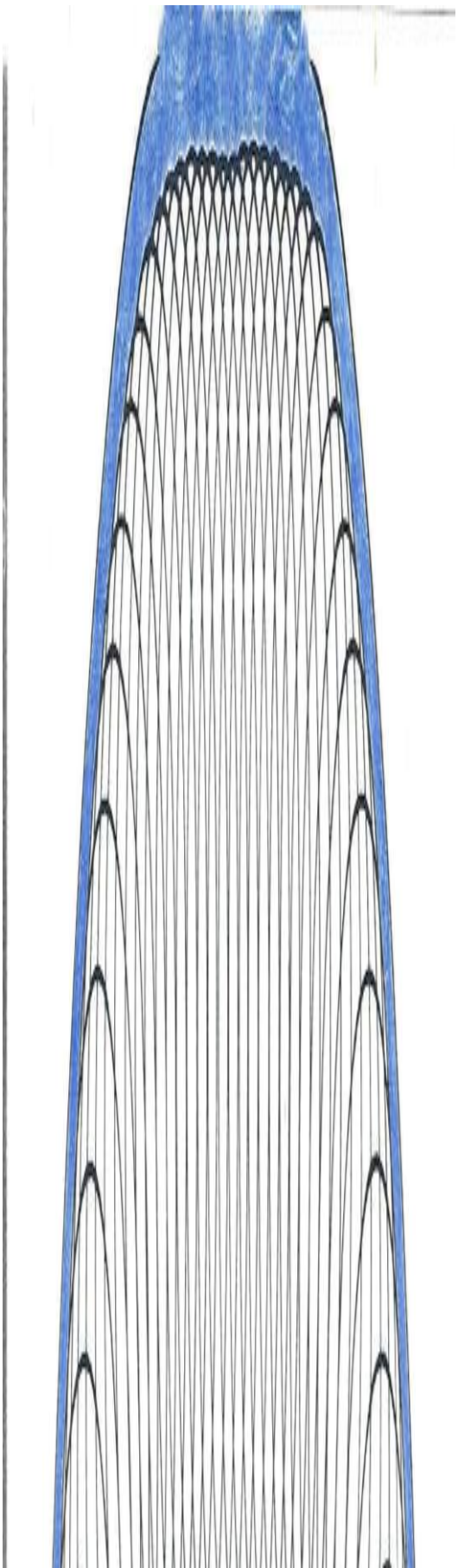
**I want to call Heaven.**
**I want to speak to Jo in Heaven**

**But Heaven doesn't answer.**
**No one answers.**
**The clerics say that**
**God will answer--**
**But he doesn't.**
**No one answers.**
**I want to speak to Jo.**
**She was my Dearest Friend and Sister.**
**I had only one sister,**
**One who was sister to me--**
**She was Jo--**
**I never had a chance to say Goodbye.**
**Please God let me speak**
**to Jo in Heaven--**
**Why?**

On August 3, Susie had a bone scan. On August 4, **Fenwick English** met with instructional supervisors to talk about **curriculum mappin**g and other issues. ***Amber*** was performed on Sunday, 8/15 (also earlier on Saturday, Sept. 30) before an audience including the Frank and Jack Rose families and the Knights. **Joseph McLellan** wrote in ***The Washington Post*** *(8/5): "****The old story takes on new life in Rose's treatment, with dramatically apt music to control the pace of the performance and energize the text. It is cleverly constructed to be performable, as it was in the Lyceum, on a plain stage without scenery, costumes, or props .*** *. . "* The **Knights** and other relatives left Alexandria on August 17. On 8/20, SOL Predictor tests prepared by **Lynn Canady** of William and Mary were administered throughout the schools and the results analyzed. Helen Stiff was consulted (8/24) concerning strategies for using the results. **Cheryl Wimer**, who had taken over most of the math supervision duties from Richard, developed many instructional aids for math teachers to use as they helped students with the issues revealed by the diagnostic predictor tests. Richard worked from 8/30-9/1 on materials and books in the school warehouse; then from 9/1-9/3 made the rounds to every school to make sure that the new materials were properly distributed. On 9/2 he met with **Linda Hackett** in the Giak Room at Marymount concerning the upcoming Math and Science Teaching course which they were to co-teach. On September 4, some of the **cats** went to Dr. Whitter in Alexandria. While Richard and Susan lived at Jo's, they had three cats of their own and three of Jo's cats. Two kittens also came to live with them later on because Susie said she wanted to have kittens **"one more time." Frank L. Rose** cut articles and letters from the *Daily Oklahoman* about Clinton's impeachment, acquittal, and his being "sorry," such as one (2/19/1999) by Linda Bowles which ended "***Thank God for Republicans in Congress who had the courage to challenge this president. One shudders at what might have been his sins and excesses if Congress had been controlled by Democrats."*** On

September 1, Richard began teaching a course at **Marymount** University on elementary science teaching methods. It was not simply what *he* knew about science that he tried to convey in these courses, but everything about elementary teaching that he had learned from Susie. On the morning of June 24, **Dianne Kinkead** & **Richard** taped a TV interview for IN FOCUS with **Molly Converse** from LCPS Public Information Office concerning ways that parents could help children over the summer with reading and math. On March 1, Jo Rose thanked the Roses for the cassette tape, asked whether **Truman** had his biopsy results, and said they were going to dinner for their 55th anniversary. On June 15, **Eunice Adu** & her husband Nana wrote to the Roses "***What you did meant so much to us. Thank you.***" (for surety on a car loan.) On June 22, Susie wrote to Richard on their anniversary, "***I love you so much.***" **Frank** Rose wrote on 7/2 to thank Richard for birthday and Father's day gifts, especially the "79th Birthday" gift, which he said he thoroughly enjoyed since it was edible. He wished they could join them at Susan's on July 4 for steaks cook-out.. Then on July 3 he wrote "***Right now, there's nothin' worse, than just forget'n your annivers'! Frettin' and fumin' does no good. Did'n even think it would. So the best way we know (and rhyme this verse) is to do what we can an' open the purse. Enclosed you'll find some paltry treasure—which we trust will give you a bit of pleasure. Enjoy (belatedly) fun in the sun, an' us ol' folks will be glad what we've done! Belatedly, with love, Maw an' Paw***. On July 8, **Susan Knight** congratulated Susie on the new job. She said they would leave Norman August 11, Tennessee the 13th and arrive in VA on the evening of the 13th, staying till the 17th and getting back to Norman on the 18th. **Gary** wanted to know about Bertucci's. **Sam** was to have his tonsils out. He mentioned the opera on August 15 (*AMBER*). On July 13: From **Sharon and Jim Williams**, in NC (formerly Sharon Ward and sister-in-law of Janice Simpkins, PB Smith librarian and mother of Susie's student, Holly. Sharon had been the bookkeeper in Curriculum & Instr. LCPS.) She congratulated Susie on taking a job in LCPS, and Richard on the opera. Her daughter had just given birth to **Hailey** (girl) by C-section. She helped care for Michael, her grandson, and Jim's grandchildren and said they were spread from Massachusetts to Louisiana. They had put Jim's house up for sale; and were moving to a 47 foot Hunter 2000 sailboat in FL on the Inter-coastal Waterway. Dec 25: Christmas greetings came to the Roses from **Melissa Ondrus** ("***I hope you are adapting to your new home.***") **Carolyn Rue** (on vacation in FL) **Sharon Ackerman** ("***Each time I enter my office those little boots make me smile and regain my perspective***"—this concerns the little boots which Richard gave her to fill instead of Assistant Superintendent **Harry Bibb's shoes** when he retired.) **Saeed Tadagon** sent "***thanks for help and support.***" Jeanne Adams wrote: **"*Dear Mrs. Rose, Thank you very much for all you have done for Emma. I'm not sure how she will do in 4th grade, as she continues to struggle. But I noticed that you have given Emma a confidence she did not have before and for that I am grateful! You have been a wonderful teacher as well as an influence for Emma. Thank you.*" CE Dates:** At the founding of **Falls Church**, VA in 1699, **Williamsburg** had recently become the capital of Virginia. In 1799,**London Bridge** was rebuilt. In

1899, **Schweitzer** obtained his doctorate on Kant's philosophy of religion and became curate at St. Nicholas Church in Strasbourg. The **American Rice Milling Company, Limited** was chartered on July 25 by Thomas and Charles Freeland in Crowley, LA. It processed 3,000 barrels a day and employed 100 local people. The Freelands later assumed management of the First National Bank in 1924. **Charles Hale** recorded "*At a Dark town Cakewalk*", the first recording of "**shave and a haircut, two bits**." (<Levitin, p.56) **United Fruit** was incorporated. It later became Chiquita. **Thorstein Veblen** published *The Theory of the Leisure Class,* a study of ***"invidious comparisons"*** from ancient times to the Gilded Age. Riots of students spread across **Russia.** The story *Resurrection,* by **Tolstoi,** was serialized and Chekhov moved to Yalta to begin work on *The Three Sisters.* In 1999, an uprising in East **Timor**, Indonesia killed 1000. On May 3 an F5 **tornado** (>350mph) a mile wide struck **Moore OK,** destroying 8000 homes and killing two people. Foundations were lifted. Pavement was stripped from the ground. Susan Knight's former house, owned by **Don Raper,** was demolished. **Patrick Welsh,** teacher at T.C. Williams H.S., after many years of school reform efforts and curriculum reforms such as the **Standard of Learning**, encountered a another new Standards Based effort. Teachers had two days of SBE training in which they were told that the "drive-train sequence" of instruction should be linked to what students should be able to know and do. UPI Reporter **Helen Amelia Thomas** published ***Front Row at the White House: My Life and Times.*** A woolly **mammoth** was discovered intact in the Siberian permafrost. On April 20, 1999: Klebold and Harris killed 13 people in **Columbine** HS in Golden, CO on **Hitler's birthday**, presumably, according to the press, because they felt different and "left out" and no one ever called or invited them to hang out. The **Chandra X-ray** satellite was launched as the 3rd stage of the **Great Observatory Series**. Osama **Bin Laden** met with his gang in Kandahar, where he approved the plan to destroy the World Trade Building in New York by using commercial aircraft as weapons. In the fall, four men who were living in Hamburg, Germany met Bin Laden and promised to follow his orders. **Jan Edmiston** was forced to fire a popular Preschool Director at Fairlington Presbyterian Church, for reasons that could not be divulged. Jan was subsequently harassed for this personnel action and for not telling why the director was fired. Most of the 15,000 inhabitants of Curvarado in Colombia were removed from their land so that it could be replanted in palms and bananas for **Banacol**. The **beheaders** (*las mochacabezas)* massacred many who remained. The **Wren Building** was restored and renovated. Piping and fin tube heating units behind wainscoting were removed and smoke detectors, emergency lights, and sprinklers all hidden. The university's president at that time was **Timothy Sullivan.** And **Raymond Cannetti** from St. Mary's, MD., whose family business was stone and brick masonry for 500 years in **Carrara**, Italy (where Michelangelo bought marble), worked on the building. **Eduardo Kac** translated a line from *Genesis* into Morse Code and then into DNA nucleotide base pairs. These were then inserted into bacteria and used to produce a protein.



*Contemplez le sentier. On en voit mon esprit.*

## Step 100

**Mary Wilson** was born on September 23, 1900. On January 1, 2000 at the **Y2K PARTY OF THE CENTURY** in McMinnville, Tennessee, four-year old **Terian SaMonte Turner,** named for Great-great-great aunt Sally Monte Hobson Towles, with her mother, **Jennifer Turner Patton**, joined the crowd of 4000 along Main Street who were playing Bingo, Pokemon League games and other sports, dancing to the music of Disk Jockey Jason Gross, and listening to Jonathan Jones and his Bluegrass group. The weather was mild for party-goers and for the various organizations whose booths lined the streets, such as Lions Club, Families in Crisis, and Leadership Warren, where Larry Flatt passed out funnel cakes. Annie Womack held the winning ticket for Standard Publishing's grand prize of $1,000. At midnight, Tracie Hayes and Randall Dunn were married as a fireworks display, sponsored by Dr. Pepper Bottling Company, exploded over the heads of the crowd. On February 9, 2000, **Monte Towles** died in McMinnville, TN at the age of 103. The *Southern Standard* reported that she was a native of DeKalb County, a Baptist, and died at River Park Hospital. Visitation was 1-7 p.m. On February 11 at High's and burial at 10:00 a.m. on Saturday, Feb. 12, with Leslie Glover and Don Mathias officiating, at Salem Cemetery in Liberty. Visible from the grave site were the hills she saw as a girl. Donations went to the Salem Cemetery Trust Fund. Her last words were, **"*Be sure to tell everyone that I love them*."** On February 2, **the Roses** received a letter from their son, **Robert.** "***I'm going to be starting on Tuesday as a contractor for a company called CACI. It's a contract-to-hire position through a consulting company called Tristaff. After a few months I may convert to a regular employee of CACI or I may find another contracting position elsewhere. I'm going to start off working on an e-commerce web site (infods.com) while learning some web tools I don't know much about yet. The web site provides on-line reports to people (usually businesses) interested in demographics based on locations. The web site integrates with a GIS system called InSite. I may also be working on a desktop GUI for the InSite software. Well, that's what I'll be doing for the next few months. I like the people at the CACI office. It's a small satellite office and their head quarters are actually in Arlington. I'm also getting the opportunity to learn some web tools while being paid like a contractor, so I am happy about the job and am glad I held out for a while. It also helps that I will be able to claim contributions to an e-commerce site for a huge company. One thing I've realized in looking at jobs is that staying at Ablaze/Avectra as long as I did has actually hurt me. Employers in this industry seem to realize that the amount of extra experience gained staying somewhere 3 years rather than 1 year is small. They don't want to hire a job hopper, but at the same time I think I would have had more***

***opportunities if I had worked at 3 places in 3 years rather than at only one. I was fortunate to find something good before I had to settle for something not so good. That's all the news here. I'm still sleeping on the carpet waiting for furniture to come—and debating each day whether to eat out again or reinvest in kitchen utensils. The movers' new estimate is that it will arrive on Monday (the day before I start work.) I told them if it didn't arrive Monday I wasn't going to pay for the move, so we'll see what happens.***" Susie wrote on the e-message: "***Let's keep this***." On April 10 **Truman Bruch** died in Alexandria, VA. Richard, Ginny, and Susie had taken him to Alexandria Hospital the previous night. He died shortly before Richard and Susie (**The Roses**) and Ginny returned to the intensive care ward that morning. **Truman** was 87 years old. He died of aspiration pneumonia with contributing causes of Alzheimer's, lymphoma, and coronary arterial disease, according to Dr. **Bruce Gilmore**. His last occupation was "transportation manager for car rental agency." On October 17, **Marvin Hart** died after years of suffering from Parkinson's disease. The service was at Oakhurst Presbyterian Church and the interment at Mount Olivet. On November 10, Richard attended the Conference of the Virginia Association of Science Teachers (**VAST**). On June 13, Susan Knight gave **Frank Rose** a surprise 80th birthday party in Norman. She invited family and colleagues from the military and from the University of Oklahoma. After Christmas dinner at Jo's house, Susie tried to speed along the dishwashing by putting the Lenox china into the dishwasher but Ginny insisted on doing it by hand. It distressed Susie that most of the holidays were spent in the kitchen. Later, Ginny chastised herself, writing "***one shouldn't love material things so much; when we leave this world we don't take anything with us. We leave material things we love to those nearest our hearts. You, Susie, are nearest my heart and will always be. So I hope that you know all that I have is yours. So I hope you and Dick will decide to put the Christmas china back where it always looks so beautiful for our Christmas table. As for the washing of it, do as you like . . . I called my friend, Emmy Stuart, who is a Lenox representative and I knew she would know. She said that she handwashes her own Holiday Lenox . . . but Lenox advertises that it is safe to put their fine china in the dishwasher providing water heat is turned down, especially in the rinse. Just be sure that the dishes don't touch because it will leave a black mark on fine china. Also, excessive heat and washes, especially on the Lenox Holiday pattern, will dull the red berries eventually. But this pattern is used twice a year only and it is not likely if water is not too hot. So please feel free to do as you like, but I hope this year we can use the lovely Holiday pattern for Billy's and Robby's homecoming and in the way we used it when Mother, Jo, and Daddy were with us. You are in charge of the dishwashing machine, Susie. I will help if you want me. Please forgive me for upsetting you last night. I did not realize that you felt unhappy about it. I just thought I was going to enjoy washing and handling each dish and then your putting it away and us talking together as we once did. Emmy also said that old china like Haviland should never be put in dishwashers. That would be Mother's***

***china and Robert's Haviland in the basement. But the company says Lenox is safe provided water is not too hot or it will dull colors.***" After reading this, Susie did not want to use the dishes or think about them again. A few years later, the dishes were given away to Bill, Rob, and others. 12/31 **Ginny** wrote a thank-you card to the Roses. **"*My day by day loneliness for Daddy remains, and for Jo—I don't think that one ever gets over the loss of a soul mate as Dearest Daddy was, nor the loss of a precious sister . . .With God's help I shall become stronger. When I was sixteen and my Daddy died I did not realize why my mother was so lonely. She had me at home then but I remember her loneliness. I did not fully realize then even though I adored my Daddy. But God helped Mother through this sadness and He will me. Thank you for all the dear, kind ways you help me, Susie, Dear, and you, Dick for your kindness. Oh, the many nice things you both do for me. The invitations to your dear house around your table for dinners, the excellent food you prepare, Dick, all are so appreciated. Plus the rides, the eating out, the Church times together. All are so thoughtful and helpful to me. The phone calls, Susie, help so much. Thank you, Precious child, for all the thoughtful things you do for me . . .*" **MYA DATES:** About **100mya,** along the SE Virginia site of St. Charles during the Cretaceous period, a cache of North Atlantic sea water began to collect over the next 50 million years. Ocean salinity at that time was about 60 parts per thousand, twice that of 2013, when the cache was discovered. (U.S. Geol. Survey, Nov. 2013). In this water, chlorides, bromides, and halides were present in high concentration. In the area of the Chesapeake Bay Impact Crater (discovered in 1999), covered by 400 to 1200 feet of sand, silt, and clay vast halide deposits were laid down during the Jurassic and Cretaceous, as they were in the Gulf of Mexico and South Atlantic. **KYA Dates:** About 100kya, the **Trifid Nebula** formed. It is 5000 light years from Earth. At this time, anatomically, human ancestors resembled modern humans. **BCE Dates:** 1000 BCE **David** united Israel and Judah. Then began the **prophetic** period of Rehoboam, **Uziah, Jotham and Hezekiah**. A Canaanite **alphabetic** script, borrowed By Hebrews and Phoenicians, traveled with the Phoenicians to Greece and Latin countries. The **Kings** period ended in Israel in about 1020. By 600 BCE in **Britain,** farming included cultivation of beans and oats, raising shorthorn cattle and using improved methods of cultivation and storage. Wealthy chieftains hoarded luxury goods, many of them imported from Europe, such as the cache at **Heathery Burn.** Forged iron replaced bronze because of depletion of the tin and copper sources. Decorative work still required bronze because it could be cast, unlike iron. At **Tikal**, Guatemala a great Mayan city of 100,000 people grew, with markets, walkways, red temples, and pyramids, like the Temple of the Giant Jaguar, in a 6.2 square-mile area. By100BCE in **Britain,** several hierarchical regional power centers had replaced local ones. The tribes in power were the **Iceni in East Anglia, the Atrebates in Hampshire and Sussex, the Durotriges in Dorset,** and others, with alliances on the continent with the **Belgae.** Élites imported wines and other goods to places like Danesbury in Hampshire**. Zoroaster** (maybe as late as 600BCE

some believe the religion is 3700 years old). **Zarathrustra** founded a religion based on non-aggressive rural economy. Legend sets it the Median religion of the Magi. In the ***Avesta,*** the Zoroastrian holy book. Zarathrustra's sayings are in the form of hymns or ***Gathas*** to the high god, **Ormazd.** Ormazd becomes the All Father and the religion becomes the monotheistic **Ahura Mazda**, in contrast to its polytheistic Indian **Vedic** predecessor. Zarathrustra was born in Airyanem Vaejo on the Daitya River at the NW frontier of Media. He won the support of a king, **Vishtaspa**, who made Zoroastrianism the state religion, at least from the time of Cyrus in 6th century Persia. The holy immortals (guardians) were Good, Truth, Power, Reverence, Perfection, immortality, and Obedience. One achieves bliss by doing more good than evil. To pass over into bliss, one crosses the "**Accountant's Bridge**" where the final bookkeeping is done. The religion is dualistic, one sect being the **Manichees**, who believed matter was evil. As in Vedic religion, the cow is sacred. It was replaced in 636 CE. Its tenet: ***If you follow the path of truth you achieve all the attributes of God. Each person must ignite the spark and keep the fire burning by following Good Thoughts, Good Words and Good Deeds.*** Individual prayer is emphasized, reciting scriptures and facing toward the sun or a candle 5 times a day. Festivals or ***ghambars*** occur 6 times a year, their dates varying. There are 275,000 adherents worldwide. It is not popular in Iran because it is associated with the old aristocracy. Like other agrarian religions, it was initially used to justify hierarchical power and violence and gradually modified. Around 900, after **Solomon**, the kingdoms of Israel and Judah were separated. **Chavin deHuantar Culture** began, including animal gods, pyramids and temples in **Huanuco**, Peru. In 700, Egyptians were writing in **demotic script.** On the hills of Palestine, **Amos,** the shepherd, heard a voice: ***"I am not a prophet . . . nor do I belong to a prophetic brotherhood. I am merely a herdsman and dresser of sycamore figs. But Yahweh took me as I followed the flock, and Yahweh said to me 'Go and prophesy to my people Israel.'"*** He heard a voice: "***Yahweh roars from Zion and makes himself heard from Jerusalem, the shepherds' pastures mourn and the crown of Carmel dries up."*** On Mount Helicon, the shepherd Hesiod heard the Muses speaking to him: ***"'You shepherds of the wilderness, poor fools, nothing but bellies, we know how to say many false things that seem like true sayings, but we also know how to speak the truth when we wish to.' So they spoke, these mistresses of words, daughters of great Zeus, and they broke off and handed me a staff of strong-growing olive shoot, a wonderful thing, they breathed a voice into me, and power to sing the story of things of the future, and things past."(***See Daniel B. Smith's ***Muses, Madmen, and Prophets.)*** In 600, **Habakkuk r**ecommended acceptance of **Nebuchadnezzar** and the Chaldeans. Jerusalem and Judah fell after the times of Josiah, Habakkuk, and Jeremiah. The **Babylonian Exile** followed, under Nebuchadnezzar. After the fall of the **Chou** Dynasty came the time of warring states. Also at this time in China was the earliest record of **iron smelting. Greek** seafarers and traders made contact with **Egypt**, beginning a profound cultural interaction. The beginning of the Indian **Castes** system

was also ca. 500 BCE. Darius I of Persia was ruler of Babylon. **Phidias** was born. He was sculptor of Zeus at Olympus, one of the ancient 7 wonders. The Book of **Job** was written. **Heraclitus** was born at **Ephesus**. An Ionian philosopher opposed to the views of Parmenides, he wrote ***On Nature***. The universal principle, he said, was represented by fire or unending change. His disciple was **Cratylus**, to whom Epictetus referred in his writings. **Anaximander** of Miletus maintained that air was the principle, making all things through compression and rarefication. The **Halstatts** period in Northern Europe was characterized by carbonized long-swords, horsemen, and **Urnfield** descendants. The earliest European **iron smelter** dated from this time. It was in Huttenberg, Austria, called the "**Bloomery Furnace.**" The **La Tène** iron makers from the area, now Switzerland, also date from this period. An iron age leader in the area which is now Yorkshire was buried in his **iron chariot** at this time. At **Gussage All Saints** in Dorset a fortified settlement was raised and ringed with a ditch. Work on this site included farmed lots, a large metal works where chariots, terrets and other tack were fashioned, and a ceramics works. The site was active until 93 A.D. In 300 BCE **Buddhist** missionaries from **King Asoka** traveled as far as Egypt. **Meton** described the **19 year lunar-Earth cycle. In** 100BCE, **Julius Caesar** was born. There was an uprising in **Palestine**. A pre-Columbian craftsman in Mexico carved an image of a man carrying a huge bundle on his back—the Heart of Maguey, or **agave. CE Dates;** In 100CE, the Book of ***Matthew*** was written. Between 100 and 110 were written *The Book of John* and the letters *John I, II and III.* The end of the **Classical Period** of Latin literature also dates to this time. In 200 CE, **Hadrian's** wall was built to end Scottish sorties by **Picts** and other tribes. **Diogenes Laertius** (a source used by Schweitzer in the *Quest of the Historical Jesus*) was born. In 400 CE, the giant **arbor vitae** in Cedar Creek Valley were seedlings. Cedar Creek carved **Natural Bridge**, VA. In 500CE, **solar flares** were recorded. In 700, **St. Boniface** cut down the sacred tree of the Saxons. In 800, **Charlemagne** (*Karolus magnus*) was crowned emperor. This act inadvertently legitimized the papacy's right to invest kings with legal authority. He offered the choice to be baptized or die. **Mount Fuji** erupted. In 900, more **Solar flares** were recorded. In 1000 CE, **Vinland** was settled.and **Oxford** University founded. **Guido of Arezzo** in Pomposa took the first syllables of each half-line of a hymn about John the Baptist to name notes on a staff: *Ut queant laxis resonare floris/Mira gestorum famuli tuorum/Solve polluti labii reatum.* **DoReMi**. In Ecuador, an alloy of sintered **Gold and Platinum** was powdered. By 1000 Iceland and Scandinavia had converted to Christianity. In 1100, **Windmills** were first used in Europe. In 1200, the **Louvre** fortress was built. In 1300, Dante (at age 35) published the ***Inferno*.** In 1400, musical **Triads** were promoted by Conrad Paumann. **Fra Angelica** was born. He went on to paint the *Annunciation* and *Nolli Mi Tangere.* Ptolemy's **Geographia** became available in Florence. It showed how to depict a curved surface with a 2 dimensional map. **Richard II** was imprisoned and murdered after **Henry of Lancaster** (Henry Bolingbroke) returned to England and was elected King by Parliament upon the death of his father, John of Gaunt,

son of Edward III. Thus began wars of succession, called the **Wars of the Roses,** or "cousins' wars." In 1500 CE,Madonna Lisa Gherardini del giacondo ("the jocose") was painted by DaVinci in the work called **Mona Lisa**. The **Mandan** tribe established a fortress at Double Ditch (now in North Dakota). **Benevenuto Cellini** was born. He went on to make a bust of Cosimo I, a cast-metal sculpture of a salt cellar, and to write the *Autobiography*. In 1600 CE, **Calderon de la Barca**, was born, the playwright of ***Life is a Dream***. Giordano **Bruno**, the Dominican priest, astronomer, and philosopher, was burned during Rome's celebration of the Papal Jubilee Year in the Campo de'Fiore. Bruno came from Nolan and called his philosophy **Nolan**. He claimed that the universe is infinite in time and space and that there are **other worlds** in it. He was an atomist, a student of Democritus, a Thomist natural theologian, a Copernican, an Egyptologist, and a theologian who claimed that **God is within nature and humans**, not transcendent. In 1700, **Bach** became a chorister at St. John's in Luneburg. When his voice broke, he became accompanist on violin and harpsichord (clavicembalo). Approximately at this time, **dog breeding** began to become more focused on enhancing particular traits. In 1800, Patrick **Coquhuun's** *Treatise on the Police of the Metropolis* led to the establishment of the London River Police. He estimated 100K criminals in city. The **population of the U.S.** was 5,308,483. **Volta** invented the **electric battery.** ***Democracy in America*** by **De Tocqueville**. **Beethoven** began to go deaf. **Congress** arrived at the new Capitol Building. Only the north wing was completed. **John and Abigail Adams** moved into the White House, whose walls were unplastered. **Maime Irving Mouton** wrote in the *Crowley Daily Signal* about a recent dance: "***From all accounts it was pretty lively. When he landed in the yard of the ballroom there were a pair fighting for all they were worth at the gate; as he advanced toward the house, he met two or three more pairs of men trying to settle their difficulties. By this time, our young man began to hurry to get where the girls were. Just as he stepped into the ball room the proprietor was hauling out one of the musicians, who was cursing and screaming for all his might. Things settled down for a while and our boy began to hunt among the many pretty girls for a partner to dance with. . ."*** The editor added this observation of another local dance: "***Those Cajuns . . . they go to dances where a little band with guitar, accordian, and some little irons play 'Fais-do-do ti-neg' all the time. And then they go back home barefooted swinging their shoes over their backs and singing the same songs to which they danced."*** The **Galveston Flood** was in 1900, as was the opening of the Paris **Metro** System. After moving from Chicago to New York, **Charles Yerkes** visited Hempstead in London and decided to play a role in building the inner city train service in London. He established the **Underground Electric Railways Company of London,** building the lines for Picadilly, Baker St. and Waterloo, Charing Cross, Euston, and others. He died before they were completed. In Havana, over 300 people died from **Yellow Fever**. American troops were garrisoned in Cuba after the defeat of Spain. Based on the work of **Carlos Finlay**, Dr. **Jesse Lezear, and Walter Reed**, there was only 1 death due to

yellow fever in 1901. **Winston Churchill** became a Conservative MP for Oldham. He differed with the party and joined the Liberals. The first **free radical** was prepared in a laboratory. The first U.S. contact process for **sulfuric acid** was developed. **Quantum theory** was introduced by Max **Planck**:, explaining that radiant energy flows in discrete tiny packets, not a continuous stream. Puccini produced ***Tosca***. Sponge divers found an ancient wreck off **Antikythera**. The population of **Chicago** was 1,698,575. In 2000 CE, on January 15, **Nawaf Alhazmi and Khalid Almihdar** arrived in Los Angeles, the first members of the Al Qaeda team sworn to destroy the World Trade Center to come to America. The Massey **Coal Disaster** occurred on October 11, 2000. The **Massey Coal** Slurry impoundment broke, releasing 750M gal into groundwater from Coldwater Fork to Wolf Creek to Tug Fork to Big Sandy to the Ohio River near Ashland. Cities affected were Inez, KY, Louisa, KY, Kermit, WV. Those affected had rashes called "**sludge bumps**." The slurry contained *Cu, Va, Ba, As, Co, Mn*. In June the Human **Genome** Project was published with 30,000 gaps. In December, the *Endeavor* delivered the first crew to the **International Space Station**, the first of six crews. On April 19, **Kevin Shifflet** was killed by Gregory Murphy while Kevin was playing in his grandmother's yard on DelRay Avenue in Alexandria. His grandmother and neighbor **Christine De Court** were injured trying to protect him. On October 12, **Al Qaeda** bombed the **USS Cole** in Yemen**.** President Clinton and his cabinet refused to accept the recommendation of the counter-insurgency chief, **Richard Clarke,** to attack AlQaeda Headquarters and Osama bin Laden in Iraq. During January four Al Qaeda hijackers met in Kuala Lumpur, Malaysia, to plan their attack on the U.S. Later in the month (1/15/00), two of the 911 operatives entered the U.S. in Los Angeles. The **Unemployment rate** was 3.9%. **Deaths from firearms** in the U.S. were 26,663. The **Space Infrared Telescope Facility** was launched as the last (4th)stage of the **Great Observatory Series**. It was the key to dating the first stars (13.5bya) and galaxies (12.7bya) and used superconductive cooling of sensors to increase IR sensitivity. (This was developed by Fran Lowe at Kitt Observatory, AZ). Also in this year, a bear market was followed by a 50% drop in the S& P index and economic decline.

## Step 101

In 1901 **Anton Van de Riet and Rose Neyens** were married on October 30. On August 12 **Jo Nell Hobson was born** ("Granny Gage"), mother of Jo Evelyn Gage. On On February 5, 2001, Ginny Bruch began to receive Meals on Wheels. On February 19, **The Roses** went to the Arlington Planetarium on Quincy Street for a presentation of stories about the stars, like the *Velvet Blanket, the Star Splitter, More than Her Share, Star Boy, Orion, Silver River, Drinking Gourd, and Bog Moon*. The storytellers' narrations were accompanied by the planetarium's displays. Richard wrote, ***"In this pocket pad I obsessively allocate something I don't possess—time. An obsession of long***

***standing.****"(4/3)* In Loudoun Schools, Richard assisted in the interviews for the Naturalist position at the Naturalist Center in Leesburg, talking to Donna Armani and Lyle Skarzinski, among others (4/3), continued to chair the HIV-AIDS group (4/16), taught part time in the science methods program for Marymount at two elementary schools, did school visitations, and went with Susie to the church potluck dinner on April 22. He muffled the piano in the Fellowship Hall in preparation for performance of *The People's Voice* (4/24), served on the Minority Achievement Committee (4/26), and sang with the FPC choir on Wednesdays, and with Susie shared meals with Bob and Marnie Brown (5/6). The Pennsylvania cousins arrived on 4/28, including May, Gladys, Gilbert, Anita, Lori and others. The new mattress arrived on 4/30. The Roses attended the Congressional Chorus concert on 5/13. Meanwhile, work continued at FPC on *The People's Voice* (4/21) with sound checks, curtain work, picture taking, and so on. Richard passed Dr. Mancini's cardiac stress test on 5/21, obtained new glasses and then finished up work on the science textbook committee on 5/21. **The Knights** came to Virginia Beach to visit Frank Smith on 5/23. They stayed at the Sun Spree Hotel. The Roses stayed at a smaller motel on Willoughby Spit near the giant Neptune statue. Work on *The People's Voice* continued all week from Tuesday to Saturday as Richard prepared the sets, props, and flats and Susie and Ginny helped to paint flats. Susie had imaging at Sterling on 5/30, flexible sigmoidoscopy on 5/11, and CT on 6/14. Richard worked on the Scope and Sequence curriculum committee 6/20. The reception for Marcia Lickey and Bob and Jane Nakles took place at North Street Offices on 6/22. **The Roses attended an insurance seminar by MAMSI on 6/25 and retired on 6/30.** David Newman and Grady Baxton worked on the concrete path and brick porch of 4 West Howell. **Rhonda Simms** had surgery on 7/25. The Roses removed more of their belongings from the Ministorage unit in Manassas (8/18), visited Colvin Run Mill (8/29), had a visit from Susie's school classmate, **Jan (Spinks) Van Metre** (9/17), went to a concert at the Schlesinger, had a yard sale on 10/13 in preparation for Ginny's kitchen rehab by Pinto contractors, and viewed the Albert Cuyp Exhibit at the National Gallery 11/1. Richard worked as a part-time substitute in Alexandria Schools after an orientation on 10/19. He also taught science methods courses for Marymount's PDA program at Sunrise and Aldrin Elementary Schools as well as on the main Arlington campus. Susie assisted at Immanuel Lutheran School, near Howell Avenue. On 10/17, **Jack and Louise Rose** visited Alexandria with Debbie and Phil Woodall, Arian, Mike, children Dub and Levada, staying at Days Inn on Jefferson Davis Highway until 10/20. Richard continued to visit churches with the FPC organ committee (10/28). **The Frank Rose** family (with the Knights) went to VA Beach 12/2 (arr. 12/24) and Frank Smith took leave (12/5), saw the Roses in Norfolk (12/7). The Roses joined them, visited in Williamsburg 12/6-7, and returned to Alexandria via Richmond on 12/9. As mentioned, on April 29 The **Milheim**s, **Pecks**, and **Lerches** ( **Bruch** family relatives) came from PA to Alexandria. All went to the Kennedy Center, where they split up to go to the National Symphony or the play *Shear*

*Madness*. On May 25, Richard and Susie went to Norfolk to visit with the other Roses. On June 1&2, ***The People's Voice,*** an opera by Richard, was produced at Fairlington Presbyterian Church. (In the cast were **Brooke and Chris Hatfield, Harlie Sponaugle, Rick Zeni, Libby and Ben Lyon, Linda Priebe, Charles Welsh-Charrier, Kathleen and Rebecca Berlin, Caroline Widegren, Chris Borton, Kay Bedwell,** and **Dave Compe,** who donated his lighting set-up to the church. **Elizabeth McWilliams** was stage director. **Minu Beijan and Glenna Shields** helped with costumes. The Director and accompanist was **Barbara Wilkinson.** On June 21, Juanita visited Ginny Bruch in Alexandria and **Frank Rose** wrote to **Alston Townley** about how Jack and he had gotten into mischief on the train when they were boys. (Alston's wife was Grace, his daughter Eileen Susan T. Ricks, married to Ron Ricks and their son Alan Alston Ricks; his daughter-in-law was Judy Gillis Townley and her children were Stephen Gillis Townley and Dennis Warren Townley.) From 2000 to 2006, before losing interest in the internet, **Frank** downloaded many messages about patriotism and sent emails to Frank, Susan, Jack, Richard and Alston. The Rose relatives had a pool to guess birth weights. The winner was **Sam Knight.** (**Birth weights**: Susan Knight 8 lb 4 oz, Gary K. 9 lb 2 oz, Frank R. 7 lb 11oz, Richard R. 8 lb 2oz, Louise R. 7 lb 14 oz, Jack R. 7 lb 0.5 oz, Debbie R. 7 lb 13 oz, Frank S. 8 lb 7 oz . Jo's weight was 5 lb 12 oz.) , Richard encouraged Susie to volunteer at an after-school program twice weekly at George Mason Elementary School; but she felt uncomfortable there. Later, however, she did volunteer at **Immanuel Lutheran School**, one block from their house at 4 West Howell Avenue. In July **Joe Edwards**, Col. USAF, passed away. Ret. Richard once recited the ***Gettysburg Address*** to him and Frank in Dayton, Ohio, shortly before the family left for England. Edwards also was assigned to England and Albuquerque. He remained in Albuquerque and died of Alzheimer's disease. **Elizabeth Annie Gola** died on July 2 at the age of 79 and was buried in the Dibble, OK cemetery. Born to John and Elizabeth Annie Lamb Young in Benton, IL on 8/8/1922, she married Carl. E. Gola on June 21, 1941 in Benton. She lived in Ventura, CA before coming to Blanchard, OK in 1980. Well known for her china-paintings and quilts, she was a friend of **Jo Rose.** July 15. Susie and Richard saw ***Brigadoon*** at **Aldersgate Methodist** Church. On July 18 Richard finished reading ***Blameless in Abaddon***, about surd evil and theodicy. On August 1-13, the Roses went to Oklahoma and made a return trip to **28 Rockland Dr**. in Fairborn, OH. Richard showed Susie where his family had lived in 1956. On August 21 Richard instructed for the first time in Marymount University's **Professional Development** School in Arlington and Professional Development Academy in Fairfax. He taught ***Science Methods for Grades PK-6.*** The first lessons were on campus. After 9/14, they were at **Sunrise ES** and (mostly) in **Aldrin ES** Fairfax and **Ashlawn ES** in Arlington. **Vicki Taylor** taught the math section. On **Sept 11** the **Pentagon and WTC bombing** killed nearly 3000. Richard was writing in the basement at 4 West Howell, & heard the plane fly over the house and thump as it crashed in Arlington. He ran upstairs to look out the window, turned on the television, and saw the coverage of the event and of people leaping from the windows of the Trade Center. At

Fairlington Presbyterian Church, **Wesley**, the custodian, was working outside when the huge plane appeared just over the steeple. He ran into the church office shouting for the staff to come out. On November 8, a cataract was found in Ginny's left eye. At that time, her medications included propranolol, furosemide, evista, cozaar, and ultram for several conditions, such as peripheral neuropathy, scaly skin, anxiety, and high blood pressure. On Nov 10 The Roses visited with FLR & family at **VA Beach.** On Nov 11 Susie had elevated **CA 19-99 indicator** but it was not pancreatic cancer. On Nov 14 a Boeing 767 (**Flight # 587**, Amer. Airlines) crashed with 260 aboard in **Rockaway NY**. The Roses were in Sterling Mac Donald's where they were waiting for a doctor's appointment, and saw it on the TV. Rockaway was home to families of firefighters who had died in September. On December 3-9, Susie and Richard visited **Williamsburg.** On Dec 28, saying **"*Oh my eye*!" Jo Rose** began to fall and was caught by Frank in the dining room. It was a transient ischemic attack **(TIA)**, a tiny stroke from which she recovered but which left her 30% blind in one eye. She went on Plavix, despite platelet deficiency (thrombocytopenia) because **Dr. Merrill** considered stroke a greater risk than bleeding. Rob and Bill visited The Roses in Alexandria for **Christmas**. On May 5, **Neal Harris (**Col., USA, Retd.**)**, friend of Frank Rose, composed a recommendation that a memorial be established on the campus of the University of Oklahoma for **Dr. David Ross Boyd** because the Class of 1950 Gift Committee had disregarded previous recommendations; nor had the City of Norman recognized him, even though his **city forestation** programs beginning in 1893 had beautified Norman and even though he had established the university, built a preparatory school, and fostered public schools at a time when scarce resources were available to the new **46th state**. The ***Sower*** statue on campus reflected Boyd's choice of an image for the university seal, but the facial features of the Sower, as far as Col. Harris was concerned, were *"**gnomish . . . insulting, demeaning**"* and undignified when compared to statues of other university leaders, such as Bizzell, Cross, and Carl Albert. Both City and University seemed indifferent to the whole matter, Harris concluded.
**BYA Dates:**1 BYA (1.42) **Proterozoic Era**: Marine algae appeared--cyanophyceae--along with world-wide **glaciations**. The gneiss of **Old Rag Mountain** in the Blue Ridge was formed. The mountain range of which it was a part was subsequently covered by the Iapetus Ocean, uncovered again, and replaced by the Appalachians. **MYA Dates:**
At 1 mya (actually about 1.2 mya), the **Asteroid 86039**, more than 2200 m wide, passed near the Earth and fractured, possibly producing the fragment which in 2013 exploded over Chelyabinsk. During the **Gunz** period of the **Pleistocene** Glacial era, ***Homo habilis*** (brain capacity 600cc) was in Tanzania. It was the **Chellean** period in which roughly made **handaxes** were dominant tools. Neanderthal and Sapiens types diverged. At about 1.2mya, the **melanocortin** receptor gene frequency swept through the ancestral human population, leading to black skin, a conserved trait in Africa because it prevented destruction of **Folic acid** and therefore prevented infertility. North of Africa, the frequency of this gene is lower, conferring advantage to females, who need high **vitamin**

**D** (cholecalciferol D3), which requires ultraviolet light, for breast milk, bones, and general nutrition. **KYA Dates:** About 10 kya, most of the large, and many of the small, **North American mammals**, such as the **sabertooth**, and mammoths became extinct. This was possibly due both to hunting and to a climate change brought about by **meteoric impact.** One of the evidences is a **microdiamond deposit** in the fossil record. **CE Dates** In 1 BCE, **Ovid** published *Ars Amatoria* and soon followed it in 1 CE with his *Remedia,* and began work onthe ***Metamorphoses***, probably about his observations around Lake Pergusa region in Sicily. In 8 CE he was exiled by Augustus. 1301 **Edward I** made his eldest son the **Prince of Wales,** thus consolidating his victory over the Welsh in the wars from 1277-1282. In 1801,**Jefferson** became president. He decided to raise revenue to pay off America's debts by measuring and selling **real estate**, creating the opportunity for every American to become a landowner and therefore to have a stake in a strong democratic government. Three million acres were measured in 40 acre squares, using **Gunther chains**. (Each chain was 22 yd long. A square of 20X20 chains was 40 acres. This incidentally helped to perpetuate the English system of measurement, which was not a consequence Jefferson would have approved.) **John Chapman** began to plant flower and fruit trees ahead of the west-bound migrants to Ohio, Indiana, and Illinois so that the settlers would find fruits and nuts as they arrived into the new territories. He was called ***Johnny Appleseed.*** The **Cane Ridge Revival** led to evangelical fervor and the non-hierarchical governance of American Baptists and Methodists. **Abner Jones** of Massachusetts rebelled to form an independent church in Lyndon, VT called "Christian," forerunner of the **Disciples**, later called "Campbellites." The first undeclared American War took place in **Tripoli**, with the new Navy and Marine Corps sent against the **Barbary Pirates** after peace negotiations broke down. The pirates and their diplomatic representative felt they were doing Allah's work against the infidels. **Louis Agassiz** was born in Môtier, Switzerland. He later earned a medical degree in Heidelberg and a doctorate in natural history in Munich, his education paid for by a wealthy benefactor who once gave him a ride. In 1901, **Margaret Mead was** born. And **Alcee J. Jumonville** took his family from Napoleonville in Assumption parish to **Crowley** so that his children would grow up speaking English. He bought the stock of a hardware company located on the Parkerson Avenue lot where he wanted to set up a furniture business. He rented offices to Dr. Allen, a surgeon from New Orleans, and to the Johnson and Graham Company. His furniture business prospered, allowing him to invest in the Crowley Oil and Mineral Company. Sons Leone and Louis later ran the business while his son Felix Jumonville became the head of a rice mill in Baton Rouge. In the summers, the more wealthy residents of **Acadia parish** (Crowley, LA) went boating on Bayou Nezpique, or picnicked in Mamou woods, went down the Placquemine Bayou to Mermentau, Lake Arthur, and Grand Lake, or took the waters and heard lectures at Point Aux Loups. **Schweitzer**'s theological thesis was accepted for his doctorate in theology: *Von Reimarus zu Wrede.* **Dr. Jesse Lezear** died of yellow fever after inoculating himself. (It was called

*cupping*. The *Aedes egypti* mosquito was held in a jar whose mouth was pressed against the arm of the subject.) He and Walter Reed had demonstrated the mosquito was a vector of the disease. **Scott Joplin** published ***The Entertainer*** rag. Sulfur recovery by the **Frasch process** was developed in Louisiana. Seventeen-year **locusts** emerged in Richmond, VA., probably Brood II. Lode and Gruber discovered the **fowl plague virus. McKinley was assassinated** at the National Exposition and **Theodore Roosevelt** made President. He was first to call the Presidential residence the "White House." **Marconi** achieved a transatlantic communication. In the spring of 1901, **Edmund Starling,** having worked as a deputy sheriff and a soldier in the **Rough Riders**, became a Special Agent for the **Louisville and Nashville Railroad.** ***"I spent a cold winter in the freight yards at East St. Louis. I didn't have a pass to ride the Pullman, or a double-breasted blue suit. I bundled myself in an eighty-five cent sweater and spent the nights ducking box-cars that ran after me in the dark. In the spring I was transferred to Birmingham, Alabama."*** (Starling, p. 16-22) His superintendent in Birmingham was B.M. Starks, who gave him the job of guarding special freight shipments kept in the Calera yards. Birmingham was a steel industry town. Convicts worked the coal mines and when finally released would buy nickel-plated blue steel pistols and come into town looking for trouble. One of Starling's acquaintances was a young lawyer, **Hugo L. Black**, who handled some of Starling's cases going to the Grand Jury. A friend from the Rough Riders, **Sleepy Wright,** was a Special Agent for the Nashville Division. **Theodore Roosevelt** kept Wright on his security detail and in 1905, Wright invited Starling to help with Roosevelt's trip to Atlanta, where Roosevelt was to talk with **Booker T. Washington** at Tuskegee Institute and make an address at the Birmingham Fair Grounds. Sleepy said of the egalitarian, vigorous Roosevelt, **"*He's one of those dad-blamed practical idealists. He's willing to compromise anytime, so long as he wins his point*."** (Starling, p. 20). Roosevelt was the first of the presidents guarded by Starling. In Russia, the **Socialist Revolutionary Party** formed, **Tolstoi** was excommunicated, and Chekhov's *Three Sisters* had its Moscow première. In January 2001, the **Taliban** executed 300 **Hazaras.** On January 11 the **Algerian Embassy** on Kalorama Rd., near the Windsor Park Hotel was set on fire. In New York, a small **earthquake struck Manhattan** (Richter 2.0). On January 26 the **Bhuj** Earthquake (7.9R) killed 30,000. **Roger Kornberg** decoded the structure of **RNA polymerase,** suggesting that RNAp used Brownian motion, like Maxwell's Demon. The ratchet-like trigger of the molecule prevents it from falling backward when transcriptions are correct. When incorrect, it drops back. Its forward energy comes from local fluctuations in Brownian motion, which provided a local source of free energy. On 2001 Feb 8 **Dale Evans** died. In February, **Moussaoui** entered the U.S. and enrolled in the Airman Flight School in **Norman, OK** so that he would have sufficient skill to fly a commercial airliner and guide it to destroy the World Trade Center. In mid-July, **Mohammed Atta** met with **Binal-shibh** in Spain. They discussed plans for the upcoming destruction of the World Trade Center, Pentagon, and

another building in Washington, D.C. On Mar 8 in **Fanglin**, China, a firework explosion killed 37 children. On Mar 12 Pope **John Paul II** atoned for **anti-Semitism.** On May 15 a **Runaway train** in Kenton, OH finally stopped. On Aug 16 a Sol-like system was found in **Ursa Major**. On Aug 20, astronomer **Fred Hoyle** died**.** He had maintained the failed **steady-state theory** of cosmic evolution, but his laboratory produced Nobel winners for its explanation of **stellar nucleogenesis** (i.e. the creation of elements), although Hoyle did not receive the prize, possibly because he was also a controversial advocate for **exobiogenesis**. **On September 11, 2001,** 2974 people were killed in the terrorist attacks on D.C. and NYC**.** Some of them died months or years later from lung problems. The first airplane struck the World Trade Center with seismic impact (Richter 0.9) as did the second airplane (Richter 0.7). The collapse of the South Tower at 9:59 (Richter 2.1) and the North Tower 29 minutes late (Richter 2.3) conveyed kinetic energy to the surroundings through debris and a dust-cloud wind. Additional energy came from the jet fuel--the equivalent of 240 tons of TNT. On September 22, violinist **Isaac Stern** died, aged 81 yrs. On October 17, the CEO of **United Airlines** predicted bankruptcy (It didn't occur until December, 2002). On Oct 16 **Bethlehem Steel** filed for bankruptcy. 2001 Bill Gates's company, **Corbis**, moved the 11 million images of the **Bettmann** archive, the photographic files of **UPI**, and several other collections to a subterranean vault in the **Iron Mountain** limestone mine in Boyers, PA, 65 miles north of Pittsburgh (formerly owned by US Steel) so that the celluloid glue holding the silver salt images to the photographic paper could be kept dry at subzero conditions, like the celluloid sinews of a frozen mammoth. **Getty Image** was Corbis's competitor in this endeavor. In December, **Richard Reid** tried to destroy an airliner with a **shoe bomb**. On December 20, **Leopold Senghor**, poet and president of Senegal, died. US **AIDS deaths** reached 15,000 for the year. On January 6, **Robert Gray** died. He was a farmer, farm manager and long-time school custodian at North Street Offices in Leesburg, VA. On September 17, **John Baganakis** died. Born in Greece in 1916 and a Scottish Rite Mason, he was the owner of ***Mama Steve's*** restaurant in Williamsburg. In August, **Dresden** was flooded. The EPA reported that **factory farms** produced 168 **chemicals in manure**. In holding lagoons, the manure fermented, releasing carbon dioxide and monoxide, ammonia, hydrogen sulfide and other materials.

## Step 102

**John Bruch** was born in 1802 of John George Bruch and Barbara Repsher Bruch on Sept. 18. 1902 saw the birth of **Apolonia Schimpf** (later married to Charles Keller) on January 8 to William and Eva. Birth of **Mary Agnes Van de Riet (later Sister Canesius,** who taught at St. Henry's in Chicago**)** in Davenport on December 28. On January 5, 2002 Richard wrote that he was ***"more moderate in the pursuit of enthusiasms (music projects, writing, almost everything) than enthusiastic in the pursuit of moderation".*** **Bill** took a class on geographic information system software in Vienna, VA on 1/13.

During this year, Richard was shelving and giving away books and teaching materials and selling other items from the mini-storage in yard sales, taking Susie to **Dr. Simms** for blood work and check-ups (1/30,4/15) and mammograms (5/6); serving on an organ committee with Larry Lunt, Michael Dennis, Chris Hatfield, and others at **Fairlington Presbyterian**; performing a pastiche of some of his music called "Parables" (1/24) and sometimes playing for services (as on 7/7); taking Ginny and Susie to MaryAnn the hairdresser every two weeks; seeing *Brigadoon* at **Aldersgate** Methodist (1/27). Susie had been in the band for her high school's production. Richard took the cats to the vet; taught part-time at **Marymount**; went onto the *Harry S. Truman* carrier with Susie (on 2/22) to visit **Frank Smith** before the ship sailed from Portsmouth to Puerto Rico; saw James Galway with Susie at the **Kennedy Center** (2/28, 4/13, 8/21); attended a funeral (3/1); substituted in **Alexandria Schools** (3/7, 15, etc.); attended a performance of the *St. Matthew Passion* at the **Schlesinger** (3/10, 4/26) and a concert with Susie at the Unitarian Church on 3/15; met with James duBrueler to purchase long term health insurance from **Kanawha** (3/25, 8/28); went to **Blandy** Experimental Station to work with the advisory council (3/20, 5/2); played the grand piano in Royce's floral shop in Alexandria (3/28); worked at the **Carpenter's shelter** with Susie to prepare food for the homeless (3/29, 1/30, 8/30); read a biography of James Boswell; went with Susie to **Oklahoma** (4/2-11); seeing Dr. **Mancini** about a pain in his side (3/15), and slowly drew down the contents of the ministorage in Gainesville. Susie enjoyed their trips to the ministorage as if they were going to a yard sale of their own belongings (4/18, 5/23, 7/11, 7/17, 7/25)—going with Susie to church events like potlucks (4/28). They had the roof replaced at **4 West Howell** (4/29-30), painted the porch and swing (7/12) repaired the concrete walk (8/9); celebrated birthdays (5/1, 5/26) and anniversaries (6/22 in Williamsburg). On May 9, 2002, Linda Braley appraised the house (5/9). They went to Martin Berkofsky's concerts and events (5/12, 7/7); delivered teaching materials (mostly Susie's items from the ministorage) to Mount Vernon ES (5/20, 8/6); attended a luncheon (6/17) with Susie at Mount Vernon ES where Pat Gomez honored the volunteers, such as the Marymount undergraduates Richard had sent to the school, and attended a military ceremony by **Pershing's Own** at the school on July 2, 2002 to honor Rocky Versace, Donley, Dunning, and Tony Menda. Richard negotiated the sale of Ginny's property in Louisa County, the **Cuckoo** site (7/22). They went to the National Museum of Women in the Arts (7/24); took books to McKay's store in Manassas (8/7); went to an exhibit at the Lyceum (8/15) and to **Betty Mar Little's** birthday party (9/14); revisited the Commerce Building Aquarium where Susie had taken her classes (7/2) . By involving Susie in as many familiar, social events as possible and by daily walking through the neighborhood with her, Richard tried to prevent their lives from turning inwards to focus on disease. It was a very happy year. **Susie** continued to help in Peg's classroom at Immanuel Lutheran School. On April 24, Susie's childhood friend, Jan VanMetre (formerly Jan Spinks), came to visit. Ginny and Susie visited the **Beatrix Potter** exhibit at the Natural History

museum (3/6). **Jo Rose** had her right cataract removed on 2/25 and her left on 3/14. On January 8, **Helen C. Hill** died in Norman, OK at the age of 84. Born on 1/1/1918 to Earl and Jesse Lucas Humphreys in El Reno, she graduated from El Reno HS in 1937, OU in 1941, and married Harry G. Hill on 7/6/1941. She was a realtor, member of St. John's Episcopal Church, writer of "Helen's Corner," for the *Norman Transcript*, and friend of **Jo Rose,** who saved this: ***"We have so many things we could resolve to do better that aren't earth-shattering but have real meaning and make one a better person and citizen. So let us all resolve to not pre-judge others . . ."*** On January 22, a **Fire** at Loudoun Co. High School was apparently set by grandson of a school board member (Fred Fleming) and son of the Special Education Director, Mary Kearney. On February 15, the Roses went to the **Botanical** Gardens in DC. In September, Richard helped Virginia Bruch finally to sell the "**Cuckoo**" property in Louisa County to a lawyer, Donald Lloyd. On September 27, 2002, at 11:00 p.m., the kitchen **ceiling collapsed** at 4 West Howell. The Roses had just gone upstairs from the kitchen, where they would have been struck by the falling green-board. After donning a Tyvek suit and respirator, Richard cleaned out the debris and called the insurance company and Pinto Contractors. **Lois Gladden** died at age 61 in December. She was Susie's childhood friend from church. On February 20, Richard finished the first draft of ***Death Wears a Tricorn***, written to increase income. (It didn't.) On February 13 Richard composed ***Procession I,*** intended to be part of a larger work, setting ***The Profit of Doom*** to music, and called *Twelve Ensembles.*(It wasn't.) Richard played the *Prelude* and *Hallelujah* chorus from *Messiah* for the funeral of **Maybelle Port** at Fairlington Presbyterian Church, as she wished. It was held on March 1. As an elder, Maybelle had tried to prevent the church's schism. She was a former physical education teacher who made a patriotic move to Washington to work for the government during World War II and then stayed on. Bounding steps and taking long walks into her nineties, she died at the age of 92. On February 23, **Frank Rose** again explained their finances to Jo Evelyn, who had expressed anxiety about their future: **"*Your income will come from the Survivors Benefit Program ($2415), my Social Security ($997), OK Teachers' Retirement ($244), TIAA CREF ($683) and USAA Income Fund Divident ($149). Total about $4488 per month or about $53,855 per year. And here are some notes to think about. Sell or rent (preferably, <u>sell</u>) 3821 Ives Way. In addition to inability to take care of the property, you would not be paying (1) housekeeper and yard man, (2) yearly property tax of about $1000, and (3) homeowner's insurance of about $600 per year. Money received from sale could be invested in bonds which would add to your monthly income. Sell the car. You should <u>not</u> be driving. Call a cab, relative, or friend if you need transportation.*"** (SBP while Frank lived was $4417, SS $1021, TIAA $583, OK Tchrs $486, Jo's SS $390, total about $6897/mo or $82,768/yr.) On March 5, Rob **Rose** left Lightspan, Inc. On March 22, the Roses visited **Billy** in Richmond. Bill and Rob visited **Anza Borrego** in California on April 14. Susie stopped tutoring at **Immanuel Lutheran**

on April 22. On May 14 **Freddie Morris's** defibrillator fired twice. On May 15, the Roses went to Northern Virginia Community College, where he investigated enrolling in a summer Spanish course, but then decided against it. August 3 The **Frank Ros**e family went on a **Caribbean cruise** from Galveston. On December 5, the carrier ***Harry S. Truman*** left the Persian Gulf with Petty Officer Frank Smith supplying munitions for aircraft, as his grandfather Frank had done. From December 11 to 19 the Roses visited in **Oklahoma**, although Richard had pneumonia. On August 30, **Frank** L. Rose, Jr. had periodic ventricular contractions. ***"They felt like jolts."*** He went to the ER and quickly improved. **Robert Johnson** went to ICU at Alexandria Hospital for a gastric problem and afterwards (11/16) moved to the assisted living side of the Hermitage. On Oct ober 7 Richard performed his ***Six Parables*** at Fairlington Presbyterian Church. Seven days later, the Roses turned off air conditioning for the year. On November 17, **Harlie Sponaugle** sang at the Harris theater, GMU, for her master's project. On November 14, **Charlotte Holbrook Beard** died. She was the sister of Catherine (**Kap)** Sparks, a Rose cousin. On 11/27, the Roses picked up **Rob Rose** from National Airport. He returned to California on December 2. After Christmas, **Bill** returned to Richmond on 12/27. **Kathleen Warner** began the renovation of her Chicago bungalow on Richmond St. in Chicago and visited her grandchildren in Georgia. **BYA Dates:** About 2 bya a coal sediment layer in the iron fields of **Gary, Indiana** (the place later named for the head of U.S. Steel) was produced by microscopic aquatic organisms. (Tyler and Barghoorn, 1955). Red bands of iron oxide in layered rock found worldwide, dating to 2 bya, are also evidence of the abundance of the **atmospheric oxygen** produced by photosynthetic **algae** since 2.5-2.4 bya. The production of oxygen exceeded its depletion by other chemical reactions, as within **volcanoes**. Sometimes this is called the **Great Oxidation Event.** The **Superior Upland Region** of Wisconsin and Minnesota, part of the Canadian Shield, was formed from 2.6 to 1.6 bya, It was the largest US surface exposure of this most ancient core of the N. American continent. (2.3)The **Archeozoic Era** began. **MYA Dates:** About 2 mya **(1.67)** the **Quaternary Period** and the **Pleistocene Epoch** began**.** From 2.0 to 2.3mya, in the Semlika River area, where a rift valley divided the terrain around Lake Victoria and created a rain shadow over the western slope which caused forests to decrease, many kinds of mammals lived during the Pliocene and Pleistocene Epochs, most of them savanna species, as were the plants (such as acacias). The dry Western Rift was an **ecological barrier** for both vertebrate and invertebrate species. At 1.8mya, our first human ancestors left Africa. **Ice Ages** were occurring and the **Pacific Coast Mountains** and **Grand Canyon** were forming. Human species (e.g. those leaving the **Taung skull** and other remains) used sharp-edged stone tools and bones as hammers. **Anvils** were used to break bones and **pebbles** were used to make sharp-edged tools. At 1.8 MYA, ***Australopithecus boisei*** coexisted in Africa with ***Homo sapiens***, ***Homo ergaster***, and ***Homo heidelbergensis*** (in Kenya and Tanzania). The ***Oreopithecus*** used mandibles, humerus bones, eoliths, choppers, flakes and shelter. ***A. robustus*** (cranial cap. 440mL) had sagittal

crests, brows, herbivorous habits, and running gaits and was associated with remains of *Elephas, Leptobos,* and *Equus.* The ***A. africanus*** (530mL) had no crest, smooth teeth, light jaw, carnivorous habit and was associated with baboons, antelopes, *Mammuthus, Bos, & Machairodos* in the **Olduvai** (Western Rift) cultural period. There is also evidence from 1.6MYA of controlled use of **fire** in Kenya & S. Africa to create open spaces, safety and warmth. At 1.5mya, as **temperatures continued to fall**, the large, obligate herbivore, *A. robustus* lost ground to *A. africanus,* an omnivore with pebble tools, more gracile jaw and smaller teeth. In fact, *A. africanus* is probably the same as ***Homo habilis***. (See below.) Evidence from this time therefore indicates the existence of numerous hominins, including *Homo erectus, Homo neanderthalis, Homo ergaster*. The precursor to these and *Homo heidelbergensis.* may have been *Homo habilis,* which was more of an australopithecine, probably the same as *Australopithecus africanus,* as mentioned. The immediate precursor to *H. neanderthalis, H. erectus,* and *H. sapiens* seems to have been of the *H. ergaster/heidelbergensis* type, there also being reason to believe that *ergaster* and *heidelbergensis* were the same species, found in both Northern and Southern Africa. Compared to the other apes, the ***ergaster*** form was gracile, had a nose and face, arms of equal length, less sexual dimorphism, smaller pelvis, & therefore delayed brain growth which would have permitted the baby's head to pass through the smaller pelvis. Delayed brain growth also meant that mothers **carried the young**, putting selective pressure on males who were more **protective and cooperative**. The gut of *ergaster* was smaller, giving more of a barrel chest, because **less intestinal surface** was required for the digestion of meat than vegetable matter. Compare, for example, to the huge abdomen of the herbivorous *Gorilla. Homo neanderthalis* and *Homo erectus* were the first to leave Africa. By 1.6 -1.8 mya, *Homo erectus* groups lived in the region of **Dmanisi**, Georgia, **Sangiran**, Java, near **Lake Turkana**, in East Africa, and were using bamboo for **ax** handles in Northern China. One of the skulls left from a saber-tooth's dinner is intact. **CE Dates:** In 1302CE at the Battle of **Courtrai (The Golden Spurs)**: the **Bruges** commoners met the French cavalry and "***speared them like fish"*** from trenches as the cavalry galloped over them ahead of the French bowmen. In 1402 **Tamerlaine died.** The city of **Washington, D.C.** was founded in 1802. Across the Potomac, **George Washington Parke Custis,** adopted grandson of George Washington, began the construction of Arlington House (the **Custis-Lee mansion**) on a 1100 acre estate inherited from his father, who bought it in 1778, three years before he died at the Battle of Yorktown. George Parke Custis had inherited several plantations and hundreds of slaves and sought to build a conspicuous monument to his prominence on the hill overlooking the city. The house was 140 feet wide with eight 23ft. tall columns on the portico. Now a monument to Lee, the house sits in front of **Arlington Forest,** an ancient Eastern hardwood climax forest. In 1902, Theodore Roosevelt resolved the **Great Coal Strike** through an arbitration board, one of the first challenges to big business. Roosevelt's administration suppressed information about the actions of General **Jacob H.**

**Smith** on Samar in the Philippines. Smith ordered the massacre of Filipinos older than ten. He ordered that the island be left a *"**howling wilderness,**"* but in fact, few died as a result of his order. Congressional hearings got at the truth and Smith was dismissed from the Army. The **First Christian Church of Crowley** was founded when Rev. Haddock, the State Evangelist, and Claude Jones organized the church and called Rev. W.O. Stephens. By 1903, there were 51 members. Many of the ministers were trained at **Texas Christian University** in Ft. Worth, TX. **Czar Nicholas II** excluded **Gorky** from the Academy of Sciences after the performance of *The Lower Depths.* **Chekhov** resigned from the Academy in protest. **Edgar L. Harris** passed the 8th grade exam, established by Dr. **David Boyd,** President of the Territorial School Board. That fall, he enrolled in Boyd's Preparatory School. **Schweitzer** became *Privatdozent* at the university in Strasbourg in 1902. Arthur Conan Doyle published the **Hound of the Baskervilles.** The poet **Melitta Grunbaum Urbancic** was born. Carrier invented **air conditioning**. **Walter Reed** died of appendicitis. Martinique's **Pelée** eruption killed 35,000. Beatrix Potter's ***Peter Rabbit*** and Joseph Conrad's ***Heart of Darkness*** were published. **Crater Lake** National Park was established in Oregon. **Charles Ives** wrote *Symphony 2.* At least, he called it a symphony. Rural Free Delivery (**RFD**) became nationally available. A new Virginia constitution established a **literacy test** and $1.50 **poll tax** which was more than the daily wage of most black Virginians. Recordings were made of the "**last castrato**," Alessandro **Moreschi**, who was born in 1858, sang in the Sistine Chapel Choir until 1883, and became its conductor in 1892. His recordings, made in 1902 and 1904, are the only ones made by a castrato. **Tim Page** described them as a "plaintive, eerily haunting bleat." A great flood damaged homes and businesses in **McMinnville, TN**. On the Charles River, Clay Faulkner's water-powered Mountain City Woolen Mill was destroyed and then converted into **Faulkner Springs Hotel,** where visitors from town and from Nashville came for the restaurant and medicinal waters until World War I. In February 2002, the **Larsen Ice Shelf** calved from Antarctica. It was the size of Rhode Island (1260 sq. miles). The **AQUA** satellite found the **dimming** effect of pollutants on the energy budget of the Earth: approximately **minus 1.5 watts/m$^2$, with the effect of reducing worldwide temperature 1 degree C.** On July 4, **General Benjamin O. Davis, USAF**, died. He was one of the first blacks to graduate from West Point. Col. **Frank Rose** met him once. In April came the deaths of **Milton Berle,** the **Queen Mother**, **Steven Jay Gould**, and **Billy Wilder.** On April 14, the Israeli army under Ariel **Sharon** laid siege to Bethlehem. On April 28, a tornado in **La Plata,** Md. (F-5: i.e. >261mph) killed three, destroyed 900 homes, 200 businesses, and caused $120 M in damage. On September 11, Kopeikin measured the speed of **gravity** waves to 1.06c, using the alignment of Jupiter and a quasar group. (This was later corrected.) The end of the **Second Presbyterian** Church of Alexandria came on October 6, 2002. One of its five or six members joined Fairlington P.C. **Antiglobalization** activists clashed with police at a rally

in Washington. The **Leonid meteor shower** on 11/27 was visible at 11 p.m. from the yard of 4 W.Howell in Alexandria.

## Step 103

In 2003, **Delores Schimpf Rutter** died in Chicago and, on January 3, **Earnest Davis**, J.D., died in Leesburg, VA. Delores had married Harry Rutter, an Oklahoman truck driver, and had the following children: **Cindy R. Rheingruber (husband Jim, children Paul and Katie), Dan, David, Patrick, Donald, Cheryl** and **Carolyn.** Davis had earned a law degree while working as a custodian of North Street Offices. On January 2-27, **Richard & Susie** visited the National Gallery and the beauty parlor, ate at the Four Provinces in Falls Church, went to the Kennedy Center, worked on Ginny's garage (1/19), returned to the National Gallery for the **Vuillard** exhibit (1/27) and helped again in the kitchen at the **Carpenter's Shelter** (1/31). Classes resumed at Marymount on January 13. On Feb 1, **Susie** caught her fingers in the car door as the Roses went to the movies and lunch at the Carlyle restaurant in Shirlington with **Fred & Rhonda**. She was OK. On January 13, Richard began work as a science lab coordinator at Marymount University in addition to teaching science methods classes such as Ed 548. On January 15, **Don and Barbara Hobson** celebrated their 50th birthday at Woodmont Hills Church in Nashville. By this time, he had become wealthy selling poultry. On February 2, **Susie** finished another 1000 piece puzzle, this one of a cat with large eyes. The next day, the Roses talked with Dr. Mancini about Richard's **pneumonia** and about Susie's condition. An **MRI** for her was arranged. Events from February 2/7-25 included the *Henderson Funeral*, a play at the Lazy Susan Dinner theater (both 2/7), Susie's MRI, bone scan, Xray and mammography (2/20), a doll show and Bill's visit (2/22), and a meeting at Mount Vernon ES with Shirley Smith, Doris Lyons, and Pat Gomez (2/25). On February 12, **Ira Redkey,** husband of Frances Mae Rose Redkey, died in San Angelo. He was 86. He earned Master's degrees in Economics and Psychology, served as a Tech. Sergeant in the USA in Burma with **Merrill's Marauders Batallion,** who marched 600 miles in March of 1944. He taught history and coached before the war. Afterward, he worked for Patterson Office Equipment. He was an Eagle Scout, member of First Baptist Church in San Angelo, a devout member of the National Rifle Association and Muzzle Loaders Assoc., having been a gunsmith and collector of antique guns since the age of ten. He died of lung disease. Frances died before him. On February 14, two feet of **snow** fell during Presidents' Day weekend. On February 20 Susie had an **MRI** at Sterling Imaging showing only mild ventricular dilatation. The results seemed largely normal. On Feb25 The Roses' neighbor, Mr. **Gorham,** died (9 W. Howell) after coming home from volunteer work at St. Rita's. On February 27, **Fred Rogers** died (b. 1928). His answer to the biblical question "**Who is my neighbor**?" was to create an imaginary **Neighborhood**. He sought to make the ***"space between the TV and the viewer a holy place."*** On March 21,

Richard and Susan flew to **College Station,** TX and returned on Sunday the 23rd. In April **Bill Rose** went skiing in Switzerland. Richard and Susan visited the Rose family gathered in College Station to comfort **Louise Rose,** suffering from liver cancer. On March 6-9, **Richard** had another allergic reaction to an unknown agent, possibly something from the lab at Marymount. Intense itching and eczema on hands and chest lasted for weeks. It seemed to be worse in the afternoons. **Ginny** had finally decided tto have cataract surgery. The Roses looked at the cherry blossoms around the Tidal Basin on April 5. Richard again had eczyma, including bumps on his face, on the 24th and 25th. On Saturday the 26th, he repaired the curb in front of 4 West Howell. On the 28th, the Roses went to a Mystery Writers conference. Richard's palms and soles itched constantly. The eczema continued on the 29th, when he went back to Loudoun to speak at a hearing on behalf of his former secretary, **Mary Bliss.** The eczema had moved to his back during the evening. By May 1, as he decorated Susie's cake, the eczema was on the dorsal surface of knees and hands but by the time of the Conference on May3-4, the eczema had begun to retreat. He was working on poems for his sons. **Robert Rose 's software** was ready to launch. Susie took her first **Aricept** tablet on May 28. **Rob** released his new software product, in development almost since high school, and looked for buyers. In June, **Dr. Shirley Smith** left Marymount University to teach in Greensboro NC. On June 9, **Frank Smith** returned to Norman after serving on the *USS Harry S. Truman* during the Iraq War. On June 12, **Frank and Jo** Rose attended a **Billy Graham Crusade** in Norman. Graham was 84. He was able to speak despite his Parkinson's disease. His son assisted him. On June 25, Richard wrote to his father **Frank** about the upcoming annual visit in Oklahoma—and about Susie: ***". . .the job at Marymount is flexible enough that even when I'm working, there is plenty of time to get things done around here. From Warrenton, this would all be more difficult. When we lived there, every task was done over long distances. It didn't matter to us then, but it would now. . .we'll probably visit from July 11-13 . . . if Louise takes a turn for the worse between now and then or during the time that we're there, we will cut our plans short . . . Let me give you some of the details concerning our situation. Susie and I understand each other, but others—including her mother—do not fully understand. Susie's memory deficit is due to Alzheimer's or to normal pressure hydrocephalus or to both . . . She feels profound embarrassment about a condition that affects her speech, her interests and her ability to keep track of the simplest matters. We compensate for these shortcomings in the way that we live. We follow simple routines and minimize distractions. Loud TV programs or music going on at the same time she is trying to listen to someone or do some task result in her giving up and turning inward, so we do one thing at a time. And we take our time. She has always been modest and reserved, so she doesn't become loud and vociferous like some AD patients. Sometimes she does become angry, however. This happens particularly when we have to go to the doctor. She now has a tremendous aversion to doctors and medical treatment and must feel pretty bad before she will***

*agree to see a doctor . . . It was her experience with the surgical team in Fredericksburg that aroused distrust. One surgeon felt the tumor in her breast, discounted it and even failed to do a needle biopsy. The other partner, 18 months later, did a needle biopsy, became alarmed because of the fact that it was cancerous and they had done nothing for 18 months. He then did a dissection of the lymph nodes on the left side that has left her with neuropathy. His vigorous and radical attack on her lymph nodes always seemed to me to be a guilty reaction to their failure to treat the condition earlier. . . the months of chemotherapy and radiation and the continually invasive testing thereafter have sensitized her to medicine to such an extent that she becomes anxious, extremely agitated and sometimes even angry at even the thought of more probing and testing. In addition, as her forgetfulness began in 1994, not long after the termination of chemotherapy, I have come to believe that, like some other cases on record, the chemicals used may have affected her memory. . . Susie frequently says, 'I am happy with how things are.' Indeed, she is. She can spend two hours arranging flowers. She may spend a morning enjoying her cats. She enjoys working on puzzles and designs. We go places, attend concerts, do chores and errands together. She will work in the garden or watch the birds at the feeder for long periods of time, particularly if I am with her. We visit her mother and take her to church and other places. She is happy with how things are. Nothing makes her more unhappy than the thought of more medical interventions. Her heart rate and blood pressure go up, she becomes disoriented, her hands become clammy and she becomes alarmed and fearful. Reasoning doesn't help. Like her father, she accepts life as it is. Intervening is something you only do in a real emergency. One day her father decided, after years of enduring the pain, that his teeth were hurting so much that it was time to do something about it. He drove from Alexandria to Front Royal, where there was an inexpensive dentist. He had all his teeth removed and a mold made for false teeth. Then, with the dressing in his mouth to control bleeding, he turned around and, despite Ginny's protestation, drove back. When Susie can acknowledge that she needs a doctor, we'll go to one. Right now, we're doing well to make our check-ups with the doctors she knows, much less have additional consultations with strangers. . . In other words, she doesn't need any more stress because stress chemically aggravates the condition that she already has. . . . Minimizing stress was a big part of the reason that we left Warrenton and that we both retired. It was also important to be in Alexandria where she could be with her father, aunt, and cousin as they were dying. The accumulated stress of those events and of the last year of her teaching was tremendous. She is much calmer and happier now. . .My role is to help her to do what she wants to do, not to drag her kicking and screaming from one doctor to another. It is exactly the traits which I have always admired in her that now create this dilemma—her independence, modesty, reserve, reticence, and a quiet, stoic resistance to interference by others in matters relating to her personal values. Without actually articulating, it, I think that*

***she is saying, 'We are happy now. Medicine can only go so far. Let us try to live happily given things as they are. . . .'"*** On July 5 **Bill Rose** went to an ESRI Conference in San Diego to learn more about geographic information systems. Meanwhile, **Rob** made a presentation of his **Cognizant Systems** software to senior management at *Lightspan,* a software company with which Richard had worked in Loudoun schools. On July 8, the Roses went to Oklahoma, as they had tried unsuccessfully to do in June, when they turned around at Memphis because of Susie's distress. On July 12, Frank, Jo, Richard, Susan, & the Knights celebrated **Susan Knight's** birthday at the Shogun Restaurant in OK City. On the return trip (leaving on July13), the Roses visited Natural Bridge (July 15) along the way. **Louise Rose** died on July 11 at 10:45 a.m. The **Frank Rose** and **Knight families** vacationed in Hawaii from July 25 to August 1. August 17 **Rob Rose** began work for **Exemetrics. Nick Veloz,** neighbor of Jo Sullivan, went to the hospital on August 19 with a bleeding ulcer. On September 5, Richard and Susie rode the **Ferris Wheel** at the carnival in the Landmark Parking Lot. The carnie gave them an extra turn, letting them linger at the top to look over the city. On September 18, **Hurricane Isabel** left Del Ray without power for 3 days and felled trees all around the neighborhood. On September 28, **Frank Rose** again tried to assuage Jo's anxiety about the future by making a list of all the monthly bills he paid on utilities, credit cards, groceries, the car, and church. On October 10, **Linda Priebe & Barbara Wilkinson** gave a recital, which the Roses attended, at the Norwegian Embassy. On October 14, **Millie**, Jo's cat, died (sister of Annie and Roonie, born upstairs in 4 W.Howell). Oct. 16, **Bill Rose** received pre-approval for a loan to purchase property in Richmond on **Rosewood Ave**. On Nov.4, Jo's other cat (Annie) died. On Nov. 7, two kittens, born 8/29/03, arrived at 4 W. Howell because Susie had expressed the wish to have a kitten in the house one more time. The Roses named them **William and Mary**. On Nov. 29, **California fires** raged from San Bernadino to San Diego at 6000acres/hr, leaving 100K people homeless. **Rob** left his smoky, dusty office to work at home. On December 3, **Nancy Dunning**, a local realtor, civic leader, sister of Patty Moran, and wife of the sheriff, James, was murdered in her home on W. Mt. Ida, near Mt. Vernon ES near the Roses' house on Howell Ave. The murderer was not caught until he had committed other murders in 2013 and 2014 and was arrested in Loudoun County in 2014 on a gun charge. He was **Charles Severance**, who carried a grudge against civil authorities for revoking the custody of his year-old son in 2000 and revoking visitation until Severance received a mental health examination. He raged and ranted in public meetings, in the Juvenile court, and on his website, mentaldisorder.com. His victims were killed pointblank at midday in their homes. Sheriff **James Dunning** died in 2012. According to his daughter, Liz, he had lived not only in mourning but under suspicion of Nancy's murder. On December 20, **Rob** arrived at National Airport from San Diego. **Bill** arrived on Dec.24 and the Roses celebrated Christmas. On December 21, Richard discovered a reference online to **Bill Drehmann,** classmate from Lafayette; called, and spoke to him for the first time in 30

years. On December 27, Rob returned to San Diego after his Christmas visit and Bill returned to Richmond. **Susan Knight** defended Sergeant **Frank Torres.** He was found innocent by reason of justified homicide in the death of **Alford Loundes** after Loundes knocked him to the ground and backed up his van toward him outside the Oasis club in Northwest Oklahoma City. Some of the other events for the Roses during this year were: voting in Alexandria for candidates Smedburg, Reardon, and Euille on 5/6, holding a yard sale on 5/10, teaching and managing science labs and teaching science education methods at Marymount. The *H.S. Truman* carrier returned to Norfolk on 5/23. Richard flossed away a filling on 5/28, paid the McCrensky's for Rose to provide cat-care during their June trip to Oklahoma 6/5-6/10. Rose also worked at Ten Thousand Villages on King St. Richard served on Marymount's professional development programs (PDA and PDS) at Ashlawn and other schools and on its STEP committee 6/11. On the same day, Richard became sick from accidentally ingesting one of Susie's Aricept tablets. He left Marymount and stopped on Glebe Road to vomit. Frank Smith returned to the ship on 6/19. Other events in the Rose household: trimming the big privet hedges around 4 West Howell 6/20, painting Ginny's car-top (a temporary measure for the old Voyager), frequent vet visits for Ginny's cats and Millie, Annie, Gregory and the four other cats, including Susie's kittens, William and Mary. Richard cleared Ginny's attic on 7/22 and ran another yard sale in July. The Roses visited Bill in Richmond on 8/9. Richard gave a musical performance at church on 8/17. Richard and Susie served meals at the Carpenter's Shelter, and had dinner with Susie's colleagues, Barbara Still and Mary Jane Fawcett from P.B. Smith ES on 10/1. Susie also was visited by one of her GWHS classmates in town for the High School Reunion on 10/5. Ginny received more Iron Infusions from Dr. Ueno on 10/31 and 11/19. Richard substituted on the organ at FPC on 11/9, laid a small tile floor in the cat-damaged closet at 4 W. Howell on 11/18. On December 15, Richard had an interview with Asst. Supt. Lois Berlin for the position of Science Specialist in Alexandria City Schools to serve out the remainder of the school year for **Clinton Blount**, who retired that month. Rob visited from San Diego on 12/20-12/27. Richard provided more music for church services 12/24 and 12/28. **BYA Dates** At 3 bya (3.45) Earth's **magnetic field** formed around the iron-nickel core and extended outward to direct the shearing solar winds of ejected material from the sun's interior away from the planet. This permitted Earth to have a **stable atmosphere**. Both radioactive clocks in fossils and DNA clocks in genetic material agree on the appearance of **life** at about 3.4 to 3 billion years ago, although other components of life, such as replicating RNA, were present earlier not only on Earth but elsewhere. One could say that **life has been primarily microscopic and aquatic** for about 3 billion years. **MYA Dates** About 3 mya (2.6-3.4 mya, Pliocene.) ***Australopithecus africanus*** (1.5lb brain; Johnson, 1974, Awash, Ethiopia) walked the African continent. One speculation about early human evolution (Stedman *et al.*, *Nature* 040325) is that from 2.5-3MYA a mutation occurred in a gene responsible for the **development of the masseter and temporalis (**MYH16, a gene now

disabled). Along with this came the increase in cranial capacity and the first **use of stone implements**. The actual dating of this mutation based on DNA analysis and comparison of the genomes of humans and chimps is about 2.4-2.5 mya. The disappearance of the sagittal crest to which these muscles attached, was more gradual. **Improved communication** may also date to this time. At this same time, ***Australopitchecus gathi***, with an orange-sized brain and a long muzzle, lived near the Awash River in the Ethiopian Afar. Tools found nearby were dated to 2.6my. Also near the Horn of Africa, a female ***Australopithecus afarensis***, lived in Hadar, north of the Middle Awash River 3.2 mya. Given the name **Lucy**, remains from her period include the Laetoli footprints fossilized in volcanic ash, teeth, jaw, and other bones. In the **Pliocene** of 3mya, atmospheric **carbon dioxide** was 400 ppm. Sea levels were 49-82 feet above their levels in 2013.**BCE Dates** At 3BCE, **Seneca** was born. He was the author of a version of ***Agamemnon*** and other works. A non-canonical Pauline gospel was written to him. **CE Dates** In 3 CE, Columbians cast "***Tumbaga***" in Copper-Gold alloy using depletion-gilding. The Battle of **Shrewsbury** occurred on July 21, 1403. ( See *Henry IV*, part 1). DaVinci's **Mona Lisa** dates to 1503, as does Erasmus's **Enchiridion** or *Manual of Arms for the Militant Christian.* In 1603,Shakespeare's **Hamlet** was produced**. Elizabeth I** died and James VI (Scotland) became **James I (**England). The **Act of Union** united Scotland and England in G.B., symbolized in the flag by combining symbols. **John Florio**, friend of Bruno and Shakespeare, translated **Montaigne's** essays into English. Robert **Hooke's *A Curious Dissertation*** was posthumously published in 1703. It described the universe as fundamentally made of **invisible vibrating particles *"like so many equal musical strings"*** Hooke had been the laboratory partner of Robert Boyle. In 1803, **Barton Stone** in Greensboro, NC , revolted from Presbyterian authority, calling his group "Christian." It was the forerunner of the Christian Church, or **Disciples of Christ**. *Napoleon* was persuaded by James Munroe and Robert Livingstone to sell **Louisiana Territory** for $15M. President Jefferson gave instructions to his secretary, **Captain Meriwether Lewis**, whom he had been training for exploration for 4 years, both in his own home and by sending him to experts in natural history, map-making and other subjects. He gave him instructions to explore the land between the existing states and the Pacific Ocean, particularly to keep journals of his observations of natural history and to seek a water passage to the Pacific which could be used to facilitate trade with China. Lewis selected his war-time commander, **Captain William Clark,** to be co-commander of the expedition (even though the Army did not give him back his full commission, but made him a lieutenant, Lewis continued to treat him as co-commanding Captain.). **Richard Hawkins** patented a reaper. Hector **Berlioz** was born. **Beethoven** interrupted his composition of the ***Eroica*** to write a sonata for a mulatto violinist named **Bridgetower**. On January 1, 1903, the ***Rice Journal and Gulf Coast Farmer*** reported on the **Evangeline Oil Field: *"The dominating development of the past two years in this area has been the discovery of oil, opening an entirely new epoch in the world's history as well that of our own parish. The wonderful***

***gushing oil wells at Beaumont are known to the world's readers. On a single day last summer, seven hundred carloads of crude oil were hauled away from the Beaumont tanks. The demand appears to be unlimited; the problem is to secure enough tank cars and steamers to fill the orders of oil. Since the discovery of oil at Beaumont, the known Coast Oil Field has greatly widened. Successful oil wells have been struck near Jennings, in Evangeline Parish, at Welsh and at Lafayette, all in Louisiana, and at Sour Lake and Saratoga in Texas, thus proving the extension of the oil field over one hundred miles in Louisiana and seventy miles in Texas . . . An abundant supply of fuel oil will attract manufactories from all parts of the world, especially when its proximity to ocean navigation is considered. Low freight rates, low priced building material and cheap fuel are sufficient to determine the future of the rice belt. But additions can be made to these. Here is to be found the largest known deposit of sulphur in America. Sulphur in some form is used in a majority of manufacturing establishments and its presence in quantity is an important factor in determining the future of a country. The immense deposits of pure rock salt have some weight in the industrial issues, but a factor more potent than all is the certainty that an Isthmian canal must be constructed in the near future. Then an enormous volume of commerce from the fertile states of the Middle West will be attracted to the cities of the rice belt, for South American and for Oriental exports. The villages will then expand into cities; the cities will become marts for the world's trade, and the whole Coast land will be dense with a population, vigorous, wealthy, and contented."*** On Mar 31, 1903 **Pearse** flew in a bamboo monoplane in Australia. On Dec ember 17, the **Wright** brothers flew at Kitty Hawk, N.C. taking the *Wright Flyer* 120 feet. Wood's Hole was founded. Leslie (**Bob) Hope** was born on May 29. **Thomas Edison** produced the first **motion picture**, Using his own equipment and sound stage: The **Great Train Robbery** occurred. **Schweitzer** became principal of the theological college in Strasbourg. Vladimir **Horowitz** was born. George Bernard Shaw's ***Man and Superman*** was published. The **Trans-Siberian Railroad** was completed. Jews were massacred at **Kishinev. Chekhov** finished the first draft of *The Cherry Orchard.* George **Orwell** (Eric Blair) was born in Bengal, India. The hypnotic properties of **Veronal** (barbital) were observed. The **Negri** inclusion bodies of rabies-infected tissue were first observed. Remlinger and Riffat-Bey discovered the virus of **rabies.** And **Langley's** "great aerodrome" failed to fly, falling upside down into the Potomac. **John Muir,** founder of the Sierra Club, took Theodore Roosevelt camping in the Sierras. **Ohio** became a state on March 1. On January 7, 2003, the **108th Congress** opened**.** On February 1, 2003 at 9:00 a.m. EST the space shuttle **Columbia** broke up at the edge of the atmosphere, about 200,000 ft or 39 miles out, going 12,500 mph (18 mach), killing the crew of seven. February 5. **Colin Powell** spoke to the UN about the **weapons of mass destruction** in Iraq. This was the rationale for the aggressive war launched the next month. At that time, President Bush claimed that the "**preemptive" invasion** was justified as a strike against those who had caused the bombing of the trade center and

Pentagon on 9/11/2001. On September 21, 2003, the **Galileo** spacecraft crashed through the Jovian Atmosphere at 108,000mph. In March, **Khalid Sheik Mohammed** was caught by Pakistani police. Reformist Prime Minister of Serbia Zohar **Djindjic** was assassinated on March 12. The **Second War of Iraq** began on March 17. Senator Daniel Patrick **Moynihan** died on March 26**.** The British entered **Basra** on April 7 as the coalition freed Iraq from Baathists. In April, the **Human Genome Project** published with 300 gaps. It began in 1990, cost $3B, used HGP sequencers costing $25M to $50M and made nine runs to verify accuracy. In May, the Mahedere Sebehat Ledeta Lemariam **Ethiopian** Orthodox church rented the building of the **Second Presbyterian Church** on the corner of Janney's and Quaker Lanes, Bishop Gabriel and Tsehaye Teferra, President. On May 21, 2003, an **Earthquake (** 7.1 R) killed 1092 and injured over 6700 in Algeria and a cow in Alberta succumbed to mad cow disease. This was the first case in N. America, possibly transmitted by Western elk and deer populations, which have chronic wasting diseases such as **bovine spongiform encephalopathy**. **Mars's transit** occurred on May 8, 2003. It passed between Earth & Sun and was visible around dawn in the Northeast. On the same day, an F3 **tornado** (250mph) swept through **Moore, OK.** June 12 brought the deaths of David **Brinkley**, newsman, and Gregory **Peck,** actor. On July 28, Bob **Hope** died. On July 28 **Zettl** of U.C., Berkeley, produced a **500nm motor** with gold rotor designed to direct laser beams. It is 1/300th diameter of a human hair.(with 25OO um to the inch and one micrometer (um) is 1,000 times longer than 1 nm. The **17 year locusts** (cicadas) began to emerge in Alexandria and the D.C. Area in August. An **electrical blackout** of the Northeastern USA also occurred in August.. On September 18 **Hurricane Isabel** struck Kill Devil's Hills, N.C., then moved along the Eastern coast. One million people were without power on the next day. On June 8, **Monkey pox** was transmitted to people in 3 Midwestern states via Gambian rats, prairie dogs and rabbits sold in a Wisconsin pet store. On June 9, the 17 year **locusts** (cicadas) emerged, climbed trees, sang, mated, laid eggs and died after 4 weeks, in densities ranging from 1.0 to 1.5M per acre in Roanoke and SW VA. In August, over 10,000 elderly people in **France** died from the **hot spell**. On September 6, **Fabian**, the strongest hurricane to strike Bermuda in 50 years, had winds of >120mph. On September 9, **Edward Teller** died at 95 years of age. He was one of those responsible for the **A bomb and H Bomb**. On October 27, **Walter Washington** died. He was the first elected mayor of D.C. There were 14,300 **homeless p**eople in D.C. region, with 44% of them in the suburbs. The **unemployment** rate was 6.1%. On August 16, **Idi Amin** died. The former despot of Uganda was in Saudi Arabia. On October 23, **Amazon.com** launched the ***"search within a book"*** feature that enabled access to its initial library of 120,000 books. On November 28, a **solar coronal emission** 13 times the length of the Earth's diameter disrupted radio signals and the Earth's magnetic field. On December 13, in Operation Red Dawn, **Saddam Hussein** was pulled from a hole by the first brigade of the **Fourth Infantry** in the town of ad-Dawr**. Sedna** was discovered in November. It is a planetoid traveling in an orbit beyond

Pluto, perhaps as a part of the **Ort cloud**—yet another reason to reconsider Pluto's classification as a planet. **Paul Kurtz**, writer for the Center for Inquiry and *The Skeptical Inquirer*, summed up his book, ***Science and Religion***, as follows: ***"What then is the proper domain of religion? Is anything left? . . . religious language, I submit is not primarily descriptive; nor is it prescriptive. The descriptive and explanatory functions of language are within the domain of science; the prescriptive and normative are the function of ethics. Both of these domains . . . have a kind of autonomy . . . what is appropriate for the religious realm? The domain of the religious, I submit, is expressive and emotive. It presents moral poetry, aesthetic inspiration, performative ceremonial rituals, which act out and dramatize the human condition and human interests, and seek to slake the thirst for meaning and purpose. Religions . . . deal in parables, narratives, metaphors, stories, myths; and they frame the divine in anthropomorphic form. They express the existential yearnings of individuals endeavoring to cope with the world that they encounter and seek to wrestle some meaning in the face of death. Religious language in this sense is eschatological. Its primary function is to express hope. If science gives us truth, morality the good and the right, and politics justice, religion is in the realm of promise and expectation. Its main function is to overcome despair and hopelessness in response to human tragedy, adversity, and conflict . . . religious systems of thought and belief are products of the creative human imagination . . . These are among the most powerful expressions of human dreams and hopes, ideals and longings. . ."*** Kurtz goes on to doubt the need for false hopes and to recommend that humans would be better off accepting and enjoying life *as is*, and solving the problems and making the decisions based on realistic appraisals rather than the fanciful ***"dramatic existentialist poetry"*** of religions. He asks, ***"Can we as a species endure in a naturalistic universe, recognizing the elements of the mystery that still remains and the vast fringes of the unknown? Can we at the same time each find life worthwhile? Can we live with reason and courage, compassion and exuberance?"***

## Step 104

On July 31, 1904, **Jim Hobson was born** on a "rocky hillside farm in DeKalb County, TN near Gen Bluff, a **hill and hollow** farm 11/4 miles from Liberty, TN" (In Virginia, it's called "ridge and valley." In some parts of Tennessee and Virginia, the hollows are called "coves."). The back building, a carriage house, of the Schimpfs' Chicago residence on **Claremont** was built. **Mary van de Riet** was born April 6, 1904 in Davenport, Iowa. On March 26, 2004, **Ginny** wrote, ***"Since that awful day when I was so sick and you, Dick, helped me all day I have meant to write a thank-you note. Well, here I am, at last. . .To both of you a grateful and loving 'thank you.' . . You have always done so many nice things for me. I have enjoyed your car so much . . . Susie, you were so sweet to come up that day when I was so sick and comfort me. Thank you, Honey. . ."*** The dog **Jiggs** II, Frank Rose's Boston terrier, died on 6/2 of a clot on his

right side. As they waited, Susan Knight fed him all the treats he would eat. On June 10, **Bill Rose** made closing to purchase a house on **Rosewood** St. in Richmond. On February 12, **Bill and Linda Drehmann** visited at the Roses at 4 W. Howell en route to India. Richard was working temporarily as Science Specialist for **Alexandria** schools. In August, **Rob** returned to Virginia from San Diego. In March, **Franke (Hobson-Yager) Grizzell** died (3/11 at 01:30) at home in bed, suffering from shingles. And **Scott Milheim** died in a car accident in PA. He was the son of Sandy and **Neil Milheim**, Susie's cousin. In April, **Frank and Jo Rose** had their 60th anniversary and **Don Hobson** died. He was the son of Lenah and **Wilson Hobson**. Wilson was the second son of the family, who generously raised the other children when the oldest son, **Thurman**, left home. Wilson gave financial help to his sister, **Jo Nell Gage**. In May, Rob wrote **"*Happy Birthday! Dear Mama, I enjoyed seeing you in Oklahoma. I hope you have a wonderful birthday! Love, Rob."*** Barbara Still wrote on April 24, ***"Hope your trip to Oklahoma was enjoyable and trouble-free. I spent Easter in Williamsburg with Carter and her family, then brought my grandsons up here for a couple of days as they were on Spring Break. . . We had fun at Rady Park and on the Rail Trail with bikes and scooters and of course they put on their boots and waded in the creek and skipped stones in the water. And we visited the Carousel Ice Cream stand . . . The next Fauquier Retired Teachers meeting is on May 12 at Fantastico's . . ."*** *In* July, **Frank** wrote: ***"We are expecting to see Rob in a few days. Hope he has time to spend a day or so with us. Come on out when you get time. Carol Ann's birthday is coming up—earlier than yours by 5 years. Time flies."*** Rob wrote, ***"I hope you will use this birthday gift. I'm looking forward to living closer to you all and I hope that you'll take advantage of my assistance with projects around the house or in any other way I can help. For the next 2 weeks, I will be condensing myself into a small rectangular region. I told Granny Jo and Granddaddy Frank that I would be there August 1st. I'll visit for a day before continuing."*** **Mandy** died on December 29. She was the friendly little cat whom the Roses rescued from a car accident on the side of the road in the 1988. She had moved to Alexandria with them in 1999, where she lived in relative peace with other cats, Gregory, Christina, Elizabeth and Jo Sullivan's two cats downstairs. **Richard** worked part-time as Supervisor of Science for Alexandria City Schools. **Barbara Still,** Third Grade teacher at P.B. Smith ES, moved into her new house in Warrenton. Susie gave her housewarming gifts before going to Oklahoma in the spring. **BYA Dates** About 4 bya (4.1 bya), **Zircon** crystals, the oldest known minerals, were formed in the **Jack Hill** desert rocks of Western Australia. These crystals have an oxygen isotope ratio indicating reactions with liquid water. Therefore **liquid water was present 4.1 bya.** By 3.9 bya, most of the major planet forming collisions and accretions had settled down, but at 3.74 bya, a **meteor** struck Earth with 100 times the force of the later meteor of 65 mya. It created tremendous tidal waves (Byerly, LSU, in Sci.020823). Evidence for this lies in the deepest strata of S. Africa and with microbial fossils of Australia. The Murchison

meteorite, also found in Australia, appears to have landed around 3.5bya. Study of it led to the hypothesis of a meteoritic source for the levo-rotational **amino acids** that asymmetrically predominate in the Earth's amino acid populations, an aspect of the topic of chirality (or mirror image isometry). Prior to 3.8 bya, any nascent life would have been obliterated during the Hadean period of asteroid strikes, boiling away water and creating toxic, acidic conditions. Some asteroids during 4.6-4.3 bya period were as large as the state of Utah. **MYA Dates** About 4 mya: ***Australopithecus*** and our East African bipedal hominid ancestors lived in the savannas, possibly the human center of origin. The ***Ardipithecus ramidus***, or ***Ardi***, lived 4.4 mya at Aramis in the Central Awash region of the Horn of Africa. These hominins were similar to *Australopithecus.* Rivers in the area of Greenland carved a valley twice as long and wide but half as deep as the Grand Canyon. It filled with ice and in later years funneled meltwater into the sea. **KYA Dates:** About 4 kya, the third wave of Siberian immigrants went into the Americas, crossing Canada, Baffin Island, and Greenland. Their descendents are the **Inuit** peoples**. BCE Dates: At 9 a.m. October 6, 4004 BCE the world was created, according to Bishop Ussher,** based on his study of Biblical genealogies, but lacking radiometric dating technique. The reign of **Nebuchadnezar** II, king of Babylon began in 604 BCE. In about 4 BCE **Jesus** was born in the time of **Tiberius** Caesar and the end of the reign of Herod the Great. (Estimates vary from 4 to 7 B.C.) **CE Dates:** In 1204, the Crusaders sacked **Constantinople.** In 1404, the Roman judge and poet, **Daniel ben Judah**, Roman judge and poet, wrote the ***Doxology,*** or **Yigdal**, based on Maimonides's ***Confession***. In 1504, Michelangelo's ***David*** was displayed in Florence. Florentines decided not to put it atop the cathedral, as planned, but instead, as a symbol of resistance to the Medicis (their Goliath), in front of the city hall of the republic. A few years later, the Medicis returned. The next two popes (Leo and Clement) were Medicis and the republic became a duchy of the Medicis under **Cosimo Medici**. In 1604, the **Huguenots** arrived in Port Royal, Nova Scotia. The **Kepler's Star** supernova was observed. The Battle of **Blenheim** was in 1704 under George II**.** This was also the year that **Bach** went to Arnstadt, where many of his cantatas would be written, such as the Easter Cantata #16, and a humorous Capriccio for the departure of a brother for Swedish service. He did not like his duties as choirmaster, however. 1804 **Dalton** published his Atomic theory to explain the mixing of atmospheric gases. **Lewis & Clark** left St. Louis. They stopped at Double Ditch, ND above the Missouri River, site of an abandoned Mandan fortress. On July 11, **Aaron Burr** killed Alexander Hamilton in a duel in Weehawken, NJ. Oliver Evans built a 5 hp **steam** dredger for Philadelphia harbor. The Briton, **Trevithick**, invented a **steam locomotive**. In 1904 Theodore Roosevelt confronted the **Barbary** (Berber) Pirates of Morocco by sending in the Navy when they kidnapped an American woman and her two children. He made a campaign slogan about the event as he promoted the **Panama Canal**. He compared the US to the grizzly bear, an audacious giant with no allies but many who feared it. On June 16 at 8:00 a.m. Leopold **Bloom** awoke in Dublin and Stephen Daedalus

awoke in an old castle outside the city. ***Ulysses*** had begun. This was the birth year of **Salvador Dali** , the surrealist painter of *The Persistence of Memory.* The train overpass was built over the end of **Commonwealth Avenue** at Cameron St. in Alexandria. Births in this year also included those of **Cary Grant** (actual name was Archie Leach), **Charles Drew** , inventor of blood banking and **George Gamow,** contributor to the Big Bang theory. The **Alexandria Gentlemen's Driving Club**, a bookie joint otherwise known as "St. Asaph Track" at a racetrack off Mount Vernon Avenue near Mount Ida, was raided and shut down by police. Nearby "Terrett Avenue" is a name left over from those tacky days. The **Triple Entente** was signed as a result of the growing fear of Germany. Over the next three years, every great power desired to prevent war. The alliances themselves were formed to preserve peace. Fears led to aggressive talk, however, and the talk led to more fears. Thus the powers ultimately fell again into war. **Soviet revolutionaries** assassinated the Russian Minister of the Interior, Plehve. **Russia and Japan** went to war. **Chekhov** died of tuberculosis on July 15 in the Black Forest. His play *The Cherry Orchard* had its première in the Moscow Art theater. In 2004, Mayor **Richard Daley** dedicated **Millenium Park** on July 24. Human Rights Watch reported that the situation in **Darfur**, Sudan was like the beginning of the Rwandan genocide as the Arab **Janjaweed** ("man with a horse and a gun") militias and Sudanese government attempted to massacre 80 black African tribes. On November 10, Andrew Card, the Chief of Staff, called Secretary of State, **Colin Powell**, to ask for his resignation in 2 days. **Martha Stewart** was found guilty of lying about her stock transactions. She was inside-trading on ImClone stock. On March 11, **Spanish trains** exploded in Madrid, killing 199 people, wounding 1400, and leading to the withdrawal of Spain from the Iraq war alliance. In May, the 17 year locusts or **cicadas,** emerged in Alexandria. **Mary White** died at the age of 105. A citizen of the District of Columbia, she had continued bowling and skating into her hundreds. In the 1930s, years before Rosa Parks, she sat in front of a bus in Alexandria. On Wednesday march 17, 2004, the **asteroid #2004fh**, one hundred feet wide, came within 26,500 miles of Earth at 0508 EST. It was the 2,653$^{rd}$ object found in space. Of these, 693 are 0.5 mile in diameter and therefore able to make it to the Earth's surface. Any less than 40 meters (130 feet) would burn up in the atmosphere. During the week of March 22, a construction site near **VCU** in Richmond caught fire. Burning insulation flew to other buildings. **Bill Rose** watched from his office in city hall as black smoke and giant flames rose from more than a mile away. Eventually, the fire affected 23 buildings besides the construction site. **Ronald Reagan,** a victim of Alzheimer's Disease, died at the age of 93 on June 5. He was the 40$^{th}$ President of the U.S. The **Mars** rovers arrived on Mars and the **Genesis** mission left Earth on September 8 to gather samples of **solar wind**. A survey published in the *U.S. News and World Report* (June/July) stated that most (59% ) Americans said **religion** played an important role in their lives, the **divorce** rate was 6.2 per thousand, Credit Card **debt** was $985 billion, most people had ten days of paid vacation, the **military** budget in 2003 was $399 billion, there were 3.11

**lawyers** per thousand, the annual production of **garbage** per person was 1,637 lb, the **gross national product** per capita was $35,000, and 18.3% households had three or more **vehicles** in 2000. Only Luxembourg and Norway had higher GNP per capita than the U.S.

## Step 105

The barn was built in 1905 on the Schimpf property on Claremont. Called the carriage house, it later was the residence for Kathleen Schimpf when she was growing up. **Anna and Margaret Van de Riet,** twins, died at birth on September 17, 1905. On May 1, 2005, **Susan Irene Rose** celebrated her 60th birthday at 4 West Howell. Richard asked her what she wanted. "***Friends and to go flying***," she said. So he invited Rob, Ginny, Mary Jane Fawcett, Barbara Still, the Knights, and Roses in Oklahoma, Mike and Alison Trimble and Will, Rhonda and Freddie Morris, Bill and Linda Drehmann, Jan Spinks Van Metre, Bill Rose and Michelle McGreath, and Melody, her home companion during the day. Barbara and Mary Jane sent flowers and met with her later. She saw the Knights and Roses the next day, when she and Richard flew to Oklahoma. In 2008 she made a last flight in a small plane from Oklahoma. He made a small album to help her recall the party. In August, Richard wrote to his father, **Frank** : *"**I hired an aide to stay with Susie on Tuesday evenings when I teach. Half the time it will be the same person who usually comes mornings. Rob always comes on Tuesdays while I teach. Susie was incontinent, disoriented, irritable, and at loose ends. We go out every day. Susie is happy most of the time; likes rides. Her mom has her own concerns so I don't ask her to do much. Her approach to problems is mostly incompatible to mine.**"* Richard wrote to Marnie Brown that on November, Ginny lost her driver's license and disabled parking permit and her new VISA card. Richard talked with Ted from Titan Movers about the coming move. Margaret came to help Ginny and the ladies from Busy Buddies presented their plan to Ginny. The forms required by The Fountains were finally completed. On December 1, Ginny met with the nurse at the Fountains for a Wellness Evaluation, as did Susie and Richard. They also signed the Life Care contracts, confirmed the entry date, received keys and were briefed by Stacy about moving procedures. Ginny was missing some of her identification and insurance papers. The Titan Movers and Busy Buddies worked together to move Ginny out of her house and into her apartment within a day, including organizing her clothes and personal items in the closet and drawers. Richard had bookshelves installed in both apartments. He feared that Ginny would have another stroke if she had to think to much about the move or if the new surroundings seemed too unfamiliar. Richard said he was too plain-spoken for Ginny. In November, he wrote to her, ***"I don't understand why you do not want to join us when we move to The Fountains, but if you choose to stay at home, we will try to visit you as long as we can. You said that you don't want to leave because 15 W. Howell has been your home so***

***long and because you and Truman lived there so many good years. That will always be true; whether you stay or leave, it is the memory of those times that remains and sustains, even though things have changed, such as the house, the neighborhood, the church, and the community. Perhaps you don't want to leave because you are afraid of losing your freedom. It's true that some of your freedom of movement has been taken from you by the strokes and simply by aging. Faced with this loss, one seeks to retain as much freedom as possible. One way to do that is to simplify your way of living so that you can spend most of your time doing what you want to do rather than worrying about what you can't do or should do. Fear robs you of valuable time. Maintaining a house is difficult enough when we are feeling well. Perhaps you don't want to leave because, as Robert used to say, you don't want to spend your principle. Well, Billy raised the same issue with us when I told him what we were going to do. What's the point of saving for a rainy day if you're going to sit on your treasure when there's a downpour? If this isn't a rainy day for both of us, I don't know what it is! Perhaps you're concerned about not being able to leave a large enough inheritance to Susie. Please be assured that Susie will be well cared for whether I am alive or dead. We have long term health insurance, life insurance, and income from investments. In addition, this new living arrangement at the Fountains may help to keep her active and engaged. Perhaps you don't want to go because it makes you heart-sick to think about it. I understand this because I remember how I felt when we left Rock Springs. It was our home for 28 years, the longest I had ever lived in one place. I had hoped to die there some day, quite frankly. It was Susie, however, who wanted to go to Alexandria and help you, Truman, and Jo. She was distraught. She so treasured her independent life in Warrenton, the many friends and colleagues she had there--a whole community that respected the work she was doing with children. (I calculated that she worked with about 16,000 children over her career--most of them in Fauquier County.) She treasured that long back yard, the garden, the trees. And she grieved for it all until she could no longer remember it. She gave it up to help you. I tell you quite frankly, as her periods of delirium become more frequent and her stamina declines, we are reaching a time when she will not be able to visit you--unless you are next door.***" It was Marnie Brown, however, who convinced Ginny to move and steadied her resolve. With no long letters, Marnie helped Ginny to remain calm about the move and about living in the Fountains. She repeatedly explained why Ginny was moving and what to expect in the new apartment, stayed with her, and assured her of her help and friendship. Later on, Marnie also found **Maggie Soberanis,** the aide whom Ginny came to love and in whose home she died. On November 15, 2005, Ginny put down $1000 to reserve Room 622 in the Town Center of the Fountains at the Washington House on Fillmore Avenue in Alexandria. The **Roses** moved on December 3, 2005 to The **Fountains** at **Washington House**, 5100 Fillmore Avenue, Apt. 512, in Alexandria, VA. As he was packing and removing their belongings from 4 West Howell Avenue, Richard slipped, carrying a

television, fell down the stairs, and hit his head on the front door. There were no fractures, but the CAT scan revealed a benign thyroid adenoma. Kathleen Rose's step-mother, **Mary Guldi Schimpf,** died in November and was buried in St. Joseph's cemetery at Cumberland and Belmont in Chicago, where Kathleen's mother, Frances Schimpf, had been buried when Kathleen was 13 years old. Death also came to Kathleen's sisters, **Carmelyn Schimpf Dautzenberg** (mother of Tricia, married to Mark Fritts.) and **Loretta Schimpf Brookins** (Mrs. Dale Brookins, formerly she had married to Peter Wolf and John Flinck.). Loretta died on July 13. **BYA Dates** About 5 bya (4.567 bya), Earth began. During the **Hadean Eon** and during the Azoic **Cryptozoic to** to **Neoarchaean eras (**4.567 to 2.5BYA**)** many geosynclines filled, rose, eroded and deposited. Dating to these eras are periods of mountain-building in Antarctica, formation of the moon, formation of **Zircon** (the earliest mineral), and of the earliest rocks and evidences of self-replicating **RNA**, photosynthesis, and the heavy bombardments by the last asteroids on the Earth's surface. By this time, Jupiter had formed before Earth, its mass attracting matter that might otherwise have gone to other planets. This set the mass of the Earth, which subsequently determined and constrained the proportions of terrestrial organisms. At 4.5 bya, the Earth had no oxygen in the atmosphere, acidic air, extreme temperatures, and no moon until a planetoid-sized asteroid collided with it, knocking its rotational axis to a tilt of 23.5°. The Moon-Earth system then consisted of two bodies attracted to a common center of gravity. This system would come to affect seasons, tides, circadian and other rhythms, and human history. The energy sources at the Earth's surface are summarized in the following expression: S+R+LE+G+C+S=0, which means that the net sum of the following factors is zero: **solar flux** radiation, thermal **radiative flux** from long infrared waves up to 10um from the ground, atmosphere and surroundings, **latent energy** of evaporation, **ground** conduction flux of heat from rock and soil to surface, **convective** (and conductive) flux from air and sensible heat from winds, and **short term storage** of energy. Flux is measured with respect either to **radiant energy** in calories per square centimeter per minute or to **moving mass** in grams per square centimeter per minute (for solids, liquids, gases). David Gates in *Energy Exchange in the Biosphere* (1962) further modifies the expression by introducing correction factors, as follows: S-(r+t)S + eR + LE + G + C + S + P + M=0, where r is reflectivity, t is transmissivity, e is emissivity, P is photosynthesis, and M is metabolic rate. The expression is the same whether referring to an ecosystem or an individual system. Environmental factors such as rainfall, salinity, temperatures (soil, water, dew point), illuminance ( in lumens), and wind speed are less important in themselves than **in how they describe the energy exchanges going on within and between systems.** These **interactions,** as James Perlman showed in great detail (*Science Without Limits, 1995),* are the organizational basis for life and human characteristics. Enquist & Brown (UNM and Los Alamos, 1997, 2001) and Michael Kaspari (OU, 2012) described the **master equation** which gives the **basic rate at which life proceeds.** Enquist states that every organism (or system) has a fixed quantity of life,

either dribbled out or burnt quickly, depending upon the organism's (or system's) size. The volume (and therefore mass) of a system increases by the third power while the area increases by the second power. Area is surface for intake, radiation, absorption, detoxification, etc. Beyond a certain limit, the area cannot keep up with the continual growth of volume. Circulatory and digestive systems overcome this limit to a degree, but the master equation holds nonetheless. **Quarter power scaling laws,** summarized in the master equation, emphasize that most biological rates are proportional to the system's mass to the power of some multiple of ¼ . For example, the metabolic rate is proportional to the mass to the ¾ power while the heart rate is proportional to the mass to the negative ¼ power. The master equation predicts a species' metabolic rate with respect to mass and temperature and applies to all organisms from microbes to ecosystems. Rates of mutation, carbon-cycling and other factors are all related to the master equation, which concerns the efficiency with which energy is distributed to cells, cell components, and multidimensional networks like the nervous or circulatory systems. The key parameter is temperature. Metabolism is given as mass to the ¾ power times a function with temperature in the exponent, the function dependent upon the kind of system under discussion. Hatching times, the efficiency of an electron transport chain, the rates of enzyme-catalyzed reactions, the rate of chromosome duplication, microbial mutation rates, elephants' growth rates, biodiversity within a desert biome, shrews' life spans, distances between trees and trunk diameters, numbers of branches per tree, sleep cycles, numbers of trees in a forest—all are governed by metabolic relationships. In fact "the forest as a whole behaves as if it were a very large tree." (<SN 05022012) In other words, metabolic rate is **biological rate,** the rate at which biological material is used up. Fast rates mean faster lives, faster production of **free radicals** per unit time, and quicker deaths. At **critical points in the Earth's history**, living systems have emerged as **expressions of what is metabolically possible.** When (in *West Running Brook*, which Richard often read to his classes) **Robert Frost and** physical chemist **Du Nouy** (in *Human Destiny)* spoke of something in the nature of life which ran counter to **entropy,** perhaps the contrariness and organization they identified comes down to the biological rate. **MYA Dates:** About 5 mya the **Pliocene Epoch** began**.** Tectonic change at Gibraltar led to refilling of the Mediterranean. The **Columbia Plateau** formed (5.3mya) from a giant volcanic eruption or series of eruptions that coated large stretches of the NW United States with basaltic lava during the late **Miocene.** During this epoch, ***Australopithecus robustus*** lived—a mainly herbivorous hominid with 32 teeth and an upright, running gait. Excavation of **Pliocene gypsum beds of Sahabi**, Libya, (investigated by Boaz, Heinzelin, and El-Arnauti in 1978-1981) revealed an ancient river gorge 100 meters below the current desert surface. Fossils from this area of rapid climatic change were not different from those of the earlier Miocene Epoch; nor were many primates initially found. **BCE Dates:** In 705, **Sennacherib** of Assyria invaded Judah in the 14th year of **Hezekiah**, king of Judah (II Kings 15:13). In 605 (or 604) Lao Tsu, founder of **Taoism**,

was born. He was keeper of the royal archives at Loyang (Honan Province). His 81 sayings, gathered posthumously, were set beautifully in English poems by Witter Bynner, who wrote that Laotzu wrote nothing himself, having "***decided that a great deal was done and said in the world which might better be spared. His choice, however, was not, as has been widely assumed, vacant inaction or passive contemplation. It was creative quietism. Though he realized the fact that action can be emptier than inaction, he was no more than Walt Whitman a believer in abstention from deed. He knew that a man can be a doer without being an actor and by no means banned being of use when he said that the 'way to do is to be.' Twenty-five centuries before Whitman, he knew the value of loafing and inviting one's soul; and the American poet, whether or not consciously, has been in many ways one of the Chinese poet's more eminent Western disciples, as Thoreau has been also, with his tenet, 'Be it life or death, we seek only reality.***'" (from p. 335, *The Chinese Translations).* Richard set one of Laotzu's sayings to music in *The Books of Daniel,* an opera about biblical interpretation, Nebuchadnezzar, dreams, the prophet Daniel, disappearing farmland, and modern business enterprise. **Nebuchadnezzar** and the Babylonian army defeated Egypt at **Carchemish** and went on to Syria and Palestine. Nebuchadressar II, another name for the same man, ruled NeoBabylon until 562. He was a Chaldean. The Medes held Assyria and Anatolia, the **Hittites**' homeland. He pacified Syria then took Judah from Egypt. In 305 Seleucus I, **Nicator**, began his reign as the first Seleucid Kind of Babylonia. In 5 BCE, the **redwoods**, which survived into the 21st century, were seedlings. **CE Dates** The year 5 CE is another estimation for the birthdate of **Jesus** (Authorities differ on this. And everything.) In 105 Chinese inventors created **paper.** In 1205,Francis di Bernadone, a wealthy young man carousing with friends after being let out of prison, was struck dumb in the middle of the street by the vision of a life of poverty and submission. He became a lay-brother, later known as **St. Francis.** In 1305, at the southern gate of **London Bridge**, with the spiking of the head of **William Wallace,** it became the custom to display severed heads of traitors on pikes and dipped in tar to preserve them. In 1405, Emperor **Yong-lo** sent fleets west with 30,000 men and 317 ships per expedition, using compasses for navigation. In 1505 John **Knox** was born(d 1572). In 1705, the **Wren** building first caught fire (See also 1695, 1859, 1862, and 1929.). **Bach** left Arnstadt on leave, and overstayed his allowed time. He walked to Buxtehude's church in Lűbeck. Taking such liberties, together with his elaborate innovations on chorale accompaniments, infuriated the church leaders of Arnstadt. The Battle of **Trafalgar** under William IV was in 1805. **Beethoven** composed *Fidelio*. On April 7, **Lewis and Clark** left Ft. Mandan, ND after spending their first winter there, planning the trip by using the advice of Native Americans who visited the camp. **Schönberg**'s *Pelleas und Mellisande* premiered in 1905. Schweitzer published *J.S. Bach, le musician-poete.* Keeping the promise he had made to devote the rest of his life to service, he began to study medicine. **Theodore Roosevelt** was re-elected. After a tremendous public health effort In New Orleans, where

mosquitoes carrying **Yellow Fever** had entered on a banana boat despite a expensive fumigation and cleaning operation at the docks, only 452 died. This was a great reduction when compared to previous epidemics. Prevention was based on the protocol of **Walter Reed**. **Einstein**'s papers on **Brownian motion**, **Light Quantum theory**, the **Special theory of relativity** and a doctoral dissertation on **molecular dimensions** were completed. Einstein used Riemerian, or non-Euclidean, geometry in his theory of relativity that defined a new geometry of physics using compressible measuring rods and variable clocks. Hundreds of Russian Jews were massacred in **Odessa**. It was the first use of the word **pogrom**. Paul **Cézanne** painted the series *The Bathers*, redefining the geometry of painting. **Solar** eruptions occurred. In Fauquier county, the local newspaper became *The Fauquier Democrat.* **Mary Robertson Moses** and her husband Thomas came back to New York from Virginia, buying the farm Eagle Bridge. They had ten children, five dying in infancy. On Aug.29, 2005, Hurricane **Katrina** at 0610 hrs. struck New Orleans with a 28 foot storm surge. While the cost of **Katrina**'s cleanup was $130 billion and the cost of New Orleans' levee repairs was $14 billion, the cost of safe-proofing New Orleans against a category 5 storm was estimated to be $80 billion. **Hecht**'s Store ownership changed from May Co. to Federated. Cardinal Schönborn of Vienna, president G.W. Bush, and Sen. William Frist of Tennessee in separate statements during the summer supported the claim that **intelligent design** was either preferable to, or as justified an explanation for the development of life on Earth as neo-darwinism. **Patrick Welsh,** teacher at T.C. Williams H.S., was still teaching English when the high school was rebuilt at a cost of $100 million. The idea of a comprehensive high school (See 1970.) was displaced by small "learning communities," based on the ideas of the Gates Foundation. This was supposed to improve grouping for individual instruction. In fact, however, the school simply set aside spaces for seniors and juniors. **Retail space per person** in the U.S.A. grew since 1990 from 19 to 38 sq. feet. **Steve Mumford** published ***Baghdad Journals***, the art journal he kept while a soldier in Iraq. **Salt Pond** or **Mountain Lake** in Pembroke County, Virginia began to dry up as its cracked limestone foundation gave way so that more water was going out than could be replenished from the spring which fed it. Variations in water level had occurred previously, but this time was different. By 2008, the lake was gone.

## Step 106

**Mary Washer Hobson,** mother of John Hobson, in Liberty, TN, died in 1906. and **Helen June Van de Riet** was born on August 1. (She married Ralph Urwin. Their children: Bob, married to Virginia with 2 children, Diana & Bobbie; Charmagne, married to Bob Schaeffer, with 2 sons, one of whom, Don, married Sherri in October 2003. He had lymph cancer at age 52; Noraleen, married to Bob Pinkerton, with 2 children, Steve & Keith Pinkerton.) Richard met with Dr. **Amini** on January 4, 2006 concerning his thyroid adenoma. On January 5, **Maggie Soberanis** began to provide companion-care for Virginia Bruch. January 8 was the **walk-through** at 6 p.m. for the sale of the house at 4 West Howell. Two days later, Richard took some of the **boxes** from Howell to store in cabinets in the anatomy lab at Marymount. On January 13 Richard had a **sonogram** at INOVA Medical Center. The next day, Bill and Rob Rose ran the **Estate Sale** at 4 West Howell, for which Richard was very grateful. On January 19, **Book** sellers Ray Reede, Minnix and Basset came to 15 W. Howell to purchase some of Ginny's collection. On January 8, Richard wrote: "***Ginny, Here are notes that Billy left you concerning what he did at your house. You are fortunate that he put so much time into this for you. The rooms and their contents are all well organized and easily accessed. The most important items are labelled in the dining room. Now it's up to you. There is simply not time or space to move much to the Fountains. What you can do, however, is identify a few things and a few books. It is also possible to put some of your books on the shelves downstairs in the Fountains. They can be catalogued and made part of the Fountains library, accessible to other residents as well as you. It is also possible to sell some of the books at an estate sale. What is not possible is to bring a large amount to your apartment. It also is not a good use of time or space to bring any more paper products or items for the kitchen or bathroom. Time is up for you to point out a few items and books that you would especially like to keep. We need to walk through the house and quickly tag these items before the sale and final clean-up. I'd suggest that we do this soon. You might want Al Hardin to come with us.***" Bill wrote, "***Dear Grandmama, Here are some books and photos on the table that seem to have special value. I hope I guessed correctly. I have moved nearly all books into groups that I hope will help you decide which to take to the Fountains. I've also put together a box of contemporary poetry which I would like to store in the downstairs shelving at the Fountains. Will this be OK with you? I hope so. I'll call soon***." On January 20, **Titan** movers came to Ginny's house, packed, and moved to the Fountains. The hundreds of books which Ginny brought with her were placed on ceiling-high shelving Richard had installed in her apartment. The task of organizing them always eluded her, but she was comforted by their presence. Richard had similar shelves made and installed for the Roses' hundreds of books. **Frank Law** began clearing out 4 W. Howell. On February 2, more book sellers (Fallun Halder) came to Ginny's house to purchase genealogical

books, county histories, and other special items. Richard had a parathyroid test. On February 7, Richard had another book sale at 15 W. Howell and two days later Frank Law finished clearing out the house. At least 4 dump trucks were filled. On February 12, Susie visited Dr. Bienert in Alexandria for the first time. She became the Roses' G.P. , the drive to Dr. Mancini's office in Sterling being too difficult. On February 15, Richard represented Ginny at settlement. Two days later, Ginny paid the Fountains the entrance deposit, and on 2/23, the utilities were shut off at 15 W. Howell Ave. The Newcomers' lunch at the Fountains with Adrianna Carr was on February 26. On March 3, the Roses traveled to Oklahoma. On March 23, Richard had a vascular screening. Next day, David Page tuned the Roses' piano. The Roses gave Bill Rose and Michelle McGrath their tickets for the **Kennedy Center.** Susie & Richard did not go back to the Kennedy Center. It had become too difficult. Susie, Richard ,and Rob flew a kite in **Oronoco** park. On March 30, **Susan Knight** arrived at BWI airport for a visit and on April 11 **Bill & Linda Drehmann** visited. On April 24, **Susan Knight** wrote, *"**We've been preparing for my move to my new office today. . . We really did enjoy your visit here for all of the 60th festivities. I think Mother and Daddy really enjoyed themselves too, with all their family and friends to help them celebrate. Daddy has a doctor's appointment next week. I'll ask the questions you wrote out and will keep you posted. We are waiting for this office move to be over and then we'll begin talking to builders about adding on to our house for Mother and Daddy. Sam has made a decision and is going to be baptized at the Sunday evening service on May 16th. He and Christopher are both patiently awaiting some consistent warm weather so they can immerse themselves in the pool . . . Frank is still out in the middle of the ocean somewhere doing whatever it is they do; he's supposed to get back May 6 . . .We had a very bad storm here the other night. Gary went out and took a picture of the storm cloud, then e-mailed it to a local channel on TV. They showed his photo on the 10:00 news . .* ." May 1, 2006 was Susie's 61st birthday. On May 2, Richard voted for Smedberg, Krupicka, Pepper, Foran, Gaines, & Schulz at the church across the street from the Fountains. On May 27, with the help of Marnie Brown, the Roses had a Birthday Party for Ginny and her friends at Clyde's. June 4, 2006. **Bob Manchester**, law partner of Susan Knight, was killed in a car accident. His car was struck from behind as it sat at the intersection of 36th and Main in Norman, OK. Susan and family were visiting Jack Rose at the time. On June 7, 2006 at 2 a.m., **Jack W. Rose** died in College Station TX of osteolymphoma. His last words, to Gary Knight, were "***Keep the peace***." Shortly after his death, **Debbie divorced** Phil Woodall. They had been married 40 years, since she was a high school junior. On June 19, **Marge Herbert** and Richard began a choral group at the Fountains, later called the ***Skytones*.** On June 20, the Roses left on the first leg of the next **trip to OK**, reaching Charlottesville at 2300 h. At 0300 next day they drove to Bristol. The same time on June 22, their 37th anniversary, they drove to Brownsville, TN. On June 23 at 0300 they drove to Ft. Smith and on June 24 at 0900 arrived in Norman. Susie did pretty well on this schedule because she was able

to sleep while Richard drove. On June 30, 2006 the Roses ended their 6-day visit in Norman and the Knights left Norman to visit Frank and **Larnora Smith** in **Sicily**. Frank and Jo were given instructions on caring for the Knights' cockatiels and the next morning, the dogs Nipper and Eddie woke up in a cage. On July 18, Richard met with Dr. Garcia, the endocrinologist, who ordered an ultrasound test for July 25. On July 27, Dr. Goran Dosun tried to do **dental** work on Susie but she became too agitated. On August 8, Richard bought an **autoharp. (**It later warped.**)** On August 10 Rob went to a wedding in **Bangor, Maine**. On August 30, Richard began teaching his **last class of students on science teaching methods**. On September 9-16, **Rob Rose** returned to San Diego to meet with business associates. On October 13, Margaret **Van Winkle** died at her home off Russell road. She was an elder at FPC, a cellist, a librarian at T.C Williams HS, and mother of George, Andrew and Lucia who,with her sisters Mary and Sara, were present at her death. She was from Howell, Michigan, where she was returned for burial. On October 21, The Roses celebrated **Rob**'s birthday a few days late. October 28, The **Skytones** performed at the Fountains. On November 8, Ginny had an **iron infusion** (with ferretin) at **Dr. Ueno**'s office. On November 17, **Sue Benson**, from the Ready Hands nursing service, visited the Roses to tell them that aides could no longer be provided for one or two evenings a week. Richard decided to end college teaching, beginning with the spring semester of 2007. He prepared a set of lab materials and wrote a detailed course handbook for the next instructor. He would stay on in the morning job in the science department as lab coordinator. November 24, Richard performed at the **Hermitage**. On December 9, **Lynn Keen** came to help make a recording of some music for Jo's birthday present *(Jo's Boys).* On December 10, the **Skytones** performed again at the Fountains Christmas party. **Loretta**, Kathleen's sister, passed away during the summer. The diagnosis was ALS, but Kathleen suspected this was incorrect. Loretta's children and third husband, **Dale Brookins,** who died in 2012 attended the funeral**.** Loretta had been a nurse, cook, seamstress, entertainer, organizer, second mother to her siblings, and family linchpin. **Mary Guldi Schimpf,** Kathleen's step-mother, passed away after several years of care by her helper, Wanda. Jimmy and Judy Contino, Kathleen's former employers at Bittersweet Bakery & Cafe in Chicago, invited her to visit them in **Santa Fe** for a break. Kathleen visited a friend, Rosemary, who had recently bought a condominium at Dos Santos. She liked it so well that she also bought a condominium and began planning to leave Chicago and retire in Santa Fe. **MYA Dates** By the late Miocene, about 6.1mya, **Antarctic ice-building** had caused sea levels to fall 130-230 ft. and the **Messinian Event—**that is, the drying of the Mediterranean Basin by 5.5MYA, which left behind pools of crystalized evaporite salts of halite and gypsum. These events also led to global cooling and decreased rainfall, especially around the Mediterranean. Grasslands and patchy woodlands spread across north Africa (as at Sahabi in Libya), Eurasia, and the Americas. Associated with these events were African rifts developing on both sides of Lake Victoria—West at Semliki and Zaire and East toward the Horn of Africa. The time

of the Messinian Event was also the time of **hominid emergence.** African ape population split into 2 species, one the ancestor of *Homo sapiens*, and the other the ancestor of **chimps,** or *Pan*. At about 5.7 mya, a bipedal ape (***Ardipithecus kadabba****)* lived on the Horn of Africa in the Middle Awash Rift Margin region. The hominid traits of bipedal locomotion, discriminating color vision, and increasingly sophisticated circuitry for controlling projectiles were selectively pressed into service in the savanna habitat. (See William Calvin's *How Brains Think* and Dominy's analysis of 1170 hours of observations of 14 species of primates eating 118 different plant species in Kibale National Park, Uganda in 1999.) The beginning of the formation of the **Grand Canyon** also dates to this time (5.5mya). The **Mediterranean** was separated from the Atlantic, causing its salinity to increase. The **Arabian tectonic plate** began to rotate away from the continent of Africa, opening the **Afar Rift Valley** in Ethiopia. **KYA Dates** The **Neolithic Culture** began about 6 kya**.** The **second mutation to significantly increase ancestral human brain size occurred.** In Utah's **Horseshoe Canyon**, the Old People, or pre-Anasazi **Archaic** peoples, painted a 200 foot long wall of **pictographs** of people and bison. **BCE Dates** In 106 BCE, Marcus Tullius **Cicero** was born (d.43 BC)--bane of thousands of school children; joy to a few. **CE Dates** 6 Beginning of the rule of Roman **procurators** in Palestine. **Fra Lippo Lippi** (mentioned in Browning's poem), Florentine Renaissance painter of *Virgin Adoring the Christ Child.* was born in 1406. In 1506, the **Laocoon** statue, whose expression was the assigned drawing for hundreds of art students, was discovered in Rome and moved to the Vatican. In 1606 the **Great Union Flag** (Union Jack) became the symbol of GB and her colonies On December 19, in a financial and exploratory venture to meet the challenge of Spanish expansion into the Americas, the **Susan Constant** (100 tons), **Godspeed** (40 T), and **Discover** (20T) sailed from Blackwall on the Thames (London) and arrived in the area of **Jamestown** on May 13, 1607, a hunting place for the Pamunkey and other Powhatan peoples who knew better than to live there. This was also the birth year of Pierre **Corneille,** a writer whose masterpiece, ***Le Cid*** , did not meet the Academy's rules. His subsequent works followed the formula required, winning him a place at the table. Birth of **Rembrandt van Ryn**, painter of the ***Anatomy Lesson of Dr. Tulp*** and ***The Nightwatch.*** (The Company of Banning Cocq) He died in 1669. Captain **John Smith** wrote of the Chesapeake Bay that "***Heaven and Earth never agreed better to frame a place for man's habitation*****.**" Of course, he did not mean to share this habitation with the Powhatan, even though the paramount chief, Wahunsenaca, had made him a **werowance.** This title meant that the Powhatan had accepted Smith and his English tribe as fellow-sharers on the land. Protection, aid, and exchange were promised. Smith, through ignorance and greed, did not grasp the meaning of the pact, instead claiming that he had been held captive. Thefts, kidnapping, rapes, and bad faith led to a massive response by the Powhatan under war chief Opencananough in 1622. The spiritual leaders of the Powhatan peoples, the **quiakros,** who also maintained the oral tradition, had chosen a war chief after the death

of Wahunsenaca because they were finally certain that the English intended to carry out genocide. The tribes had already experienced theft, betrayal, rapes, and wanton violence, including the kidnapping, rape, and poisoning of Matoaka and the murder of her husband, Kocoum. (See *The True Story of Pocahontas* by Angela Daniel and quiakros and Mattaponi Chief Linwood Custalow, M.D.) The quiakros showed John Rolfe how to cure tobacco. He used this technique to prepare West Indies tobacco for sale in Britain, finally giving a return to investors in the Jamestowne enterprise. **Benjamin Franklin** was born in 1706, the fifteenth of seventeen children. **Noah Webster** in 1806 published his compendium or **dictionary** of the American language, including common words, scientific terms and terms peculiar to American government. His published description of American government and his backroom conversations had influenced the Constitutional convention. After the loss by his party, the Federalists, to the Republican-democrats (Jefferson's party) in 1800, Webster publicly announced that he would write a dictionary. **Lewis and Clark** left Fort Clatsop on March 23 after spending the winter near the Columbia River (now Washington state). In 1906, **Theodore Roosevelt** pushed for the construction of the 135 mile long **Panama Canal**. He also signed the **Antiquities Act**, establishing eighteen **National Monuments**. Heiberg discovered of ***The Method,*** written by **Archimedes**. Dmitri **Shostakovich** was born**. Schweitzer** published his book on the design of **organs.** He wanted to preserve the old Baroque organs, considering them better than the new, factory-built organs of his time. He also enlarged his 1901 theological thesis, ***Von Reimarus zu Wrede*** and resigned as principal (*Principal Dozent)* of the theological college. The **San Francisco earthquake** on April 18 killed 450. **William James,** who was staying at a local hotel at the time, observed the behavior of people during the earthquake, noting how the disaster elicited compassion. After reading Verne's ***De la terre a la lune***, Herbert **Oberth's *Die Rockete suden Planetenraumen***. Werner **Von Braun** joined Oberth's group as a 15 year-old. He was reading Kurt Lasswitz's ***Auf Zwei Planeten*** and later wrote, "***I shall never forget how I devoured this novel with curiosity and excitement.***" This curiosity about going to the moon and other planets via rockets led to the Apollo program, via the Saturn rocket which he designed—and its predecessors, the V1 and V2, that rained destruction on London from **Peenemunde** during WWII, and that could have served as the delivery vehicle for a German A-bomb, if Hitler had taken the advice of some of his scientists. The **Bakerloo** line was laid down in London. In Atlanta there were race **Riots.** Winston **Churchill** became colonial undersecretary. **David Smith**, sculptor in iron and steel, was born in Indiana. **The Third Law of Thermodynamics** was stated. **Chromatography** was used to separate plant pigments. **The Food and Drug Act** was passed by Congress, inspired by Upton Sinclair's *The Jungle*. A **Rubber Substitute** was synthesized using an aniline accelerator. **Susan B. Anthony** at the age of 86 went to a women's suffrage rally in D.C. She said "***Failure is impossible.***" **Fessenden**, an early radio engineer with the BBC, transmitted voice and music. **Roger Kornberg** won the Nobel Prize in Chemistry in 2006. On May 6, the

Outer Loop span of the Woodrow **Wilson Bridge** was dedicated and opened to traffic, a $2.4B project when completed. **Wild chimpanzees** in West Africa and Cameroon were found to be reservoirs of a precursor of **HIV** (WP 060526). In June, **Microsoft Corporation** conducted a study of the 30 billion worldwide conversations on **MS Messenger** made by 180million users. It concluded that there are **Six Degrees of Freedom** between any two people on the network. This finding was later exaggerated to say that, regardless of language or Microsoft usage, there were six degrees of freedom between any two people on the planet. Meanwhile, many close neighbors continued warfare. On July 14, **Israel** blockaded and bombed **Lebanon** after Hezbollah entered Israel and kidnapped 2 soldiers on July 13. And **Hezbollah** claimed to be coming to the aid of Hamas in Palestine as it began to launch poorly-guided missiles into Israel. The **national temperature** for the first half of 2006 was 3.4° F greater than average for the 20th century. It was the warmest on record for the 48 contiguous states (T ave. =51.8F). On August 10, British police foiled a plot by **British Pakistani** youths against airliners going to the U.S. By September, the transformation of **Hecht**'s stores to **Macy's** was completed and all Hecht's signs were replaced throughout the D.C. area. On September 29, over 3500 **monarch butterflies** per hour gathered at Cape May, NJ for the 14 mile journey over Delaware Bay on their way south along the Gulf Coast to Georgia and Texas to roosts in the Yucatan, a trip of over 2000 miles. They were the 5th generation since their Mexican ancestors arrived in the US one year earlier. Since that time, all of the descendents except for this generation stayed in North America. Dragonflies and falcons also gathered at Cape May. At other times, bats, hawks and eagles also gather on this major flyway. The butterflies waited for neither a head-wind nor tail-wind, but a quartering wind, so that they could sail gently and swiftly over the water. This was the largest population to make the migration in many years. In mid-October the **U.S. POPULATION** reached 300,000,000. Meanwhile, the **world population** was 6.6 billion, with a growth rate of 1.2%. On October 13, Muhammed **Yunes** received the Nobel Peace Prize for the invention of **microfinance** through the **Grameen Bank** of Bangladesh. He was a professional economist but decided that what was needed to end poverty was not more economic studies but **microloans** to poor people, particularly women. He began with a personal loan of $27 to help a man pay off his creditors. The loan was soon repaid. Other microfinancial operations opened in Africa and South America as a result of his efforts, such as *Accion International*. The Grameen Bank soon had 6 Million borrowers and launched a cell phone business. On June 26, **Carolyn Kreiter** was nominated by the governor as **Poet Laureate of Virginia** until 2008. On October 15, Janet **Bingman** died at Alexandria Hospital. She was a member of Fairlington Presbyterian Church. She often talked loudly during the services, probably because she couldn't hear. Also in October, **North Korea** conducted an underground nuclear explosive device. Impending social implosion was thereby linked to impending physical explosion. Of the 12.5M **immigrants** in the USA, 7.5M were workers. Construction on a fence began along the

southern border. Corporations claimed that immigrants were willing to do what Americans would not do. What they did not say was that they were using immigrant workers to bring down pay-rates and increase profits. Wages declined 16% while corporate profits were 30% of **GDP,** the largest fraction of GDP ever recorded. Americans, particularly African-Americans, were simply pushed out of the concrete construction industry by the low pay-rates. This was at a time when construction jobs were in high demand. Decreased willingness to do work which has been purposely undervalued by management is not the same as refusal to do hard or dirty work. In this year, the United States currently produced 25% of the world's industrial **carbon dioxide emissions.** On November 7, the **Democratic Party took back House and Senate**. On November 20, the **Iraqi leaders met with Syrian leaders** and promised to meet with Iranian leaders. Meanwhile, the lame duck Congress debated about whether to send more or fewer troops and the Democrats under speaker Pelosi promised to spend their time on domestic issues, apparently deciding that saying they would act on Iraq was the same thing as doing so. On December 27, **Gerald Ford** died. He was the 38th president, born 1913, and became president August 9, saying, ***"I'm a Ford, not a Lincoln… We can disagree without being disagreeable.***" He didn't hold grudges because he didn't want anyone "***living in (his) head rent-free***." In December, 2 million pilgrims visited **Mecca. Goldman Sachs** $23 billion in bonuses to its employees. From 2000 to 2006, **3200 American soldiers** were killed and **10,600 homicides (mostly women)** were reported (<NY 20130722). (Many were not reported.) Social worker **Kelly Dunne**'s ***Domestic Violence High Risk Team* i**n Boston's Jeanne Geiger Crisis Center prevented local domestic homicides by making local agencies cooperate to combine data and attend immediately to situations ranking high on their **Danger Assessment Tool**, developed from the research of **Jaquelyn Campbell** at Johns Hopkins. Weighted factors in this rating tool were: substance abuse, gun ownership, record of violence, forced sex, threats to kill, choking, and chronic unemployment.

**Tidying up the loose ends of life? Forget it. All the statements one could make about the existence of even a single individual cannot be completed. We begin with gasps and cries and end with incomplete phrases. The only advice I can supply is to express the way I walked. Even though composed of highly probable events, however, the *Transects* make a verisimilitude. My incomplete phrases are not the way I walked. *But walk the path,* nonetheless.**

## Step 107

In January of 1907, **Virginia Irene Helm** traveled by train from Hickman to Paris, her first trip away from her home town. (Her letters and other letters of the family are collected in the Pogue Library of Murray State University.) On July 18, 2007, the day was hot and

and the sky thundering in Alexandria. In Norman, **Frank Rose** had a persistent lung infection. Dr. Merrill prescribed Cipro and Augmentin. **Ginny Bruch** was not eating or drinking and could not be persuaded to do so. On March 22, Bill Rose accompanied **Michelle McGrath** to the Henrico School Board Meeting, where she was honored as Henrico Art Teacher of the Year. The next day, Bill, Michelle and Matthew went to **Switzerland**.

Richard sent his mother a CD of country songs he had written for her because she was always asking him to compose music that *she* would like. It began with the one below, a waltz.

**Jo Evelyn's Boys**

"Won't you please dance with me now, Jo Evelyn?
It's midnight; they're all going home.
My company leaves in the morning
They say we'll be shipped to the Somme[1]."

And you've danced from Fort Worth to Waco
With every soldier but me
'Cause our first dance I said, "*Yo te amo*"
And you stopped and said that couldn't be.

Won't you please dance with me now, Jo Evelyn?
The years haven't mattered, you see;
After wars and close calls and five children[2],
You're still a quick step from me.

And we've danced from Fort Worth to Waco,
From Guam to East Tennessee.
Though you once stopped when I said, "*Yo te amo*"
You still gave the last dance to me.

Jo wasn't impressed. From April 12 to 20, Susie and Richard visited in **Oklahoma.** On the weekend of April 28-9, **Robert Rose** went through the closing procedures for the purchase of a house in Manassas, VA. **Katy Myers,** died on April 30 at the age of 61. She was a foreign language teacher and county specialist in Fauquier County. On September 26, **Rob Rose** accepted a new position as manager of developers at Brickfish in San Diego. One of the instructors with whom Richard worked as the lab coordinator for the science department at Marymount University in Arlington was **Nancy**

---

1 Totally untrue, but it makes a rhyme.

2 Not untrue in every sense. The five would be: me, Susan, Frank, Sam and Chris. And *Yo te amo* was what Richard heard Frank and Jo say to each other when they danced in the kitchen.

**Gartrell Schmit**, a classmate of Susie's in Alexandria schools. **BYA Dates:** By about 7 bya, the acceleration caused by the big bang was beginning to be restrained by gravity, which had been previously present as an inconsequentially weak force. **MYA Dates:** By 7.3 mya the **Gorillas**' family line separated from related species. Somewhat later (6.7mya, plus or minus 1.3 my), both common and bonobo forms of chimps plus the hominid ancestors separated from other apes. All of this group probably had white skin with dark fur, which protected it from ultraviolet light. A chimp-like bipedal primate lived in the area of Chad and Kenya. North-South **rift** zones extended 2000 miles from Egypt to Mozambique. These were significant **geographic barriers** for populations. **CE Dates** In 1507, **Waldseemuller's map** labeled the western land-mass "**America**." In 2007 the map was given by Germany to the National Archives in WDC. The map was published in a book by Schoner. It was the first rendering of America. In 1607, one hundred and four English settlers landed on May 14 at a site on the royal property of Virginia selected for fortifying the mouth of the James against the Spanish, founding **Jamestowne.** According to one of the many tall tales of Captain John Smith, Pocahontas saved him from sacrifice by the Powhatans , but according to the Mattaponi oral tradition, Smith met with paramount **Chief Wahunsenaca** of the Powhatan Nation at the secular capital, Werowocomoco on the Pamunkey (York ) River in Gloucester County and was made a **werowance,** or tribal chief of the English. Young Matoaka, daughter of Pocohontas, the deceased wife of Wahunsenaca, had nothing to do with it. As a werowance, Smith was given the right for his tribe to share the life of the Powhatan peoples, but Smith immediately violated the agreement. On August 22, 1607, **Bartholomew Gosnold** died. He had arranged to finance the expedition to Jamestowne after the failure of the Roanoke settlement. He led the expedition and designed the triangular fort. He was captain of the **Godspeed**, one of the three ships that reached the Virginia coastline in 1607. In 1707, Johann Sebastian **Bach** married Maria Barbara Bach, a cousin whom he had introduced into the Arnstadt choir. They left for Muhlhausen, a Calvinist town that condemned his elaborate anthems, although his ***God is my king*** anthem was recommended for publication. **The Act of Union** was signed between England and Scotland. **Mt. Fuji** (12,388 ft.) erupted. Tokyo, 70 miles away, was blanketed by ash. On February 23, 1807, **Wilberforce,** MP from Yorkshire, rose in the Commons to move for the end of the **slave trade.** In the same year, geologist and naturalist Louis Agassiz was born in Switzerland. Later he practiced science in America. **Robert Fulton** launched a steamboat, the *Clermont*, on the Hudson River and received an American patent. In 1907, George Noble Publishers at the Monon Building in Chicago printed ***The book of prayers for everybody and for all occasions*** in red Morocco binding for 35 cents. **Rachel Carson** was born. Ashburn and Craig discovered the virus of **dengue** fever. **Picasso** painted ***Les Demoiselles d'Avignon*** Alois Alzheimer first described Alzheimer's Disease. **Oklahoma** became a state on November 16, 1907. Washington's **Union Station** opened, designed by Chicago architect Daniel Burnham. In

2007, the **Bald Eagle** was removed from the Endangered Species List. In January and February, 74 million Hindu pilgrims bathed in the **holy Ganges**. Walter **Turnbull**, founder of the **Harlem Boys' Choir** died on March 24. On April 16 **Cho Seung-Hui**, a bipolar student, killed himself and 32 other students at **Virginia Tech. William A. Hazel** received the George Mason Medal for service to tGeorge Mason University. On April 29, 2007, **Rev. Thomas Reese** (editor of *America*, a Jesuit magazine)wrote "***This is a critical issue for our time:what is central to our faith; what can change; what can't?***" What he was talking about was the Vatican Panel's declaration that **limbo** is a "problematic" concept, one which Pope Benedict XVI when he was Cardinal Ratzinger said was a "theological hypothesis" that should be eliminated. Others saw it as still necessary to support the requirement of baptism for salvation, preferably baptism within 10 days of birth. Of course, without limbo perhaps Molnar would never have written ***Liliom***.. Then there would have been no film, no Waxman score, and no ***Carousel*** by Rogers and Hammerstein. Perhaps the tenet can tentatively be retained for its dramatic suggestiveness. Around May 6, a half-mile wide, **F5 tornado** moving at 205 mph destroyed everything in **Greensburg, Kansas** except for a bar and the grain elevators. It was the strongest tornado in the USA for 7 years. In May, the 400th anniversary of the founding of **Jamestowne** was celebrated. Queen Elizabeth, aged 81, visited the site on May 4, 2007. William Kelso showed off the excavations. The President went aboard a replica of the *Susan Constant*, and the final celebration occurred on the founding day, May 14, 2007. The next day, **Jerry Falwell**, leader of the "moral majority" that helped elect Ronald Reagan, president of Liberty University and pastor of Thomas Roads Baptist Church in Lynchburg, Virginia, died at 12:40 p.m. from a heart condition. He was 73 years old. In CONUS, there were 9500 breeding pairs of **bald eagles**. On May 8, a giant star system, **Eta Carinae** showed signs of soon becoming a supernova. It was expected to light the night sky and send dangerous radiation to Earth. On February 6, 2007, Life Sciences, Inc. in Branford CT presented **James Watson** a draft of his own genome. Produced by its *Next Generation Sequencing Machine*, the draft cost $200K and took 2 months, including 3 runs for verification and the reading 300M bases per day. During January and February, hundreds of Catholics visited **Medjugorje** in Bosnia, where Mary appeared "between the hills" to children in 1981. **Lady Bird Johnson** aged 94, died in July. She had been a leader in replacing highway dumps and billboards with flower beds; a promoter of Head Start; a founder of the NWF research center and the Wildflower center in TX; an important adviser to her husband, the POTUS, LBJ. On August 29, six AGM 129 missiles, armed with **nuclear warheads,** were overlooked by USAF transport officers and mistakenly loaded onto a B-52 at Minot AFB in North Dakota. They sat unguarded on the airfield and were subsequently flown to Barksdale AFB in LA with no one noticing for 36 hours. Each of them had the equivalent explosive power of 6 Hiroshima bombs. On September 27, **Lyndal Shaneyfelt**, the retired federal agent who lived down the hall from the Roses on the 5th Floor at Washington House, went to

Boylston Town in Boston, another retirement facility. **Richard Branson, Peter Gabriel,** and **Nelson Mandela** began the ***ELDERS***, a group of twelve including six Nobel Peace Prize winners and five former heads of state, which took stands on key issues such as opposition to child marriage. **Wally Shirra** died. He was the veteran of three early spaceflight programs, the third astronaut into outer space, and mission control director for later missions.

## Step 108

**O**n April 27**, 1908, Frances Catherine Van de Riet,** mother of **Kathleen Mary Schimpf**, was born in Teutopolis, IL to Anton and Rose Neyens Van de Riet, who had come originally from Dubuck, Holland to Iowa and then moved to Teutopolis, IL. Their children were: Mary (Sister Canisius), John, Helen (Mrs. Irwin), Frances (Mrs. Schimpf), Jerome (Jerry), Ann (Mrs. Kirk), Rita, Josephine (Josie), and Anthony (Tony) . Anne's husband, **Urban Kirk,** was born on April 20. Rita later married Eugene Appel. Their daughter was **Karen Appel Markl,** wife of Karl Markl, chemist for Anheuser-Busch in St. Louis, accordionist, and ukelele maker. Susie's sixteen year old second cousin, **Andrew Milheim**, the grandson of Gilbert and Mae Milheim, died on April 30, 2008 in Pennsylvania. On April 17, 2008, before traveling to Oklahoma, Richard left a letter to Bill and Rob in the apartment in the event that they "***didn't make it back safely from Oklahoma. We always love you and we're proud of you both. You made your mother and me proud to be your parents and I appreciated all the help you've given us to get our lives together after your Mama's illness. I also appreciate the help that you gave me on my various projects. The only one of them in finished form was Problems With Authority, which I've submitted without success to about 60 agents so far. The related writings and music are all either in planning or revision, including the musical plays already produced. Little of this matters now. There is a book of collected poems and a book called Finding A Purchase in addition to The Profit of Doom, and there's a Timeline. Insurance policies are in the safety deposit box at Fairlington Burke and Herbert. Keys are in my work bag. Estate includes a small TIAA-CREF, and AIG annuity, a checking account, a CD, and a large deposit paid to the Fountains, 90% of which is recoverable by our heirs (you). Walk softly on the Earth. We love you forever. Mama and Dad.***" The letter was never received. (The *Timeline* later became *The School Year*.) Returning sick from Oklahoma in a small plane, Susie woke briefly, looked at the clouds outside the plane, and smiled. A week later, on **May 13, 2008, Susan Irene Bruch Rose died.** After Susie's death, Richard wanted to do something about her life. He called it a reconstruction or restoration of how to think about her. That is, First, to remember her properly, not as an invalid. Second, to honor what she valued. Third, to complete the projects of imagination that she had evoked from him. In addition, he tried to put their affairs in order, remain presentable, and be of some use to himself and others while he awaited nature's verdict for his own life, still "owing a death," as Auden put it. No heroic measures--no appeals--were planned. On September 30, 2008, he signed the contracts and checks to establish the ***Susan Bruch Rose Memorial Endowment*** at the College of William and Mary, a scholarship for needy junior or senior students with declared majors in elementary education. At the end of the year, he sponsored a dance at

the Fairlington Presbyterian Church. **Matt Pritchard** led the dancers who had come to hear the salsa group. Richard watched. This was Susie's dance. She loved dancing and often remembered dancing with her Aunt Jo and Charlie Speed. She had studied ballet and modern dance. Richard wasn't much of a dancer--unlike his parents, whom he remembered dancing to Glenn Miller in the kitchen. He watched the dancers and thought about Susie. On October 16, **Frank L. Rose, Jr.** entered Norman General Hospital with a heart palpitations, weakness, and trouble walking. Jo Rose called **Gary Knight** to help him. **Nan Gullahorn**, first cousin of F.L. Rose, Jr., died. She was 3 months older. Her daughter was **Claire**. She lived in Hawaii. Nan's son was Jack Gullahorn. Susan Knight traveled to Texas for the funeral. She met **Melanie and Sharon Hart** (maiden names), the daughters of Marjorie and Marvin Hart. Marjorie was the daughter of Grace, a sister of **Frank L. Rose, Sr**. Richard remembered visiting the Harts and Aunt Grace in Ft. Worth. Marvin worked for Bell Telephone. On Monday, October 6, **Fred Morris** had ventricular tachycardia. His heart stopped for 11 seconds and then was re-started by the intra-cardial cardiac defibrillator. On November 5, the *Washington Post* headline was "**Obama makes history.**" How excited Susie would have been about this. On November 12, Richard began his **recording project** of music, working in the studio at **Convergence** (formerly the Fair Park Baptist Church) in Fairlington. He began with a revised version of ***Johanin,*** the work that Susie and he had put on in 1969. Susie used to read in the organ loft of the Kleber chapel while he worked on the score at the piano. A picture from the time showed her looking at the children's poster of Zechariah seeing the angels. After the performance, Richard hung the poster it in the bathroom of their apartment at 40 Nordbahnstrasse. They often talked about returning to Kaiserslautern. On December 1, **Ethel Beun** died. She was the kind and very active founder of many good works in Alexandria, including an operation that saved cats and found them good homes. Susie and Richard visited her shop several times. While Susie was still able to climb stairs, she would go to the second floor to sit in the special quarters for cats. The cats William, Mary, and Gregory all went to Ethel Beun. Only Elizabeth and Christina went with the Roses to the Fountains. **BYA Dates** About 8 bya,(7.5): **Stars** appeared in the light cone. Because she loved thinking about the stars and the space program, Richard registered a star in Susie's name with the International Star Registry for a gift in 1984. It was ***Coma Berenices Ra12h43m19sd19°5'***, a binary system in Virgo. A star in cold space has her name. (The registry papers for her great-grandmother were passed on to Laurel Suzanne Rose.) **MYA Dates** About 8mya (7.5), g**lobal temperature fell.** The Mediterranean fell as seas froze. North Africa cooled and became more forested while savannas spread southward. Drying increased. These conditions provided selective pressure for **bipedalism,** but although the stage was set, there were no human actors. So movements slowed, walking difficult, their aching hearts racing to overcome the cold. But the People walked.

***Not* to walk is to remain submerged in a troubled sleep of erratic interactions. Wake! The senseless torrent has become a placid lake. *Walk the path*.**

**BCE Dates:** 608 BCE **Egypt** subjugated Judah. **CE Dates** During the **Albigensian Crusade** of 1208**,** the pope sent a crusade to southern France. "***Kill them all. God will know his own,***" said a military field commander in Beziers in answer to a question about how to tell heretics from allies. In 1508, **Raphael** painted the ***Alba Madonna*** portrait. It was subsequently owned by the Spanish dukes of Alba, Czar Nicholas I, Stalin, and Andrew Mellon. **John Milton** was born in 1608. Captain **John Smith** mapped the eastern shore while traveling up the Potomac to the Piscataway village of **Moyaone**, a site continuously inhabited for 5000 years. (It is 15 miles south of D.C., on the shoreline.) In 1708, **Bernoulli** discovered that there were more overtones above the fundamental than previously realized. **Bach** transferred to the ducal court at Weimar, where he stayed 9 years. There he wrote the two toccatas and fugues in D minor, fantasia and fugue in G minor, preludes and fugues in C and G and *The Little Organ Book*. 1808 The Alexander mansion, "**Mount Ida**" was built on Russell Rd. on land bought from Lloyd. **Alexandria** was named for the owner. Births in 1808 included: **Jefferson Davis** and Honoré **Daumier**, the satirical lithographer. The Roses often looked at his statuettes displayed in the National Gallery built by Andrew Mellon, who in 1908, as the President of the Board of Trade, introduced the labor exchanges. **The Tungusta meteor** landed in Russia. In terms of TNT-explosive power, it was the equivalent of 10 million tons of blast effect. **Jersey City** chlorinated its water. **Edward Teller** was born in Hungary. Del Ray and St. Elmo merged in the **Town of Potomac**, and lighting was installed. Samuel Bush began the **Buckeye Steel** Company in Columbus, OH. This was the foundation of the family fortune that provided the stakes of several generations of politicians, including two presidents. On August 7, 1908 the **Venus of Willendorf** was found by a workman on the Danube site while the three archeologists were in town arguing over dinner. On August 13, a racial incident in **Springfield, Illinois**, led to **lynchings** and burnings, all based on the false claims of a woman, **Mrs. George Richardson**, who cried rape rather than admitting to adultery. Across the USA that year, 89 black residents were lynched. **Edgar L. Harris** graduated from the University of Oklahoma. He was the first AB graduate born in Oklahoma. In 2008, the world **population** was 6.6 Billion. Commentator **William Buckley** died. On June 23, twenty years after warning Congress about **global warming**, earth scientist **James Hansen** reported in a Congressional hearing that, since no progress had been made (since his 1988 hearing), the world had passed the tipping point, and that the best the USA could do would be to put a moratorium on the use of coal. The administration of George W. Bush had earlier attempted unsuccessfully to muzzle Hansen, a federal employee at NASA, Goddard. On September 10, 2008, the giant hadron collider at **CERN** finally was turned

on. In September, the Republican candidates were John **McCain** (P) and **Sarah Palin (**VP) and the Democratic candidates were Barack **Obama** and Joseph **Biden**. The **Lichtman/ Keilis-Brook** prediction was that the Democrats would win the popular election. (See WP 080825) Their analysis used 13 indicators and adapted principles used in predicting earthquakes. Their method successfully predicted the popular election's results for every presidential election for 120 years (1860-1980). The 4 main factors were: **(1)*whether the incumbent party's candidate won the presidential nomination on the first ballot with 2/3 delegate count. (2) the absence of a third party candidate with more than 5% overall vote, (3) the absence of a recession (4)the presence of a major policy victory in the previous term.*** The findings on each of these factors apparently favored Democrats despite all of the attention given by the media to other factors, such as **Sarah Palin's** popularity among conservative women. In July, **Claudia Chatham (Ippolito),** author of ***Late Wife*** (a Pulitzer prize winner for poetry), was nominated **Poet Laureate of Virginia** until 2010 by Governor Kaine. She followed **Carolyn Kreiter,** Richard's classmate in the doctoral program at George Mason University, who later worked with Chatham on a project for art in public spaces of the District of Columbia. She taught at Mary Washington University in Fredericksburg and was a contributing editor for *Shenandoah* magazine, one of the many magazines which rejected Richard Rose's submissions over the years. She later taught at VCU in Richmond in 2013. On October 28, **Kung The-Cheng**, the 77th lineal descendant of Confucius, died in Taiwan at the age of 88. He had fled the mainland in 1949. On Wednesday, November 5, **Barack Obama** was elected the nation's 44th president, becoming the first African-American president. The U.S. conducted 51 **drone attacks** in Pakistan, Yemen, and Somalia. Households with incomes <$13K spent 9% of income on **lottery** tickets.(*The Week* 4/13/2012) 8/31 **Citibank**'s bailout was $350 billion. **Don Alexander Hawkins** was interviewed by *Washington Post Magazine* about his descriptions, topographical renderings, and 3-D digital file of the Eastern Branch area of land framed by the Anacostia, Potomac, Rock Creek Rive and Tiber Creek before the **U.S. Capital City** was built on it. (Tiber Ck. is now the trunk sewer line running under Constitution Ave.)

**One need not be comprehensive to be convincing. When praying "Hallowed be thy name," I understand it to mean: "We know that you are not a person, place, or thing, but our ideas are limited by ignorance and misconceptions. We seek understandings that do not exaggerate our comprehension." Tentative patterns of understanding, like this path, are suited to our interactive natures. Certainty, like other definitive works, is moribund. *Walk the path.***

## Step 109

**Ervin Appel** was born on June 24, 1909. He later married Rita van de Riet. Among their children were Gene, Jackie, Karen, and another brother. Karen later married Carl Markl , a chemist for Busch, an accordionist and ukelele maker in St. Louis. On January 15, 2009, as he prepared to leave Alexandria, Richard moved The metal sculpture made by **William L. Rose** to a garden location at the Convergence Church in Alexandria, VA on Quaker Lane. On February 6 **Ike Hobson** died. He was the son of Auburn and Clysta. His siblings, Jack Atwell and Doris, predeceased him in 1979 and 2007. Both of Doris's husbands predeceased her. Doris, Betty, and Jack were Jo Rose's childhood friends. Jack lived at the end of Main Street in Smithville in the mansion of his maternal grandfather, the town judge. After being in the Army, he became sick and died in a Nashville hospital. On October 7 and 9, Richard's ***Marginal Notes Ensemble*** performed ***The Books of Daniel*** in Alexandria. Three of his cousins came to the performance. Two of them were **Celeste Helm Dickman,** a member of Christ Church in Alexandria and worked in government, **Paige Christy,** who lived in Ashland. These cousins were granddaughters of Eula Rose Hill, youngest sibling of Frank L. Rose, Sr. Her daughter was **Anne Hill Clerc,** who lived on Tazewell Avenue in Richlands, VA**.** and Ann's daughter was **Judy Wood**, author of the family genealogy, ***Louisiana Roses.*** Also at the performance was **Viki Hook,** niece of Kathleen Warner (later Rose) and two of her daughters. On October 10, Richard left Alexandria for Norman, OK. On November 25,2009, **Richard Rose and Kathleen Mary Warner were married** at the First Presbyterian Church in Norman, Oklahoma, by Dr. **Robert Rice**. Richard promised to *"**take you, Kathleen. To be your faithful husband, to love and serve you as Christ commands, as long as we both shall live***." To this, they added, in their letters, "***in beauty, inspiration, pleasure and patience.***" On December 10 **Richard** wrote, "***Now I have turned my plan on its head. In a risk-taking act of faith, I have married Kathleen—late in life, our histories notwithstanding, our futures uncertain. The conductor races to find his place in the score while the orchestra improvises a riff.***" Richard briefly attended a francophone group in Oklahoma City, led by **Étienne Pallady.** Another member was **Roger Brochu,** a competitive skater. Meanwhile, Olga Magalŷ Soberanis, or **Maggie**, cared for **Ginny Bruch** at the Fountains at Washington House in Alexandria. Kathleen and Richard attended church at **St. Thomas More** parish near the OU campus. Father **Jim Goins,** the priest at St. Thomas, later performed a marriage blessing for them in the presence of **Mick and Sue Hinton.** Other members of the church, **Al and Helen Patrick,** were friends of Frank and Jo Rose through retired military associations. **Debbie Rose,** separated from Phil Woodall, had moved to Mansfield, TX where she lived with Janelle Lawrence while working on her *"**place on the river**"* where she kept four horses. **CE Dates:** In 909 CE,the Benedictine Reform

began at **Cluny** Monastery. In 1009, the Egyptian caliph destroyed the **Holy Sepulchre.** In 1509, **Erasmus** wrote ***In Praise of Folly*** and John **Calvin** was born (d 1564). **Henry VIII** married his older brother Arthur's widow, Catherine of Aragon. (Subsequently, his wives were: Anne Boleyn, Jane Seymour, Anne of Clèves, Catherine Howard, and Catherine Parr.) In 1709, Dr. **Samuel Johnson** was born and **Christofori** introduced his piano. In 1809, **Wellington** defeated French in Spain, James **Madison** was president, Abraham **Lincoln** was born in Harding or Hodgensville, Ky. and **Beethoven** received an annuity of 4000 florins from Archduke Rudolf and Princes Lobkowitz and Kensky. In 1909, William **Gladstone** was born, **Goyathlay** (Geronimo) died, E.M. **Forster** wrote *The Machine Stops,* Paul **Ehrlich** used Salvarsan, the magic bullet, to treat syphilis, and Mitchell Jenkins set up the **Rice Experiment Station** for the US Department of Agriculture and Louisiana State University in Crowley, LA. Over his 38 years at the station, the station handled 10,000 rice samples in 5000 varieties from every rice producing nation in the world, initially looking for varieties beyond the Carolina White, Carolina Gold, and Japanese rice types used up to that time. Jenkins said the soil of the area was "***light like flour wheat crushed up dry, and slick as greased lightning when wet, known as Crowley silt-loam***." **Sol Wright,** the "Burbank of the rice industry" introduced **Blue Rose** strain in 1912. It was more than half the crop by 1934. Also in 1909, **Admiral Peary**, Matt Henson and four Inuits reached the North Pole. The **NAACP** was founded. The Tories in the House of Lords voted down the Liberal budget, called the "**People's budget**." The Liberals sought to pass an Act to limit the power of the Lords. On February 17, 2009 TV Broadcasts switched from analog, over-the-air signals to **digital signals**, disabling all TVs that had relied on antennas for transmissions. In June, starting in Mexico, the Swine **H1N1** flu, a mutated form of the 1918 Spanish virus, infected 30,000 people in 74 countries. Five **work stoppages** occurred to improve working conditions, but after 30 years of increasing corporate influence in the U.S., the labor movement had sharply declined. **Lawrence Summers** defeated the recommendation of **Christina Romer**, adviser to President Obama, for a larger stimulus package. **Timothy Geithner** opposed both **Sheila Bair**, Chairwoman of the FDIC, and **Elizabeth Warren,** chairwoman of the Congressional Panel overseeing bail-outs. Despite their actions to decrease regulation of derivatives and their mistakes afterward, "***Mr. (Robert) Rubin and his circle—including Mr. Summers; Timothy Geithner, Mr. Obama's first Treasury secretary; and Gene Sperling . . . have dominated economic decisions in both the Clinton and Obama administrations. Most of them were also prominent in Wall Street circles in the George W. Bush years. In the wake of the financial crisis and the Dodd-Frank reform law, the Fed chairmanship has only become more central to the fate of the banks and economy; as a result, they want someone who shares their background and can be counted on to further their views. Ms. (Janet) Yellen (Vice Chairwoman of the Federal Reserve Board of Governors) is***

***not that person, not only, or even mainly because of policy differences but because she is not part of the fraternity.***" (<NYT 20130730)

## Step 110

**Frank (Franz) William Schimpf** was born on March 3, 1910 in Chicago to Eva and William (Wilhelm). **Margreta (Greta) Schimpf** died on July 28. Birth of **Ignatius Jerome (Jerry) Van de Riet** on July 21. On January 17, 2010, **Richard Rose** and **Kathleen Warner** had a wedding reception for Chicago friends and family at Kathleen's bungalow on Richmond St. Those invited were: Dr. Tim Lestingi and his wife Mary Jo & children Anna, Andrew, Katherine, met when Kathleen worked in the dental office of Dr. Murray and later when she was nanny; Gary and Ann Singer and their children Jack, Graham, and Elizabeth, for whom Kathleen was a nanny; neighbors Susanna, a writer and English teacher, and Cappy Lange; Denny and Jane Crosse, Kathleen's sister, and daughter Catherine; Laura, Kathleen's niece, Taina, and Emilio Serrano,: Louis, Kathleen's friend, and Laura Aquila; Teresa, Kathleen's friend, & Philip Wright and daughter Maia; former employer, Chiropractor, Lori Portnoy & her friend Patrick; Chris & Mirtha Toomey with twins Michael and Christine, also neighbors; Katherine & Ken Knops, met in Italy; Jamie & Simone Didier, neighbors; Bern Krebs and his sister Karen, a neighbor whose mother Kathleen was nursing; Greg and Michel Montezon, also neighbors; John & Diana Campbell, a yoga teacher and patient of Portnoy's; Barbara Lammiman, Kathleen's friend from when she worked at Bittersweet; Jimmy and Judy Contino, Kathleen's employers at Bittersweet; Jim & Cindy Rheingruber, Kathleen's niece, with Paul and Katie; Michal Kelly, another chiropractor friend; Dan & Donora Westergaärd, family friends of Kathleen and Jerry Warner; Tricia Gohman, another former Warner family friend who lived in AZ; Karen, Kathleen's niece; Cathleen Schandelmeier-Bartels, a writer, also met at Portnoy's; Lee-Ann, a former roomer of Kathleen's who moved to CA; Patricia, another neighbor; and Kathleen's nephew, Patrick Rutter, and his friend, Lisa Schroeder. Not all attended. Next day, **Kathleen and Richard** visited **Marty and Fran Buscemi**, 89 and 85 years old, respectively. They had known **Mary Guldi Schimpf**, who would often sew for them in exchange for Marty's help around the house. During the Depression, Fran's mother shelled pecans for 5 cents and hour and their income was $12/ month. Marty fought with **MacArthur** when he returned to the Philippines. He was also at the **Battle of Leyte**. Also in 2010, Richard and Kathleen saw the ballet *Giselle* on February 6 at the **Oklahoma City** Civic Center. **Ann Van de Riet Kirk** (Mrs. Urban Kirk) died on October 14, 2010 and was buried four days later at Resurrection Cemetery, St. Louis. Also that year, Kathleen's sister, **Audrey Johnson,** died, leaving her husband John and two daughters, **Kiri** and **Vicky (Vicky Johnson Hook).** On February 27 at 4:25 p.m., **Paul Warner** and Richard experienced a seismic tremor as they sat in the living room of the apartment in Norman, OK. The area around Norman became noted for tremors, particularly in 2015, as **fracking** became more

common. Of course, the oil companies had long prepared for doing these difficult extractions, as explained by Peter Smolka, a retiree living at the Fountains in 2006, who had been chemist and patent attorney and worked on obtaining the mineral rights for an oil company in Canada in the early 1950s. On March 23, 2010, **Frank Rose** began monoclonal antibody (Rituxan) treatment against a large abdominal lymphoma, which was discovered by the nurse practitioner when Richard took his father to the doctor's office and insisted that someone see him. Frank received a get-well card from the **Spencers** in Paul's Valley. (Grandchildren of Carol Fletcher: Christy, Robert, Kenzie, Taylor and Abby Spencer at 27256 E. County Rd. 1550 Paul's Valley, OK 73075.) On April 12, returning to Norman from Chicago, **Richard** drove from to Osceola, Iowa, where he stayed at the **Evergreen Inn**. On July 17, 2010, **William L. Rose married Jennifer S. Goldberger** in Richmond's Train Depot. On hand were her siblings, **Shana** and **Josh (**who married in 2013), grandmother **Laura Goldberger,** her father and mother, **Steven and Diane** (divorced since 2002. Her companion was Bede. His is Lee-Anne.), Steven's brother **Jeffrey G.** and his wife, **Jackie** (who has a daughter with leukemia), Laura's sister, **Rhoda Semer** and her husband **Bob Brickman** (Their son, Richard S. was injured in a motorcycle accident and was a quadriplegic.), Rhoda's daughter, **Robin S. Lam** and her husband, **Bill** Lam (a history teacher. The Lams were from Chicago in Pilsen. Bill is active in the union; teaches at a school with a large number of Mexican students.), her brother **Neal Semer** (a highly respected voice teacher), **Diego** (Robin's grandson. Her son was Rob, a civil engineer.), and Rhoda's daughter **Eileen** (a graduate *summa cum laude*), and friends (Rob's friend Karisse Green, Bill's friends Christiana Roberts, Kendall, Ben, Keith Jensen from Fauquier, Alex and Alla Shay, Keith from Rosewood St., Greg, Roger York, Ben and Steve.)On **September 28, 2010**, after treatment had been discontinued, **Frank Rose** passed away at the age of 90 years at home in Norman, OK at 9:30 a.m. On November 26, **Richard and Kathleen** stayed in Richmond for the Thanksgiving holiday at the Holiday Inn Express on 201 East Cary Street and visited with **Bill and Jennifer** on Rosewood Ave. In December, **Cecil Simmons Boyce** wrote a Christmas letter to friends and family: ***Pricilla Oglevie, marketing manager of my home, Lakewood Village Retirement Center (5100 Randol Mill Rd. Apt 1117 Ft. Worth, TX 76112), asked my friends, Jody (93 years old), Allee (87 years old), Kay (70 years old), Thelma (83 years old), and me to pose for the cover of Metro Woman Magazine . . . distributed to businesses in the metroplex. The small picture in the magazine shows (us) performing in Lakewood's talent show. We were the Supremes, lip sinking (sic) "Stop in the name of Love." Do you remember Carmen Miranda? I had already decided to be her for our Halloween part when Jody brought an article from the Fort Worth Star Telegram, announcing a costume contest. The rules stated the costume had to be made out of bed sheets. Jody thought it would be a good idea for my niece, Debbie, and me to enter. We entered and the picture tells "the rest of the story."*** **In an attached note to Jo Rose, she wrote:** ***Hope this finds you doing well. Debbie said you now have a walker. Hope you like it. I love mine. It was so nice seeing you again and being in your home. . ."*** **KYA Dates:** About 105kya *Homo*

*sapiens* at the **Ngalue Cave** of Mozambique were eating **sorghum**. The cave is made of Proterozoic carbonate 1300 m above sea level with a 20m corridor, height 8m, and space about 50 $m^2$ in area. Quartz artifacts indicated that the cave was occupied by human beings for over 105 to 42 kya. Objects left behind included scrapers, grinders, points, flakes, cleavers, microliths with evidence of sorghum and false banana (*Ensete*), African potato (*Hypoxis)*, and beans (*Delonix*).(Sci 12/18/2009). 100 *Homo sapiens* in Africa still used the Neanderthal and Ergaster **tool kits**. Modern-looking hunter-gatherers, perhaps hemmed in by the other hominins, were common and showed modern **brain/body** ratios. **Worldwide cooling** due to the extreme eccentricity of Earth's orbit, was superimposed over the cyclical patterns of a rocking axis and the wobble of precession. **BCE Dates** Around 1000 BCE the Mexican stone with the **earliest writing** in the Americas was created(SN 170:79). In Britain, the **river valleys** were intensively cultivated as cooling, greater rainfall, and erosion made the uplands unsuitable. **CE Dates:** The *Book of John* was written in 110 CE. In 410 the **Visigoths** sacked Rome. Visigoths apparently also invented **bull fighting.** In 1610 **Galileo** wrote *The Starry Messenger* concerning four of the 58 moons of Jupiter. The largest moon is Ganymede, 3720 miles diameter. He drew phases of Venus to show that it orbited the sun. The first group of **Scots** went to **Ulster** to take advantage of the plantation shares offered by the King. The Lowlands of Scotland were a good place to leave. It was said that if Cain had been a Scot his best punishment would have been banishment to where he already lived. The **second migration** of the **Ulster Scots** began in 1710. They left for the American colonies. "***And we'll join in jubilation for the thing that we are not. For we say we aren't Irish, and God knows we aren't Scot."*** ( from the *Lament of the Scotch Irish Exile* by Calvin Brannigan). Between 1717 and 1775, over 250,000 Ulster Scots migrated to America, almost all of them Presbyterians. 1810 **Gay Lussac** wrote the equation for fermentation. The town of **McMinnville**, Tennessee was chartered in Warren County. It had been recently subdivided from White County. State Representative Hill, the first representative, had the town named after his political friend, Senator McMinn. In 1910, **Pancho Villa** sought the presidency of Mexico. An oil fire raged through the **Evangeline oil field.** Washington, D.C. received its first Japanese **cherry trees** while Taft was president. They were diseased and died. **King Edward** died in Great Britain. **Japan** captured **Korea**. On March 22 , 1910, the Waco Campus of **TCU** had a fire in the main building, which had housed offices, labs, library, business school, chapel, classrooms, and residences. Following this disaster, the trustees decided to relocate the campus to Fort Worth, TX. There were two **Parliamentary elections** in Great Britain, the only time this has occurred. As Governor of New Jersey, after being president of Princeton University, **Woodrow Wilson** embraced **progressivism**, to the chagrin of some of his political supporters. He favored **worker compensation, popular election of senators, regulation of utility companies, no literacy tests or other onerous requirements for immigrants, creation of a Federal Reserve, and non-intervention abroad.** On January 12, 2010, the

**earthquake in Haiti** killed 200,000 people. Another 200,000 left Port au Prince and 400,000 moved into a tent city**.** On January 30, 2010 the most distant **galaxies** so far discovered were found to be 13.2 billion light years from Earth. On March 13, **tobacco** products of many brands were found to contain insect-borne bacteria which led to respiratory disease. On Feb. 27, there was an **earthquake in Chile** (8.5R). **Snowfall** in the Washington, D.C. region was **55"** by February 18. This was almost more than the annual total for earlier years, such as 1984. One day's snowfall of 2010 measured more than 2 feet. Also in February, a great mudslide after rains in **Angangueo, Mexico** drove residents out of the area and destroyed a large piece of the winter habitat for **Monarch butterflies**. Writer **Patrick Welsh,** a teacher at T.C. Williams H.S., along with other teachers under Superintendent Morton Sherman, was required to write an "**essential question**" on the board for every class, to start class with an "**activator activity**," and to end class with a **recap** in which students told what they'd been told. These measures were intended to address the issue of low achievement. Presumably this issue was also addressed by the Harvard consultant who was paid $10,000 to have students rate teachers on his "seven Cs" (**care, control, clarify, challenge, captivate, confer, and consolidate**) and by the 74 items on Alexandria's Curriculum Implementation Data Collection List, used to evaluate teachers. Welsh was puzzled. On March 21, Congress passed a **Health Care Reform** bill. Direct **medical costs** in the U.S. for various diseases: Dementias $109B, Heart D. $102B, Cancers $72B. **Hearing loss** in teenagers rose 33% compared to the 1990s. On December 18, 2010, **the bones of LUCY,** early hominid re-assessed, based on a find of a 3.6 million year-old male skeleton of the same species (*Australopithecus afarensis*) which had erect posture and human gait and possibly used stone tools for butchering. In September, **PFOA,** a stain-preventative fabric coating used on furniture, carpets, and popcorn bags, was found to damage the thyroid gland. In April, President **Leck Kaczynski** and other Polish leaders died in a plane crash as they landed in Russia on a trip to commemorate the Massacre of **Katyn. On April 20, 2010,** The **Deep Water Horizon** oil rig spilled into the Gulf of Mexico at 65,000 barrels daily for 12 weeks, releasing more than 5 million barrels in all. A report on August 5 mentioned **White nose syndrome spread** in hibernating brown bats. In April, a **super heavy element** with 117 protons was produced for less than a second by colliding Calcium -48 and Berkelium-249. Rutgers student **Tyler Clementi** leaped off the George Washington Bridge after his roommate and another student web-cast his homosexual encounter. Wealthy individuals from the financial services sector contributed $**178.2million** to political campaigns. A CDC Study of female American teenagers (N=5000 *mothers*) found 50% to have had **intercourse** without contraception and of 33% of that group to believe that they would not become pregnant despite lack of protection. A study of the new strain of **tuberculosis** set worldwide yearly mortality at 1.5 million. This drug resistant strain from India affected 33% of those with TB. Of those infected, 10% had active TB and each contagious survivor infected 20 more people yearly. Charles

Murray's *The State of White America 1960-2010* described the **schism** between super-elites ("Belmont") and others ("Fishtown"). On April 5, **Phthalates** in packages and plastics were found to affect the brains of children. On June 20, 2010, **Sarah Marquis** was 38 years old. To celebrate, she began another long walk, this time from Irkutsk, Siberia, through China, Laos, Thailand, and back to her favorite tree, a misshapen Western myall tree on the Nullarbor Plain of Australia. On August 14, 2010, a fresh meteoritic **impact crater** was discovered in SW Egypt by using Google Earth. It is a few thousand years old and 45 meters across. The Citarum River of West **Java** was completely blocked and contaminated by trash and waste from 500 factories and millions of residents. Local people mined it for items to sell or recycle. On August 28, **Bisphenol A** was found in cash register receipts as well as plastics. As an estrogen-like substance, it presented a particular hazard to children. It also was associated with diabetes and heart problems. The **Jobs March** on Washington was in October. **Billy Taylor** died. He was a pianist and educator who composed over 350 songs, such as *I wish I knew how it would feel to be free.* **The Cumberland River** flooded Nashville in May. **Edwin Gulick** died. He was a farmer and local leader in Fauquier County, serving on school board, conservation district, and helping Richard Rose to found the **Fauquier Outdoor Education Association** by serving on the first Board of Directors. On December 29, **Youngstown,** OH had a 4.0 R earthquake, the eleventh tremblor of the year. A government report afterward found strong evidence that it was due to hydraulic fractioning or **fracking** for natural gas (itt). **Droughts** were responsible for decreased uptake of carbon dioxide by the world's forests. When the heat wave killed so many people in **Russia**, the July temperatures were 14º above normal, reducing crop yield from 100 megatons to 60 megatons. As **Lester Brown**, author of *World on the Edge*, explained, a similar event in the American Midwest would cost 160 megatons, lead to soaring prices, tariffs, bartering, loss of confidence in markets, financial disruptions and famines. **Philip Shepherd** published ***New Self, New World:***

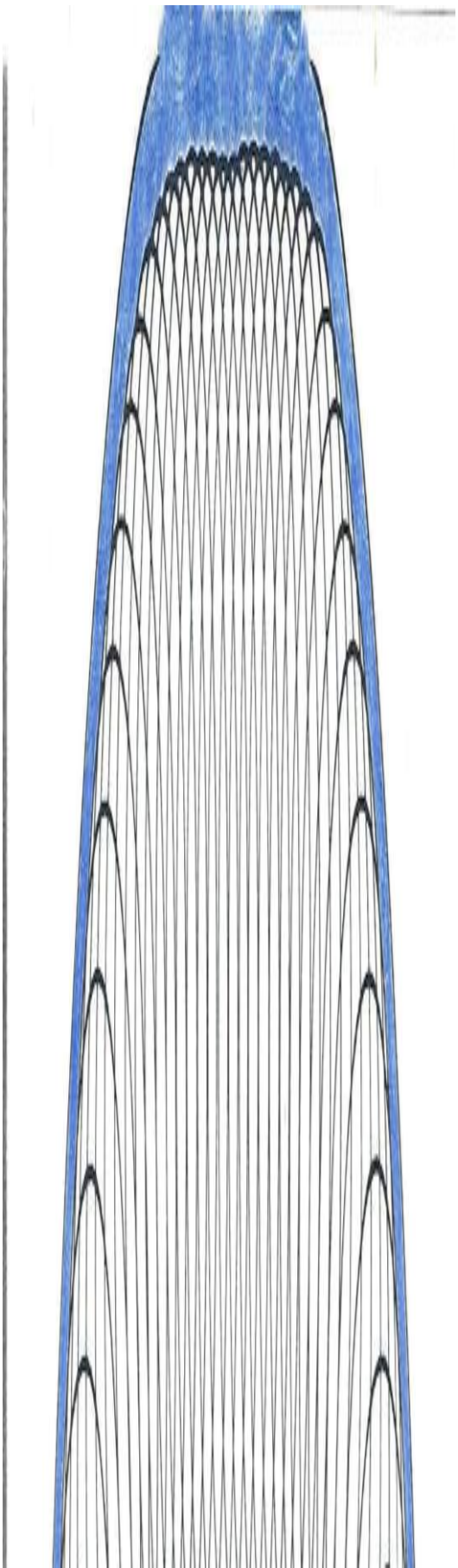
. . . ***the entire path of our personal journey is shaped by a tug-of-war between our desire to forget and our desire to remember. Our desire for remembering moves us forward into being, and our desire for forgetfulness mires us in dissociated ideas unprocessed emotions, and an endarkened core. That desire shows up as a need to withdraw into isolation and join the sleepers of whom Heraclitus wrote. Maintaining forgetfulness requires a steady drip-feed of sheer distraction, and our culture devotes itself to that. . .***

***—Philip Shepherd***

**Step 111**

In 1911, **Charles Gage** went to Oklahoma City with his mother to see the sights. On October 9, **Bonnie Mona Blassingame** was born to George and Ida Blassingame in Sherman, TX. She attended school in Dale and Shawnee, OK; married **Jesse Lee Smith** in Lincoln Co., 1936; lived in Kermit, TX and came to Norman in 1952, where she worked at Norman Regional Hospital as a licensed practical nurse until 1973. She was a member of the Berry Rd. Baptist Church. Her husband died in 1977. Her sons were Gary, Lanny, and **Roger Lee Smith**. In 2011, **Richard** privately published ***Frameshifts***, a book of interconnected stories and poems, which was included ***The Profit of Doom***, the work he had started in 1968. In a journal, he wrote, ***"I am a system of relationships rather than a separate entity. Each of the ten roles is a relationship."*** (The ten roles by which he conducted his time "*as a mental ensemble"* were: Giver, Producer, Student, Trainer, Expediter, Editor, Religious, Manager, Engineer, & Promoter. This was the last of innumerable "systems" or "daily offices" of self-maintenance and renewal which he had developed since about 1961.) On July 7 at about 9:00 p.m., Richard watched great circles of bats rising from the roof and swooping over the ball field behind Thomas Jefferson High School, near the apartment on West Grace St. in Richmond where he lived with Kathleen. **Truman Lyons Rose was born on November 10**. **Ginny Bruch** left the Fountains and moved in with Hector and **Maggie Soberanis** in Manassas. In one day, her furniture and cat were moved into the apartment which Hector had prepared. **BCE Dates** In 1100, the **Philistines**, early Palestinians under Ammon, invaded Canaan. **Olmecs** built pyramids and giant sculptured heads. The **Bronze** age in Europe followed the discovery that a 9:1 ratio of copper to tin made a stronger metal. Some of the best sources of tin were in Britain. **CE Dates:** In 1611 The **King James Bible** was published. The **Ratcliffe Highway murders** occurred in London in 1811. An **earthquake near St. Louis** changed the course of the Mississippi. In Libya, the Italian army became the first to use **aircraft as weapons** in 1911. **Schweitzer**'s first study of Paul was published: ***Geschichte der Paulinischen Forschung*** (trans. 1912). Gustav **Mahler** died in his last position, Conductor of the New York Philharmonic. **George V** created enough Liberal peers to pass the **Parliament Bill**, which eliminated the absolute veto of the Lords and reduced parliamentary terms from seven to five years. William Hull Dauntesey died at **Agecroft**, the last of the family to reside there permanently. Ownership passed to his daughter, Elizabeth Hull Dauntesey. Two years later, the coal mines close to the walls of the house undermined its foundation. On February 14, **Hugh Hamilton** sent the following message from Warrenton to Capt. Bowles E. Armistead in Upperville, both towns in Fauquier County, VA: "***Dear Capt. Armistead, Won't you kindly send me a list of any omitted capitations (1910) of persons who became of age after February 1, 1910, and whether any of the above were changed on your book of 1910. In sending names please say whether they are omitted capitations or became of age after Feb.1, 1910. Yours truly, Hugh Hamilton."*** In 2011, the **West Fertilizer Company** near Waco, TX paid a fine for poor safety conditions and informed the EPA that it didn't need sprinklers, blast walls, fire walls or other safety

measures because it was not making flammable materials. But it stored ammonium nitrate. In February, Wisconsin Democratic activists began a petition drive to remove Governor **Scott Walker** from office after his actions against unions. **Simpson & Bowles** pressed for a commission to report on tax code reform and deficit reduction. On October 9, 2011, the Egyptian army killed 24 **Coptic** Christians. Government-sponsored **Banacol** in Colombia was the largest of **Chiquita's** banana suppliers because a 2004 contract had guaranteed Chiquita 11 million crates yearly. On May 3, 2011 Derrick Jensen, Lierre Keith, and Aric McBay published **Deep Green Resistance** to advocate "decisive ecological warfare" to hasten the end of civilization, reduce the population, and return humans to a "balanced" hunter-gatherer existence. There were 1625 **tornadoes** in the U.S. while monsoons and record floods occurred from January to September in cities, high temperature records were broken, and the record highs from 2000-2009 outnumbered previous records from the 1950s by 2 to 1. Higher temperatures led to higher risk of very powerful storms, especially hurricanes and gales. Energy released from **Japan's 9.0 R earthquake** moved the Earth's axis 6.5 inches and moved Japan 12 feet closer to the U.S. The **Sun** seemed to go into a dormant period of decreasing magnetic field, sunspots and radiation to the Earth. An intra-plate earthquake on August 23, 2011 at 5.8R occurred in Louisa County. Its epicenter was near **Mineral**, VA. Structural damage occurred in Mineral, in Fauquier County at the John Marshall Building, and in Washington, D.C. at the Washington Monument. It was the strongest quake East of the Mississippi since one in Giles County in the nineteenth century. From August 27 to 28, **Hurricane Irene** passed through Virginia, downing trees in Richmond and Fauquier County.



***Contemplez le sentier. On en voit  mon esprit.***

## The Fellowship of the Attentive

"In wide circles around the Two Trees, a few pilgrims were already walking slowly to the music. Hank Randall stood between the trees. He noticed Irene sitting with her back against a stone outcrop as she watched the group from a distance. When everyone had joined the procession, he began the litany of the ritual.

**Leader:** Everything perished. Now the world is gone.
**People**: Why do I still live?
**Leader:** Shall I embrace it—the Earth, the Ark?
**People:** None, without All, lives.
**Leader:** Skin quilting Earth, we, bits of all in each,
**People:** We suffice, refill
**Leader:** Emptiness, grieving, needs, with worship songs,
**People:** And Objects ours, not creeds'.
**Leader:** Ignorance lost us all the world we knew.
**People:** Wisdom restores us, each to each, anew.

After the litany was repeated twice, the group continued circling the mound to the processional music until dawn; then the pair of quaking aspens that Hank had brought to this spot from Santa Fe caught the light. As the mound turned fully toward the sun, the joined crowns of the trees blazed white, the wind rippling through their flickering green-silver leaves with a soft brushing sound. Hank recited the closing words of the procession:

**Leader:** As this crown of leaves is made from two, so are we each made from many.
**People:** And none survives without all.
**Leader:** As the many leaves all face the sun, so may we face our lives.
**People:** And turn from wanting what we do not need.
**Together:** And live by loving, not by creed, and love by inquiry and skill and fearless wonder, not blind will . . .
**Leader:** So may we, like this double-crown, grow bright, listening to winds, leaves, birds, and even stone tell us their stories, as needful as our own.
**People:** Amen."

(Adapted from the Processional ritual of the Salvage group in the second volume of *Frameshifts*, page 203.)

## Step 112

**Jack Sparks** was born in 1912**.** In McMinnville, **Frank and Grady Towles** played horns in the 12-piece Kid Band, the only instrumental ensemble available for special occasions in McMinnville.**Anna Elizabeth Rosemary Van de Riet** (Aunt Ann) was born on May 21. In 2012, **Mark Clayton Smith,** grandson of Orville and Carol Fletcher, died in Midland, Texas. **Virginia Irene Bruch (Ginny) died on May 5** at the age of almost 90, her birthday being May 26, at the home of Hector and **Maggie Soberanis** (9714 Copeland Dr. Manassas, VA 20109). Cause of death was cardiopulmonary arrest due to failure to thrive and hypertension, according to Dr. Patricia Ladison. Her last occupation was librarian for the U.S. Army. When **Richard and Kathleen** stayed with **Gladys Milheim** in the spring of 2012, several weeks after the funeral of **Virginia Bruch**, she offered grace at dinner: "***Thank you for the world so sweet . .*** *."* It was the same prayer which Jo Rose had taught Richard. **Rosemary Schimpf Lapinski,** sister of Kathleen Mary Rose, also died in 2012. **Giuliana Rose Smith** was born to Frank and Kimberly S. in El Reno, OK. On November 19, **Richard & Kathleen** to the Dale Chihuly Exhibit at the Richmond Museum of Fine Arts. One room, the 1995 work called *Laguna Torcello,* was filled with an island of multi-colored glass objects. They returned several times before the exhibition ended. On April 4, after a brief and unsatisfactory visit to the *Saveur Restaurant,* **Kathleen** waited in the car while **Richard** crossed the street from the parking lot to the Bataan Memorial. A woman going into the restaurant screamed at him. She hadn't seen Kathleen and was sure that he didn't know that parking was only for customers. Later, they ate at the India Palace Restaurant, where Ganesha sat near the doorway removing obstacles. **Richard and Kathleen** met **Dr. Frank Mullinax,** a retired professor of medicine and rheumatology researcher from the Medical College of Virginia at the monthly ***Dances of Universal Peace*** at the Friends Meeting House on Commonwealth Ave. Frank looked like Frank Rose. He always raised both hands in greeting, loved to sing and dance, and had a sign on his car: ***Risk Peace.*** He passed away in January of 2015 at the age of 83. Hunting for a leak from the upstairs apartment on October 4, 2012, two plumbers cut into the Roses' bathroom wall in Richmond, neglecting the fact that a leak in the wall must have come from the second floor given water's insistence on going downhill. On October 6, **John Gornall,** at 90 years of age was still living in Georgia and driving independently, but he moved to a more closely supervised apartment in his independent living building. **MYA Dates** About 12mya, **Penguins** migrated from the increasingly colder Antarctic continent. These migrations may have begun as early as 16mya. They resulted in populational divergences leading to new species of penguins. **KYA Dates:** About 12kya, the **cave paintings** of ancient peoples gave way to engravings on **megaliths** in stone circles. These were initially carved

using flint tools, as at an ancient huge site in Turkey where many stone circles were found. It is near the **center of origin for wheat**. Circles with 13, 26 or 52 post holes/ stones were ancient calendars. Some like the great and smaller circles at Stonehenge, which were built much later (and which took at least 30 million man-hours to build) reconciled the lunar and solar **calendars.** The efficiency of agriculture depended upon accurate calendars. The site in Turkey was the apparent destination of many pilgrims during the early Neolithic period. Changes in culture, technology, arts and religion were interdependent. In **midwestern** North America, the future lake plain was being deposited sixty feet below the surface of **Lake Chicago,** as the glacial lake slowly drained away. **BCE Dates:** In about 1200 BCE, **Joshua** led the Israelites into Canaan after the **Exodus** in 1240 BC under **Moses** when **Ramses II** ruled Egypt. Then in 1150 BCE the Hebrew tribes became a **federation.** Throughout **Britain** the summers grew cooler and precipitation increased. The trend continued for 200 years. Hill forts of chieftains also increased over this period. **Archimedes** of Syracuse died in 212 BCE. He was author of ***The Method***, which explained his thinking on the solution of the area of a circle by successive **integral** approximations using external and internal polygons. He was thinking in terms of calculus centuries ahead of Leibniz, Newton, and Babbage, which reduces their feud about idea-theft and fraud to a minor quibble. Unfortunately Archimedes' book during the Middle Ages was used as a palimpsest and turned into a prayer book. It was accidentally discovered. In 1957, **Robert Merton**, the sociologist, explained that the renowned innovators and discoverers of ideas were usually at least the second or third to have had the idea and that break-throughs were usually made by different people working independently in different places. **CEDates:** In 312 CE **Anthony** went into the Egyptian desert near Thebes. In 712 CE, Islamic armies reached the middle of **Spain.** In 1512, the **Mary Rose,** the flagship of the fleet of Henry VIII, led the English fleet into battle against the French. In 1612, **Matoaka** left the village of **Werowocomoco**, seat of the Algonquian chieftain, Powhatan, her father, for Jamestown, where she converted and married John Rolfe in 1613, and had one son. Werowocomoco was on the York River in Gloucester County, its unearthed remains now on the farm of Bob and Lynn Ripley. This was the story told by the English, who made Pocohontas a kind of romance heroine. The Mattaponi account, orally preserved by generations of the ***quiakros*** story-teller-shaman-chiefs, explains that Rolfe and others were putting pressure on Chief Wahunsenaca to get food, information about curing tobacco, and protection from attack in response to the aggressive attacks, thefts and rapes by the colonists. They applied pressure by kidnapping of his daughter, killing her husband, and subsequently using her to promote their tobacco enterprise in Great Britain. (See Chief Custalow's *The Real Story of Pocohontas.)* In 1712, the **Industrial Revolution** began when **Newcomb** invented a steam-driven water pump to clear coal mines to increase coal production per unit time. **Jane Franklin** was born on March 27, the youngest of the 17 children of Josiah and Abiah Franklin of Boston. In 1812,**Louisiana** became a state on April 30, 1812. The

British occupied **Tangier Island** in Chesapeake Bay in preparation for invading Baltimore. Parson **Joshua Thomas** of Tangier told them that the God of Hosts was not with them (Starling, p. 92). **"*Great God! This is an awful place*,"** wrote **Captain Scott** in 1912 when he finally reached the **South Pole** in January. He discovered that Roald **Amundsen** had beaten him to the Pole. Under harsh conditions near Beardman Glacier, his group explored the area, collecting 35 lb of rocks containing fossils of the tropical plant **Glossopteris.** The Scott party died in March. **New Mexico** became a state on January 6, 1912. Congress appropriated funds to reinforce the interior of the **Cabin John** Aqueduct in Maryland with steel. Werner **Von Braun** was born in West Prussia. On April 15, 1912 at 11:40 p.m. the **Titanic** sank. Although called "titanic," it was about half the size of a modern cruise ship. Crewman **Charles Lightoller**, who had already survived a shipwreck and cyclone, moved people into lifeboats and was the last to exit a lifeboat when helping survivors onto the *Carpathian*. When told to get into a lifeboat he said, "***Not on your life.***" He later survived WW I, and saved 130 British soldiers from Dunkirk in WWII in his boat, the ***Sundowner***. **Henrietta Leavitt,** one of the "Harvard Computers" working for Astronomer Edward Pickering, discovered that the speeds of the cycles of brightness of variable stars were related to the absolute brightness. Knowing actual and apparent brightness, one could calculate **the distance of stars to the Earth.** After winning the presidency, **Woodrow Wilson,** fifty-six years old and the 28th president, revisited his birthplace, the **Manse in Staunton,** VA, where he had lived about 16 months. The town turned out for a great parade and celebration of his return and victory over the other Progressive, **Theodore Roosevelt**, who sought another term as a candidate for his **Bull Moose Party,** because he wanted to regulate corporations and establish a new nationalism in contrast to the pro-business Republicans. Wilson was a Progressive Democrat who believed in competition and spoke of a new freedom**.** In Okemah, Oklahoma, on July 14, 1912, Charley and Nora Guthrie named their third child **Woodrow Wilson Guthrie,** known thereafter as **Woody Guthrie.** In 2012, **Malala Yousafzal,** a sixteen year-old, was shot in the face by members of the Pakistani Taliban for her speaking out for the education of girls. She lived in the Khyber-Pakhtunkhwa province where the Taliban movement was strong. The shooting occurred on a school bus. The gunman asked, ***"Which of you is Malala?"*** No one answered, but several girls looked at Malala. (The following year, after her recovery in Great Britain, Malala wrote a book, ***I am Malala.*** By the time of the book's writing, in a place where 40% of women are literate, the government boosted spending for girls' education 30% and 75,000 more girls enrolled, many of them saying that they wanted to be like Malala. She later shared a Nobel Peace Prize.) *Half* of the winter bee colonies in the States were affected by **colony collapse** disorder. Pesticides containing **neonicotinoids** created apian dementia, affecting bees' navigation and communication with each other. On August 16, 2012, South African police fired on striking miners at **Marikana**, killing 34. On July 3, **Andy Griffith**, who starred in *The Face in the Crowd*, *Matlock*, and *The Andy Griffith Show* about the fictional town of Mayberry, North Carolina, died at the age of 86. In early February, a **solar** eruption

ejected particles at 4 million mph and X-rays. By May of 2012, the U.S. had conducted 294 **drone attacks**. (From June 2004 to Sept. 2012, 2500-3300 people were killed in **Pakistan**. Of these, 470-881 were civilians, of whom 176 were children. Additionally, 1200-3200 people were wounded.) The production of **cars in China** was about 14 million vehicles/yr, exceeding that in the U.S. On September 3, **William A. Hazel** died at Fauquier Hospital in Warrenton at the age of 77. He was chairman of the board of William Hazel Inc. and with his brother John "**Til" Hazel** Jr., a member and major contributor to Warrenton Presbyterian Church, developed many properties in Northern Virginia, including Tyson's Corners and Ashburn Farm in Loudoun. He donated the land for George Mason University and was active on the Virginia Literacy Foundation, the directors of the Washington Airports Task Force, the Northern Virginia Roundtable, the trustees of Inova Health System, the Virginia Foundation of Independent Colleges, the VMI board of visitors, the trustees for George Mason University, the trustees of Youth for Tomorrow, the trustees of Woodberry Forest School, scholarships at GMU, VPI, Lord Fairfax Community College, and Shenandoah University. On November 18, the **Do the Math** tour of Bill McKibben's **350.com** organization brought a giant pipeline to the National Mall to protest the **Keystone Pipeline,** although other pipelines from the tar sand deposits already existed**.** On November 23, **Wal-Mart** employees in Milwaukee protested the company's low wages, low benefits, and union-busting tactics. In July, Virginia eliminated its division for **labor law enforcement.** (Legislatures in the following states also reduced their enforcement of wages and hours of work: NC, MI, HA, OR, NJ, OH, WI, SC, MO.) The Southern Poverty Law Center tracked 1018 **hate** groups, a 69% increase since 2000, as well as 1274 anti-government patriot groups and armed militias, such as **the Hammerskin Nation**, one of whose members killed members of a Sikh temple in Wisconsin. It was commonplace for states to subsidize **multinational companies** by allowing them tax credits equal to the state income tax paid by their employees. *(The Fine Print,* 2012*)* Coal companies dumped toxic **slurry** water into abandoned mines in Appalachia and elsewhere. The heavy metals and other toxins found aquifers and entered ground water and wells, causing sickness, as in the 1972 Buffalo Creek disaster. Although no longer stored in impoundments, the slurry in mine shafts still entered water systems. In Virginia, House Bill 710 (Kilgore) left **empty mines**, called "voids," under the control of the lessee of the property, not the Lessor (owner). This meant that property owners whose land was leased only to allow mining could not necessarily prevent a mining company from adding coal slurry to the void, even though there was no longer any coal to mine. (VA League of Conservation Voters and following). This taking of property for nonpublic use, and probable use against the public good, was **sponsored by the public.** In **Virginia** HB 869 and SB 274 eliminated requirements that areas of rapid growth should seek to focus development on **compact**, energy-efficient neighborhoods rather than adding to the costly, inefficient, habitat destruction of **sprawled** development. A similar sprawl-promoting law is the HB 599 Northern Virginia Transportation District Authority law, which indirectly discouraged mass transit

in favor of more auto traffic. The people of **Vanua Levu**, the second largest of the Fiji Islands, did not contribute much to cause climate change, but they were one of the first communities to begin **relocation** in order to escape the rising sea. In November, three quarters of **Venice** was flooded for the fourth time since 2000. Further inland, rivers flooded in Tuscany, bridges crumbled and vineyards were destroyed. By this year, **Saudi Arabia**, had burst its water bubble and seen its wheat yield drop 70%. Similarly water-depleting projects were underway in Syria, Iraq, Yemen, China, and India. Death of **Bill Teal**, former coach and science teacher at Fauquier High School. In a preface to a teacher evaluation of Mr. Teal, his science chairman, John Broughton, once wrote, "***If I were in a fox hole, I would consider myself fortunate to have Bill beside me.*"** A**s of September:** 43 billion gallons of **freshwater** per day were needed to supply America's electricity—more water than for 140 New York cities. (Appalachian Voices, September 2012. And following.) **Nuclear power plants** used 25-60 gallons of water per kilowatt hour. Since a typical home used 958 kwh/mo, a home would consume 19,160 gallons of water per month. A **coal fired plant** producing 600 megawatts lost 2 billion gallons of water per year to evaporation. A large coal or nuclear station drew in 500 million gallons of water per day . In the Great Lakes, 100 million fish and 1.2 billion **fish larvae** died per year in intake screens. At outlets, more habitat destruction occurred because of the **hot water** released. In North Carolina, This caused **striped bass die-offs** in 2004, 2005, and 2010. Increased droughts since 2004 forced a dozen power plants to shut down or reduce power output in peak temperature months**.** In 2012, the population of **Richmond**'s metro area was: 1.2 million. Richmond proper: 200,000. Richmond metro's median income: $55,000. Richmond proper: $31,000. In 1980 the **Arctic** icepack covered about 2.5 million square miles; in 2012 it was about 1.2 million square miles. In the USA, from the period beginning in 1973 until 2012, the numbers of cases of the following afflictions were: **cholera** 400, **diphtheria** 1337, **polio** 266, **rabies** 65, and **firearms** 4,000,000. (Catalyst, USC Spring 2013)..The top ten highest paid CEOs (in millions of dollars) were Leslie Moonves (**CBS**, 60.3), David Zaslav (**Discovery Comm**., 49.9), Bob Iger (**Disney**, 37.1), Phillipe Dauman (**Viacom**, 33.4), John Donahoe (**eBay**, 29.7), Brian Roberts (**Comcast**, 29.1), Howard Schultz (**Starbucks**, 28.9), Ken Chenault (**Amex**, 28), Rex Tillerson (**Exxon Mobil**, 27.2), Kent Thiry (**DaVita Health Care**, 26.8). Therefore one could conclude that consumers placed great value on communications, entertainment, credit, coffee, cars and health care. (RTD 5/25/2013) On May 1, members of the **Occupy Movement** demonstrated in Manhattan. **Fauquier Schools** had 11,064 Students. **Paul Auster** (b. 1947) wrote a memoir, the *Winter Journal,* in which he tried to ***"write about (his) body, to catalogue the manifold knocks and pleasures experienced by (his) physical self."*** In a later book, *Report from the Interior* (2013), he set out to explore his "***mind as you remember it from childhood***" not "***because you find yourself a rare or exceptional object of study, but precisely because you don't, because you think of yourself as anyone, as everyone."*** He was particularly affected by films such as *The*

*Incredible Shrinking Man* in 1957 and *I am a Fugitive from a Chain Gang* (made in 1932). The *Report* also contains an album of period photographs. The aim of this work is similar to that of the *Transects.*

## Step 113

**Anthony Schimpf** was born to Eva and William on June 2, 1913 in Chicago. And **Truman Elwood Bruch** was born in Nazareth, PA on February 13. His parents were John G. Bruch and Estella Barthol Bruch. On September 14 **Wilson Hobson** married Lucille Fite. Their son was Edward, who ***"looked like Robert Taylor and was in the middle of World War II, "*** according to Jo Rose. After Lucille died, Wilson married Lela. She was mother of Gloria, Don, Judy, and another daughter. Edward became a teacher, Gloria Hale a housewife, Judy a restaurant owner after her husband's death, and Don, a millionaire from selling chicken parts. In 2013, **Betty Yager Lively** died on the evening of January 25 after two weeks in ICU on pain medication. She shared the hospital room with her sister **Jane Ingle.** Seven hours of surgery revealed adhesions from a previous colon operation, and cancer metastasis in the liver. Later in the month, her cousin, **Jo Evelyn Rose** fell, at 5 p.m., possibly because she was not using a cane or because she tripped over Maggie, her poodle, who often walked near her legs. She broke her femur. Pulling herself to a sitting position, she called 911. By 9 p.m. the fracture was reduced by Dr. James Bond. Within the week, she was able to walk and have physical therapy. **Richard & Kathleen** came from Richmond to visit with her at the Healthplex in February and returned home after about 8 days. They attended the **Church of the Holy Comforter** for the first time on March 17, 2013. **Jo Evelyn Rose,** however, had a *Clostridium* infection, or CDIFF, acquired from a roommate in her nursing rehabilitation center. It resulted in kidney and lung infections which caused her **death on March 17**. She was surrounded and comforted by the **Knight family,** in her last words telling Gary how difficult it was to breathe. On March 19, **Richard & Kathleen** stayed in Cookeville's Red Roof Inn in Tennessee on their way back to Oklahoma for the memorial service. On March 22, Richard said these words when the ashes of Jo Rose were placed beside those of Frank Rose at the mausoleum at the national cemetery on Fort Sill: "***She seemed frail as grass, weak and unsteady as a breeze. But like grass she clenched the earth. Like an Oklahoma wind, she directed all of us with willful certainty about what was right and true and gracious. She directs us still. Like a tree surviving on the dry prairie, her love does not let us go. Lord, may she rest in peace within us in our gratitude for her unfailing concern for our safety and for making meaning in our lives. May our lives be worthy of her concern. Amen.*"** On May 18, **Sally Jane Turner** stayed with **Juanita Hobson** in Nashville while attending to her aunt, **Mary Yager,** who suffered from post-surgical meningitis. **Samuel Turner**, Sally's son, was staying with Mary while he completed an EMT certification prior to retiring from the USAF after 20

years in October. He called Sally when Mary was rushed back to the hospital following her return home from a procedure for sciatica. In McMinnville, Mary's sister, **Jane Ingle,** Sally's mother, had just entered hospice care in a nursing home and her nephew, **Edward Yager** had also gone into a nursing home for care. Sally brought one of her grand-daughters with her to Nashville—**Maryella** Turner Patton, who was on crutches after twisting her ankle when she slid into home base. Her other grand-daughter, **Terren Sa Monte Turner Patton**, who just graduated from high school with an LPN certification, was preparing for her church's mission trip to China, after which she planned to study nursing in college. **Edward Hale**, husband of Gloria Hobson Hale, died in Liberty, TN on May 29. **Laurel Susanna Rose** was born to William and Jennifer Rose in Richmond at 6:32 p.m. on Friday, June 14 (Flag Day: Her great grandfather would have liked that. It would have given special meaning to his annual observance.). She weighed 8 lb 13 oz. Shortly afterward, her parents made a down payment on a larger home, 4708 Grand Way. During the same month, her cousin **Earl Sullivan** died in Paducah, KY. On July 4, **Paige Christy** managed the Fourth of July Parade in Ashland, VA. She was a descendant of Eula Rose and senior fiscal technician for Virginia's Compensation Board who worked at the Oliver Hill Building on Capitol Square in Richmond and volunteered on the Board for the Hanover Arts and Activities Center in Ashland. On October 4, **Richard** performed *The Fisher of the James* in the Gellman Room of the Main Library in Richmond. **Jerry Schimpf** passed away on Thanksgiving, November 28 in Chicago. He was survived by his brothers Charles and Mark and sisters Kathleen Rose of Richmond and Madonna Schimpf and Jane Crosse of Chicago. **Charles Schimpf**, living in Chicago and sitting with his brother Jerry when he came to the senior center, wrote on 11/6: *"**Virginia (Urwin) said that she didn't want to write any more said that she was just too old. But now our 2nd cousin Don Schaeffer can use some cheer-up cards from concerned relatives. Sometimes it takes something serious to get members from both sides of a family to help out. So to visit is out of the question. Phone number is not available so sending card is the only way to say that you care. We have in somerespects a family that doesn't correspond with each other very much except you, Kathleen. I do what I can by writing even to the 2 seniors I became acquainted with when Don and Debbie (his son and daughter-in-law) took the time to get me enrolled at Hanover Township in April 2008 after I came here (Don's home) to live March 20 of the same year. Since then, it's been a life in which I can see and meet other seniors who come there regularly or just a few days a week. Some call me the author because of all my writing I do there. Today I took envelopes with me used the blank paper they have and I carry postage stamps in my wallet and I wrote letters to two separate seniors who until a few years would come there regularly by bus but now they are confined to Aldens Rehab in Hoffman Estates. I write in large letters so they won't have trouble reading what I write, plus (copying) words to songs I can copy from musical books there and bring home or just write some of the songs from memory. I want these 2 seniors to know that***

***I haven't forgot about them. As far as I know family members don't bring them home for Christmas. Thanksgiving, I'm sure that they are provided with enough food to satisfy them. Senior Al Bartose will take me to see them before Thanksgiving. We last visited them in September, bringing them apples and bananas. From your brother Charles."*** **BYA Dates:** About **13bya** (or 12.7), the first **galaxies** began to form. This was verified by the Infrared component of the Great Observatory Series. (Under 14 bya, the following statement is equivalent: "**$10 \times 10^{+02}$** million years after the big bang, the first **galaxies** appeared.") **MYA Dates:** About 13mya, in the mid-**Miocene Epoch**, monkey populations were diverse in Africa and the larger apes were abundant, if less diverse. As Australia and S. America moved further north, a cold circumpolar current lowered the temperature of Antarctica and the ice sheets thickened. Meanwhile, tectonic activity made the Strait of Gibraltar shallow, separating the Mediterranean from the Atlantic. The Mediterranean became smaller and more saline, depleting the salinity of the Atlantic. Low salinity increased the freezing point of ocean; therefore even more ice accumulated in Antarctica, which lowered sea levels worldwide. **KYA Dates** About 13 KYA (12.9kya), a **comet** may have exploded in the atmosphere over North America, the impact creating a thin layer of **nanodiamonds**. Thus may have begun the **Younger Dryas** Glacial period, during which Sloths, Mastodons, Mammoths, Giant Bears, horses. Sabertooths and the **Clovis** culture disappeared. The last glacial ended at 12.5 kya, but was interrupted by a cool phase in which the global mean temperature fell 15°. **Natufians** lived in an area near present day Jerusalem, their remains coming from the Shukba Cave excavated by Dorothy Garrod in the 1920s. Finds included crescent tools, kerns and grinding stones, figurines, evidence for the domestication of plants and dogs, sculptures of people coupling, evidence of gazelle-hunting, burial rituals, and of grain storage during cool periods (e.g. 11kya). These neolithic or pre-neolithic patterns show the accommodation of human culture to the vagaries of climate change. With an expanded repertoire of hunting, gathering, farming, rituals, and accumulation, a culture was created which lasted until at least 9800 years ago. **BCE Dates** In 1300 BCE **Seti I** ruled Egypt. At **Black Patch Down** in East Sussex a group of five or six round farm buildings were built with fences to control livestock such as dairy cattle and sheep. Inferior cattle were culled for meat. Storage pits, ponds, racks, and looms were also on the site. Barley was cultivated with bronze tools. **CE Dates** In 813, a monk found the bones of **St. James**, somehow transported to Compostela in Spain. Thus began the veneration of the site and the pilgrimages to **Santiago.** On November 28, 1413, J. **Hus** was burned after being ridiculed by church leaders in the **Council of Constance**. In 1513 **Ponce de Leon** arrived in Florida, the first European to arrive on the continent. His countryman, **Cabesa de Vaca**, was later the first European to cross the continent, going from Florida to the Gulf of California. On June 29, 1613 the **Globe theater** in London burned down. The production showing was the last of Shakespeare's plays, *Henry VIII*, possibly a collaboration with Fletcher. In 1813 near Sandusky, **Oliver Hazard Perry** defeated a British fleet. From the same harbor, slaves on the underground railroad later fled to

Canada. 1913 Turks killed **Armenians** in large numbers in Konya province. Birth of **Berthold Beitz**, the industrialist who took over Krupp Steel after World War II. **Schweitzer**'s theological dissertation was published as *Geschichte der Leben-Jesu Forschung*, (*The Quest of the Historical Jesus*.) It demolished the liberal theology which had made Jesus an ethical teacher. Schweitzer called attention to Jesus' eschatological convictions. For example, Jesus early in his ministry sent the disciples out to spread the word of the coming kingdom. They were to hurry. When the kingdom did not come, Jesus decided, Schweitzer thought, that he had to "throw himself on the wheel of history" to bring in the kingdom. Schweitzer thought that Jesus was a human being, not a god-man. For Schweitzer, this did not diminish Jesus' humanitarian message of compassion, but for others such a view was heresy. This book, together with his book on the psychiatric analysis of Jesus, was not popular with traditional church people. It was also in 1913 that he qualified as a physician after medical school, internship, and additional study of tropical medicine, and also the year of his marriage to Helene **Breslau**, who had trained as a nurse so that she would be ready to accompany him. The full name of the hospital was The Albert Schweitzer-Breslau Hospital. All the linens were marked ASB. Their daughter, Rhena Eckert, came back to serve as lab technician and later as administrator. In this year, they left for **Lambaréné** in Gabon, a mission **"*not out of benevolence but atonement*"**. The Paris Missionary Society sponsored him as a physician, but not as a minister; this suited his purpose. One of the first people they met was Joseph, who worked with them for many years as translator and hospital assistant. Joseph explained the doctor's aims to the African community. **Camels Cigarets** were put on the market by R.J. Reynolds of Richmond, VA in October. They offered a mild sugar-sweetened blend and sold in boxes of 20. Sales in 1914 were 425 million, in 1916, 6.5 billion, in 1952, 105 billion. In one hundred years, 4 trillion were sold, killing at least 4 million people. One advertisement showed a reclining socialite saying, ***"20,679 physicians say Luckies are less irritating. It's toasted!"*** On February 15, 1913, a **giant asteroid** burst in the air over Russia. Estimated at 25 million pounds, diameter of 65 feet, speed of 43,000 mph and an energy of 500,000 tons of TNT or about 30 times the energy released at Hiroshima. In Russia, 1200 people were hurt by broken glass and flash-burns, as the flash was 30 times brighter than the sun. The arrival of this asteroid was unpredicted by astronomers. **Irene Cook and Alice Jensen** were born in the same Chicago neighborhood. They were in first grade together at St. Gregory's Catholic School. Alice would stop by Irene's house to walk to school with her but never went in because she was frightened by all of the people in Irene's house. Irene had 17 siblings. **Andersen Accounting** opened at 111 West Munroe in Chicago's Loop. "*Think Straight. Act Straight*" was the company's motto. **Lady Bird Johnson** (married name) was born in 1913. Wilson introduced the first progressive **Federal Income Tax,** set at 7 percent on annual incomes exceeding $500,000. **Ralph Ellison** was born in Oklahoma City. Discouraged at Tuskegee from pursuing music, he went on to write *The Invisible Man*.

His mentor was Richard Wright, author of *Black Boy*. The first moving auto assembly line was set up in **Highland Park,** MI. On March 18, 1913, **Woodrow Wilson** arranged for a loan to China to help build railroads. Trying to remain neutral on the encroachment of China's borders by the Japanese, Russians, and British, Wilson said, ***"Our interests are those of the open door—a door of friendship and mutual advantage."*** This **open door policy** was short-lived. Wilson tried to follow the same policy in other countries and with Secretary of State **William Jennings Bryan,** made evangelical missionaries into State Department representatives and diplomats to China and elsewhere. But the invasions of Mexico, Haiti, Dominican Republic, and Cuba by American troops (1914-1917) and of China by Japan, Britain, France, and Russia and the crushing of the **Easter Rebellion** by the British in Ireland in 1916 were not prevented by the open door policy. Irish Americans were incensed by the British action and resisted alliance with the British in World War I. **Dr. Walter A. Plecker,** b. 1861 in Augusta Co., Virginia, was the state's first Registrar for Vital Statistics and the great defender of the **Racial Integrity Act,** which sought to ensure racial purity. In February, 2013 Pope **Benedict XVI resigned** from the papacy, the first resignation since 1294. In March, **Jorge Mario Bergoglio** of Argentina became **Pope Francis.** Asked about his position on homosexuals, he said ***"Who am I to judge?"*** On February 13, 2013, fifty thousand people rallied in Washington, D.C. to oppose the **Keystone Pipeline,** their argument being that **80% of fossil fuel reserves must remain unused** so that the concentration of atmospheric greenhouse gases could begin a slow decline. Also in February, a meteoric fragment of the asteroid 86039 and having a width of 19m and a mass of 12K metric tons tangentially entered the Earth's atmosphere over **Chelyanbinsk,** Russia at a speed of 68K km/hr. This was 25 times the mass and 75 times the speed of a Boeing 747. It fractured at 30km over the surface, making a fireball thirty times brighter than the sun and a shock wave which shattered windows on 7000 buildings over an area 80km by 180km and a flash of heat causing instant sunburns on those exposed, sending 112 people to hospitals with injuries. In terms of TNT-explosive power, it released 500,000 Tons of blast-energy. On March 29, 85,000 gal of tar sands crude oil spilled from an Exxon pipeline in **Mayflower,** Arkansas. On April 15, the **Boston Marathon** was interrupted by three explosions set by two young Chechnyan-American brothers. One of the IEDs was a pressure cooker, like those used in the Mideast wars.

## In Early Day

(for some son's IED)

I will need no more razor blades, thanks,
in my life. After that, if you like,
bring a few--*Eversharp*, like the ones
in my cup. Your first sip from the same
shallow cup of the sharp, breastless world

and the cut of a word or a glance
opened the lines you have walked since.
Finding your way where the road ends,
softly you prod in the road bed.
Death may be hiding an inch down.
Watch with me dawn's thin line.

**Gordon Cosby** died in March at the age of 95 in a home for the elderly which was one of the more than sixty ministries of the **Church of the Savior**, which he founded in 1946. Maria **Tallchief**, a Native American Ballerina died at the age of 88 in Chicago on April 11, 2013. **Jonathan Winters**, the comedian, also died on April 11, in LosAngeles. In Southern California another **tremblor** occurred on March 12. (4.7R) On April 14, **Julius Kogo** of Kenya won the Richmond 15K Marathon in 28:18. More than 50 groups in 37 states applied to the FAA to test **drones** in domestic air space (L.A. Times) . And 2.5% population consumed artificially sweetened **drinks,** compared to 10.8% in 2012. On April 2, **Randye Cox** of Mechanicsville, VA died at the age of 58. She was a member of the Hanover School Board and a director of the Cherub School of Immanuel Episcopal Church and later of the New Highland Baptist Day School, where she would open the day for the children by singing with them as she accompanied on guitar. She continued this until a few weeks before her death, bringing an oxygen tank with her. Her memorial service at Holy Comforter Episcopal Church on April 11 was the first time Richard Rose sang with their choir. Containers of about 270 short tons of ammonium nitrate, together with 55 tons of anhydrous bottled (compressed) ammonia, and other chemicals stored in the **West Fertilizer Plant** near Waco, TX exploded on the evening of April 17. The amount of ammonium nitrate in storage exceeded legal limits for such a facility, near a school and community. It was 1350 times more than allowed. Such excesses were long common in storage of fertilizer. A worse disaster from the same cause occurred in Texas in 1947. **Joe Berti**, who had survived the Boston Marathon bombing two days earlier, was driving past West on his way home from Dallas when he felt the explosion and saw smoke. The blast crumpled homes, apartments, a nursing home and a middle school, killing 14, including the first responders. April 20 In Longmen, China (in Lushan Co. of SW Sichuan Province) an earthquake (6.6R) caused landslides, killed 179, and injured 6700. **The Federal Budget** in this year allocated 1% for food and agriculture, 2.5% for labor, 2.5% for science, 3% for energy and environment, 4% for international affairs, 5% for health, 5.5% for housing and community, 6% for government, 6% for education, 5.5% for veterans' benefits, and 57% for the Department of Defense, war, and nuclear weapons programs. (Based on the February 2013 discretionary budget request sent to Congress. Military spending was therefore $1.2 million per minute, according to the Society of Friends.) **Social media** users produced 250 million **Tweets** daily, 800 million Facebook users, and 42

million blogs per year on Tumbler. President **Sarkozy** ordered French troops from Afghanistan. The small statue of the Marines on **Mt. Suriachi** by Felix de Weldon was auctioned after its removal from the *Intrepid* aircraft carrier museum in New York in 2007. It had been in the museum since 1995, where it had been placed by the deWeldon's biographer, Rodney Brown, who had bought it in 1990. The small statue was the predecessor of the current monument. General **Rios Montt** stood trial in a Guatemalan court for his direction of genocide in 1983. By this year in **Senegal**, the Tostan program developed by **Molly Melching** to end female genital mutilation had led to the enthusiastic **collective abandonment** of the practice by more than 5000 communities and spread to other African states. Local imams were consulted and trained to explain to their communities that the practice neither guaranteed chastity nor was required by Islam. Whole villages in celebratory events simply **repented**. Meanwhile, on April 17, after Congress had accepted Sen. **Tom Coburn's** (R, OK) argument not to allow NSF to fund research in political science except for research ***"promoting national security or the economic interests of the United States,"*** Rep. **Bill Posey** (R, FL) asked the science adviser why this was not ***"a good and proper filter"*** to apply to **all** NSF grants. **John Holdren** answered: ***"It's a dangerous thing for Congress of anybody else, to be trying to specify in detail what types of fundamental research NSF should be funding."*** On April 24, more than 1127 garment workers in the Rana Plaza Factory of Savar, **Bangladesh** sweat shop were killed when the eight story building collapsed. Workers had been told to return to their jobs even though a building inspector a day earlier had declared the building unsafe. The plant subcontracted piece work for Wal-Mart, Gap, Disney, H&M, Primark, Tesco, C&A, Inditex, Zara, PVH (for Calvin Klein, Tommy Hilfiger, Izod, and Tchibo) and other Western corporations. After seventeen days in the rubble, a seamstress, **Reshma Begum,** was rescued unharmed. On May 9, the **Carbon dioxide sensor** at **Mauna Loa** registered atmospheric concentration of 400 ppm. In February, Nick Goldman and a synthetic biology team stored 750 kilobytes of textual and visual data into **tricode** (made of zeroes, ones, and twos), converted this into nucleotide base code, and then sequenced it into DNA. A **sonnet of Shakespeare**'s was stored in 0.3picograms of DNA. The cost was $13,000 per megabyte. In Cleveland, three kidnapped women were freed after a decade of captivity to **Ariel Castro.** They had been among the 87,217 people in the active missing persons records as of December, 2012. A two dimensional **metamaterial** of copper sheeting engraved to select particular frequencies of reflected microwaves was designed to sample light signatures of invisible or hidden objects, the sampled data being used to assemble visible images that might be useful in security systems. This system operated with less data than typical MRI scanners. **Faiz Oley**, pharmacist and Maronite Christian from Richmond passed away on May 13. Since 1967 when he began the Westbury compounding pharmacy on Three Chopt Road, he expanded the business to eleven locations. He was known for generosity, creating jobs and paying for the education of others. Five minutes before his death he was leading the

singing in his hospital room of songs from *West Side Story*. In June, Iranian voters chose a more moderate leader than President Mahmoud Ahmadinejad. He was **Hasan Rouhani,** an imam who sought peace more than confrontation. **A Manhattan bank heist**, part of a national electronic ATM theft operation, took in $2.4 million. Thieves used a prepaid credit card whose credit limit had been increased to $40 million by using malware to enter and change the processor system as a secret system administrator. On Monday, May 20, an E-5 tornado 1.3 miles wide and staying on the ground for more than 40 minutes travelled at speeds over 200mph as it passed through **Moore, OK**, crushing homes, throwing horses in the air, and flattening the Plaza Towers Elementary School, where Kindergarteners and First Graders were sheltering in place. Some of them drowned in the basement.

**Storm Track**

Punched into the marquee
of the multiplex: red pick-up,
neither coming attraction
nor suspended disbelief,
posed as evidence of Order
Unhuman and strangely
attracted to tract houses,
malls, and trailer parks.
Posed and poised—we do well
to remember—ourselves,
what is most strange
is our thinking things settled.

Whirling disk made of blades
of a ceiling fan above me:
such an object of motions
I am—vibrational flesh
firm as cooling amber honey.
The swarm curls and tangles
in and out of forms. Solids
from the cooling whirl
of motions congregate.
Such is our state: firm facts;
yet a flowing
breathy track of words hurling.

Several days later (5/29) another tornado came through El Reno and Oklahoma City, killing travelers on Interstate 40 and two tornado chasers, **Tim Samaras** and his son. It followed the same path as the tornado in 1999. By year's end, 40% of the **world's population** of about 7 billion had difficulty accessing **water**. **Fauquier Schools** had 11,165 students and Loudoun Schools had 71,000 students, with two new schools opening on October 4 and October 16 (Discovery ES and Moorefield Station ES, both in Ashburn). **Annegrete Franke Dollitz (Greta),** host of *The Hour with the Guitar* on WCVE-FM, died in Richmond. On June 15, **John Wills** ran with his two sons for shelter from high winds in Richmond's Maymont Park. A tulip poplar blew onto him and his four-year-old son, Shawn. The older son, eight-year-old Caleb, ran for help, but **Shawn Wills** had already died. On June 21, Editor Walsh from the *Fauquier Times-Democrat* announced that the newspaper would change its name so that it would not appear to be partisan. Henceforth, it was to be the ***Fauquier Times***, although most residents simply called it the

*Democrat*. On July 12, sixteen year-old **Malala Yousafzai,** recovering from a gunshot wound to her head which she received from neighbors convinced that women should not be educated, spoke to the United Nations: ***"Let us pick up our books and our pens. They are our most powerful weapons. One child, one teacher, one book and one pen can change the world. Education is the only solution."*** In July, the names of **Janet Yellen** and **Larry Summers** were in the news as potential replacements for Ben Bernanke at the Federal Reserve (<NYT 20130730). Ms. Yellen had been confirmed to the Fed board in the 1990s and served as the president of the Federal Reserve Bank of San Francisco from 2004 to 2010. In contrast to Summers and Rubin, a leader of Citigroup during its multiple bail-outs, Yellen favored stimulus over deficit reduction. The wreck of the **Mary Rose,** the flagship of the fleet of Henry VIII, discovered by divers off the southern coast of England, was preserved in a ship-like museum in Portsmouth, along with 19,000 artifacts of Tudor life, including the skeletons of some of the 500 men in the crew, the ship's dog, boots, equipment, medicines, personal possessions and weapons. Lord Nelson's flagship, *H.M.S. Victory*, was kept near the museum. In 2013, the **US Air Force** still maintained 450 **ICBMs** for use in war. Death of **Berthold Krupp**, remembered as one of the ***Righteous Among the Nations***, a title bestowed on him by **Yad Vashem**, the Holocaust Memorial in Jerusalem, in 1973. As described in the *Washington Post*, ***"He came from a family of Nazi sympathizers, according to accounts of his life and at the outbreak of the war was working for Royal Dutch Shell in Hamburg as an oil executive."*** As the business manager of Carpathian Oil in Boryslaw, Poland (now Ukraine), he saved at least 800 Jews by reclassifying their job descriptions as "petroleum technicians." He and his wife also hid dozens of Jews in their cellar and warned others of deportation. In 1958, Alfred Krupp, recently released from prison for war crimes, chose Beitz to lead his steel company because of his ability and clean reputation. Beitz joked that he was the last of the steel barons. **Krupp Steel** was the basis of West Germany's recovery from the war. Beitz bound all of the letters of thanks he had received from survivors into a scrapbook which he gave to his children. **Irene Cook and Alice Jensen**, friends since 1919, celebrated their hundredth birthdays in Chicago. Irene recalled a quotation: ***"If in heaven we don't meet, we'll stand hand in hand in the flames."*** **Abraham Nemeth,** inventor of the Nemeth Code for mathematics used by the blind, died on October 2. **Martin Berkofsky,** concert pianist, philanthropist, ham radio enthusiast, world traveler, musical ambassador, and teacher of Fred Morris, Mark Conrad, Richard Rose, and many others, died of cancer at his home in Warrenton, VA on Sunday, December 29, 2013. **Mikhail Kalashnikov** died in December at the age of 94. The inventor of the rugged **AK-47** said that it was simply a weapon he had made and that he was not responsible for what was done with it, but he also wrote a letter to the primate of the Russian Orthodox Church asking whether he was damned. ***"The pain in my soul is unbearable. I keep asking myself the same unsolvable question: if my assault rifle took people's lives, it means that I, Mikhail Kalishnikov, son of a farmer and Orthodox Christian, am responsible***

***for people's deaths."*** **On June 22, 2013,** the writer of ***Transects*** decided not to include most information more recent than this date because it would otherwise be impossible to finish. To what extent he kept this pledge you may determine.

## Step 114

**Thomas Sullivan and Virginia Helm** were married in 1914. Their daughters were Josephine and Virginia. Birth of **Josephine Sullivan** in Hickman, KY was on October 28. **Alma Blanche Helm** married **Erle Cowan Johnson** on April 14. Their son was **Robert Erle Johnson. Erle** was son of Mr. and Mrs. Robert B. Johnson, who had moved to Hickman from Tullahoma, Tennessee. Erle was agent of the Nashville, Chattanooga, and St. Louis Railroad in Hickman. The Cowans were among the original settlers of the Franklin County area of Tennessee. Rev. Samuel Montgomery Cowan and Nancy Clements, daughter of General Clements (Revolutionary War) were his parents. Erle's mother was daughter of the famous Confederate surgeon, **Dr. James B. Cowan,** who had served as chief surgeon under General **Nathan Bedford Forrest.** His family were members of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church, co-founded by his father. James was born in Fayetteville, TN on Sept. 15, 1831, read medicine under Dr. Bonner of Fayetteville, graduated from medical school in New York City, and located in Huntsville, Alabama, where he married **Lucie Robinson** on October 20, 1857. He entered the Confederate Army on March 27, 1861, joining Chalemer's Mississippi regiment, and was transferred to Forrest's command on December 12, 1861. He was at **Murfreesboro** on July 13, 1862 when Forrest with 800 cavalry captured the Ninth Michigan and Third Minnesota Regiments' garrison, taking more than 3000 prisoners. He was at **Tishomingo Creek** when 8000 Confederates routed Union forces of almost 24,000. He was at **Johnsonville** when Forrest destroyed or captured supplies, a fleet of transports, and an ironclad gunboat. After the war, he returned to Memphis, then moved to Winchester, and finally returned to Tullahoma and died 37 years later of heart failure at the age of almost 78 on Saturday July 24, 1909 at about 11:00 a.m. and was buried on Sunday afternoon in a crowded ceremony, the floral offerings given to the Tullahoma Lodge of the International Order of Odd Fellows. He was buried with the last rites of this order in the City Cemetery. He left his wife and seven children, **James W. Cowan** of Decatur, IL, **O.C. Cowan** of Birmingham, **Mrs. R.B. Johnson**, Hickman, KY, **Mrs. Joe Beene**, Nashville, TN, **Mrs. T.A. Havron** of Tullahoma, and **P.S** and Miss **Mary Lou Cowan**, who lived with their mother at home. A large number of Confederate veterans attended, including the last surviving member of Forrest's unit, Capt. **John W. Morton**, the artillery commander from Nashville, Gen. H.A. Tyler from Hickman, Dr. James B. Murfree from Murfreesboro, and Dr. J.W. Sloan of Cowan. TN . Others had recently

predeceased J. B. Cowan, such as Kelley, Billie Forest, Anderson, and Dashiels. Cowan often said that his medical supplies all came from the Union. "***And I not only had plenty for my own army, but we sent medical supplies to the army in Virginia."*** His daughter **Mary Lou Cowan** died ca. May 18, 1915. **Lucie Caroline Robinson Cowan**, widow of J.B., died in Tullahoma 11/10/1918. She kept a "Jennie Lind" album and commonplace book from 1855 onward. From this book comes most of the information about the Cowans and Johnsons. Blanche Johnson also wrote in the album and inserted clippings about her son, Robert Erle Johnson. J**ames M. Cowan** was known in NYC and Aurora for collecting American art, giving exhibitions at Grand Central Galleries of works by Percival Rousseau, Elmer Schofield, Elliott Daingerfield, George Elmer Browne, and Jonas Lie, and giving his collection to Aurora. **Robert Erle Johnson** was a an operator and station agent for the N.C. and St. L. Railway in Hickman. After working as a telegrapher and in other positions in Dresden and Centerville for 27 years, his son **Erle Cowan Johnson,** born 2/28/1885, took the same position for another eleven years before he died of a heart attack in 1940 at the age of 55 at his home on Wellington Street at about 7:30 on Sunday morning. Although a Cumberland Presbyterian in Tullahoma, he became a Methodist in Hickman. He was survived by his son **Robert Erle Johnson**, a senior at U.TN, Knoxville, his wife Blanche, and his brother, McKee Johnson, of Detroit. In New York City in 1914, **Frank Lyons Rose, Sr.** who had never been East, received training from Western Union in the electrical telegraphy trade. Years later, he would always ask Richard, his grandson, to play ***"The Sidewalks of New York"*** on the accordion. He hung a certificate on the back porch. Under a portrait of a scraggly, gap-toothed Alfred E. Newman-like character were these words: ***"Six Months ago I couldn't spel Injuneer and now I are one."*** Birth of **Rita Agnes Van de Riet** on June 12. On January 5, 2014, **Bishop Edwin F. Gulick, Jr.** of the Diocese of Virginia, confirmed Richard Rose in the Church of the Holy Comforter. Edwin was the son of Fauquier resident Edwin Gulick, Sr. He grew up in Warrenton, where Richard had lived, and knew Richard Winter, former pastor of Warrenton Presbyterian Church, where Richard had been a member. Edwin returned to Virginia after serving as Bishop of Kentucky. On the family farm, he built a house on the corner of the property. On January 25, **Jeremy and Marla Smith Warner** married in Tampa, FL. On November 11, **Laura Goldberger**, grandmother of Jennifer Rose and great-grandmother of Truman Lyons and Laurel Suzanne Rose, passed away at Beth Shalom in Richmond, VA. On the same day, at Westminster-Canterbury in Richmond, surrounded by his family singing around him, **James Erb** died. He was born in 1926, served in the Philippines and Japan in WWII, met Ruth at the *Universitat fur Musik und darstellende Kunst* in Wien, married her in Reykjavik in 1952, and continued graduate studies in musicology and voice at Indiana University and Harvard, edited the Magnificats of Orlando di Lasso, published his own music, and after living for a while in Winchester, taught for 39 years at the University of Richmond. In March, **Betsy Doerken** died in Montross on the Northern Neck after 35

years of marriage to Bill Doerken. Both had taught in Loudoun County Schools. In retirement, they were docents at Stratford Hall.

**To each one, the walk seems his or her own, but the divine walk is one walk of all of us which none owns. *Walk the path.***

**BYA Dates** **14 billion years ago** (Actually, 13.73 +/- 0.12 BY, the age of the universe estimated by WMAP.) A rough chronology follows of the origin and expansion of our universe from the initial singularity. The **Big Bang** was *The Maximum Density*, or *Maximum Energy Singularity* which set the path for the formation of *our* universe. It was followed:

- $10^{-43}$ seconds later by hypothetical **Loops**, or **strings**, like 'holographic projections' formed in ten dimensions, according to the unverified and possibly unverifiable idea of **strings**. The temperature of the universe was $10^{32}$ K and **gravitational force** separated from **electro-weak force**. Cooling began. As cooling continued, the altered temperature settings created the components of our universe. Think of them as being **frozen into existence**, as ice is created by lowering the temperature setting for water. The change of temperature triggered changes in other kinds of settings which in turn created other components. This period is sometimes called **Planck time**.
- $10^{-36}$ seconds later: at $10^{28}$ to $10^{27}$ K, by events in which energy was unevenly distributed and **super-symmetry** broken, separating **strong nuclear force** out, and freezing out gravity and the Higgs field, with the loss of seven dimensions. The **heat** of this original universe still survives in our universe.
- $10^{-35}$ seconds later: by going from the initial size of an orange or **grapefruit**, to a universe doubled in size 100 times, or $\mathbf{2^{100}}$. Presumably, driven by the coiled energy of the false vacuum created by the BB. This **inflation** created a universe larger than the current one.
- $10^{-20}$ seconds later by the appearance of **Photons**.
- $10^{-12}$ seconds later by the breaking of the **Higgs field**. Temperature was $10^{15}$ K and weak **nuclear force** (radioactivity) and **electromotive force** separated.
- $10^{-10}$seconds later, by freezing out of **Quarks and leptons** and their interaction with the Higgs field created **mass.**
- $10^{-04}$ seconds later, by freezing out, from quarks and leptons, the patterns for hadrons—such as **protons and neutrons**. This began **nucleo-synthesis**.
- $10^{0}$ seconds later positrons and electrons annihilated on collision, producing **photons** and massless **neutrinos** which smoothed out the background radiation

- $10^{+02}$ seconds later, by freezing out protons, neutrons, and other particles. **Elements** appeared. In the universe, the general distribution later became **Hydrogen** (90%), Helium (9%), Other elements (1%). Initially Hydrogen gas filled the universe. Later, the Hydrogen was ionized.
- 380 X $10^{+03}$ seconds later, it was cool enough for **electrons and ions** to make neutral ions. (Based on the limits of the **Wilkinson Microwave Anistropy Probe , or WMAP,** which by 2008 had collected 5 years of data for NASA. See additional comments below)
- 5 X $10^{+17}$ seconds by **the current settings for our universe**, that is: full distinction of gravity, weak nuclear force, electromotive force, and strong force and the presence of background radiation traveling from the initial singularity (BB) across the universe in the form of a **3°K microwave radiation** of general uniformity with only small, ripples of variation. Light frequency increases as distance increases; so the fireball of the first singularity can only be seen as the fossil of ***microwave energy***.
- 3.8 X$10^{+02}$ million years later, light separated from matter.
- 4.3 X$10^{+02}$ million years later (That is, after a tenth of a billion years.) by the appearance of the first **stars**.
- 9 X $10^{+02}$ million years later, as stars clumped together through gravitational attraction, by the appearance of the first **galaxies,** including the massive quasi-stellar radio sources, or quasars, associated with galaxies around massive gravity sources so strong that light sinks into them, the **black holes**. *See below.* (Apologies to astrophysicists for this stunted and inelegant narrative.)
- *Additional comments on the chronology of the universe*:

About 370,000 years after the B.B., very low frequency **sound waves** were produced. After 380,000 years, the universe was cool enough for electrons and ions to make **neutral atoms**. About 400, 000 years after the B.B. (or 13.9996 bya, given the B.B. was 14 bya), **hydrogen gas** could exist. Initially neutral, such gases became **ionized** as galaxies formed. After 430,000 years, stars began to shine and emit **ultraviolet** light which re-ionizes neutral atoms. Ionizing UV photon radiation leaking from star nurseries ionized the abundant Hydrogen gas. By 930,000 years, the re-ionization tapered off. These data were collected from 2003 to 2008 by NASA's **Wilkinson Microwave Anisotropy Probe** (WMAP, See SN 3/15/2008. More confirmatory results were obtained in 2014.) Where matter was initially **dense,** galaxies were more compact and became **elliptical**; where more **rarified**, they became **spiral**, like the Earth's galaxy, the **Milky Way**. WMAP estimated that the substance of the universe was 23.3% **dark matter**, 4.6% **matter,** and 72.1% **dark energy. (For Earth, see 4.5 BYA.) MYA Dates: 140 mya Beginning of the Cretaceous Period.** A massive worldwide **extinction of many species** occurred during this period. 14 (13 to 15mya) The **orangutans** separated from related ape species.

**KYA Dates** About 14kya (13.5kya), the last glacier withdrew from the southern end of Lake Michigan. The lake dammed behind it, over more than 3000 years, cutting two outlets through sags in the tall Valparaiso moraine of deposited glacial till. These cuts allowed the lake to drain off to the Mississippi in the south, leaving in its place a very flat lake plain. **Beginning of *Mesolithic Culture* and of the Holocene Epoch.** In the Americas, paths began to open between glacial ice sheets, permitting a second wave of Siberian settlers to migrate from the region of Alaska to the Mid-West, Great Lakes, East, and Gulf over a period of about 4000 years. **BCE Dates:** Around 1400 BCE, the **Hebrews** (Ipiru) were in Egypt. **CE Dates** On Good Friday, April 23, 1014 CE **Brian Boru** defeated the Danes of Dublin at **Clontarf**. By that time, Brian had become high king of Ireland. He was assassinated after the battle and left only a young son as heir. Brian began a divine-king, European style of monarchy in Ireland. At Clontarf, the Viking invaders were literally pushed back into the sea, many of them drowning as they fled for their boats. The Vikings had more troops than Brian, who had 20K.Thousands died on both sides—7000 of them Vikings. Brian was buried at **Armagh.** In 1214 CE, **Philip Augustus**, son of Louis VII, defeated **John** ("Lackland") and his allies at the Battle of **Bouvines**, effectively ending the Angevin Empire of the British, which led to both Britain and France becoming nation states before other countries in Europe. Philip spoke to his army and nobles, ***"You ought all to be king and you are so in fact, for without you I cannot govern."*** Initially he ruled over Paris, Orleans, Bourges, and Amiens. After expelling the British under **John Lackland,** who had already had his nephew (Arthur of Brittany) executed, **Philip** extended the monarchy's rule over more of France, except for Aquitaine and Guyenne, still in British hands. In 1614, John **Rolfe** married **Pocahontas** (originally Matoaka until she took her mother's name) after she had been kidnapped and her husband murdered and after Rolfe had used her to extort information about native practices for curing tobacco. He used the curing method on the West Indian tobacco he had imported to Virginia. It was milder than Virginia tobacco. Planting it in huge fields, he was able to win continued funding from British investors. After his death from Opekanakano's reprisal in 1622, Rolfe's practices were followed by others, resulting in a tradition of slavery, the exhaustion of soil, and great profits for large landowners. The son of Rolfe and Matoaka, Thomas, was born the following year. He was brought up in England after his mother's death in Portsmouth following her use by Rolfe to promote his product. In 1714 **Governor Spotswood** imported Germans to work his mines west of Fredericksburg, as he had previously hired Germans to work in the Brunswick County mines. The settlement was called **Germanna**, combining "German" with "Queen Anne." On August 24, 1814, the British **captured Washington, D.C.** and burned the Capitol and White House. At that time, the building did not have a center or a rotunda. On September 14, **Francis Scott Key** wrote the *Star Spangled Banner* while watching the British naval bombardment of Ft. McHenry near Baltimore. In 1914 British seized **Basra,** Iraq on their way to free Iraq from the **Ottomans**. So much freedom

resulted in bondage. **Sunbeck** invented the Separable Fastener or **zipper. President Woodrow Wilson's** wife, the artist **Ellen Axson Wilson,** died of Bright's disease on August 8, 1914 and was buried in Rome, Georgia. On September 1, 1914, **Martha**, the last known Passenger Pigeon, died. On Christmas in **Ploegsteert**, Belgium, German and British soldiers briefly celebrated the day before returning to slaughter. By 2014, the oil and gas industry which had begun digging access canals into the coast of **Louisiana** in the 1930s, had destroyed 1900 acres, a quarter of the original coastline.

## The news we never missed on a day in June, 2014

Rockets eyeless and aimless from Gaza

drop and pound on the hardened and buried.

Rockets answer them, flattening Gaza.
Four and twenty young blackbirds not singing--
baked--are carried in green coffin wrappers.
North of Baghdad and nestled in bunkers
waiting union, the kisses of missiles
spreading Sarin are captured in thousands.
Sinai's pharmacist, selling his thousands,
dozes painlessly. Flown from the Maldives,
Roman Seleznev runs out of credit.
Smallpox is found in a drawer like a pencil
never missed, like Ebola in Guinea,
or like Eagle Tail, choked on a hot dog.

## Barđarbunga

*September 2014*

Scalding scum's the finish
of many a skaldic feast
where Turkish peppercorns,
Ukrainian wheat, cod,
mead, and steady rain
on the longhouse turf
softened the way for poets
to have at each other,
words going out the smoke-hole
after bringing the house down
and bones making the crust
formed by the furrowed flow.

Watch the steaming snow.
Perhaps a poem will rise,
slowly finding her way
through the débris, and plunge
unstopped into your heart.
So many poets at odds,
leaving their works underfoot,
escape with a nod and a hiss;
then settle back down to stone.

Connie wondered how many were writing a ***Transects*** of their own, the glutinous flow of it all scudding into an indifferent crevasse. Uncle Jack had pasted a quotation from Kurt Vonnegut over his desk: "***I apologize for all the stories and plays that have taught young people that there are stars and bit part players, and that the stars are all that matter . . . It is purely a technical matter. An audience cannot care equally about dozens of characters all at once . . . ' Just keep your eyes on the stars and you won't miss anything.'*** " So we come to believe that "***in real life there are stars on the one hand and, on the other hand, people who do not matter***." So now, some even argue that

after World War II a few stars will carry on--like Reagan or Stockman, who don't believe that bit players need welfare. But Eugene Debs said, "***While there is a lower class, I am in it. While there is a criminal element, I am of it. While there is a soul in prison, I am not free.***" So life is <u>not</u> a story and not a picture within a frame. "***Life has no unimportant characters.***" And those who "***imagine that they are characters in a story . . . are a little batty but they have often appeared in history as very bad news,***" like Hitler and Caligula.

Across the bottom of the quotation, Uncle Jack had written in red ink: ***"But life is a divine path of restoration. Walk the path."***

## Step 115

In 1715 the **Roses** of Kilravock and the Forbes clan recaptured Inverness from the Jacobites. On May 28, 1915, **Grady Watterman Towles** graduated from McMinnville High School in a class of 15 students. **Lyle Byers** was born on June 14, 1915. He was the brother-in-law of Ann Kirk-Byers, whose second husband was **Bob Byers.** Lyle died on 12/14/1989. **Gladdon Loring** was born on February 6, 1915. He would become a concert pianist and an Air Force officer. Fifteen billion years is beyond our reach. **MYA Dates:** About 150 mya, Sauropods like ***Camarasaurus*** seasonally migrated from eastern lowlands of Utah and Wyoming to the green uplands of the West, eating 1000 lbs of vegetation daily. **KYA Dates** About 150 kya, the first anatomically modern types of *Homo sapiens* appeared. But art didn't appear until 80 kya, unless one includes the findings at Blombos Cave. **BCE Dates:** 1500 **Myceneans** shipped and traded. **Thut-Mose III** ruled Egypt. **CE Dates:** In 1115 CE, **Abelard,** rationalist and nominalist, overcame the reasoning of his teachers, including **Anselm,** to become canon of Notre Dame. Afterward, he met another canon's daughter, **Heloise.** In 1215, King **John was** called **Lackland**, because as the fourth son of **Henry II ,** he inherited no lands. He angered citizens and gentry by exorbitant tax collections, lost Normandy in 1204 and most of the rest of the to France, was excommunicated in 1207 for refusing **Stephen Langton** as Archbishop of Canterbury, and lost the **Angevin empire.** In 1210 he agreed to accept Langton and the ruling of Innocent III, and then lost another battle with the French at **Bouvines** in 1214. Under pressure by the nobles and the intrigues of Langton, he was compelled on June 15, 1215 at **Runnymede** island in the Thames near Windsor to sign a document, the ***Magna Carta,*** limiting his power. The Great Charter specified that

the Church could choose its own officials, that feudal taxes could not be increased without consent, and that the punishment of freemen was not to be capricious but legally determined. This charter of rights, together with the insularity following the loss of Angevin territories on the continent, accelerated the development of the **nation state** in Britain and became the basis for an ever-broadening understanding of **human rights**. In 1415 **Henry V** defeated the French at **Agincourt.** Over his reign, Henry had many **Lollards** executed. The **Congress of Vienna** was in 1815. Beethoven was a guest of Archduke Rudolf, and many rulers visited him. Austria became the leader of the German Confederation. **Mount Tambora** erupted in Sumbawa, Indonesia. The gases released resulted in the **Year Without Summer** in 1816. On May 10, 1915, the Coroner's Jury of Kinsale, Ireland reported: ***"We find that the deceased met death from prolonged immersion and exhaustion in the sea eight miles South-Southwest of Old Head of Kinsale on May 7, 1915 owing to the sinking of the Lusitania by torpedoes fired from a German submarine."*** The Lusitania, a passenger ship of the Cunard line passing through St. George's Channel, was struck by a torpedo from a U-boat about 1000 yards distant. Of the 1150 mortalities, one was Alfred Vanderbilt. Rescuers saved 767 passengers and crew. The first broadway show by George Gershwin was interrupted by the news about the Lusitania. On November 25, 1915, (Thanksgiving night) the modern **KKK** met for the first time, at Stone Mountain, Georgia. The Klan was quite popular, later even taking part in rallies for the Volstead Act and marching against the wet Catholic presidential candidate, Al Smith. On April 4 -McKinley Morganfield was born in Rolling Fork, Mississippi. He took the stage name of "**Muddy Waters**." On October 10, **Edmund Starling** wrote his mother: ***"We arrived in New York about 3 pm. Friday afternoon and drove straight to the St. Regis Hotel, where we left Mrs. Galt, Mrs. Bolling (Mrs. Galt's mother) and Miss Bones. We then took the boss (Woodrow Wilson) to Col. House's residence, where we stayed for a few minutes, then went back to the hotel, secured the ladies, and took a long automobile ride along the river speedway (in the Pierce Arrow), passing Grant's Tomb and Columbia University. We also rode thru most of Central Park. We returned to the St. Regis Hotel about 5:45 pm., left the ladies, and went to Col. House's residence, where we stayed about thirty minutes, when we again returned to the hotel, secured the ladies, and brought them back to Col. House's residence for dinner. At 8:15 pm. we automobiled to the Empire theater and saw "Grumpy." I left them at the theater and went to my room to get some sleep, as I had to get up at 3 am. and go to Col. House's residence and keep the boss from harm. I did not mind the early rising and enjoyed a good book in Col. House's residence. That morning we took another long automobile ride on the speedway and the parks and then went to Penn. Station. At 11 o'clock we boarded a private car for Philadelphia to see the second game of the World Series. We landed in Philadelphia about 1 pm. and were met at the station by a vast throng, which the policemen could hardly handle. At 1:25 pm. we rode out to the baseball game, 26 squares from the depot. I rode on the running board of the***

***automobile all of the way and literally pushed the President and his crowd through the entrance of the ball park. The police seemed to be powerless to keep them back. In the ninth inning I had to go along the aisle and request the people to keep their seats until the President and his party passed thru. We hurried back to the depot, people yelling all the way, and it was certainly with a sigh of relief that I felt the train move forward in the direction of Washington, D.C."*** (from *Starling of the White House, p. 54)* Starling then accompanied the Wilson entourage to church in Baltimore, Joseph Wilson's apartment for dinner, and walked with Wilson to Mrs. Galt's house on 20th Street for supper. In December, Wilson married **Edith Bolling Galt,** widow of a wealthy Washington jeweler. She claimed to be a descendent of **Pocohantas.** Edmund Starling recalled Wilson singing "***Oh, you beautiful doll"*** and dancing a jig. **Beverly Waugh Kunkel,** a zoologist, was appointed the Jesse Chamberlain Professor of Botany at **Lafayette College**. He was the first Biology Department Chair at Lafayette. He organized a full year introductory course in general biology and programs in zoology, physiology, and embryology. Two of his students won the Nobel Prize. In January 2015, **Dick Rose** was trucking wood chips full time for a logging company after working as a mechanic for 28 years at the Paper Mill in Franklin, Virginia. When the mill closed in 2010, Rose took the trucking job part time. He was glad to do it full time because it was regular hours with the weekends off. Also in January, Fred Bailey carried an air rifle into a Walmart store in Fairborn, Ohio and was shot and then pursued by police. His girlfriend, **Tasha Thomas,** died when Bailey, driving at 100mph, flipped their car into a tree. He also was killed in the accident. This occurred not far from Rockland Drive, where Richard once saw a car sticking out of the picture window in the Schusters' house next door to the Roses' house, #28 Rockland Drive.

Connie pulled out the top drawer, which contained tiny rings of cut tubing, pencils, calipers and wrenches, micronils, tweezers, and scraps of ads that Uncle Jack had composed.

## *JAX* Medical Tubing:

Your connection to life
in dialysis
or irrigation,
tubal ligation,
intravenous flow,
chemo, dilation,
dainty drains in ears,
aqueducts shunting
hydrocephalus,
loops around the gears
pulsing plasma drops
through copper tartrate,
photometric gate,
and tests worth millions.

Jack had scratched out the last line, but Connie's trust fund from JMT's millions *did* give her a new connection to life.

### Step 116

On May 30, 1916, **Ira Redkey** was born in Giddings, TX to Ireon and Ed Redkey. **MYA:** About 160 mya, two asteroids between Mars and Jupiter, one 106 miles and the other 37 miles wide, collided to create the **Baptistina** family of 300 fragments, each >6 miles wide. The fragments absorbed sunlight, radiated the heat and thereby pushed 20% of the largest fragments out of the asteroid belt (*Nature, September,2007)*, one of which later struck the Earth about 65mya. Other asteroids struck Earth and moon over the last 100-150MY, creating among other things the **Tycho Crater** on the moon

and many craters on Mercury, Venus, and Mars. Earth now nears the tail-end of this asteroid shower. During the same period, the southern end of the Appalachians was divided by a structural trough when the previously collided masses of North and South America parted to make the Gulf of Mexico. The remnant of this is the continuous stratigraphic record between the current **Ouachita** Province, south of the **Ozark Plateau**, and the Southern **Appalachians** of Alabama and Tennessee. Sequences of folded Paleozoic rocks match up across the Mississippi Embayment because the two ranges were once continuous. **KYA Dates:** About 164 kya, People near the **Blombos** cave of South Africa used ochre and other body pigments and used mollusk shells for decorative jewelry. At about 155 kya, **Bouri Herto** on the Awash River in Ethiopia's Afar triangle was home to a group of *Homo sapiens* with slightly larger brain capacity (1450 cc) than modern humans. They had features like Australian aboriginals. This was 8000 human generations ago. **CE Dates**: In 1116 CE, the Cistercian Reform was begun by **Bernard of Clairvaux.** On May 26, 1416, **Jerome of Poland**, the Bishop of J. Hus, who had been burned at the stake, was himself also burned after his eloquent self defense to the **Council of Constance.** The Council had been called to resolve the problem of a double papacy. In 1516 Thomas More published **Utopia.** In 1616, **Rebecca Rolfe** from Virginia visited England with her husband John and her small son, Thomas. She also saw Capt. Smith again. She had thought him dead. She died of a lung disease on the return trip in March,1617 off Gravesend. Her other names were Matoaka and Pocahontas, daughter of Wahunsenaca, High Chief of the Powhatan Nation or federation. A statue in her honor stands in front of St. George's Church in Gravesend, where she was buried. In 1816, the **kaleidoscope** was invented by Scots astronomer David Brewster. It was an immediate fad. After the eruption of Mount **Tambora** the year before, the world had a "**year without summer**." Thus in New Hampshire and other New England states, thick ice remained into July and August, prompting emigration from Maine and other states. Partly because of these immigrants, **Indiana** territory soon had a large enough population to qualify for statehood on December 11, 1916. Also in 1916, the **Sykes-Pico**t treaty divided up the **Middle East** between France and Britain, creating "nations" that had not previously existed. Building on previous work by Croll, Agassiz, and others, the Serbian scientist **Milanković** published his mathematical explanation of **climate**, which he wrote while imprisoned and later while in the state library in Budapest, during World War I. On his view, three mechanisms affect climate by altering the **insolation** of the Earth. They are: (1) A slight **rocking** of the tilted axis, which varies as 23.5° +/- 2° every 41,000 years (2) The **wobble** of precession, which changes the "pole star" every 19,000 years and (3) the **eccentricity** of the orbit, which varies from circle to ellipse every 100,000 years. These movements superimpose to alter duration and intensity of the seasons. These factors were only effective on an Earth sufficiently cooled so that they were not masked by more extreme factors. This condition existed 45mya and thereafter, as later determined in the later studies by Maureen Raymo. **Charlie Hatfield** made a contract with the City

of San Diego to fill its Marina Reservoir by **making rain** by releasing chemicals into the atmosphere. A deluge followed. Not only was the reservoir filled but the flood was so severe that Hatfield left town without being paid. Near Chicago, **The Eastland** pleasure boat sank with over 800 Western Electric employees aboard. They were on a company outing. **Louis Aquila**'s grandfather had been picking up a little cash taking pictures of passengers. When the ship sank, he leaped into the water and saved a woman. For this, he later received fifty dollars. Many of the dead were buried in Rose Hill cemetery. On March 9, 1916, **Pancho Villa** raided Columbus, N.M. American troops could not catch Villa and American diplomats could not deal with **Carranza.** The military seemed to be unprepared to deal with foreign threats. This was the beginning of **Preparedness Parades.** Secretary of War **Newton D. Baker** directed increased appropriations into the development of a larger and better-equipped military. The **Easter Uprising** in Northern Ireland was brutally crushed by British forces. This angered many Americans, making it difficult to persuade them to ally with Britain in World War I when the President found he could no longer keep the nation out of the European war, as promised in his campaign.

Then Connie found the open letter in the back of the desk drawer.

***Dear Connie,***

***By now, you've heard my final wishes from Dooley and you've nosed around my place--now your place. You've seen my ledgers and wondered what to make of them. Jeanie saw them once. You can imagine what she said. But Jeanie never questioned herself or anyone else--like those doctors who treated you. And she never wondered how I could have been an older brother she had never known, which of course, I was not. But I needed cover for my line of work, which isn't really selling plastic tubing, however handsome the income has been. My work is on a different kind of inside diameters--diameters only measured by turning around through enlightenment. Round and round. When she tracked me down, so certain that I was Jack, the lost brother repeatedly mentioned in her father's papers, I simply agreed. Of course, I knew her father and why he thought of me as his son, but that story doesn't matter. My stories as Prakash or Hank don't matter either. Jeanie didn't question very deeply and, as always, I needed cover.***

***Now I have to make things ready for you. I can't be writing forever. Though I still want to write it all. There's so much more for the ledgers. But you'll have to do it.***

***Maybe you remember the tea I used to serve you in this room. It was more than tea. Think of it as a remedy for losing part of your thyroid. As you read the ledgers and a book on my shelf called <u>Frameshifts</u>, you will find out more about that tea. It is a gift of time, a chance to turn around. You have received more than you know. When you first sat in this chair swinging your feet and asking me questions about dragonfly wings and lumps of coal, I knew you were the one for this gift.***

***Learn all you can to walk the turnaround path.***

Jack

**Right yourself**

Unfinished face
with lips still sealed
or cheeks with eyes
surprised, appalled
me, waking sound
and undeformed.

But fear can twist
a face or mind
and ignorance
contort the heart;
dull, mindless work
distort the will.

Reversible
distortions, found
in dreams--shifted,
reframed--reveal
the whole, intact
though all be maimed.

## Step 117

**Frances Mae Rose** (later: **Kelly** & then **Redkey**) was born on 11 May 11, 1917 in Louisiana, possibly Eunice or Alexandria. **Robert Erle Johnson** was born in Hickman, KY and **Anthony Van de Riet** on April 19 in St Louis. **KYA dates:** About 17 kya, the little people disappeared--*Homo florasiensis*, the small sized humans of **Flores**, Indonesia who had arrived on the island around 1mya. The island was also inhabited by small forms of other species. **BCE Dates** In **1750** BCE**,** the native **Indus**, who worshipped the phallic Shiva, were slaughtered by Aryans in N. India. Aryans sacrificed animals reenacting the sacrifice by Prajapti of his children. They drank soma. Perfect reenactments held chaos at bay. Presumably some of the chaos feared was reprisals by native people. About 1700 BCE, the earliest known copy of the ***Gilgamesh*** epic was carved on stone. It was later found in 1872. **Hammurabi** ruled Mesopotamia at this time. In 1680 BCE, the **Hyksos** Dynasty ruled Egypt at the beginning of Hebrews' **Exile** in Egypt. **CE Dates** In 617 CE, King **Redwald** (599-625) was converted to Christianity. He was of the Wuffing tribe,a Bretwalder or regional king who could be considered first king of England. He ruled in southern England, near Ipswich, Suffolk and Sutton Hoo. In 1417, **Poggio Bracciolini**, papal secretary, discovered *De Rerum Natura* in the monastery of Fulda, thus returning the ideas of Lucretius, Epicurus, Democritus, and their predecessors to the literate public. On October 31,1517, Martin **Luther** posted 95 theses in Wittenberg to stimulate debate. He did. At the Goose and Gridiron pub in London in 1717, a small group met to form the first Grand Lodge of Speculative **Freemasons**. A Brazilian fisherman found a statue of the Madonna in the Paraiba River, the **Madonna of Aparecida.** A group seceded from the Old Presbyterian Meeting House of Alexandria in 1817 over the choice of a co-pastor. The secessionists formed the **Second Presbyterian** Church. (The church disbanded in 2002.) The *Fauquier Democrat* was established in Warrenton, VA. At that time, it was called *The Palladium of Liberty*. **Robert Mitchum** and John F. **Kennedy** were born in 1917**.** Publication Number 66 from the **United States Food Administration** warned Americans: "***The men of the Allied Nations are fighting; they are not on the farms. The production of food by these countries has therefore been greatly reduced. Even before the war it was much less than the amount consumed. The difference came from America and a few other countries. Now this difference is greater than ever and, at the same time, but little food can be brought in from the outside except from America. Therefore, our Allies depend on America for food as they have never depended before, and they ask us for it with a right which they have never had before. For today they are our companions in the great war for democracy and liberty. They are doing the fighting, the suffering, and dying --in our war. . .England, France, Italy, and Belgium, taken together, import in peace time forty per cent of their bread stuffs. But now, with their reduction in harvest, they must import sixty per cent. We***

***must increase our normal export surplus of 88,000,000 bushels to 220,000,000 bushels. It can be done but in one way: by economizing and substituting. . .we must send more meat . . .we must send butter and milk . . .we must send sugar . . .Let us remember that every flag that flies opposite the German one is by proxy the American flag . . . The small daily service in substitution can be done by all; the saving in waste by the majority, and the lessening of food consumed by many. The individual daily service in 20,000,000 kitchens and on 20,000,000 tables, multiplied by 100,000,000, which is the sum of all of us, will make that total quantity which is the solution of the problem. . . one wheatless meal a day . . . eat less cake and pastry . . . use more poultry, rabbits, and especially fish . . . use all skim and sour milk. Sour milk can be used in cooking and to make cottage cheese . . .reduce the use of fried foods . . .use less candy and sweet drinks . . .double the use of vegetables . . . burn fewer fires . . .serve smaller portions . . . do not eat between meals . . .watch out for waste in the community."*** Sounds like a sensible diet, unlike the customary diet of the rest of the century. Albert **Schweitzer** was interned in September and kept under poor conditions by the French 1st Garaisone, in the Pyrenees, the same quarters once occupied by Van Gogh. During this time, he wrote the second volume on Paul, had dysentery, and two surgical operations. In Africa, he had not been sick, even though he had lived through terrible epidemics of sleeping sickness. Albert **Einstein** wrote a paper which became the basis for the **laser** industry. Jones in the *English Pronouncing Dictionary* first described "*Received Pronunciation*". **Gordon Cosby** was born on July 3, 1917 in Lynchburg, VA, where he became an evangelical Baptist.

## Step 118

**Grady W. Towles** was photographed in 1918 wearing his Army uniform. **MYA Dates:** About 180 mya, in the late **Triassic,** vulcanism continued to crack **Pangaea** in a process lasting 100 my. Abundant **oxygen** was available in the atmosphere and dinosaurs were on all continents. The northern continent of **Laurasia** divided into North America, Greenland, and Eurasia while the southern continent of **Gondwana** split into Africa, Antarctica, Australia, South American, India, and the Arabian peninsula. About 18mya ***Proconsulid*** **apes** lived on the edge of Lake Victoria, a rift lake in East Uganda and East Zaire, during the early **Miocene Epoch. KYA Dates** About 18kya came some of the last movements of European ice sheets in human history until the 21st century. A **woolly mammoth** died and immediately froze in Siberian permafrost. It was found in 1999. The first wave of **Siberian immigrants,** representing both Asian and Eurasian peoples, began to arrive in the Americas. Their way East blocked by glaciers, they gradually followed the western coast to the tip of South America, where their descendents arrived by about 15kya. **BCE Dates** About 1800 BCE or 1750 BCE, **Abraham** may have lived in Ur of the Chaldees. The mining at **Grimes Graves,** a British neolithic site near Brandon between Suffolk and Norfolk, ended as metal tools replaced flint ones. **CE Dates:** In

1918 CE, **Ida Mae Garrison, also called Little Woman,** was born in Shields, North Dakota on the Standing Rock Reservation on the Cannonball River. Her grandmother was a Hunkpapa Lakota who had known Sitting Bull. Ida married in Northern Virginia and came to live in Roanoke, but remembered growing up on the plains and having beef stews and ceremonial dancing on summer nights. On Friday, January 4, 1918, President **Wilson** addressed Congress, accompanied by Dr. Grayson, his physician, and Secretary Tumulty, concerning **railroad legislation.** With the party were Mrs. Wilson, two Maury girls from Roanoke and John R. Bolling in the Gallery. Two days later, the presidential party heard **Billy Sunday** preach at the Tabernacle in Washington, which held 15,000 people. His sermon was entitled ***"Why call ye me Lord, Lord?"*** Wilson did not attend the beginning of the event because he did not "approve of Sunday's methods." (Starling, p. 100) Wilson did like musical theater. On March 20, he heard Enrico **Caruso and Mme. Alda** at Poli's theater in a benefit for Italian soldiers. Days later, at the same theater, a play produced by **William J. Brady,** ***The Chinese Puzzle,*** was less of a success as the ***"play was too long and the actors did not have the tone of the house. Therefore, the first act was heard only by the first ten rows."*** (Starling, p.112) **Bolsheviks** killed Czar **Nicholas II** Romanov, his wife, Alexandra, and five children in a field near Yekaterinburg, Russia. **Nelson Mandela** was born**.** At her Eagle Bridge farm in New York, **Mary Robertson Moses** took up painting because painful arthritis limited her ability to do other tasks. Already in her eighties, she painted her first work. By the end of the Great War, **117,000 Americans** had died in battle. But after the First World War, the United States was a creditor nation and the world's economic leader. High tariffs complicated Europeans' problems in repaying inter-governmental debts and collecting German reparations. The **Washington Conference**, the **Geneva Conference**, and the **Pact of Paris** reflected the American desire to end the arms race and to banish war and the U.S. Pledged itself to a "**Good Neighbor**" policy. **Hubble** used Leavitt's method (from 1912) to calculate stellar distances, identify the **Andromeda Galaxy,** and map the heavens. He used his color-shift concept to measure speeds of heavenly objects.

## 180 Degrees

**Turning around is the human work: to study, shift, learn, change, and repent. Find space for change in the collage of transects, at the edges, in the empty frameworks and incomplete samples and phrases. Changes come. Much alters, thickens, clots. The strikes and lifts you see in mountain tops mirror this—the shift it takes to turn around and live. As Gertrude Stein said, "*I like it very well to change.*"**

**Step 119**

**Sally Monte Hobson married Grady Watterman Towles** on January 29, 1919**.** On October 16, **Kap** or Catherine Holbrooke (later C. Sparks) was born. **Josephine Agnes DorothyVan de Riet** was born on December 9. **KYA Dates:** About 190 kya humans began wearing **clothing.** Body lice began to evolve separately from head lice. Until about 30kya, dogs began to evolve from the basic European *Lupus* (wolf) stock. In 2013, Robert Wayne of U.Ca. And Olaf Thalmann of U. Turku, Finland placed dogs' center of origin in Europe rather than Asia, based upon comparisons of canine with fossil lupine nucleic acids. **BCE Dates** In 1900 BCE the **Old Babylonian Kingdom** ruled Mesopotamia. Biblically, this was the "**J" period** of covenant-cutting. **CE Dates:** In 1619 CE in Chesterfield County at **Falling Creek,** Virginia, the **Iron Industry** began in the United States. On March 29, 1819, **Paganini** played his first concerto in Naples. **Hans Christian Andersen** went to Copenhagen at the age of 14 and unsuccessfully tried to show his talents at singing, dancing and reciting poetry to people in theater and the arts. Jonas Collin, the director of the Royal Theater secured money for him to go to school in Slagelse and Elsinore. He had been unable to complete school in Odense, where he grew up with his dead father's collection of the classics, his mother overworked as a washerwoman, his demented grandfather, and his talkative grandmother who tended the gardens of the local insane asylum, where Hans heard many stories from the patients and made a **puppet theater** to act out Shakespeare's plays. He stayed in school for six years despite humiliation by a schoolmaster. His first book was ***The Ghost at Palnatoke's Grave***. In 1919, **Woodrow Wilson** had a stroke preventing him from patching differences with the Senate and saving the League of Nations. The League's failure eased Hitler's later ascension to power. The **International Society for Crippled Children** was founded in Elyria, Ohio. **Abraham Nemeth**. born blind, was discouraged from studying mathematics in college, instead receiving graduate degrees in psychology from Columbia, but he returned to college and took mathematics.

## Step 120

**Nan Smith** (later N. Gullahorn) was born on February 10, 1920 to Claude Smith and Katie Winnie Rose Smith in Vermilion Parish, Louisiana. **Frank Lyons Rose, Jr. was born on June 13, 1920 in Eunice, Louisiana** (St. Landry Parish) to Edna Mae McFarland Rose and Frank Lyons Rose of Crowley. George Roland **Louden** was born on August 25, 1920 to George & Ruth.(née Ruth McFarland, sister of Edna Rose). And **Anne Rose Hill** (later Anne Clerc) was born on August 25, 1920 to **Eula Rose Hill,** youngest of the siblings of **Frank L. Rose, Sr. Franke Hobson** married **Edward Yager**, Sr. on October 14 and **Auburn Hobson** married **Calysta Atwell** on December 20, 1920**.** On May 6, **Eva Schimpf** wrote from Los Angeles, (Ocean Park)CA to her husband William, or Wilhelm, in Chicago that she had received his letter and to ***"have a little patience as I have not seen half the sights yet."*** **MYA Dates:** About 200mya, a **comet** struck **Pangaea**, causing a die-off of ocean species and more than half of

terrestrial species. This marked the end of the Triassic period (at 210 mya) and the beginning of the Jurassic, ruled by **Dinosaurs**. In Africa, tyrannosaurs hunted the herds of certopsians and hadrosaurs. Nocturnal shrew-sized mammals hid during the day. They were the ancestors of humans. There were **no birds.** In the **Transantarctic Mountains** of Antarctica, large crocodile-sized amphibia lived within 200 miles of an area which would later become the South Pole. The dog-sized dodo-like dinosaur ***Lystrosaurus*** roamed the tropical forests of South Africa, Antarctica, India, and Australia. Sandstones at **Ball's Bluff, VA** were formed by the erosion of the Appalachians, uplifted rift folds. As the Appalachians were worn down, the **Iapetus Ocean** closed and the **Atlantic Ocean** opened. An example of this sandstone is the Smithsonian Castle. Staircases of sandstones and shale extending from Greenland to North Carolina were laid down from the river silts and the remains of ancient **rift lakes** around which lived tiny shrew-like non-placental mammals. **Pangaea** broke apart as the spreading sea floor began opening the **Atlantic and Gulf of Mexico** between Europe, Africa, and the Americas. Coastal erosion spread sediments over the microorganisms on the sea floor, where the decay of organic material depleted Oxygen. Released oxygen went into the atmosphere and in **later** periods permitted evolution of larger placental mammals. In general, however, this late **Jurassic** period of the **Mesozoic Era** was a time of massive extinctions due to the active tectonic and climatic changes. In Southern Pangaea, the **Gondwanaland** landmass separated from **Laurasia**. Antarctica, India, S. America and Africa drifted apart as Gondwanaland moved south. Around 20mya, the **Basin and Ridge Province** was formed as the Earth's crust stretched , thinned and then broke into more than 400 mountain blocks that partly rotated from their originally horizontal positions. It is centered on the state of Nevada and extends from S. Oregon to W. Texas. Its mountains and flat valley floors alternate, trending north and south. **Sea ice** formed in **Antarctica,** which was ringed by a **rift valley** with a molten core (based on analysis of 26 drilling core sites done in 1972-1976). The continent's temperature came to be controlled by an East-to-West circumpolar current which had totally replaced the equatorial current existing before its migration south. Ancestors of the **penguin** lived in Antarctica. **KYA Dates:** Around 200 kya, a gene deactivating ***phi-bHaA*** swept through the ancestral hominid population. The effect was to turn off the limitation on hair growth. Continual hair growth led to grooming behaviors, to which monkeys and hominids allocated 20% of their time and which provided the setting for developing conversational skills. **Worldwide cooling** due to the extreme eccentricity of Earth's orbit, superimposed over cyclical patters of a rocking axis and the wobble of precession. Around 20 kya, **bows and arrows** may have been invented. The **San** peoples of Africa use arrows poisoned with a chrysomelid beetle (*Diamphidia)*, whose pupa they carried with them. The San call themselves **the Real People**, as did most native peoples. They owned little property, had minimal privacy, rules, hierarchy, and governance. Currently, their homicide rate is 29.3 per 100K person-years. (In the USA the rate is 10h/100Kpy.) Children were carried and cared for until they were weaned at 3 to

4 years. Mothers practiced infanticide when a newborn was defective. These practices controlled population and therefore protected environmental resources. San have epicanthic folds, yellow skin and other Asian features such as **mongoloid spots** on infants' lower backs. Certainly their ancestors were different from San because both San and **Khoi** have separately evolved for 50ky, just as the ancestors had evolved for 50ky since the first **anatomical humans** appeared. The San are more gracile, skillful and intelligent than the ancestors. San and **Khoi languages** (according to Greenburg. Most of this information comes from Nicholas Wade's book) are members of the Khoisan category (e.g.!Kung and Hadza). San are in **L1mDNA** and Khoi are in**L2mDNA,** the **earliest known human lines of inheritance**, using maternal mitochondrial evidence, supported by paternal Y-chromosomal evidence. Hadza are foragers near Lake Eyasi, Tanzania. Language **clicks** occur in Khoi and !Kung, as well as in the ceremonial language of the Australian **Damin**, an extinct language of the males in the **Lardil** tribe of Queensland. **Nguni** women in a Bantu tribe near San territory borrow clicks to use in reference to their in-laws' names, which are taboo. This special language is called *hlonipha*. Clicks are difficult to use in clusters and therefore easy to lose from speech, which suggests a selective pressure for the easier use of simpler consonants. **BCE Dates** In 2030 BCE, one of the earliest known **love poems** was written in **Ur:**

> ***Bridegroom, dear to my heart,***
> ***Goodly is your beauty, honeysweet …***
> ***Bridegroom, I would be taken by you to the bedchamber.***
> ***You have captivated me.***
> ***Let me stand tremblingly before you.***

Around 2000 BCE **Hebrew** (Ipiru) patriarchal pastoral migrants moved between Mesopotamia and Canaan probably earlier than Abraham**. The 3rd dynasty of Ur** ruled Mesopotamia. The Barrow at **Earl's Farm Down**, Amesbury, was flattened to permit cremations on the platform. Bones of a child and adolescent were placed in a beaker within the central ring and causeways dug to permit access to the central chamber. Turf and limestone were used to cover the mound. 320 Ptolemies (in Egypt) took Palestine after the passing of Alexander the Great. In 220, Hellenistic Seleucids in Syria took Palestine from the Egyptian Ptolemies. This began the reign of Antiochus III. **CE DATES** In 820 CE, **St. Gall** monastery was built in Switzerland. In 1420,**Van Eyck** in Bruges and **Caravaggio** in Florence painted with extraordinary realism in great contrast to their contemporaries & immediate predecessors. (David Hockney, the painter, believes they used concave mirrors--**camera obscura**. Da Vinci described it. This secret practice enabled them to trace lace, etc. Support for this idea: all of the left handed people in paintings owing to mirror images.) Meanwhile, **Brunei** was burned in Florence for using the witchcraft of mirrors and lenses. The **Treaty of Troyes** was signed between France and England. **Henry V** married **Catherine**, daughter of the lunatic **Charles VI** of France,

who gave **Henry** preference over his son, called the **Dauphin**. **Raphael** died in Rome. in 1520. In about 1620, the **Pilgrims** arrived at Plymouth Rock and **slaves** arrived at **Jamestowne.** In 1720, the house known as **Agecroft** appeared in a painting. Lime plaster covered the earlier timber framing and the windows and chimneys were reduced and simpler in design. In 1820, the **Cato Street Conspiracy** became known in London. The **Craven** family was making pottery such as large honey jars in Middle Tennessee. **Joseph Smith** received his revelation, beginning M**ormonism.** In November, **Peter Roget,** working on his word collection, saw the spokes of carriage wheels through the blinds of his basement kitchen in London. He paid the carriage driver to go by the house repeatedly. He later wrote a paper on how the retina builds moving images from stills. This paper was read by **Faraday**, who published his findings in 1831. **Peter Seeger** was born in 1920 into a musical family. His banjo was "***the machine that defeats hatred,***"as Woody Guthrie's guitar was the machine which defeated fascism. His father, Charles, was one of the first American musicologists. He wrote **"*If I had a hammer*" i**n the 1940s when he was with the Weavers. In the 1950s he was blacklisted. His songs carried him on. ***"Where have all the flowers gone?"*** and other songs were current in the 1960s. It is said that while his father and Alan Lomax wanted to know how music came about, Pete wanted to know *what* it was about. For both Pete and Woody, it was about bringing people together for united action, whether it was for the unions in California, civil rights of African-Americans, or the renewal of the Hudson River. He died on January 27, 2014 at the age of 94. Frederick Lewis Allen wrote in *Only Yesterday* that in 1920 there was no such thing as radio broadcasting until the autumn of the year, but by 1922 it was a craze and by 1929, 1% of the national income was spent on radios. **Sophie Radford De Meissner** published her book about her father, Rear Admiral Radford, who served in the Civil War. She also claimed to channel the spirits of various people, like Butt & Snead, two officers who went down from with the Titanic. **Iraq** was created by the British from three Ottoman provinces. **Karol Józef Wojtyla (**Pope **John Paul II)** was born in Poland on May 19. January 20 was the first day of **Prohibition** under the Volstead Act**.** The zealot **Wayne B. Wheeler** had turned the Anti-Saloon League into a prohibition movement with enough legislative representation to have its own way for a few years. German chemist **Hermann Staudinger** developed the theory of **polymerization** which began the plastics industry and influenced biochemistry. **H.G. Wells** published his ***Outline of History.*** He wrote that ***"history is a race between education and catastrophe."*** **Helen Amelia Thomas** was born in Winchester, Kentucky to Lebanese parents. **B.F. Goodrich** invented rubber boots called **Zippers.** Girls who stylishly left their boots unzipped were called **Flappers.** At the University in Munich, **Albert Einstein,** like other Jews, was not allowed to lecture.

## *Walk the path*

### *"Cast the net to the right side of the boat." John 21:6*

Intricately incomplete, always approximate, understanding is a sieve of porous patterns. To grip and keep is not given to us. Experience slips between our fingers and through our grasps. How should we keep anything? We do not keep; we spoil. Yet, pulling together on the ancient nets incrementally retied every day by every generation, we get the heft and shape of insights flickering beyond our fingertips—so many silvery annunciations that we are not able to haul them all aboard. Behold the emptied, barnacle-encrusted net, the stretched proportions of its accommodating vacancy! Allow shifts of reference. Allow yourself to change.

## Step 121

**Virginia Sullivan** was born in Hickman, KY on May 26, 1921. Her mother (Irene or "Rentie") heard the old clock strike midnight and therefore knew that her birth date was May 27, 1921. Dr. Curlin, however, had already entered May 26 on the birth certificate. Ginny only learned about his mistake when she went to work for the Pentagon Army Library and read her birth certificate for the first time. On December 9, 1921, **Jo Nell Hobson** married **Charles R. Gage. Mary van de Riet** received the habit of the Sisters of Charity on July 26, 1921.On February 10, **Bonnie Eichenberger** was born to Charles E. and Jessie Jacque Grinstead Eichenberger of Cushing, OK. She graduated from Chickasha HS, attended OK College for Women, married John Erwin Horne on December 8, 1941 in Chickasha and was active in the 1st Christian Church with **Jo Rose** in Norman after moving from Claremore in 1972. She died 4/22/1989. **MYA Dates:** About 210 mya the **Jurassic Period** began**. CE Dates** In 221 CE, the church under Constantine decided to drop Sabbath observance and make official the worship service on resurrection day or **Sunday**. The rest of the day after worship was an ordinary day. (Making Sunday into a new "Sabbath" with many restrictions was the work of Puritans. Their Sunday laws later became Blue laws, including the federal exclusion of Sunday as a day of executive and legislative activity.) In 521 CE, **Hygelac** King of the Geats was killed by the Franks in the Battle of **Ravenswood** or Hrfnes-holt. He was the uncle of **Beowulf.** In 1321, the last of the **Albigensians** or Cathars of Carcassonne and Albi were burned to death. In 1821, **Brownsville**, TN was settled. (The Roses stayed in Brownsville several times because it was about midway between Alexandria and Norman, for example on 6/22/06 at the Days Inn. Susie liked to run down the grassy hill by the Loretta Lynn restaurant.) In 1921, Woodrow Wilson's last year in office, the **Federal Income Tax** had risen from 7% in 1913 to 70% on the upper income bracket.

His successors, Harding and Coolidge, with Treasury Secretary **Andrew Mellon,** reduced the rate. An act of Congress established the memorial **Tomb of the Unknown Soldier**. In a report to Congress, **Harry Laughlin,** made the argument for the application of **eugenic selection** of immigrants. Musician **Billy Taylor** was born in Washington, D.C. He later studied at VSU in Petersburg and switched from sax to piano. The American Library Association's **Newbery Medal** was proposed by Frederick G. Melcher of the R.R. Bowker Co., as an ***"incentive toward better quality in children's books"*** and named after the 18th century English publisher and bookseller, John Newbery. **Paul Hindemith's** opera based on a Burmese story, ***Nusch-Nuschi***, was produced in Stuttgart on June 4, 1921.

## Step 122

Around **2200 BCE** the **Sumerians** developed the **24 hour day** and the **360 degree circle**. Their monetary system was **duodecimal**, making use of the many factors of 12, as compared with 10. **CE Dates** In 1422 CE, **Henry V** died suddenly and then Charles VI of France died only shortly afterward. **Henry VI** technically became King of England at the age of 9 months. In 1622 several tribes of **First Peoples** under **Openkankano** rose up to kill 350 Virginia colonists whose diseases decimated the tribes, whose tobacco farming was taking away their land, whose pigs overran their fields, and whose aggression, rapes, and pillage had become intolerable. Jamestowne was spared because of an early warning. In **1722 J.S. Bach published *Die Wohltempierte Klavier.*** A **smallpox** epidemic swept New England. **Cotton Mather** sent a letter to physicians describing a remedy known to West Africans, who had practiced it in their native country. Only Dr. **Boylston** followed up on this, and developed a vaccination procedure which he ultimately used successfully in America and presented in Europe. In 1922 the City of Chicago reversed the direction of the **Calumet River** so that it would not drain into Lake Michigan. The **Knickerbocker Snow** fell in Washington DC, so named because snow collapsed of the hotel's roof. It was the deepest snowfall on record. **Vladimir Lenin** announced on December 30, 1922 the establishment of the **Union of Soviet Socialist Republics.** After 1991, it was somewhat less unified. The **Poe Museum** was established in Richmond, one of the first museums to honor an American author. It was housed in the **Old Stone House,** the oldest building in the city, where Poe had once seen **Lafayette.** As a boy, Poe had been part of the honor guard accompanying Lafayette on his visit to Richmond. Both ***The Wasteland*** and ***Ulysses*** were published. The epigraph to Eliot's poem, "*Horror, Horror*" came from J. Conrad's ***Heart of Darkness*** and the phrase *Shanti, Shanti* came from the ***Heart Sutra***. According to Karen Armstrong these 3 books all foretell the alienation, anomie, and devastations of the 20th century, a modern and scientific period in which the work of myth was undermined. **Schweitzer**'s book was published: *On the Edge of the primeval Forest.* The **BBC** began its first ***"spark transmissions."*** The Newbery winner for 1922 was **Van Loon's** *The Story of Mankind.* **Marcel Proust** died.

***"The real voyage of discovery consists not in seeking new landscapes, but in seeing with new eyes."*** ***—Marcel Proust***

## Step 123

On February 8, 1923 **Grady's** father, Oliver Towles, died. **Jo Evelyn Gage was born on April 7, 1923 in Memphis, TN. Betty Yager** was born in McMinnville, TN, also in April. Jo's name on the birth certificate was misspelled ***"Joe."*** She was born at 12:25 a.m. At the home of **Mr. and Mrs. S.M. Gage** . She weighed 5 ¾ lbs. Her doctor was C.F. Reinburger, her nurse Nancy Mays. By 4 weeks, she weighed 7 lb. Her first tooth appeared on March 10. Mary van de Riet took vows to become **Sister Canisius** on July 26, 1923. As a Sister of Charity, and later became a member of the Congregation of the Poor Handmaids of Jesus Christ. **Jack Warren Rose** was born on March 3, 1923 in Alexandria, LA and on July 28, **Louise Simmons** was born. She later married her next-door-neighbor, Jack Rose. **BCE Dates:** In about 2300BCE the southern and northern circles of giant timbers and lintels were constructed at **Durrington Walls** earth works in Wessex. The Avenues, Circles, and Barrows were similar to what would later be built at Stonehenge. The ditch around the circle would itself have required at least 90,000 man hours of digging. **Alexander t**he Great died in 323 BCE. **CE Dates:** In 1623 **Galileo** published *The Assayer.* In 1823, Ellis invented **football** by picking up a soccerball in a British football game. Richard and Margaret Buck obtained mineral rights to the coal beneath **Agecroft**, on which mining began in 1826. In 1923, Gustav Borgland was commissioned to carve **Mt. Rushmore,** the sacred mountain of the Lakotas. He was known for his previous work on **Stone Mountain**, GA. Later, one of his co-workers began a bigger carving project to honor Crazy Horse. On the morning of November 10, on the grounds of the Crowley-Louisiana Hunt Club in Acadia Parish, Clyde Horn, his mother and father, Mr. & Mrs. A.F. Horn, Frank Milliken, and Cecile Embry (Mrs. Rutland Smith) got 25 turkeys and other birds in the morning shoot. The Newbery winner was the ***Voyages of Doctor Dolittle*** by Hugh Lofting. Builders of the **Palmolive Building** in Chicago took advantage of the recent change in the zoning limit to go to heights over 264 feet, previously forbidden. The new building, completed in 1929, was the first **skyscraper. Schweitzer**'s book on the restoration of civilization was published: *Verfall und Wiederaufbau der Kultur* (The Decay and Restoration of Civilization, trans 1923). The philosophy of **reverence for life** was its cornerstone. It begins, **"*We are living today under the sign of the collapse of civilization.*"** A second volume, *Kultur und Ethik*, elaborated on this philosophy. Montague, in his memoir of Schweitzer, writes that Rachel Carson dedicated *Silent Spring* to him. Schweitzer, he said, contended that ***"while we have the will to live, we must also respect the will to live which is inherent in other creatures. His plea was reasonable, not irrational. It was couched in logical terms, not***

***in hysterical phrases."*** Hysteria won the day, however. **Hitler** fired a shot into the ceiling of the Bűrger-bräukeller on the evening of November 8, 1923 in Munich. This was the beginning of the **Beer Hall Putsch.** Next day, imitating Mussolini's march on Rome, he marched to the Feldherrenhalle. Bavarian police ended it, killing fifteen of his followers and losing two of their own. Hitler escaped after the failure of his Putsch in Bavaria by staying with American **Helen Niemeyer**. She said she prevented him from committing suicide. He and **General Ludendorff** were tried for treason, judged leniently, and given 5 years in comfortable quarters at the Landsberg, where he stayed only 9 months while dictating ***Mein Kampf*** to **Rudolf Hess**. In later years, November 9 was commemorated by a parade of the Blood Order (Blűtordenträger). The first sound-on-film **motion picture** was created.

## Step 124

**Ruth Fisher** (later Ruth Alexander) was born in Fairview , Oklahoma to Earl O. and Elsie A. Fisher in 1924. She moved to Norman in 1939, graduating from Norman High in 1942, worked in a doctor's office and for the Red Cross during the war, and married John Calvin Alexander, a marine airman, in Norman on 2/25/44. In later years, she worked with **Jo Rose** at Norman Regional Hospital Auxiliary as a volunteer for 25 years and died on March 6, 2000. Mary Frye's poem was read at her funeral (***Do not stand at my grave and weep. I am not there. I do not sleep . . .)***. In a later letter from Ann Kirk to her niece, Rosemary Schimpf Lapinski, Ann spoke of **August 28, 1924** as the date that decided the future of her sister Frances and herself. She may also have given Rosemary a letter from Father John Van der Riet to corroborate her story. It seems that Frances, then 16 years old, had come home from a date at the late hour of 9:00 p.m., so upsetting the family that Father John, Anton's brother, was called. He arranged for Frances to go to nursing school in Chicago, where she could be supervised by Sister Canisius, her aunt, and for Ann to spend a year working in the kitchen of a convent in Donaldson, IL. Ann wanted to stay in school in St. Louis and resented the unpleasant interruption for the rest of her life. **MYA Dates:** A **Supernova** occurred around 240 mya. **KYA Dates** About 24kya, spearheads and knives similar to those found in Spain and France during the Solutrian period were present in North America. **CE Dates:** In 1924 CE **James Baldwin** was born in Harlem, the first of nine children living uptown on Park Avenue near the dump. His father was a preacher from New Orleans; his mother was from Maryland. His father believed that black people should have everything that whites did—their own businesses, their full rights. He could not accept the way things were and he could not accommodate or compromise. Baldwin said he couldn't bend; therefore he broke. He said he was so frightened by his father that he was never again as frightened by anything else. At his father's insistence, he became a boy preacher, but in

books he entered a broader human experience. While the black Baptist church sustained its people on the message of salvation for themselves and ultimate retribution for the injustices of white society, Baldwin already had the vision of a more inclusive human family based on love. But this love was costly. One paid the full **"*price of the ticket*"** to live as a full human being in a culture which denied fullness of life for all its members--white, black, male, female, straight and gay. Baldwin worked his way through the whole library and through Public School 24. After three years as a boy preacher, he also worked his way past his father's ambition and left home and the church. When **Irene Cook and Alice Jensen** were eleven year-olds in Chicago they would take the streetcar around the city and spend seven cents on a weekend movie. Irene walked to the Piggly Wiggly to buy groceries. Before Alice could go out she had to peel potatoes for her family every night. Three **US Army Air Service** planes returned to Bolling Field after flight of 371 hours and 26,345 miles around the world, without navigation or weather aids. They were met by the Navy Secretary, Franklin Roosevelt, and General **Billy Mitchell** when **Calvin Coolidge** was president. **Thomas Mann's** *Magic Mountain* was published. (Karen Armstrong calls it a mythological ordeal gone wrong.) **Mooers Packard** Dealership opened in Richmond. In 1956, the company was the first in the region to sell Volvos. In 2013, Mooers was purchased by Haley Auto, a Buick-GMC dealer. **Schweitzer** returned to Lambaréné after internment and World War I. He had raised money through organ concerts and writing the memoirs of his childhood and youth. The hospital was in ruins, but he had raised sufficient funds to pay off debts and begin again. When he returned, the population was stricken with dysentery and famine. The new hospital was built on a hill called in Bantu **Adolinanongo** –***"looking out over the peoples."*** Ultimately more than 70 buildings were built on this site, not including the buildings for the leper colony, paid for out of his Nobel Prize. The hospital buildings were laid east-to-west to be shaded on both sides during the heat of the day. The road to the leper colony was lined by citrus trees. The planning, planting and building were often done by Schweitzer himself. By this year, **London Bridge** had sunken 102mm under traffic. **The Johnson-Reed Act** was passed by Congress based on the reports of the head of the **Federal Eugenics Record Office**, Harry Laughlin, who claimed that bad genes from immigrants were a **security threat to America's gene pool**. The legislation restricted immigration from the Balkans, Eastern Europe, Russian Jews, and the Mediterranean countries. This law was followed by **sterilization** laws, passed in 35 states, leading to the sterilization of over 60,000 people and setting a model for **Nazi** Germany to follow long before the laws were finally repealed in the 1960s.

## Step 125

**Juanita Sadler** was born in 1925. She was later the wife of Jim Hobson. John Van de Riet married on September 24, 1925. **MYA Dates :** About 250 mya, the

**Mesozoic Era and Triassic Period** began**,** marked by a massive worldwide **extinction of many species,** including about 90% of aquatic species. The **Miocene Epoch** began 25mya**. KYA Dates:** Around 250 kya, the **African Middle Stone Age** was characterized by small groups with limited skills in hunting and fishing, some of the evidence being that they ate large, not small tortoises. (Large ones are easier to catch.) Around 25kya, human images in art appear, as represented by **Venus of Willendorf**, a 4" statuette or talisman made of limestone now worth $60M and kept in the Natural History Museum of Vienna. It was discovered in 1908 near the Danube. Other Venus figures were subsequently found in many places, all of them overemphasizing features of fatness and fertility that would have been desirable and stimulating to nomadic people in difficult circumstances. These exaggerated features may have been satisfying in the same way that multiple red stripes on sticks stimulate and satisfy herring gull chicks, i.e. there are neurological reasons for this (See the work of Ramachandran). **BCE Dates:** Around 2500 (2480), the Great Pyramid of **Giza** was built**.** The building of the pyramid of **Giza** required 23 years. At that time, Egyptians were writing in **hieratic** cursive figures. In Britain, at **Grimes Graves** near Norfolk, a massive flint mine was begun from which 1000 tons of chalk had to be removed before 8 T of flint could be extracted from only one of its 500 shafts over 50 acres. This was enough flint from one shaft to make 10,000 edge-tools like axes. This mining operation required the products of other trades, such as timber from carpenters, clothing, cordage, and antler picks. In 146 **Polybius** witnessed the destruction of **Carthage. CE Dates:** In 1225 CE, **Francis of Assisi** wrote "*All Creatures of our God and King.*" In 1725, James Bradley discovered astronomical **aberration and nutation.** In 1825, on December 14, the **Decembrists** protested in the city streets of St. Petersburg. These were Russian nobles dissatisfied when Nicholas I became Tsar of All the Russias upon the death of his brother Alexander I. This was also the birth year of **Goyathlay**, known as Geronimo. **Thomas Campbell** made a preaching tour of Baptist churches in Virginia in 1825. And in 1925 **Rev. Edmund Woodward** completed the diocesan shrine at **ShrineMont** in Orkney Springs and the retreat center opened. **Jonathan Winters** was born in Dayton, OH on Nov. 11. On March 18, 1925, a **tornado** killed 695 people in Missouri, Indiana, and Illinois. The *Exhibition Internationale des Artes Décoratifs* opened in Paris, marking the beginning of the **Art-Deco** movement. At the University in Munich, Nobel-winning chemist **Richard Willstätter** resigned because of ***"compulsive, intolerant, and unconstitutional anti-Semitism."*** In 1925, the anthropologist **Frank Speck** ran afoul of Virginia's **Racial Integrity Act** when he published a monograph on the **Rappahannock** tribe in which he affirmed that the social traditions of the tribe were intact and therefore the Rappahannocks were still a Native American people, despite intermarriages with other groups. Speck made similar arguments for Pamunkey, Mattaponi, and others originally part of the Powhatan confederation. **Walter A. Plecker,** state Registrar of Vital Statistics, tried unsuccessfully to censor the monograph because it provided a legal basis

for the claims of people of mixed race to be "Indian" and therefore "white," in violation of the **Racial Integrity Act**. This law stayed on the books until 1945, disrupting the lives of African Americans, Native Americans, and many others. Speck refused to give in to the "***ignorant views of an iconoclastic politician***." Woodrow Wilson's successors, Harding and Coolidge, along with Treasury Secretary **Andrew Mellon,** reduced the upper rate on the **Federal Income Tax** from 70%, in 1921, originally set to cover war costs from 1917-1918, to 25 % in 1925. **William Reid Williams** was Wilson's Secretary of War and ancestor of **Gordon Reid Hall**, noted photographer of the 21st Century. On October 2, 1925 Richmond's four thousand foot long **Church Hill Tunnel** passing from Marshall St. to Chimborazo Park caved in on workers.

## Step 126

**Charles Stuart Speed** was born on May 8, 1926 in Hickman, KY. He was a long time family friend of Josephine Sullivan. He graduated as Valedictorian, served with Patton from 1944-1946 in the 3rd Army, and then worked for 30 years in civil service, mostly in the **Atomic Energy Agency,** against which he later successfully defended himself against a legal charge of homosexuality. **CE Dates:** On March 21, 1826, Schubert composed the **Great C Symphony** (No. 9). In the same year, as he struggled to get an appointment as musical director, he composed the ***Winterreise.*** **Edward A. Starling** was born in Kentucky. He later went to Ohio to work with his brother, Colonel Lyne Starling, in the mercantile. He followed the trade to New York, where through the defalcation of his partner he lost most of his wealth, thereafter going to Puget Sound as an Indian agent and returning to his mother's home in **Hopkinsville, KY** (in Christian Co. on the southern state line and East of Lake Barkley) to work with his brother William. In the Civil War he commanded the 35th Kentucky Mounted Infantry Regiment of Volunteers in the Union Army, not unlike the Confederate volunteer unit William Faulkner described, probably based on a family story, in ***The Unvanquished***. Starling's son was **Edmund W. Starling**, a bodyguard for presidents T. Roosevelt, Wilson, Harding, Coolidge, Hoover, and F.D. Roosevelt (1913-1943) and author of ***Starling of the White House*** (1946). In 1926, Evelyn Harkness Dauntesey sold **Agecroft** at auction to American **T.C. Williams, Jr.** He brought it to Richmond and rebuilt it on a hill overlooking the James River. Waverly Hills **Sanitorium** in KY was established by Dr. Petrof for treatment of **TB** the "*white plague*." It closed in 1961. **General Strike** in Great Britain (as described in *The Forsyte Saga* regarding that period). From August to December, record **rainfalls** in the **Mississippi** Valley were 200% of normal. Reinhold Niebuhr published the **Serenity Prayer,** which begins, **"*God grant me the serenity to accept the things I cannot change; courange to change the things I can; and wisdom to know the difference . . .*"** **Vivian Meyer** was born in 1926. She was nanny and photographer of 18,000 candid images of people in New York and Chicago. The **National Socialist**

**German Students Association** was founded at the University of Munich to win votes for a **"*healthy national attitude"*** and to eliminate opponents.

## Step 127

**Frank Rose, Jr.** attended Rosenthal Grammar School, Alexandria, LA from 1927 until 1929. **KYA Dates:** About 279kya, humans of *H. heidelbergensis* type fashioned obsidian projectile tips to attach to shafts of **spears** to throw at hippos and gazelles in the **Gandemotta** region of Ethiopia in East Africa. (Based on microscopic studies of points by Sahle *et al.* in 2013) **BCE Dates:** In 2700 (to 2750) BCE, work began on **Silbury Hill** in the Downs. It would become the largest man-made mound in Europe. **CE Dates:** On July 27, 1727, **Jane Franklin** married Edward Mecom, a Scottish saddler. John James Audobon published **Birds of America** in 1827**. Beethoven** died on March 26, 1827. At his funeral were 20,000 mourners. He left 138 opus-numbered works and 70 unnumbered works. The **Baltimore and Ohio** railroad was chartered as the first common carrier railroad, beginning at Viaduct Junction, Pennsylvania. The line from Baltimore to Wheeling was completed in 1852. On April 21, 1927 a great **flood swept** through the delta, **New Orleans, and Mississipi**, followed by **racial incidents.** At 468 cubic feet of water per second, it was a greater cataract than Niagara (234 cu ft/sec). And in **China** there was a **Revolution**. Meanwhile, **Lawrence Welk** formed his first band.

## Step 128

On Sept 26, 1928, **Jim Hobson** married Velma Collins. On December 27, in her letter to Helen, who married on December 22, 1928, **Frances Van de Riet** wrote of her doubts about marrying Joe Schimpf. She complained that they had not gone out for almost three weeks. He took her to the show on Sunday afternoon the 23rd. Not having a haircut for two months, she said that he looked like SANTA CLAUS. After listening to him brag about himself, she was thoroughly disgusted and called him a "boob." With no Christmas present and no ring, she thought the $2.80 box of *Andie's candies* she had received on Sunday was all she would ever get from him. **KYA Dates:** Around 28kya, **Neanderthals** disappeared. Remnants at one of the last known sites were the charcoal remains of a fire in **Gorham's Cave**, on Gibraltar. **CE Dates:** In 1428 CE, **Jeanne Darc** opposed the English rule of France. In 1628 **John Bunyan** was born in Elstow, Bedfordshire, where he lived most of his life. The **Vasa** ship sank near Stockholm. It was an empty, new ship. **Schubert** died on November 19, 1828**.** Only the year before he had been a pallbearer at Beethoven's funeral. Their graves are close together. The second edition of **Webster's *Dictionary*** was published. In 1928 Schweitzer wrote an article in the January issue of the *Contemporary Review* entitled "*The Relations of the White to the Couloured Races.*" in which he argued for the rights of native peoples. These rights are

**the right to habitation, to move freely, the right to the soil and subsoil (i.e. mineral rights), and to the use of it, to freedom of labor and exchange, to justice, to live within a natural national organization, to education.** He argues for the need of Western help. Westerners are obligated not just out of humanity but to atone for what they have already done. In the same year, **J.D. Rockefeller** funded the restoration of **Colonial Williamsburg.** The Foundation's funding ended in 1934. **Maya Angelou** was born in St. Louis as Marguerite Johnson on April 4, 1928. The humanitarian and poet had many adventures, including being the first female conductor on a San Francisco streetcar, a brothel madam, a dancer, writer, filmmaker, actress in a *Porgy and Bess* touring company in Europe, world traveler, translator, linguist, professor at Wake Forest, confidant of Martin Luther King (who died on her birthday in 1968) and friend of James Baldwin and Malcolm X and Bill Clinton (speaking at his 1993 inauguration), writer of greeting card verses, speaker, and recipient of more than 30 honorary degrees. Baldwin took her to a party at Jules Pfeiffer's where Pfeiffer's wife met her and insisted that she write down her stories for publication. She did. *I know why the Caged Bird Sings* was the result. This inspired other black women to write about their experiences. She died on May 29, 2014.

## Step 129

**Wilson Hobson** married **Lela Mosier** in 1929 and **Frank Rose** attended Circle Park elementary school in Fort Worth, Texas from 1929 until 1932. The Rose family lived at 2103 Columbus Ave. Ft. Worth, TX (Tarrant County) until 1932. According to **Ann Van de Riet Kirk**, her sister Helen lived with her husband Ralph at 2805 Galena in St Louis. When Joseph Schimpf came with his brother to visit Frances's family in St Louis, sixteen year-old Ann looked them over and said to her sister, **"*You're going to marry him*?"** Ann never forgot that her sister turned and slapped her, saying, **"*What do you know about love*?"** Joseph and Frances married on September 11, 1929. **Shirley Heinrich** was born on March 15, 1929 in Pittsburgh. Later, as Mrs. Robert Cullom, wife of Lt. Col. Bob Cullom in Albuquerque, NM, she was a close friend of **Jo Rose** and Bob was a colleague and close friend of Frank Rose. **MYA Dates:** The **Permian Period** began around 290 mya**. KYA Dates:** Around 29 kya, pottery was made in the **Xianrendong cave** in China. Production continued on site for 17.5K years. **CE Dates:** The **Battle of Patay** was in **1429**. The English were giving siege to Orléans and were driven beyond the Loire by **Jeanne Darc**'s army of 5000. Later, the Dauphin entered Rheims ahead of 12,000 and was crowned King. In 1829, **Robert Peel's** Metropolitan Police Act established justices called Commissioners at 4 Whitehall Place, behind Scotland Yard. Wellington congratulated him. Public alarm after the Gordon Riots, Ratcliffe murders and Cato conspiracy led to this decision to fund a professional city police force. The two porticoes designed by **Benjamin Latrobe** were installed,

completing the building of the White House. In 1929 **Langston Hughes** graduated from Lincoln University and Alexander Fleming discovered **penicillin**. This was the first year of the **Gulag** in the Soviet Union. In October came the Stock **Market Crash** and the appearance of ***Buck Rogers in the 25th Century,*** a science fiction version of *Rip Van Winkle*. Rogers awoke after 500 years of suspended animation **"*to see Wilma Deering flash through the sky, firing a rocket pistol*."** These were **Ray Bradbury**'s words about the comic strip that appeared in the newspaper when he –and Frank Rose—were 9 years old. **Irene Cook and Alice Jensen** were teenagers in Chicago during the Great Depression. Both had to drop out of high school and go to work at Illinois Bell Co. at the switchboard. **Annegrete Franke** was born in Kaldenkirchen, Germany. She and her mother followed her father to New York in 1935, where she learned to play the harmonica, piano, and guitar; learned Spanish, and dreamed of becoming a musical conductor. The Newbery winner was the ***Trumpeter of Krakow*** by Kelly. The **Ikhwan** ("brothers"), former allies of the **Saud** family whose jihad was to be relentless in the pursuit of a utopian Islamic Arabia, were crushed in battle with King Abdul Aziz ben **Saud,** who was equally determined to build a modern state without extremists. On March 20, t1929, the Congress refused to participate in the **League of Nations**. In 1929, as a boy, Fred **Urquhart** followed **Monarch butterflies** as they flew south from Toronto and wondered where they went. By the 1970's he had tracked their 3-generational pattern of migration, studied their hibernation in the Sierra Madres of Mexico and Texas, and understood their physiology. Barbara Kingsolver in ***Flight Behavior*** later wrote about the paths of butterflies, the Earth's breath, and humans in their delusions.

## Step 130

In letters on April 11, 17 and 22, 1930, **Joseph Schimpf** wrote to his wife, Frances, who was staying with her sick father in St. Louis. He complained about her absence. Finally, in the letter of April 22, he said: ***If you stay away too long you will find somebody else in your place, After the 26th, I am going to change the lock in the door and you can throw away the key. I will send your other things to St. Louis by express. That's straight from the shoulder. Your former husband, Joe.*** In August, however, **Rosemary Schimpf** was born in Chicago to Joseph and Frances (Van de Riet) Schimpf. Frances wrote from the hospital regarding the birth of Rosemary on August 2, 1930. Contractions started at 3:30 AM. They left for the hospital at 7:30. Rosemary was born at 7:55 and it was an easy delivery. Joe wanted to name the baby Teresa but Frances insisted on the name of Rosemary for her mother Rose and her sister Mary. On November 12, 1930, **Eva Brauneis Schimpf** died at the home of Joseph and Frances in Chicago. Shortly before her death, she told Ann Kirk that she wasn't sure that Joseph was William's son because she had had an affair with a Jewish doctor. (Using DNA tests in 2012-2013, however, his daughter Kathleen was able to prove that Joseph and the other brothers had the same father.) **MYA Dates:** About 300mya,the Earth underwent **Worldwide cooling** due to the extreme eccentricity of its orbit, superimposed on cyclical patterns of a rocking axis and the wobble of precession. About 30mya, the recent shifting pattern of **ice sheets across Europe** began. Pockets of Neanderthals and Sapiens were trapped from time to time. Flora and fauna disappeared from **Antarctica** as circumpolar currents effectively isolated the continent as it moved further south. **KYA Dates:** By 30kya, most Neanderthals died out but 20% of the *Homo sapiens sapiens* gene pool in Europe derived from *Homo sapiens neanderthalis,* including a protective form of a gene protecting against **microcephaly. BCE Dates:** In 730 BCE Israel was exiled and dispersed after the time of **Jeroboam II**, Amos, and Hosea. Judah continued under Ahaz, Hezekiah, Isaiah, Uzziah, and Micah. Assyria was ruled by **Sargon II** and **Sennacherib**. In 530 BCE the **Babylonian Exile** ended in the time of the prophet Ezekiel when **Cyrus** the Persian ruled. In 430 BCE **Ezra** was in Judah and **Araxerxes I** in Persia. In 330 BCE **Alexander the Great** began his conquests. **CE Dates:** John **Winthrop**, leader of the Puritans, arriving at Cape Sable on June 5, 1630, wrote that as the colonists neared the coast, "***there came a smell off shore like the smell of a garden"*** from the forests not yet visible and not yet replaced by street grids. In 1730 in Chesterfield County, Virginia, the **Coal Mining** Industry began at **Midlothian.** In 1830 **Oliver Towles** built a brick home on the northeast corner of the plat for the town of **McMinnville,** TN, on property purchased from Joseph Colville. He called it "Rebel Hill." Towles became a well-known merchant. Death came on January 22, 1930 for **Steven Mather,** the great advocate for national parks. The **First Christian Church** (Disciples) in Alexandria, VA was founded

in 1930. Originally supported by the Capitol Missionary Society, it met in homes, then in a store on W. Glebe Road, then on Mt. Vernon Ave., where it was called the Hume Springs Christian Church, the only Disciples church in Alexandria at that time. Its first minister was Rev. Ralph W. Frame, assisted by Henry Brewood of Washington, D.C. Rev. Frame died in 1947. In April, the **Williamsburg Presbyterian Church** sold their Palace Green property and prepared to move into a new building on Richmond Road. In 1930 the Newbery winner was ***Hitty, Her First Hundred Years*** and **Grant Wood** painted *American Gothic*. **Schweitzer**'s second part of the work on Paul was published. He had worked on this while interned by the French as a "German". *Die Mystik des Apostels Paulus* (trans. 1931). **Nora Guthrie** died on June 13 at the hospital in **Norman, OK.** Werner **Von Braun** joined the Association for space Travel and began to work with his mentor, **Obert,** using liquid propellants. Later, von Braun showed his rocket to the army and got an offer, which he accepted –unlike some of his associates, who did not want to turn their interest in space exploration into armament-production. Von Braun, however, had no scruples concerning the sources of funding for his research. He wanted to go to the moon –as it had been depicted in an early film, *The Woman in the Moon*, based on Obert's research –one way or the other. **Depression** and Hitler came to Germany. The population of **Chicago** was 3,376,808. **President Hoover** raised the Federal Income Tax upper bracket from 25 % to 63%. Under Franklin Roosevelt, it rose to 94/%. The following commentary on 1930 was written by the poet and editor, **Louis Untermeyer** as the liner notes for the Decca "**Songs of Our Times**" record series, featuring the orchestra of Ted Straeter:

"***The 'boom to bust' decade crashed into a stockpile of over-produced products and wildly extravagant dreams. America had huffed and had puffed and had almost blown itself in.***

***The 1930s opened with little business trading and a formidably growing army of unemployed. President Hoover appointed a committee to study the problem. Cities began large scale local relief. Congress passed the Hawley-Smoot Tariff to protect American industry despite the protest of one thousand leading economists and the plea of thirty-three nations. It created a world depression. The city of Chicago couldn't pay its employees. Secretary of the Treasury Andrew Mellon predicted the country would make steady progress in 1930. He said there was no reason for pessimism. Nevertheless, Congress passed emergency relief measures.***

***The London Naval Conference opened to regulate the size and weight of world navies. Secretary of State Henry L. Stimson headed the American delegation. At the end of the Conference he told the Senate that ratification of the Naval Arms Limitation Treaty would be epoch-making in the cause of peace.***

***The "epoch of peace," nevertheless had a grim look. It included the arrest and imprisonment of Mahatma Gandhi for leading civil disobedience in India. It also***

*included Mussolini's speech to his fascist militiamen, saying he intended to build as many warships as France built ship for ship, ton for ton. He ended by declaring that "right" is a vain word without "might," that phrases are fine, but bullets, machine guns, ships, and planes are better. By 1930, three hundred thousand Chinese were dead in China's Civil War. In Germany the Nazis gained the Reichstag seats and broke windows in stores belonging to minority groups. The League of Nations celebrated its tenth anniversary. General Pershing dedicated the Flanders Field Cemetery in Belgium.*

*Here at home the Wickersham Commission reported that law enforcement was crippled by overtaxed and ineffective Federal Court machinery. Prohibition was the principal offense. Fiorello LaGuardia called liquor enforcement futile. A Literary Digest poll indicated a great majority for repeal or modification.*

*The people reacted to declining business in the mid-term elections. Republican majority in the House was reduced from 103 to 2, and in the Senate form 16 to 0. The Bank of the United States closed, and with its sixty-two branches throughout the United States. This event in December caused the blackest week in the history of Wall Street.*

*A meteor fell upon a herd of reindeer in Siberia, killing 130; a lake appeared where the meteor fell. A mob of 3500 people rioted in an attempt to enter the Museum of Natural History to hear Albert Einstein lecture on relativity; women were trampled in their effort to hear an explanation of his theory which only a dozen people in America could understand. Chief Justice William Howard Taft of the Supreme Court resigned and Charles Evan s Hughes was nominated by the President to take his place. Taft died the following month. The West suffered under an unprecedented heat wave. A serious drought followed, killing crops and cattle. A sixty foot head of George Washington, carved into the rock of Mt. Rushmore, South Dakota, was unveiled.*

*The sports year opened with Stanford beating Army 34-13 in the Palo Alto post season football game. Gene Sarazen won the Miami open golf title for the fourth time in a row. Knute Rockne was in the sports news for his brilliant management of undefeated Notre Dame's football team. The American yacht Enterprise beat Sir Thomas Lipton's Shamroch four races out of seven to retain the America's Cup. In baseball, the Philadelphia Athletics won the World Series, winning four out of six games from the St Louis Cardinals.*

*The Depression was making itself felt in the theatrical field. New ventures and road shows were curtailed, although there were still many fine things to see. Strike up the Band, with a George Gershwin score, won wide approval. Other successes were Girl Crazy, also a Gershwin score; Three's a Crowd with Fred Allen and Clifton Webb; Dishonored Lady with Katherine Cornell; Ed Wynn's Simple Simon; Earl Carroll's Vanities and George White's Scandals. The Green Pastures, tender, primitive and poetic, carried off the Pulitzer Prize.*

*Lillian Gish made her first talkie, One Romantic Night, Norma Shearer starred in The Divorcee; Ronald Coleman in Raffles. The Marx Brothers lightened the burden of Depression with their zany Animal Crackers.*

*The 1930 season was Broadway's dullest in twelve years. Half of its legitimate theaters closed. Gigolos were paid ten cents a dance in Broadway dance halls. Night Clubs suffered their worst season. Vaudeville was near its end as major entertainment; nevertheless, it still enjoyed such big names as Jack Benny, Louis Armstrong, Ethel Merman, Al Siegal, Cliff Edwards, Sophie Tucker, Burns and Allen.*

*Radio and radio entertainment were growing even during the Depression thirties. Radio programs began to be carried on telephone wires to outlet stations throughout the nation. With the creation of the network, radio advertising became national, programs bigger and more expensive. Popular music and popular bands suffered, but the big name bands held together. Among them were Abe Lyman's, Ben Bernie's, Duke Ellington's and Horace Heidt's.*

*Besides the award to Green Pastures, already mentioned, the Pulitzer Prizes were awarded as follows: for the novel to Oliver La Farge's Laughing Boy, for history to Claude Van Tyne's The War of Independence, for biography to Marquis James's The Raven, for poetry to Conrad Aiken's Selected Poems. Sinclair Lewis's Babbitt was honored with the Nobel Prize and Lewis went to Sweden to accept the award.*

*Although 1930 was a year of nerves and jitters, its songs did not reflect turmoil or anxiety. On the contrary, the songs were full of courage and gaiety—and as confidently as ever, love."*

*Songs on the record were: Dancing with tears in my eyes, I'm alone because I love you, Two hearts in three quarter time, It happened in Monterey, Moonlight on the Colorado, The waltz you saved for me, Body and Soul, Something to remember you by, Time on my hands, Embraceable you, I got rhythm, What is this thing called love, Beyond the blue horizon, three little words, You're driving me crazy, Blue again, Exactly like you, On the sunny side of the street, The king's horses, Stein Song (college drinking song for U. of Maine), Lady play your mandolin, Sing something simple, You brought a new kind of love to me.*

## A procession, not a story

**Dancing with tears in my eyes, but dancing. Follow the procession through the Valley Gate, heedless of all. So I have danced into the Peaceful City to timbrels and lute, to claves and sax and cowbell. All who saw me proclaimed, "Sing something simple!" But I sang my own song. I found my own peace. No one told me**

**how. A procession--not a planned trip with a destination. A procession--not a story. No one guaranteed my release. I surrendered, dancing with tears in my eyes before the ark of the presence, my clothes flying off as Govinda, Gopala, Enkidu, Changing Woman and Bacchus wheeled, and a chorus of Michals complained of indecency and excess. The Valley Gate, the mighty gate, be lifted up! And be lifted up you ancient doors! Lift your skirts and twirl, you Mummers and Sufis! Swerve around Times Square and square times in a whirl of confetti. Earth twirls round admiring her green gown. Come, let us worship and bow down in the secret center of quiet, the presence always given, always available, the reliable reality. "I am the Lord of the Dance," said he. Turn and turn till you come round right. Turn until morning has broken. Dance on.**

**One thing happens and then another. Stories are not what happens but what we make of our relentless, bewildering Event. Your divine walk is a torrent of inexplicable happenings where stories appear and dissolve. Your procession includes and exceeds all stories. Working continually on yourself, as Sivananda said, in "ceaseless, selfless service," you arrive. But where? A displacement occurs. But to what? A step more and resistance gives way. You shift frames. You fall like petals to water, landing in the sky, settling, falling open in surrender. No procession ends. You settle. You shift frames. One thing happens and then another. *Work on yourself. Walk the path.***

## Step 131

Half way around the dance floor now--always moving counterclockwise--we come to 1931. **John Ewell Hobson** and **Josephine Janes Helm** (Mrs. R.T. Helm) died on May 11, 1931**.** It was also the year of the births of **James and Jerome (Jerry) Schimpf**. Jerry married Beverly and had two children, Matt and Karen. Karen had three children. On February 6, 1931, **Bill McCabe** was born in Avery, OK. He attended school in Pawnee, OK, graduated from OSU in 1955, received two master's degrees from GWU, served in the USN for 20 years, was a Master Mason, a deacon of the Metro Baptist

Church, and a co-worker of **Frank L. Rose** at the OU Health Center. He died 12/14/1984. **Dick Lapinski** was born on June 20, 1931. **BCE Dates** In 3100 BCE Egyptians were writing with **glyphic figures. CE Dates:** In 1431 CE **Jeanne Darc, *"la Pucelle,"*** was burned at the stake by the British in Rouen. Michael **Faraday** published a paper in 1831 based on **Roget's** 1820 paper on moving pictures. His paper was read by the Belgian inventor, **Joseph Plateau.** Professor Louis **Agassiz** published a paper on Amazonian fish, which he had studied in the von Martinus collection, and began to work with **Cuvier,** an anti-Lamarckian. In her parents' parlor on their Arlington estate overlooking the city of Washington, **Mary Anna Custis** married **Lt. Robert E. Lee.** Six of their seven children were born in the same house. In 1931 nine black men were tried in **Scottsboro**, AL for rape of 2 white women. **Schweitzer**'s books, *More from the Primeval Forest* and *Out of My Life and Thought* were published. The latter had a postscript appended in 1949. **Japan** invaded **China** (Manchuria), installing emperor **Puyi** as the new leader of a "***free Manchuria*.**"

## Step 132

**Frank Rose** attended North Side JHS in Ft. Worth, TX from 1932 until 1933. The Rose family moved to 3016 Springdale Rd. Ft..Worth, TX. **CE Dates** In 732 CE **Spanish Arabs** were defeated in Southern France by a wolf-skinned army. On August 1, 1632 the Society of Jesus condemned **atomism.** William Gooch, Governor, attended the 1732 dedication of the chapel of the **Wren Building** at William and Mary and in Rohrau, Lower Austria, **Franz Josef Haydn** was born to the Croatian family of a wheelwright. By the age of six he was on his way to Hainburg with his elderly cousin, Matthias Frankh, to be trained as a musician. Two years later, he entered the choir school of St. Stephen's Cathedral, Vienna. He lived there for nine years, learning music, the harpsichord, and violin. In 1832 , **Plateau**, working on the research of Roget and Faraday, invented the **spindle viewer** or phenakistoscope, a device using disks and mirrors. With *The Fruits of Philosophy* **Charles Knowlton**, M.D. began the **birth control** movement. He was punished and fined. After publication by Besant and Bradlaugh in 1877, the publicity on the trial spread the word. (NY April 9, 2014). **Agassiz** came to the Collège de Neuchâtel on the recommendation by Humboldt. His ideas about **catastrophic change** during the ice ages led him to generalize that life was periodically exterminated and renewed and that species were constant over the time that they existed. He was a publicity hound, popular in the lecture circuit. His wife left him, taking the children, but later died of tuberculosis. The children joined him in Boston. Although a brilliant anatomist, his conclusions about the impossibility of evolutionary change and the racial superiority of Caucasians have diminished his scientific stature. His second wife, **Elizabeth Cabot Cary Agassiz**, later became the first president of **Radcliffe**. A parcel at South Water and Clark streets in **Chicago** sold for $100. **John Thomas**, M.D. arrived in

Virginia from Great Britain and began to preach the controversial "***no soul tenets." Die Bürgschaft (The Covenant)*** was produced in Berlin on March 10, 1932 with libretto by Caspar Neher and music by Kurt Weill. It was Weill's statement about the broken covenant or social contract between individuals and community. The **Saudi** royal family, with help of the **Wahabis,** became rulers of Arabia. Babe **Zecharias** from Beaumont, Texas, won gold medals for hurdle and javelin at the Olympics. She went on to win 36 golf tournaments. **Stanley Morrison** designed the print face known as ***Times Roman*** for the *Times* of London. It is the print face in which this work was composed. Dane Ole K. **Kristiansen** invented wooden **Legos,** named for *leg godt* (***"play well"***) and Jerry Siegel and Joe Shuster, both from Cleveland, invented the ***Superman*** comic series. **Mary Frye,** seeking to console her friend Margaret Schwarzkopf, mourning for the family left behind in Germany, wrote: ***"Do not stand at my grave and weep. I am not there. I do not sleep. I am a thousand winds that blow. I am the diamond glint in snow. I am the sunlight on ripened grain. I am the gentle autumn's rain . . ."*** After it appeared in the newspapers, this poem became popular for funerals. On December 19, 1932, an infant wrapped in a blanket and laid in a vacant lot in Flint Michigan was discovered by General Motors worker **Claude J. Shivley**, who was coming home at the end of his shift. He put the child in a taxi and sent it to the hospital, where the baby stayed for nine days until being put up for adoption. George and Lela Christensen became his foster parents and then adopted him, naming him for his adoptive father. "**Jimmy Snowbank,"** as the *Flint Journal* named him, was 52 years old before he learned the story of his discovery. He worked for General Motors and retired in Cheboygan, Michigan.

## Step 133

On March 17, 1933 **Frank L. Rose, Sr.** did a title search for his Riverside property. **Frank L. Rose, Jr.** attended North Side JHS in Ft. Worth, TX . He received a street guide to Chicago made for the World's Fair. Most of the ads in it were Dr. Mobec's warnings and remedies concerning venereal disease. **Charles Schimpf** was born to Joseph and Frances in Chicago. **KYA Dates:** Around 33 kya, **Dogs** were domesticated from wolves, possibly by humans bribing the wolves with food. **CE Dates:** By religious tradition, on Friday, April 3, 33 CE at 3:00 p.m., the **Crucifixion** occurred, followed by a solar eclipse "from the 6th to the 9th hour" (Mt.15.33), followed by the **Resurrection** experience of the disciples at 4:00 a.m. on Sunday, April 5. (Based on calculations of the Romanian astronomers Liviu Mircea and Tiberiu Oproiu, <WP 030510) In 1033 CE **Mount Fuji** erupted in Japan while in Europe the anniversary of the crucifixion stimulated the founding of mendicant orders and pilgrimages to Jerusalem. By 1433, the western voyages of the Chinese fleets ended. In 1633, at the time of Samuel **Pepys**' birth, the **British population** was 4 million. **Galileo** was silenced on June 22, 1633. Johannes **Brahms** was born on May 7, 1833, the same day of the month as Peter **Tchaikovsky**.

The latter once referred to Brahms's music as a pedestal without a statue. Brahms admired Tchaikovsky in equal measure. Using a stipend from the king, **Hans Christian Andersen** compiled his *Fairy Tales* as he traveled in Europe. The population of the town of **Chicago** was 350. It was less than half a square mile in area. In 1933, a photographer at Inverness claimed to have taken a picture of the **Loch Ness Monster**. Meanwhile, there was a real monster appearing across the Channel. **Hitler** was appointed by **Hindenberg**, In March, the Nazis took over the government. On May 10, 1933, German students held a torchlight march through Munich and **burned books** as 70,000 people **watched**. On January 30, Nazis had paraded with torches through Berlin. Opponents were taken to camp by the **Hilfspolizei**. The new Nazi flag replaced the German flag. Saying "Guten Tag" instead of "Heil Hitler" became an act of ***"ordinary treachery"*** (Heimtücke). The German population was 66 million. National Socialists murdered or led to the deaths of 6 million Jews, and 130,000 others, incarcerated thousands and interrogated and tortured over 1 million non-Jewish Germans. On March 21, 1933, on the **Day of Potsdam,** Hitler proclaimed the **Third Reich**, standing at the tomb of Friedrich the Great. He called himself the *Executor of German History.* The state imposed **Gaue** districts replaced legitimate *Länder* and elected parliaments were replaced by the Community of People or **Volksgemeinschraft**. On February 3, Hitler told his Reichswehr commanders that he intended to exceed the troop limits of the Versailles Treaty (100,000), to re-arm, and to seize more living space for Germans in the East (***Lebensraum***). In October, Germany withdrew from the League of Nations. Jews and other non-Aryans were called ***"enemies of the Race"*** (*Rassenfeind*) and sexual unions with them called ***"racial disgrace"*** (*Rassenschande*). The Free Youth (*Bündische Jugend*) and Protestant Youth groups were ended when National Socialists and the Church made a treaty to consolidate youth organizations. Establishment of Munich's **House of German Art.** Above the entrance were Hitler's words: *"**Art is a noble mission which demands fanaticism.**"* The *"**confusing swindle**"* of modern art was banned and a "***merciless war of purification against the remaining elements of our cultural subversion***" was later declared in 1937. On April 7, 1933 (Jo Evelyn Gage's ninth birthday.) the **Law of Restoration of the Permanent Civil Service** was passed to remove Jews from universities. In Munich's Königsplatz on May 10 at 10:30 p.m., the National Socialist German Students Association collected tickets and led the **Burning of Books.** The **British left Iraq**. Muslims in Mosul (Nineveh) persecuted the Christians, who spoke Arabic and Aramaic and prayed at the Dominican **Church of the Clock & Latins**. The Muslims prayed at the **Mosque of Nebi Yunus**, on Jonah's grave, built in 640. Saudis signed contracts with **Standard Oil**. The Securities Act gave **FTC** responsibility to promulgate accounting standards and hold CEOs and Directors criminally responsible for false financial statements. The **Chicago World's Fair,** or Progress Exhibition, showed visitors the world of the future. About 39 million people visited the exhibition, which was built on lakefront created between 39th St. and Roosevelt Rd. A key landmark was the

two-towered **SkyRide**. One of the visitors was **Ray Bradbury**, who later wrote about it. The **Wilton** estate was moved downriver to Richmond, Virginia on the James by the **Colonial Dames**. James Hilton's ***Lost Horizon*** was published, introducing readers to Katmandu and **Shangri-La**. In Germany, a **sterilization law** was passed to assure racial purity and 600,000 were ultimately sterilized. **Albert Schweitzer** wrote about a trip down an African river: "***Lost in thought I sat on the deck of the barge struggling to find the elementary and universal conception of the ethical which I had not discovered in any philosophy. Sheet after sheet I covered with disconnected sentences merely to keep myself concentrated on the problem. Late on the third day, at the very moment when, at sunset, we were making our way through a herd of hippopotamuses, there flashed upon my mind, unforeseen and unsought, the phrase, 'Reverence for Life.' The iron door had yielded: the path in the thicket had become visible. Now I had found my way to the idea in which affirmation of the world and ethics are contained side by side.***"

## Step 134

In 1934, **Frank Rose, Jr.** attended Northside H.S. He worked part-time at R.E.H. Gaedke's Cities Service Station on the corner of Sylvania and Belknap, Ft. Worth, TX The gasoline had to be hand-pumped. Sometimes customers pumped their own and drove off without paying. He attended North Side HS in Ft. Worth until 1937, when he started at TCU. **Delores Schimpf** was born to Joseph and Frances**. KYA Dates:** About 34 kya, the **first mutation occurred to increase significantly the size of the human brain. CE Dates:** In 534 CE **Halley's Comet** was observed and recorded by Chinese astronomers as a very bright occurrence, possibly because it rained material onto Earth. A **solar minimum** followed. In 1834, based on the research of Roget, Faraday, and Plateau, George **Horner** invented the **zoetrope,** or "**wheel of life**," using 2 cylinders. It was a forerunner of the moving picture. In 1934, **Schweitzer** was Hibbert lecturer at Oxford and London and Gifford Lecturer at Edinburgh. In Germany, on June 30, during the **Night of the Long Knives** (*Röhm Putsch*), hundreds of Old Fighters (*Alte Kämpfer*) were shot, including leaders of the Brownshirts (*Sturmabteilung)*. This silenced other potential rivals. In Berlin, **Paul Hindemith** attempted to produce his opera, ***Mathis der Mahler,*** for which he had written words and music. Although the opera was ostensibly about the painter Grünewald during the Peasants War of 1524, Nazi censors understood its real intent and banned the première. **Hessy Levinsons Taft** was born to Jacob and Pauline Levinsons, Latvian Jewish musicians, on May 17, 1934, in Berlin. Six months later, her mother had her picture taken. Without the family's permission, the photographer submitted the photo to a beauty contest run by the Nazis. Hessy's Gerber-baby-like photograph won as the image of the "***perfect Aryan baby.***" The family left Berlin. Hessy later became a chemistry professor at St. John's University in NYC. Secretary **Cordell Hull** signed reciprocal trade treaties to stimulate trade. The **Securities and Exchange**

**Commission** was created by legislation to outlaw insider trading and other market crimes. (See EDGAR system online.) Rockefeller continued to fund the restoration of **Colonial Williamsburg** between 1928 and 1934. **Robert Geiger**, an AP sports reporter, coined the term **Dust Bowl** to describe what was happening in the Great Plains. The marginal land that had been plowed during World War I to produce $2 wheat was **mined out** and left to the winds, which swept it up and turned the sky red, yellow, and brown. Droughts came, as they had cyclically come for more than 500 years. Southwestern Kansas and the Oklahoma panhandle were the most affected, but Nebraska and other midwestern states did not escape. **Clara Lutkemeier** of Adams County, Nebraska said, "***The birds fluttered, the rabbits ran, and the sky turned black. We thought it was a twister, and we took to the cave and stayed for about an hour. When we got back to the house, the dust lay so thick in the back bedroom we just moved the mattress into the middle room so we could sleep.***" (Adams County Historical Society). Normal annual precipitation in Adams County was 25.71 inches. In 1934, it was 15.57 inches. On May 9, 1934, a UP story told of a, ***"gigantic cloud of dust, 1500 miles long, 900 miles across and two miles high,*** *(which)* ***buffeted and smothered almost one-third of the nation****."* Pilots had to climb to 15,000 feet to find clear air. Later, the ***Monthly Weather Review*** (February, 1935), estimated **350 million tons of dirt** to be in the storm. **Cattle were blinded** and ran in circles. Teachers hung lanterns so that the children could read. **Russian thistles** (tumbleweeds) were used for forage. Hundreds of people developed **lung spots** from inhaled dust. The **Easter Seal** Society was founded in Elyria, Ohio.

## Step 135

On March 2, 1935, **Frank Rose, Senior** took out a $500 life insurance policy for his son, **Frank L. Rose, Jr.** And **Virginia (Virg) Schimpf** was born to Frances and Joseph Schimpf. She later married **Peter Lopez** and had daughters **Laura** L. Serrano (children Taina and Emilio). Frances, and **Teresa**. In a letter to her sister, **Helen**, **Frances Schimpf** wrote about her bus trip to Chicago with Bobby and Charmagne. .**MYA Dates:** About 35 mya in the **Eocene**, a **bolide** (fiery meteor that explodes on impact) struck the Eastern coast of North America, making the basin for the **Chesapeake** Bay. A **DNA-duplication** occurred during the period 35+/- 5 mya which resulted in **primates** receiving three color-sensitive **retinal pigments** (R,Y,B) not found in New World monkeys, which have only two pigments. Consequently, a human being can combine detectors of 100 shades of light (its rods) with its 5 million color-sensitive cones and cortical integration to discriminate 2.3 million colors. This capability was selectively pressed into service **when fruits like palms and figs began to disappear** from their habitat and it became necessary to use color distinctions to find edible leaves. **KYA Dates:** About 350kya, under selective pressure of glaciation, *Homo habilis* gave way to *Homo neanderthalis.* Around 35kya a **Creative Explosion of Art** began with figurative

pictures. **Lewis W**illiams, archeologist working with records of an Afrikaner named **Blake** on the ancient and current stories and **art of the San** (**Bushmen)**, figured out the meaning of the paintings of both the recent San and the ancient inhabitants of **Alta Mira** Spain. Taking into account current neurological research, they were ***"nailing down"*** their visions to the walls where they observed them when in **altered states of consciousness**. The visions included the grid lines and spots seen in such mental states as wells as blobs of color and the animals of their respective regions. In aboriginal culture of **Australia,** the rituals and tradition survive. The pictures painted of fish, earth mother and other figures **compress stories into a small visual field**. In ritual, the narrative is recited and sung, dances reenact some of the events, and costumes and body painting enhance the ritual, which is performed at night. Click sticks, didgeridoo and other instruments are used, and the group performs the story in the ancient place, where the paintings still exist on the cliff walls. **BCE Dates:** In 3500 BCE **Harrow Hill** was one of several early flint mines needed for the edge-tools required for clearing land (e.g. axes) and farming. **CE Dates:** Traditionally, 350 CE is a date given for the composition of the **Heart Sutra,** which reminds us that our ideas and words about reality are not the reality to which they refer, and that the insight which takes us to the other shore, the side of wisdom, is of the emptiness (or spaciousness) and dependence of things and ideas, particularly of forced choices like being and non-being. Emptiness is neither being nor non-being. Like Lucretius's description, after Democritus and Epicurus, of "atoms and the void," this notion of emptiness seems at first barren and uncomforting. But as in the *Pieta* Mary held emptiness in her lap and as St. John of the Cross and Mother Teresa contemplated the dark nights of their souls, so a meditation on emptiness causes one to reflect on ***what it is*** that is empty. Dependent, derivative and perhaps inconsequential, we are all luminous empty vessels, neither being nor non-being. And in spaciousness is both the exhaustion of all effort and the potential for all growth and development, the acceptance of the given and the flowing away of all attachments and desire for reward. So Christ, did not grasp for equality with the ultimate, but "emptied himself, taking the form of a servant." **Gone, gone past control, ideas, sensations. Gone, past being and non-being. Gone, past knowing. Beyond all frames of reference**. Once beyond, we cross over to the shore of wisdom. ***Gatay, gatay, gatay***. *Walk the path*. In 1535 CE, the heads of **Thomas More** and Bishop **John Fisher** were impaled on London Bridge. The **Great Awakening**, began in 1735, led by J. Edwards. It ended in 1741, presumably because everyone went back to sleep. The story of the Virgins Waiting for the Bridegroom reminds one of the difficulty of retaining an insight--even if one is a Bodhisattva-- while living in the stream of life's apparent *nonsequiturs* and catastrophes. In the same year, the sixth Lord **Fairfax** came to Virginia to establish his claim to the **Northern Neck Proprietary,** later called the **Fairfax Grant.** He built **Greenway Court** in Winchester and lived there until his death. In 1835, the **Watt House** was built on a farm near Gaines Mill in the valley of the Chickahominy River near Richmond. **Hans Christian Andersen** published his *Fairy*

*Tales* and became famous—even in Odense, where his family had known great misfortunes. A parcel a South Water and Clark streets in **Chicago** which had sold for $100 in 1832 sold for $15,000 owing to land speculation after the opening of the shipping channel in 1834, harbor improvements, and immigration. **Sophie Radford De Meissner,** widow of a diplomat to Russia, biographer of her military father, and spiritualist, died in 1935. **Wiley Post** and **Will Rogers** died in an airplane crash in Alaska on August 15, 1935. J**anskey and Reber** studied **static** for ATT and discovered **radio signals from the sun and Milky Way**. Thus began **radio-telescopy**. On September 8, 1935, **Huey Long** was assassinated in Baton Rouge, a story later captured by poet Robert Penn Warren in *All the King's Men.* Dr. Bart Hodge, inventor, physicist, early teacher of FORTRAN, and IBM engineer, didn't need a poet to tell him about the Longs. He remembered how Huey's brother, who farmed next door, never repaid a debt to his father. And he remembered how the self-entitled Long pulled puppet strings to animate an army of supporters in the bayous, billiard halls, and political snake-pits of Louisiana. Bart and Elsie left and didn't look back. So, earlier, had Frank L. Rose, Sr. **Howard Johnson's** restaurant chain was founded as an ice cream store with **28 flavors**. Richard first ate in the orange-roofed restaurant in the 1950s in Memphis. In the 1970s, the Roses frequented another HJ on the Bypass in Warrenton, where they always caught up on local events talking to Mary, the grandmotherly waitress. April 14, 1935 was known as **Black Sunday** in SW **Kansas** because of the severity of the dust storm. Later, a few **swarms of grasshoppers** appeared. Despite flagrant aggression in Asia and in Europe, the U.S. passed a series of **neutrality laws.** Under Benito **Mussolini,** Italy captured **Ethiopia**. On April 2, 1935 **Hitler** named Munich the *"**Capital of the Movement.**"* On November 9, the coffins of the sixteen **Blood Martyrs** (*Blutzeugen*) of the *Rechswehr* movement were brought by torch parade for installation at the *Königsplatz*, where an eternal death watch was established. The former public square became a marching ground and nationalistic shrine which locals called the **Slab**.

## Step 136

In 1936, **Jo Evelyn Gage** lived at 1914 Gorman St. in Waco, Texas. Her mother sent her a handmade "***mother's day card from your mother,"*** drawn by her friend and fellow patient in the sanatorium, Pat Hoyle. (Susan Knight has it now.) **Orville Fletcher** was born on 8/17**. MYA Dates:** Around 360 mya, the **Carboniferous Period** began. **CE Dates :** In 536 CE a **Solar minimum** occurred, as evidenced by narrow tree rings indicating a longer winter. The cold period has been related to the appearance in 534 CE of **Halley's Comet** as well as to a volcanic eruption. A **Mohammedan invasion of Persia**, driving out the state religion of Zoroastrianism, occurred in 636 CE. In 1836**Gogol** published *The Government Inspector.* In 1936 the **Hindenburg** exploded. In the United States, General Motors workers sat down to demand improvements and the **United Auto Workers** was born. **Victor Carranza** was born in 1936. As a child he

found a source of **emeralds**. As a man he used intimidation, a private militia, and paramilitaries to kill tens of thousands of people who stood in the way of his absolute control of the **emerald trade**. Half of the world's emeralds were mined in Colombia. On January 16, 1936, the **Virginia Museum of Fine Art** opened in Richmond, based on the collection of Judge **John Barton Payne**. Governor John Pollard authorized legislation in 1934 and raised funds from private donors, the state, and the **Works Progress Administration** to build the museum. **William A. Hazel** was born in Boston. He grew up in Arlington County on the family farm. On June 24 and July 1 in **Adams County, Kansas**, huge numbers of **grasshoppers** (locusts) descended, eating even the evergreen trees. Bran and arsenic were used to destroy them. Tanks paraded through Nuremberg on the **Day of the Wehrmacht**, a demonstration of Germany's rearmament, in violation of the Treaty of Versailles. On December 1, the **Hitler Youth Law** put all German Youth into the HY organization to be indoctrinated into the *Volksgemeinschaft* **"*physically, intellectually, and morally in accordance with the spirit of National Socialism*."**

## Step 137

On May 31, 1937, **Frank L. Rose, Jr**. graduated from North Fort Worth HS (Northside) and matriculated at Texas Christian University. He worked part-time at Western Union while in college as a routing clerk on skates in the traffic department at 30 cents per hour until 1939. **Loretta Schimpf** was born in 1937**. Ann van de Riet** met Urban Kirk on March 8, 1937. **MYA Dates:** About 370mya, oceanic ancestors of **terrestrial animals** began to invade the land. **KYA Dates:** Around 37kya (37.3) Stenciled red **paintings of hands** were added to the ochre red disk shapes on the walls of the caves in **El Castillo** Spain. Painting in the caves continued on this and eleven other sites for 20K more years. **CE Dates:** In the Battle of **Brunanburh** of 937 CE, Olaf of Dublin & his Viking associates from the Irish Sea lost York & the North of England to **Aethelstan**, King of Mercians and Saxons and his brother Edmund. Aethelstan was grandson of **Alfred the Great**. His sisters married Otho, later emperor, and Hugh, Duc des Français, father of **Hugh Capet,** founder of a new monarchical lineage in France**. Mount Fuji** erupted. This had nothing to do with the French and English. In 1637, **William Dauntesey II** died, leaving **Agecroft Hall**, now with 15 rooms, including **"*Mistress Langley's chamber, Corn chamber, the Study, the Parlour, the Children's chamber, My lord's chamber, the Greate chamber, the Water chamber, the Meal chamber, the Greate parlour, the Hall, the Kitchen, the Buttery, Mr. Charles chamber, and the framley chamber"*** (from an inventory at the time of his death). From February through March, the price of an expensive **tulip bulb like *Semper Augustus*** rose to **ten times the annual income of a craftsman**. When auctions failed to generate ever-higher prices for the bulbs, investors stopped buying. Returns on investments disappeared. Bankruptcies flowered. As occurred during an earlier speculative cycle on metals more than a decade

earlier, the tulip bubble had burst. In 1737, from a hill overlooking the James River, **William Byrd II** was reminded of the view over the Thames from the London borough of **Richmond**. Richmond on Thames had grown from a manor house in the village of Shene to a prosperous London suburb when Henry VII built a palace between the Green and the Thames and re-named the village Richmond for his earldom in Yorkshire. (after Janet Dunbar, *Richmond Upon Thames).* The city on the rapids of the James became Richmond and the hill became **Church Hill**, on whose high point was built a large home whose owner wanted Governor Jefferson to make it the site of the State Capitol. It later became a monastery and then a prayer community called Richmond Hill. **Charles Yerkes** was born in 1837 to a Quaker family in Pennsylvania. His banker father married a non-Quaker upon his mother's death and was shunned by the church. Charles became a financier, speculating in Philadelphia on the Chicago Exchange. After his first fortune was made, he spent seven months in jail and then went to Chicago. **Native American** territories were put into the "**trust**" of the **Bureau of Indian Affairs**. Hachaliah **Bailey** bought 526 acres at a crossroads with **Leesburg Pike**. There he built his home, "Moray," and kept a menagerie, including some elephants. His son, Lewis, introduced the canvas tent or "big top" to traveling circuses. He was the "Bailey" in **Ringling Bros., Barnum, & Bailey** and the busy shopping area, **Bailey's Crossroads,** marks the spot. **Louis Agassiz,** on vacation at Bex on the Rhône in the Alps, visited the new salt mine, where he found glacial boulders in the bedrock surrounded by crushed gravel. Three years later, he wrote ***Studies on Glaciers*** to explain his understanding of the advances and retreats of ice sheets from Northern Europe to the Mediterranean. One of his readers called them "**ice ages**." In 1937 **Thomas Hart Benton** published ***An Artist in America***. **Andrew Mellon** funded the **National Gallery to the United States** and donated his paintings, including Raphael's ***Alba Madonna.*** The Stalinist killings of 20,000 inhabitants of **Butova** began. And in the Basque town of **Guernica**, General Franco's Nazi planes and rebel forces bombed republican forces and innocents, killing 1654 out of 7000 inhabitants on April 26, 1937. **Picasso**'s painting was exhibited several months later at the **International Exhibition in Paris**. It showed the killing of infants and other innocents and animals, such as horses. On October 17, 1937 a **Moeller organ** bought from a D.C. Church was dedicated at **Warrenton Presbyterian Church**. In the summer, the Senate Majority Leader, **Joe Robinson** had a heart attack. Consequently, **FDR** could not pack the Supreme Court, and conservative Democrats successfully opposed his other bills for the rest of his second term. Werner **Von Braun** became technical director of the new **Peënemunde** Plant on the island of **Omut**, dedicated to missile technology. Col. Dornburger, military commandant, and Von Braun made several presentations to Hitler to win support for the plant. **Mark Blitzstein**'s performance of ***The Cradle Will Rock*** was performed in New York City against great odds. On July 2,1937 Amelia **Earhart** and navigator Noonan disappeared over the Pacific looking for Howland Island, their last stop in a historic aerial circumnavigation. Earhart appears to have sabotaged her own

efforts by negligence in flying without a radioman, adequate antennas, or even knowledge of radio, no Morse key, no life raft, inadequate rest, a faulty map that displaced Howland Island by 5 miles, failure to accept the cautions of others who were concerned about her mental state because of finances and her marriage, the loss of an aeronautical professional, Mantz, at the critical time when the plane and materials were being prepared, and the retention of Noonan, an alcoholic navigator who had begun drinking again not long before the Howland leg of the flight. It's surprising that the flight had made it for more than 40 days without a mishap. On September 8, 1937 **Hitler** announced the formation of the **Axis Alliance** of Germany, Italy, and Japan. **Shanghai** was then invaded by Japan. During the hard winter of 1937 **Woody Guthrie** wrote to Eddie Albert about a government pamphlet describing how to build adobe houses (later the subject of his novel, *The House of Earth*). He was convinced that the Dust Bowl farmers of Texas and Oklahoma would be better off building with **adobe**. "***We've owned this little wood house for six years and it has been a blessing over and over, and the same amount of work and money spent on this house will raise just exactly twice this good from the very well advertised dust of the earth. It would be nearly dustproof, and a whole lot warmer, and last longer to boot. But folks around here just haven't studied it out, or got no information from the government, or somehow are walking around over and overlooking their own salvation. Local lumber yards don't advertize mud and straw because you cant find a spot on earth without it, but you see old adobe brick houses almost everywhere that are as old as Hitlers tricks, and still standing, like the Jews. If I was aiming to preach you a sermon on the subject I would get a good lungful of air and say that man is himself an adobe house, some sort of a streamlined old temple. But what I want to come around to before the paper runs out is this: We're scratching our heads about where to raise this $300 and we would furnish the labor and work . . .***" We miss you, Woody.

## Step 138

**Thomas T. Sullivan** died on February 28, 1938 in Hickman, KY. After **Frank Rose** and **George Louden** graduated from Northside HS. George went to work for Martin Aircraft and Frank went to TCU and then to Annapolis (‘42). One of **Frances Schimpf's** friends bought a Ford sedan for $430. Frances gave birth to her eighth child, **Kenneth Schimpf. MYA Dates:** About 380 mya (375), A massive worldwide **extinction of many species** occurred. About 38mya the **Oligocene Epoch** began**. BCE Dates:** In the winter of 3807-3808 BCE, the farmers and hunters of the **Somerset Levels** built wooden walkways between the islands in the fens. It is known as the **Sweet Track**. **CE Dates:** The slave and Stoic philosopher **Epictetus** died in 138CE**. Jerusalem** fell in 638 CE to Islamic armies. And Germany and Austria fell when their "union" or ***Anschluss,*** was announced on March 13, 1938. On November 9, 1938 came **Kristallnacht**, when

terrorist Nazis attacked Jews, destroyed businesses, and sent 30,000 to the camps. SA troopers and mobs took reprisals on the Jewish community on the pretext that a diplomat had been murdered by a Polish Jew. The burnings, destruction, and violence were widely reported in the world press, but two weeks later, Gary Cooper made a publicity trip to Berlin promoting the film ***Lives of a Bengal Lancer,*** later a favorite film of Hitler's. At another time, the MGM franchise in Germany even helped finance German armaments. An MGM chief executive divorced his Jewish wife on orders by the Third Reich. She went to a concentration camp. By this year, 8.7M German children were **Hitler Youth** members. Musician **Victor Urbancic** took his wife, the poet, sculptor, and actress (aka Makarska) Dr. **Melitta Grunbaum Urbancic,** and children (including Ruth, who later married James Erb) from Austria to Iceland. In Munich, a procession of floats and exhibits called **Two Thousand Years of German Culture** filled the main street of Munich. **Kindertransport**, a small effort to remove Jewish children to the US, occurred 3 weeks later. The synagogue in Berlin was set on fire and Jewish citizens abused and arrested. Congress passed the **Fair Labor Standards Act**, which guaranteed a forty hour work week and time and a half for hourly workers who must work overtime. On May 10, 1938, the **Cloisters** opened in Manhattan. **John D. Rockefeller** paid for the monastic buildings and some of its collection of medieval art, the **George Grey Barnard** collection, and gardens. It became part of the **Metropolitan Museum of Art**. On June 18, 1938 **Woody Guthrie** and Maxine Crissman performed on the *Woody and Lefty Show* on KFVD radio. On October 30, 1938 Orson Wells' **Mercury theater of the Air** broadcast H.G. Wells' ***War of the Worlds***, causing hysteria and panic. Frederic G. Melcher of the R.R. Bowker Co. donated and awarded the first **Caldecott Medal** for the ***Animals of the Bible,*** illustrated by **Lathrop**, for **"*the most distinguished American picture book for children*"** and named for Randolph Caldecott, an English illustrator because his work best represented **"*joyousness of picture books as well as their beauty*."** On the medal is his illustration of a horseman, from ***John Gilpin***. The first **synthetic polymer-based materials** were introduced in the late 1930's, including **polystyrene**, **nylon**, and reinforced **plastics**. On May 28, 1938 Paul Hindemith's ***Mathis der Maler*** was finally produced in Zürich. The **Pierce Arrow** automobile company stopped making the famous touring car, a favorite of Woodrow Wilson.

## Step 139

**Thurman Hobson** died on January 20, 1939 and on August 20 **Lula Towles** died. **Frank Rose** worked at Ft.Worth Grain and Cotton Exchange for part time summer employment at $60/mo, in the preparation of grain samples for grading and chemical analysis. He stopped at TCU and left the family home in Ft. Worth when he received an appointment to USNA in Annapolis. **Frank L Rose, Sr**., taking Frank, Jr. and Edna to Annapolis from Ft. Worth in a 1937 Plymouth, stopped to visit with his sister in

Richmond. On July 12, 1939 Frank was sworn in as **Midshipman**, U.S. Navy, and began attending the Naval Academy. **Urban Kirk** married **Ann Van de Riet** in St. Louis on June 3, 1939. **BCE Dates:** In 3900 BCE, a band of 100-150 early Britons began to build a hill fortress for keeping cattle and for making axes in **Carn Brea** near the tip of Cornwall. The farming community lasted for 500 years. **CE Dates:** The year 1539 CE marked the beginning of **the Dissolution**, Henry VIII's taking and distribution of church properties, which ended in 1547. Following the Dissolution of Monasteries, Robert Langley III was granted a lease of Kersall Cell and 83 acres of land for 21 years. Thus began the **Agecroft** estate. In 1839, **Virginia Military Institute** was founded in Lexington, VA. On March 21, 1839 **Schubert**'s ***Great C Symphony*** was performed for the first time, eleven years after his death, with **Mendelssohn** conducting the Leipzig Gewandhaus orchestra.. **Rev. Jesse Bushyhead** passed near McMinnville, TN with 950 Cherokees from Georgia. He stopped and sent word to John Ross that the oxen had eaten poison ivy. Several bands met for a council and heard him preach. They reached **Westville, Oklahoma** on February 23, 1839, having lost more than 83 people on their journey. After the Trail of Tears, Bushyhead established a Baptist Mission and became Chief Justice of the Cherokee Nation. In 1939, **Hitler** used the war between Turks and Armenians to supply this pretext for genocide: **"*Who, after all, today speaks of the annihilation of the Armenians*?"** The Western democracies tried to appease Hitler in the Munich Conference, where he promised to end aggression and be satisfied with his gains in Czechoslovakia. But on **September 1, 1939** the **Blitzkrieg** came to Poland. France and Great Britain declared war on September 3, 1939 because of prior agreement with Poland. In the Spring, the Third Reich overran Norway, Denmark, Luxembourg, Belgium, & Holland, and moved into France, which fell after the **Battle of Dunkirk**. In the following months, Germany moved on to Rumania, Bulgaria, Hungary, Yugoslavia, Greece and the Balkan peninsula, and turned to Russia with a scorched earth policy. The U.S. made a deal to supply destroyers to Great Britain. The U.S. Occupied Greenland to save it from capture. With support from Eleanor Roosevelt, **Marian Anderson** sang on Easter at the Lincoln Memorial after being turned away from the D.A.R. Concert Hall. **Schweitzer'**s book was published: ***From My African Notebook.*** Three Chicago men of German descent were arrested and fined for throwing a brick through the show window of Goldblatt's department store. On October 11, 1939, economist Alexander **Sachs** handed F.D. Roosevelt a cautionary letter from Albert **Einstein** about making a **nuclear weapon**. He also quoted a British scientist: ***"Personally, I think there is no doubt that sub-atomic energy is available all around us, and that one day man will release and control its almost infinite power. We cannot prevent him from doing so and can only hope that he will not use it exclusively to blow up his next door neighbor."*** (from Richard Rhodes' *The Making of the Atomic Bomb)**.** Winner of the Caldecott medal was ***Mei Lei*** by Handforth. John **Steinbeck**'s novel about the migration of Okies from the Dustbowl to California, ***The Grapes of Wrath***, was a best-seller and soon planned for a

screen version. It was **banned** by the agricultural association, local government, and library in the Kern County of California. Steinbeck's data for the novel were compiled and given to him by **Tom Collins**, the manager of the Kern Migrant Labor Camp. Meanwhile, **Woody Guthrie** had ideas for writing about the Okies and West Texans who stayed in the barren panhandles trying to hold onto their farms while bankers, oilmen, corporate farmers, and profiteers of all stripes took advantage of their distress. His book would be called ***The House of Earth.*** In May 1939, four hundred and fifty thousand coal miners walked off the job. Warner Brothers released ***Confessions of a Nazi Spy,*** one of the first anti-Nazi movies, as the self-imposed **quiet ban** by the film industry of the 1930's gave way to war-time propaganda. William B. **De Mille** said, ***"With all hope of profit gone, we can, at last, become properly indignant."***

## Step 140

Death of **Erle Cowan Johnson** died in 1940. At University Baptist Church in Ft. Worth, **Jo Evelyn** was presented a Bible by Rev. Wm. Ray Watson. **Audrey Schimpf** was born to Joseph and Frances in Chicago. **Frank L. Rose, Sr.** wrote on his *Individual Income and Defense Tax Return*: ***City Lineman, $2276.49***. **MYA Dates:** About 400 mya the **Appalachian Valley and Ridge Province** formed from several continental collisions that also formed **Pangaea**, 300-400mya.(Devonian) It is made of alternating beds of hard and soft Paleozoic sedimentary rocks, folded and wrinkled like a rug, and extending 900 miles from NY to AL, and flanked by sedimentary strata in the west and metamorphic Precambrian strata in the east. At the northern end, the **New England Province** also partially dates from this time, but has a complicated history. Complex north south patterns in the six New England states consist of several terranes in the Northern Appalachians. They are fault-bounded slices whose tectonic history differs from adjacent rocks. These terranes include rocks similar to those in the British Isles, originally found elsewhere, but later accreted to eastern North America in the Paleozoic during the formation of Pangaea. A **Paleozoic fault zone**, comparable to the San Andreas fault, intrusion of Mesozoic igneous-rock masses, and later opening of the Atlantic Ocean, are also parts of this province. When the Euro-African and American continents collided, a chain of **mountains** was raised from Maine to Carolina (Appalachia) and from Scotland to Morocco (the Caledonians). **Corals** extended from Texas to Canada and the later site of Chicago was a reef. Sections through this coral indicate that a day at that time was **22 hours** long because the **braking of the oceans' drag on rotation** (about 2 msec/da) had not yet slowed the day to the 24 hours of its current setting. **Pangaean** rock strata from Antarctica, Australia, South America, South Africa and India show abundant evidence of common tropical flora and fauna, like the giant plant **Glossopteris**, whose fossils were found near the Beardmore Glacier at the South Pole. About 40mya, the gene for synthesizing **vitamin C** mutated to an inactive form in the primate ancestors ,

possibly as an epigenetic response to a fruit diet in which it was not needed. The **Indian subcontinent** collided with Eurasia, creating the **Himalayas** and **Tibetan Plateau.** The Arctic areas of Eureka Sound in Canada were forested with **redwoods** 150 feet tall (Basinger, 1986). The cooling of the Earth at this time, as **Maureen Raymo** later explained, was due to the collision of the Indian and Eurasian tectonic plates. The Tibetan Plateau is 82% of the rock surface of the Earth and rises to 12,000 feet. All the rivers from this massif are engines of **erosion,** which pulls Carbon dioxide from the air. The rate of uplift of mountains correlates to $CO_2$ depletion. **KYA Dates:** About 400kya, **Worldwide cooling** occurred due to the extreme eccentricity of Earth's orbit, superimposed over cyclical patters of a rocking axis and the wobble of precession. About 40 KYA Neanderthals and Sapiens interbred and the number of modern humans in Europe decreased. **BCE Dates:** In 1040 BCE the time of **King Saul** and Moab. In 40 BCE **Herod** ruled in Judea. **CE Dates** 40 **Paul of Tarsus** and **Nero of Rome** were contemporaries in 40 CE. In 1440, **King Henry** founded **Eton**. In 1540 the head of **Thomas Cromwell** was impaled on London Bridge.The Ege Family built the **Old Stone House** in 1740 on a road that became Main Street in Richmond. When the town incorporated, the house was numbered 1916 E. Main St. Peter **Tchaikovsky** was born on May 7, 1840. **William Thompson Newby** left McMinnville, TN for Dadeville, Missouri, to set up a store. **William Johnson** thought it would be a good idea to introduce a Mediterranean grass to the United States. Later, it was called ***Johnson Grass.*** Farmers who tried to eliminate it had other names. **Thomas Campbell** established **Bethany College** in Easter, VA for the Disciples of Christ. In 1940 Franklin Roosevelt was elected for his third term, the first time in history this had happened. After election, he began to build the effort to resist ***"the forces of militarism, of territorial aggression, and of international anarchy."*** He launched the lottery for **Selective Service** in the Mellon Bldg. auditorium on14th and Constitution in D.C. Unemployment in that year was 15%. On June 14, 1940 the German army entered **Paris**. Premier Reynaud wanted to resist, but being opposed by the military, he resigned. Biologist **Jacques Monod** and philosopher **Albert Camus** joined the Resistance. More than 20,000 Polish officers and intelligentsia were massacred by Russian soldiers in the forest of **Katyn.** The winner of the Caldecott Medal was ***Abraham Lincoln*** by d'Aulaire. The Nazi propaganda film, ***The Eternal Jew,*** used long segments from an earlier Hollywood movie, *The House of Rothschild* (1934). In ***The Great Dictator,*** Charlie Chaplin presented a scene in which the would-be resistance fighters eat muffins to see who will find the coin that will compel him to be a "hero" (rather like Gilbert's "Go, heroes, go on to glory!"). The cook put coins into all of the muffins and all of the men but one try to palm off the coins onto the others. They decide that what people must do is tend to their own families and work and not seek to be the "hero of Ptomania" who brings down Herren Hinkel (Hitler) and Garbage (Goebbels). In a similar vein, after reading Don Watson's *Death Sentences* (2005) Richard wrote in 2007:

***"I favor small-scale, human efforts over highly significant gestures, making statements, self-promotions, and claiming victory by pushing forward."***

## Step 141

**Jesse Hobson** married Macon Bonham in 1941 and **Jo Evelyn Gage** attended Paschal High School with Sam Paschal, who later married Alice Louden, George's sister. **Carol Ann Kelly** (later Mrs. Orville Fletcher) was born on July 18, 1941. **George Louden** visited **Frank Rose** at Annapolis. **Frank L. Rose, Sr.** wrote on his tax return: ***Western Union Repairman $2147.66***. Jack Rose was declared as his dependent. **MYA Dates:** The **Devonian Period** began about 410 mya**.** One of the **earliest human ancestors** lived 4.1 mya in Africa (SN 169:227) **KYA Dates:** About 41kya (40.8) at **El Castillo** cave in Spain, red ochre disk shapes were painted on the walls, possibly by Neanderthals. **CE Dates:** In 841,**Vikings** settled in the area that became **Dublin**. 1841 CE Freeman New Yorker **Solomon Northrup** was kidnapped in Washington, D.C. by slavers posing as potential employers. He was sold to a plantation in **Rapides Parish,** Louisiana. On January 15, 1941, **Messiaen's** *Quartet for the End of Time* premiered in a concentration camp, where it was performed on instruments in poor condition. The performance won the composer's and musicians' release. In Berlin, Jews were made to wear the yellow **Star of David.** On February 10, 1941, Company F was federalized and left from **South Boston, VA** train station on a Southern Railway troop transport for Ft. Meade Md. They wore wrap leggings and soup bowl helmets. At Ft. Meade they learned about latrines, slit trenches, fart sacks (beds), field stripping and blindfold stripping of weapons, shit on shingles in the mess where Kilroy ate and died, and keeping zipped because "flies spread disease." The F Company learned so well that for a while they trained others at Ft. Meade. Then they went on to maneuvers in Monroe, NC and Cheraw, SC, Fort A.P. Hill, Camp Pendleton, Cape Hatteras, and Camp Blanding, FL. The **Lend-Lease Act** was enacted in March. President Roosevelt submitted a request to Congress for funds to build a new War Department building because the old Munitions Building on Constitution Avenue, shared with the Navy, would not be large enough for the 30,000 workers to be hired by early 1942. General **Brehon B. Somervell,** Commander of USA Supply Services in WWII, had previously proposed that the military staff of 24,000 workers scattered in 17 locations be centralized. With the Chief of the Army Engineers, General Reybold, and the architect, **G.E. Bergstrom**, Somervell presented his plan to the House Appropriations Committee for a **Pentagon**- shaped building in Arlington, VA across the Potomac River from Washington. He estimated the cost at $35 million. The pentagonal shape was imposed by the shape of the lot, surrounded by highways. His plan was opposed by Gilmore Clarke, from the Commission of Fine Arts, advocates for Arlington Cemetery and the Custis-Lee mansion, the National Association of Building Owners and Managers, various members of Congress; the *Washington Post*, which called

it a *"**magnificent target**"* for our enemies, and proponents for other locations such as the Old Soldiers' Home and the Hoover Airport. Even FDR did not think that the Arlington site would house more than 20,000 workers. Parts of the 583 acres required, called "Hell's Bottom," were already federally owned. **Jesse Lee Brooks** (1894-1944) sang ***Go Down Moses*** with a choir in an unforgettable church scene in the **Preston Sturgiss** film ***Sullivan's Travels,*** starring **Joel Macrae** and **Veronica Lake,** when an impoverished black church hosts the local convicts to an evening of cartoons. The **Torpedo Factory** or Naval Torpedo Station on North Union Street, originally built on the Alexandria Wharf during World War I, made its first torpedo for WWII on April 1. It went to the USS Gudgeon submarine. Four years later, after making 9,918 torpedoes, the factory closed. Raphael Lemkin coined the term **genocide**. And **Christoph Probst, Alexander Schmorell, Willi Graf, Hans Scholl,** and **Sophie Scholl** met at the medical school in Munich in 1941-1942. With Professors **Kurt Huber, Carl Muth,** and **Josef Furtmeier, Harald Dohm, Werner Bergengruen, Alfred von Martin,** and **Theodor Haecker**, small groups of students in Munich, Berlin and Saarbrűcken met to form a resistance movement to Nazism. Together they read books by Romano Guardini on radical Catholicism and interpretations of Hőlderin, Rilke's poetry, Dostoevski's *Grand Inquisitor,* Paul Claudel's *The Satin Slipper,* Jacques Maritain, Leon Bloy, and Francis Jammes, the *Confessions* of Augustine, Kierkegaard, Aquinas, and *Nietzsche and Burckhardt* by von Martin. **Otl Aicher**, one of the group, which called itself **THE WHITE ROSE,** wrote later *(Inside Views of War): **"Encouraged by advice from Haecker, we had started reading Kierkegaard and slowly understood what had recently come to be intended by the term 'existence.' In a dictatorship the question of truth, the actual question of philosophy, is indeed pushed into the background. It is no longer about recognition as a matter of recognizing but about what is the right thing now, about what is the right thing for me."*** **Fritz Lőhner-Beda** was beaten to death for being too sick to work for I.G. Farben, the "community of interests" (monopoly) of dye-making manufacturers which also made **Zyklon-B,** a constituent of poison gas, made by and used on the prisoners of Auschwitz. Beda, whose Jewish name was Lőwy, had been a military officer in WWI, a lawyer, and a writer and librettist, best known for his collaborations with **Franz Lehar**, such as *The Land of Smiles*. Richard Tauber became famous singing the songs from their operettas, such as *Dein ist mein ganzes Herz.* Lehar did not help him and after the war denied knowing that Beda had been imprisoned. In Bűchenwald, Beda wrote the lyrics to the Buchenwald Anthem. Here is the last stanza: ***"O Bűchenwald, we don't cry and complain. And whatever may be out destiny, even so we shall say 'yes' to life, for once the day shall come when we shall be free."*** The German title of Viktor Frankl's book (*Man's Search for Meaning*) in 1946 was *Ja Zum Leben Sagen (Say Yes to Life). Ramon* **Castroviejo,** M.D. developed **corneal transplants** and promoted eye banks. **Muddy Waters** was recorded by **Alan Lomax** for the folklore project. On September 11, 1942, President Franklin D. **Roosevelt** said, ***"Do not let us split hairs. Let***

***us not say, 'We will only defend ourselves if the torpedo succeeds in getting home, or if the crew and passengers are drowned,"*** and ordered the U.S. Navy into the N. Atlantic to patrol for German submarines. Numerous U-boats were sunk on the Atlantic continental shelf. On November 26, FDR gave Japan an ultimatum to **leave** China and to end the alliance with the Axis Powers. Under the prior **Stinson Doctrine,** the United States refused to recognize any territorial change which was the result of aggression. Japan ignored this doctrine. In Europe, England and France were powerless to stop aggression. **Robert Stinnett** (*Day of Deceit)* contended that this *intentionally* goaded the Japanese to attack the United States. Shortly before the Pearl Harbor attack, Army Air Corps General **Hap Arnold** leaked a military war contingency plan to an isolationist Congressman. The press coverage claimed that FDR was secretly planning to force the country into war. What Arnold wanted was to keep the few planes that the new Air Force had rather than to have them given to the British. The hubbub about this disappeared when Honolulu was attacked. The **PEARL HARBOR ATTACK** came on Sunday, **December 7th, 1941:** The Japanese launched a surprise attack against the U.S. Forces stationed at Pearl Harbor, Hawaii. By planning his attack on a Sunday, the Japanese commander **Admiral Nagumo**, hoped to catch the entire fleet in port. As luck would have it, the Aircraft Carriers and one of the Battleships were not in port. (The USS **Enterprise** was returning from Wake Island , where it had just delivered some aircraft. The USS **Lexington** was ferrying aircraft to Midway, and the USS **Saratoga** and USS **Colorado** were undergoing repairs in the United States .) Despite the latest intelligence reports about the missing aircraft carriers (his most important targets), Admiral Nagumo decided to continue the attack with his force of **six carriers and 423 aircraft**. At a range of 230 miles north of Oahu , he launched the first wave of a two-wave attack. Beginning at 0600 hours his **first wave** consisted of 183 fighters and torpedo bombers which struck at the fleet in Pearl Harbor and the airfields in **Hickam**, Kaneohe, and Ewa. Young Doctor **Robert Hoagland** saw the attack on Hickam Field and spoke of it 35 years later as a retired cardiologist teaching a Bible class at Warrenton Presbyterian Church. The **second strike**, launched at 0715 hours, consisted of 167 aircraft, which again struck at the same targets. At 0753 hours the first wave consisting of 40 Nakajima B5N2 "Kate" torpedo bombers, 51 Aichi D3A1 "Val" dive bombers, 50 high altitude bombers and 43 Zeros struck airfields and Pearl Harbor Within the next hour, the second wave arrived and continued the attack. When it was over, the US. losses were: **Casualties: USA** :218 KIA, 364 WIA. **USN**: 2,008 KIA, 710 WIA.**USMC**: 109 KIA, 69 WIA. **Civilians**: 68 KIA, 35 WIA.**TOTAL**: 2,403 KIA, 1,178 WIA. **DAMAGE TO SHIPS**: **Battleships** USS **Arizona** (BB-39) - total loss when a bomb hit her magazine. USS **Oklahoma** (BB-37) - Total loss when she capsized and sank in the harbor. USS **California** (BB-44) - Sunk at her berth. Later raised and repaired. USS **West Virginia** (BB-48) Sunk at her berth. Later raised and repaired. USS **Nevada** - (BB-36) Beached to prevent sinking. Later repaired. USS **Pennsylvania** (BB-38) - Light damage. USS **Maryland** (BB-46)

Light damage. USS **Tennessee** (BB-43) Light damage. USS **Utah** (AG-16) (former battleship used as a target) Sunk. **Cruisers** USS **New Orleans** (CA-32) Light Damage. USS **San Francisco**(CA38) Light Damage. USS **Detroit**(CL-8) Light Damage. USS **Raleigh** (CL-7) Heavily damaged but repaired. USS **Helena**(CL-50) - Light Damage. USS **Honolulu**(CL-48) Light Damage.. **Destroyers** USS **Downes** (DD-375) - Destroyed. Parts salvaged. USS **Cassin** (DD-372) Destroyed. Parts salvaged. USS **Shaw** (DD-373) Very heavy damage. USS **Helm** (DD-388) Light Damage. **Mine-layer** USS **Ogala** (CM-4) - Sunk but later raised and repaired. **Seaplane Tender** USS **Curtiss** (AV-4) - Severely damaged but later repaired. **Repair Ship** SS **Vestal** (AR-4) Severely damaged but later repaired. **Harbor Tug** USS **Sotoyomo** (YT-9) Sunk but later raised and repaired. **Aircraft:** 188 Aircraft destroyed (92 USN and 92 U.S. Army Air Corps). Following the attack, the Federal government restricted publication and broadcasts of weather conditions. Newspapers were permitted to report weather only within a 150 mile radius. Only 21 cities could be listed in consolidated temperature tables. The ban on mentioning barometric pressures and wind directions continued to the end of the war.

**Step 142**

**William Schimpf** died May 28, 1942 in Chicago. On February 8, **Phil Woodall** was born. **Frank L. Rose, Sr.** wrote on his tax return: ***Western Union Repairman $2397.54.*** On June 19 **Frank Rose** was honorably discharged from USNA and the Navy. He enlisted in the Army. He had to leave Annapolis because of vision defect in right eye. He had traveled to the Pentagon, at that time still under construction, to appeal to the Navy Department but was unsuccessful. Returning to live at home at 3016 Springdale in Ft. Worth, Frank Rose enlisted in the Army, Enlisted Reserve Corps (ERC) on August 7 and was on inactive duty until 1943. He worked at the Globe Aircraft Corporation on Blue Mound Rd. in Ft. Worth as a shipping and receiving clerk. He also worked about a month as a shipping clerk at Mrs. Baird's Bakery in Ft. Worth. On July 9, he obtained a *Birth Identification Card,* signed by Gladys Block for the Tarrant County Clerk, Mrs. Happy Shelton Wood, to certify his birth in Eunice, LA in 1920 and to be recorded in the Tarrant County birth records in Ft. Worth on volume 0-13, page 96. He lived at home on Springdale Rd. In the tax return he completed on February 22, 1943, he listed his employers as: *Western Union Telegraph Co., Fort Worth $40, Container Corp. of America $95, Army of U.S. $784, Mrs. Baird's Bakery 1701 S. Summit St. $12.00.* **Jo Evelyn Gage** graduated from Paschal HS in Fort Worth, TX on May 28, 1942. Birth of **Carmelyn Schimpf** was born and then taken the same week, along with sister **Audrey**, and brother **Kenny** by Frances' sister, **Helen,** to St. Louis to relieve her Frances, who had become exhausted and near nervous collapse from bearing and raising children with little help. **Joseph Schimpf** threw away a diaphragm, saying that he would not go to hell for any woman. After thirteen months, exhausted from another pregnancy, in 1943, **Frances**

gave birth to her eleventh child, **Madonna**, who was mentally retarded. Helen sent Kenny back to Chicago. (He used to kick her in the shin.) She was pregnant with Norleen a year after taking the girls, but kept and raised them with her own children. Sometimes she would scold them by saying "*You Schimpfs!".* (*Schimpfen* is a derogatory term, generally meaning *to scold* .) They called her "*Aunt Helen*" and their mother "*Mom Frances*," but seldom saw the family in Chicago until the tall, twelve year-old **Loretta**, determined to see her sisters, took a bus to St. Louis and knocked on Helen's door. One of the children came to the door. "***I am your sister, Loretta,*"** said the stranger. The child called to her mother that someone named Loretta was at the door. Helen was annoyed that her friend Loretta had not told her she was coming for a visit. The house was in a state. When she got to the door, it was not her friend. It was one of those "*Schimpf girls*." Until she died, Loretta continued to make reunions and visits and to draw together the many fragments of her scattered family, making photo montages to show all fourteen children gathered together as they never were. **KYA Dates:** About 420kya *Homo erectus* groups lived in Zhoukoudian, China *("Peking Man")*. **CE Dates:** 342 **Epicurus** was born in the Athenian colony on Samos. In 842 CE, the **Oath of Strasburg** was sworn by Louis II (The German) and Charles the Bald against their brother Lothar to end civil wars and partition the Carolingean empire. It was written in Old High German and French and marked the beginning of written French. In 1042, **Edward the Confessor** became King of the English. Dominico Theotocopuli, "the Greek," or "**El Greco**" was born in 1542. In 1642, Civil War between Charles I and Parliament divided Britain. Even shires like Yorkshire were divided between the Anglican Cavaliers and the Puritan Parliamentarians. The Royalist, **William Berkeley,** left Yorkshire with his supporters and indentured servants to become governor of Virginia. By 1650, the population of Virginia was 15,000. **Christopher and Ralph Wormley,** landowners from Womersley (Wormley), Yorkshire, near Halifax, settled near Yorktown, Virginia. **William Rose I** arrived in Virginia, possibly at the Rappahannock River, York, or James, and purchased 400 acres in an area that would later become Halifax County, Virginia (This is probably not the current Halifax Co., VA but Halifax Co., N.C. at Quankey Creek in the Oconechee township. In the colonial period, "Virginia" referred to a larger area.) In documents of the time, he was shown as "***a planter of Edgecombe County."*** An Anglican, like his neighbors John Alston and Nicholas Long, churchwardens of Edgecombe Parish, Rose owned a home on land near Quankey Creek, a tributary of the Staunton River, on the road to Quankey Chapel. The youngest son of William and his wife Mary was named Wormley. (Judy Wood, *Louisiana Cousins,* pp. xiv-xvi). The North Carolina Roses who later migrated to Louisiana cited their origins in Virginia. In Staunton, VA., the Presbyterian church founded the Augusta Female Academy in 1842, and later renamed it **Mary Baldwin College** for the principal who taught Woodrow Wilson's sisters. **Charles Minningerode,** the German professor at the College of William and Mary, rented a room with the Tuckers. At Christmas he showed them how to trim a tree in the German way.

This was the first American Christmas Tree. He later became the Rector of **St. Paul's Church** in Richmond, where he stayed for 33 years. His friends included Jefferson Davis and Robert E. Lee. In 1942, **H. Edward Roberts** was born. The Wannsee Conference of the Third Reich, chaired by Gen. Reinhard Heydrich, adopted the **Final Solution**, the annihilation of Jews. The winner of the Caldecott Medal was McCloskey's ***Make Way for Ducklings.*** The burial Site at **Sutton Hoo** (near Ipswich) of **King Redwald in his ship** was excavated. Its treasures were stored nearby during WWII. On April 23, the German *Luftwaffe* bombed **Exeter**, Bath and other historic sites in Britain on the *"**Baedeker Raid**."* In the spring, **Japanese forces advanced** to Singapore, Darwin Island of Australia, Sumatra, Burma, Ceylon, and **Attu** and Kiska in the Aleutians. On May 30, in 90 minutes, 1130 RAF planes (the "**thousand bomber**" operation) bombed **Cologne**, destroying 5000 acres, including many historic buildings, but not the *Dom*. **Stella Dikos** was born in Tikala, Thessaly. As a young woman, her married name was Kafantaris, her profession restauranteur in Richmond. The restaurant was on Lafayette St. in 2012 when Richard and Kathleen Rose lived at 3908 West Grace, around the corner. Mr. Earnest **Wilbur Gorham** and his wife Clara received two lots on West Howell in Alexandria from her parents, which they bought for $2500. He had grown up on East Howell. In October, the First Infantry or the "**Big Red One**" fought from North Africa to Sicily and Anzio. On October 3, in Rocket Test Number 7 at **Peënemunde,** Werner **Von Braun** finally succeeded in producing a reliably guided missile, the **A-4**, after many failures. It arced 52 miles into the atmosphere, 32 miles of which was properly "***outer space***," before reaching its target. It was the first space flight. It was also the first V-II rocket and the prototype of the later Saturn rocket used by NASA to send men to the moon 1969. Over 12,000 concentration camp workers, provided by **Himmler**'s SS, were sent to Peënemunde to run the mass production of these rockets. The movie ***Casablanca*** was produced, starring Bogart & Bergman to the theme *As Time Goes By*. On April 9, 1942 Filipino and American forces surrendered to the Japanese. Survivors began the **Bataan Death March.** Richard later wrote an opera, ***Amber,*** about one of the survivors for a concert to aid residents of the Soldiers Home. Sixteen bombers took off from an aircraft carrier and raided Tokyo. This was the **Doolittle Raid** on April 18, 1942. **Duct tape** was first sold. A naval blockade of **Guadalcanal** began on December 4, 1942 and was followed by a Marine assault. No more Japanese victories occurred after this battle. From June 1942 to February 1943, the ***White Rose*** leaflets appeared in the thousands in Southern Germany (<*Weisse Rose Stiftung*, Ludwig-Maximilians-Universität, Műnchen). Writers Hans Scholl, Kurt Huber, and Alexander Schmorell urged readers to passively resist the Nazis. Six messages were sent in this way before the government put an end to the movement. From the Russian front, draftee **Hans Scholl** wrote on August 28, 1942: "***Recently Alex* (Schmorell) *and I buried a Russian. He must have been lying out there for a long time. His head had been separated from his rump and his private parts had decayed. Worms crawled out of the half-rotten clothes. We had almost filled the grave***

***with soil, when we found another arm. In the end we made a Russian cross which we put in the earth at the head of the grave. Now his soul can rest in peace. I don't have any music around me. I only hear the moaning of the tormented day and night, and when I dream, I hear the sighs of the ones left behind and when I think, all my thoughts end in agony.*"** Other students with Scholl on the front at the defeat in Stalingrad were Willi Graf and Hubert Furtwängler. The F Company from **South Boston** sailed on the Queen Mary on September 27 with the rest of the 116th and 115th Regiments of the 29th Division, making 15,000 men. They went to Greenock, Scotland, traveling 28 knots and changing direction every 7 minutes to avoid wolf packs of U-boats. Men slept in shifts. In the Firth of Clyde, a British cruiser, the **Curacao**, crossed in front of the Queen Mary and was sliced in half, killing 332. All the soldier's bags of clothing were also lost. At Greenock, the company took the London-Midland-Scottish Railway to Tidworth Barracks between Salisbury and Andover, where they trained for nine months. Training continued in Devon and Cornwall, where they rehearsed amphibious landings at Bridestowe and Slapton Sands and were visited by Churchill, Eisenhower, Montgomery, Mark Clark, and Eleanor Roosevelt. Based on these observations, F Company was one of the groups chosen to spearhead the D-Day invasion.

## Step 143

**Madonna Schimpf** was born in 1943, eleventh child of Joseph and Frances**.** December: **Jack W. Rose** married **Louise Simmons**. Her mother, **Zula**, had been given the land adjoining the Rose property by Frank L. Rose, Sr. There she raised her children, Junior (Garvin), Jeanette, and Manette, who spent their last years as nonagenarians together in California, Cecile (b.1917), Louise, and Aileen (b.1939), the youngest, whose husband's name was Bill. **Frank L. Rose, Sr.** wrote on his tax return: ***Western Union $2762.21. Yearly Church tithes $210.*** The building which later became **The Fountains at Washington House** was built on Fillmore Avenue in Alexandria on woodland that was once owned by George Washington. **John Edward Warner,** who had changed the Polish family name before enlisting, fought at the Battle of Attu in the Aleutians. Only four Japanese survived. His mother, Paulina, never spoke English and kept the family name, as did her other son. The son of John and Iwana was **Jerry Warner,** who later married **Kathleen Schimpf.** After their divorce, he married Margo, who developed melanoma in 2010. Iwana Wheatley came from a family in the Blackfoot Tribe of Arkansas. **Frank Rose** worked for the Container Corp. of America as a shipping clerk for about 2 months. Frank Rose's inactive status in the Army Enlisted Reserve Corps ended on April 7, 1943 when he became an Aviation Cadet in the US Army Air Corps until November 10, 1943. He left Ft. Worth and started Basic training at Boca Raton, FL and went on to Technical Training in Aircraft Maintenance at Yale University in New Haven, Connecticut from June to November 10. He was then discharged from the ERC to

be sworn in as a 2nd Lt., AUS Army Air Corps on November 11, 1943. Then he went to the Boeing Aircraft Plant, Seattle, where he had duty as an aircraft maintenance officer and technical inspector until 1945. On Saturday, July 17, 1943, in Murray, KY, **Virginia Sullivan** recorded that she had gone to Mr. McKee's to cut a stencil on her last weekend in Murray. On July 9, **Jose Hobson Gage** completed this letter to **Jo Evelyn Gage** in the form of a little booklet illustrated by her friend and fellow patient at Oakville Sanitarium in Memphis. She drew upon the ***Cheerful Cherub,*** a cartoon series first appearing in Chicago newspapers when the doodles of a student from the Art Institute caught an editor's eye. The artist was **Rebecca McCann.** Her book of drawings and poems, published in 1930, revealed a wise heart. Jose wrote:

***As I am in a reminiscent mood I have no difficulty in recalling memories which to me are very precious. Can't you just see your Pappy waiting to see if you were a boy or a girl? We were parents then—not just a boy and girl in love. You were a girl—as you no doubt know by now. Goodness! How you did yell at 6:15 every A.M. But I loved it! How you did hate the world on washday. By the time noon came, my 'dogs' were killing me. You were just like a Jack-in-the-box! Just wouldn't be still. By 5 o'clock I was worn to a frazzle. But the dawn of a new day always brought smiles and happy hours with you, my baby. There were times when you were a little meanie. But I always managed to dry your tears by petting you a little. Funny—now I am the one who gets all the petting (and love it!). Then came all the parties—ours at night when you were supposed to be asleep. By 7 we would be ready for an evening of fun, but sometimes you wouldn't let us go—without you! Sometimes I grew frantic—always sewing on buttons you had torn off in your Tom boy games. You weren't very patient, either, when I was a little slow. Sometimes you wanted to help with the housework (but not very often). There were lots of things you couldn't do—so you went ahead and had your fun with the little kid next door. You were pretty good at helping me—only when you wanted to play. Even then—you always told me I was old fashioned. You still do—but I love it.***

***Then came the saddest day of my life—the day I had to leave you. I knew that day would end my whole world. And cupid sat right down and cried. After he had had a good cry, everything was brighter and I began a new life. My heart was happier as the days went by and you and I became closer than two peas in a pod. You grew fast. Much too fast for me. Time seemed to fly! April showers always remind me of you! How I wish you were here tonight. I want to kiss you good night. Just like when you were tiny. 'My little love, the dark's not worth your tears,' –to you, Sugar. On up the road to health I climbed. By that time, you were a young lady. That fateful day I walked out of our home—left it just as it was—never to return. But I still treasure the memories I left there. I hold them fast—deep in my heart. 'I thank you, God that I have known/ A child's moist hand within my own.' You learned to do things for yourself from the time I left you. I must say you did a nice job of taking care of yourself. No one had much***

***trouble with you—and I'm glad for that. You loved music almost to a fault. I say <u>fault</u> because you couldn't be dragged away from your favorite dance orchestra even to eat your meals. You usually did you nails while you listened.***

***Oh woe! Your first makeup. I knew I was about to lose you. I just <u>knew</u>* it. But you were much smarter than I thought.** ***It worried me—your makeup. But I decided, after all, didn't <u>I</u> wear it? The old devil and all his imps couldn't make me think it would change you. And surely enough, it didn't! Your first love. Oh how it worried me at first. But as your loves came and went I worried less. You were so sensible. Do you remember when you used to "swing and swish with Tommy Fish?" I know you remember all your happy school days, so I won't go into very much of that! You were "yourself" when you were acting like a little witch. You were beautiful in your teens—just as you are now. Your devilish blue eyes are ever in my thoughts, and not for one moment have I forgotten their lovely twinkle. To say you are beautiful is putting it mildly. This won't give you the big head. You are(not) like that. You'll only smile and forget it. You're beginning to be quite a lady. Your nights at home are few, I know. You're dancing and singing and working your way through the happiest days of your life. Remember that, and make your days mean more and more as you go along. Have your fun now, but be careful of your health. Always let that come first. You're young and beautiful and have a long time to be happy. And <u>remember</u> how I love you. Some day I know you'll find THE one, and I will lose you in a way.***

***But I have you now, so we won't talk of that yet. Do you remember how you said you wanted to learn to cook? Poor Sally! (****Aunt Monte****) Remember the cake you made? (It) landed in the garbage can. I know it would have been a good one! Easter was a happy time for you. You always looked forward to things like that. All of your letters told me this is the way you felt about me: "I'm glad you didn't do too much for me, but insisted that I help myself. Because of your patient coaching and prodding, I'm not helpless." —though I read it between the lines. This (quotation) is so like you. (***Two blank pages in the diary follow—empty except for this: ***Today my mind is blank.) Do you recall the college dance you were to attend—your date was due at 7:30. We shampooed your hair at 4. Oh what a perfect mess. We had to do it over. I was in a state of despair. But we managed to get ready for the date on time. You were a perfect beauty. But your date thought you were a dream. Little did he know how we worked on you! Well, dearest you know I love you, so I am coming to the end of the trail. It won't be long before I'll be near you never to leave again. Hope this (***refers to a picture of a marriage ceremony***) doesn't happen to you before I've had a chance to enjoy myself and be with you enough to make up for all the lost years we were apart. Now the book ends and your mother's prayer: "Help me to keep mind, heart and spirit/Clear toned as an evening bell/ Looking to God at nightfall, knowing/That all is well."*** She inserted this poem:

***As the "cheerful cherub" says: "I like the poor old world, I do/ I sing its praise in ode and sonnet/ It's strange it's not a whole lot worse/ With everybody picking on it!/ I can spend six days a week/ In solitude and never moan/ But Sunday evening is a time/ When no one ought to be alone. / I feel so smug when I've been good/ I soon become unbearable/ I'm really pleasanter to know/ When I have just been terrible./ I'm ready for adventure/ Where death and danger lurk/ For sacrifice or daring/ Or anything but work./ We only find ourselves/ In everything we see/ The more new friends I know/ The more I know of me!/ I try to see my friend's mistakes/ With kind and understanding eye/ And never judge the things they do/ Until I know the reasons why. / If this cheerfulness annoys you/ On the days you're feeling blue/ Please forgive me, gentle reader/ Often it annoys me, too."***

***Sugar, This little letter in booklet form to you brings back memories, doesn't it? Some are very sweet memories and others are on the sad side. Pat made this for me to give to you. All the girls cried when they read it. How are things with you today? In just one hour I will go to the operating room for my treatment. Dr. Alley thinks it will be my last one. Whoopie! I hope it is. He said also that I could leave (he thinks) about the first of August. I'll be seeing you one of these days. You just wait and see—and we'll be happy. In reading this memory letter, you will recall several incidents that we many laughs out of (you, Sally, and I). I have to go now. So keep sweet 'til I see you again. Love and Kisses, Mom P.S. All these pictures remind me of you. Yo te amo."*** Years later, **Jo Rose** attached this note to her mother's letter, "***Mother thought Dr. Alley was wonderful. I didn't agree."***

In July, **Virginia Sullivan** (Ginny) wrote in her diary that Ray Wright and Rayburn, classmates in her Economics class at Murray State, were killed in action on Attu. In a sonnet written in October she wrote, **"*He taught me all of Love I ever knew and when he died my foolish heart died too.*" On July 25, 1943 she "*went to the Baptist Church with Aunt Nell. Everyone in the choir tried to sing louder than the other . . . and the preacher, who is very narrow minded, spoke of the vices of life, etc.*"** Next day she wrote, **"*All day I have thought of John and wondered where he was. I have been so lonesome and longed all day for days like those last ones at Murray before Graduation , June 3, 1943. I do not regret anything that happened. I have learned much and known life more intimately and well since then, feeling both pain and ecstasy. "*** She left Murray State thinking about college and boys she had dated--Bill Smith, Roy Hutton, John Williams (the ***"best,"*** she wrote), Red (Bob) Swing (the ***"worst"***), Paul, Johnny Grant, Johnny Johnson, Harold B., and Everett. ***"How many of them will win their wings? O God be good to them and if it is their destiny to die so young, make it clean, and quick and easy, and may they not feel that death is the end of everything. Surely there is more to life than death and in the end oblivion will not be the answer."*** She took the bus from Mayfield to Union City, visiting at her friend Suzy Slayden's in Milburn on the way and seeing ***Casablanca*** on July19. They roller-skated,

made ice cream, cycled, hiked, went swinging, and walked around Columbia. Back home in Hickman, Peg White showed her Jimmy's wings ***"which is almost an engagement."*** She painted furniture, peeled peaches, sunbathed, shelled butter beans, talked with her sister Jo and with Peg and had visits from Josette (an early name for her sister Jo Sullivan) and from Aunt Blanche Johnson. Uncle Jes Helm screened in the porch for her mother Renie and Aunt Nell. On 7/24 she applied for a position at the airport. She repeatedly reminded herself of Millay's words, "***Love is not all, it is not meat nor drink, nor slumber, nor a roof against the rain.***" On 7/27, Suzy (not Suzy Slayden but an African-American laundress) washed ***"for Blanchie today. She is black as night and off mentally. All day she called me 'Baby' and scolded me for wearing shorts! When I took a sunbath I thought she would lose her eyebrows. Mother made a bookcase out of an old one for me to put all my surplus books and college notes in. I fixed supper tonight. Mrs. McDonald came out early this morning and stayed a while.***" On August 3rd she sent her teaching certificate to Mr. Ozment in Union City. Two days later, he offered her a librarian position. On August 2nd Aunt Blanche received a letter from Robert Erle, whose ship, *The Half Moon,* was somewhere in the Pacific. Blanche was secretive about the letter's contents. On August 12, Ginny took a room in Union City with the Boldings. Two days earlier, she wrote, "***The Chapel Tent Religious Revival is still going on. It has been here a long time . . . Only the illiterate go to it.***" She and Renie (her mother) went to the Holcombs to get some crabapples. Tommy was going to England and ***"sent one of the sweetest letters he ever wrote me.***" On 8/15 she sent family pictures to Robert Erle and had corn ground at the blacksmith's. Next day, she went to the movies, seeing *We are the Marines* with Robert Taylor. She cleaned the attic and smoke house for Renie and Josette "***had a bit of malaria.*** " On the 18th, she ironed 22 blouses and on the 21st went to a picnic. Next day, Jess took Ginny, Jo and some friends "***under the Bluff. We saw such pitiful little homes. Then we came out in town, walked the sea wall and went to the fish docks. The river was beautiful. Went by Drug Store for a coke.*** " With Josette she went to the movies and on the 23rd left Hickman for Union City on a bus which was "***very crowded and the darkies very impertinent."*** On August 22, Robert Erle revealed in a censored letter that he was somewhere near Hawaii or Australia on convoy duty. Ginny read Captain Lawson's ***30 Seconds over Tokyo*** about the Doolittle raid. In Europe, 58 planes and 400 men were lost over Berlin. In an editorial, Eleanor Roosevelt wrote, "***Tomorrow must be greater than our selfishness.*** " Ginny helped with tomato canning on 8/25 and wrote, ***"Each little soul that is born is caught in a pattern . . .*** ." She sent a long letter to Tommy Pogue. Charlie, a hired man, filled the cistern at the house in Hickman. Ginny looked in: ***"It is deep and scary looking.*** " Two days later she made an appointment with Civil Service. On the 28th, Mary Stahr asked her to read her poetry to the Women's Club. ***"I refused. What I have written is mine."*** Next day, Josette played the piano at Ginny's house, playing ***Make Believe, Intermezzo, Desert Song,*** and ***Dark Eyes.*** On the 31st, Ginny got a feather bob at the hair dresser. Next day, she ordered a

cocker spaniel, did tax returns for Cousin Henry in Union City, and hid two eggs in the rooster's pen to fool Aunt Blanche, who decided the bird was a pullet. On September 5, 1943 Ginny wrote, "***The ox was in the ditch today as Mummy said, for we had to sew and wash and iron.*** " That Sunday she went to the movies and saw ***The Amazing Mrs. Holliday.*** On the next day she moved into her room in the Boldings' house and found a canary in her room. She began working in Union City, KY as a high school librarian on September 7, 1943. She left the Boldings' house at 8:00 a.m. and worked until 3:00 p.m., when she went to town with the Boldings and played with Larry, their little boy. In town, Mrs. Page invited them to a duck dinner. Virginia bought cardboard for the vertical files and planned what she would do in the library the next day--especially which "***nonessentials***" to throw away. She fell asleep reading the poems of **Sara Teasdale.** On the 10th, she saw the movie version of William Saroyan's ***The Human Comedy.*** After reading Teasdale on the 11th she felt ***"useless and unhappy."*** The following weekend she went home to Hickman and had watermelon and saw the movie ***Crash Dive.*** She saw ***Prelude to War*** on 9/17. The Boldings announced on September 21 that they were selling their house and taking Ginny with them to their new house. ***"The people who are buying it are Jews and they did act awful 'better than thou' to Mrs. B."*** Ginny and Lucy Garrigan went to the movies with two of Ginny's high school students on 9/23, the day the house was sold. On September 24, she received her first check, in the amount of $114.40, after tax ($15.60), after which she and Josette went to the football game ***"which was quite pitiful, as Josette said, 'We paid $1.50 to see people run back and forth across the field. The people were spectators.'"*** When they got back, the Boldings were shelling peas. Back in Hickman on 9/25, she bought chickens from Curlin's House and Country from Peter Curlin, born 1853, who as an eight year-old ***"watched the Battle of Belmont from a distant field."*** On September 28, she bought the black cocker spaniel she had ordered and named him **Firefly**. On September 30, 1943 she moved to Mrs. Wade's house, "***a dark and gloomy looking place as cold as cold can be . . . She is Scotch and lives up to the traditional reputation of being very close, but I do wonder about her. . . Mrs. Clinkey, a nurse, lives across the hall,"*** and meals were ten dollars a month. Ginny began a second job on Saturdays at the Dotty Shop, working for Mrs. Filler. On 10/10 she saw a movie about the nurses of Bataan, *So Proudly We Serve.* Ginny spent October 19-20 registering students. On October 27, she wrote about going to a high school carnival with her mother. Jo came with some senior students from her school. They didn't get to bed until 1:00 a.m. and her mother left on the bus the next day. On the 28th, Ginny saw the movie *Corregidor*, "***a horrible realistic war picture***." From a library book order, she brought home *Portrait of Jennie,* by Robert Nathan, to read at home and on 11/3 saw another movie, *Thunderbird.* Returning to her cold room on November 7, she was "***so cold and discouraged I could hardly keep the tears back***." Her mother returned, bringing coal and making a fire. Although warm, however, she had a severe headache affecting even her eyes. Her mother walked the dog.

On November 14, Ginny went to the Baptist Church and in the afternoon went to Fulton with a young Navy Instructor named "Bruce." This was **Truman Bruch.** Of the movie she only remembered that it was "***Deanne Durbin in something or other."*** They met Jesse Hahn as they left the movie. The next day she speculated about whom to go out with next, deciding on Billie C. but writing letters to Tommy, Mim, and her cousin Robert Erle. The next day Mr. Ozment complimented her on her work in the school library. On the 17th, two recruiters tried to persuade her to become a WAVE. On the 18th Lucy told her that Bruce had sent a letter care of the airport asking for Ginny's address. Together they wrote and mailed her reply. Ginny hoped that the weekend would be exciting. Next day she bought a new hat , bag, gloves, coat, and dress. Pages from November 20 to 25 were torn from the diary but a few notes were made about working at Dotty's on the 20th, biking with James Burkette on the 21st and going on a date with Steve that night. "***Rather nice, but I should not have let him kiss me. I like Bruce much better."*** Next day, she wrote both Steve and Bruce letters inviting them to Thanksgiving dinner. Lucy didn't like them and didn't want to go. "***Think I can persuade her though."*** On the 23rd, Ginny received a letter from Tommy and the next day Truman called to say he was coming without Steve for Thanksgiving dinner in Hickman. Josette was at school so Ginny got a ride to see her and then found another place to live in Union City on S. Fifth St. Josette spent the night with her and discovered after the car had left taking her mother and aunts back home that she had left her purse on the seat. Josette pressed her skirts. The following day (11/25), she had Thanksgiving dinner and was joined by "Bruce" and Lucy at 4:00. On the 27th she worked all day at Dotty's and her mother and Aunt Blanche returned her purse. Josette and Ginny then stayed in a hotel to have a warm room to wash her hair in. They wrote a letter to Robert Erle on the hotel stationery.

Jo left on 11/28 and Ginny went home and then to Fulton with Truman to see a musical comedy, have a dinner at Smith's, and sit in the car in front of the house until midnight. On November 30, Lee brought coal for the stove in her room. Ginny chafed at having to deal with Mrs. Wade. The State Inspectors came to the library on December 1 and had Ginny to toss out 600 volumes. Back at Mrs. Wade's, Ginny wrote, "***It's uncanny the way things happen around here. Mrs. Wade is as sneaky--yes--sneaky even though I hate to call anybody that--as they come. Always prowling around in my room, suspiciously wondering what I am doing, etc. and turning lights off. Goodness, I hope I will never be that stingy when I grow old. Brought home about 200 old discarded books and I'm wondering whatever in the world I'll do with them. There are some Christmas trees at Thomas's now. I can hardly wait to decorate one."*** On 12/3, she had an argument with Mrs. Wade about the piece of cardboard Ginny had taped over the transom to block light from the hallway. While down town afterward having dinner with her mother, Jo, Blanche and Jimmy, who had come from Hickman, Truman called and left a message with Mrs. Wade. Ginny wrote that she was "***a bit alarmed to find that I cared that I missed the call.***" Next day was her busy Saturday job at Dotty's. Truman

called at Wade's then at Dotty's and when he couldn't reach her, he drove to Union City and took her to Fulton and then to Troy. He came again on Sunday, taking her to Hickman and then walking to the bottoms where they picked up nuts for several hours. After supper they saw the movie *Lady takes a chance* in Fulton, went home and cracked pecans for candy. Meanwhile, Mrs. Wade's "***soeur has arrived. Both are just alike***." She had a duck dinner with Miss Crosswaite on 12/6. She learned that "***Mrs. ___ (Wade) husband deserted her when R. (Ross) was a baby. Married a society girl and I believe that he thinks his mother is a bit too crude. It is quite pitiful and yet disgusting***." She continued searching for a better place to live and bought a Christmas cedar tree at *Thomas's.* The next day she cleaned her apartment, visited with Aunt Blanche, and bought decorations. On the 8th, it was rainy and cold. Little Lee filled her coal box. She rolled her hair and played with Firefly in the yard. Truman called in the evening. When he heard how someone had used Ginny's sugar rationing stamp he became indignant. They saw *Forever and A Day,* came home at 9:30 p.m., went to her room, ate pecans and oranges and talked. "***He was quite amorous but nice. I invited him down during Christmas. Heavens, I don't know what Mumsie will say about that. It's a lot of work for her.***" She decorated her tree on 12/10 with eight colored lights, talked with Lucy about a new apartment, and walked with her to Mrs. Caldwell's. Ginny was afraid of the gas heating there. The dentist put in a permanent filling on the 11th which hurt so much that he replaced it with a temporary. On the 13th she brought three dresses and was disappointed that Truman didn't call. She bought two Dinah Shore records for Jo's present and a half ton of coal for her room. Truman called the next day and on 12/15 they saw *Stage Door Canteen* in Fulton. They got back at 10:30 but Truman stayed until almost 1:00 a.m. "***I acted a perfect idiot. We didn't want the time to go by so quickly as it did***." She almost was late getting to school next day. She visited with Jo and her mother and later talked to Lucy about going to Memphis. "***Rode home in a taxi with a soldier who had been in the Aleutians where it is 60 below***." The next day she wrote that Lucy's mother was sick and the trip was off. "***Went to town, cashed my check and payed bills, bills, bills. I am such a silly little thing, maybe even cheap at times--but there is no sham about me. Gene brought in coal for me as usual. Much warmed today, thank goodness.***" On Saturday the 18th she had supper with James Burkett at Hamilton's, Afterward she bought Jo some more dance music records, wrapped Mrs. Wade's gifts, and helped Mrs. Wade to mail a package to Ross. ***"I think less & less of him the more I hear about him. Believe he is a selfish prig."*** On December 19, she wrote: ***"'I have sometimes dreamed that hours detached themselves from the lives of the angels and came here to live among men.' How truly Victor Hugo spoke! Sunday was a beautiful, lovely day. Bruce (Truman) came way before 2:00. I wasn't even dressed and Mrs. Wade had to ask him in her room. He gave me the loveliest ear bobs I have ever seen. They have a blue set with diamonds around them."*** They picked nuts and berries as they hiked along the Fulton highway, saw a movie, came back to her room and talked

until 2:00 a.m. "'***You look like you're so happy,' he said ' Smiling and dreamy. Such a little head. Sweet and cute. Different from any girl I ever met. I'll tell you how some day. So you really have to work Friday? Let's go to Memphis for the day. Baby. Sweetheart with those little games and cuddly ways. The pretzels look like a cat. When you love someone you don't want them out of your sight. You're so afraid something will happen to them. They are the loveliest gift you could have given me. Don't mind. I won't look. I could carry you away. You are just the right size.' Bruce, I feel like a thief carrying off that little sugar bowl from the restaurant. 'Well, aren't you?' I'll be so excited I can't sleep. 'I'll have a good time seeing you having fun.' Sweet--sweet. 'Fire-light's in my eyes'. Strong arms. 'Did you ever feel that life was so beautiful and dear you couldn't live it enough? Here is a picture I thought you'd appreciate. Want me to come over before Friday? Wouldn't do to disappoint you about the trip. Eyes bigger than your stomach. A while to let it soak in."*** On Monday the 20th she wrote, ***"All day was hazy & I'm afraid I dreamed too much. I mustn't let him become important to me. It might hurt me too much, so I tell myself that this is just an episode, a lovely interlude to treasure in my heart, and not to come true. Met Lucy in town and we had dinner together. Rose Bosenberg met me in town as she was on her way home. Invited us down to Memphis to visit her. Wish on the red birds--they may not come again. Look at the islands on the ceiling. Don't look at your watch. Pretend there is no time. I've cadets to teach. Forget them. You don't have to borrow it from Lucy."*** On Tuesday, she had her hair cut in a feather bob. Too short, she thought. "***I wish I were a bobwhite. Had a nice manicure, though. . . Oh, I wish Friday were tomorrow. Billy Caldwell said today, 'There are only 3 times in one's life when Christmas is important--when you are a child, when you care for some one very much, and when you are a mother. I feel so sorry for her. She is a poor, lonely soul. According to her category, I must be in the second stage. Oh, dear."*** On Wednesday, December 21, she was glad to read the Bible to the Assembly for the last time. Christmas break began on December 23. On the 22nd she worried that Truman wouldn't be able to go, packed a white blouse, took her washing to Pearlie, and borrowed Billie Caldwell's alarm clock. Truman came for her at 7:30 on Friday morning (12/24): "***Oh, what a perfectly lovely day! It rained and was cold, but we didn't care because our hearts were gay. Bruce*** (Truman) ***came early--before daylight--and I wasn't even dressed. It didn't take me long however to get ready and we left at 7:15. It was fun riding along watching morning come. First we went shopping and Bruce bought me 3 boxes of candy, a little toy snowman, red sweater, and bought Mummy 3 pairs of hose and a good phonograph needle for my phonograph. We had lunch at a perfectly sweet little place with palms and soft lights. Then I went with Bruce to buy automobile parts. Then we went to the (Memphis) Zoo and to the art gallery. All of it was loads of fun. Then we went to a movie at Loewe's--Lassie Come Home, which we saw twice. The highway was slick and bad. I lay with my head in his lap almost all the way home. We got here around 12:30 and Bruce stayed until 4:00.***"

Next day, Ginny was tired after only 4 hours of sleep but she took the bus to Hickman for Christmas dinner with Blanchie and the family as well as Jimmy and Bobby Black. Truman came in the afternoon. After dinner, he drove her back to Union City and they talked until 4 a.m.

He came again on 12/26, took her to Fulton to see *Sweet Rosie O'Grady* and to supper at Smith's. She wore her "***little brown dress with the lace ruffles, which Bruce said was mighty thin for winter. Bruce kissed me. He said so many lovely things. 'Sweet from the top of your head to the tip of your toes!' This was a lovely weekend, the most wonderful one I've ever had."*** They talked until 1:30 a.m. The next day she washed and pressed clothes, had visitors, and played the phonograph, feeling lonely. On 12/28 she took a little six year-old named Zookie with her when she went down town to find some radio tubes for Truman. She had supper with the Sullivans. Lucy was also babysitting, so she brought Polly Ann and the four of them went to a movie. "***In the middle of the picture Zookie had to go to the bathroom and he announced it out loud in front of everyone. A cadet behind me was grinning at me from ear to ear."*** The following day, Joe Harrison visited in the afternoon, leaving at 6:00 p.m. Truman came at 6:30 and took her to see *The Fallen Sparrow, "a queer sort of picture. We came back. Bruce stayed until very late . . . 'You are the sweetest girl I ever knew.'"* Her sister Jo arrived at 6:00 a.m. on Thursday (12/30). They wrote a story together as it rained all day. They took the 6:30 bus to Hickman. The Christmas tree came down on Friday. Expecting to hear from Truman, Ginny returned to Union City. She did.

**KYA Dates:** About **43kya**(42.5) paintings and artifacts exposed to fire were left in a cave in **Germany. CE Dates:** In 43 CE Romans under the Emperor **Claudius** conquered Britain. The **Treaty of Verdun** in 843 CE completed the partition of the Carolingean Empire. The word *Francia* was given to the territory of the Franks, under Charles the Bald, who gave Robert **Capet** (the Strong) the region between the Seine and the Loire because of his help against the North men. The **Taj Mahal** was completed in 1643. It had been commissioned by the Mogul emperor **Shah Jahan** as a memorial for his wife, Mahal, or **Arjumand Banu Begum**, who died in childbirth. It took 20, 000 workmen 22 years to build. **William Thompson Newby** left Dadeville in 1843, Missouri, for Oregon Territory with 900 other emigrants to travel for five months on the Oregon Trail and, in 1844, to take possession of his "***donation land claim"*** in Yamhill County. It was named **McMinnville**, after his hometown in Tennessee. In 1943, while working on naval instruments, **Richard James** knocked a torsion spring from the shelf. As he watched it fall to the floor he had an idea of a **slinky** toy. The last transport of Jews left Berlin for **Auschwitz** and **Theresienstadt.** On February 18, **Goebbels** spoke at the Berlin Sports Palace about ***"total war."*** On the same day, a janitor at Munich University saw leaflets floating from a second floor window into the atrium. He detained the two students who had dropped them—Sophie and Hans Scholl. They were taken to Dean Haeffner, who passed them along to the Gestapo. After interrogations, Hans and Sophie

were decapitated. From 800 to 1000 leaflets had already been mailed to university students. The leaflet was the sixth and last message of the **White Rose.** The town of **Oak Ridge** assembled in the rural countryside near Knoxville, TN. Watchtowers, fences, and a security force, censorship of mail, and secrecy oaths administered to everyone working at the facility, soon to include welder **Truman E. Bruch**, ensured that most of the 75,000 new residents didn't know the purpose of the **Manhattan Project. Faiz Oley** was born in Richmond. In February, **Teunis Barendregt**, a bookkeeper since 1940 for the Amsterdam branch of the Coca Cola Company, along with **all Dutch males** aged 18 to 50, was deported to work in German industries. He returned in October for two weeks' holiday, feigned illness until April of 1944, found a job with a car company, and managed to avoid deportation until November, when he was again put onto a freight car for Germany. On May 11, U.S. Forces recaptured the islands of **Kiska and Attu** in the Aleutians. Jerry Warner's father was in the battle of Attu. On January 15, the **Pentagon** was completed at a cost of $83 million, of which $49.6 million was spent on the building itself. On May 13, the **Axis surrendered** in North Africa and 150,000 prisoners were taken. On August 2, a US Torpedo boat near the Solomon Islands was rammed by a Japanese destroyer, the crew presumed dead. But John F. Kennedy and ten of his crew survived and **Eroni Kumana and Biuku Gasa** of the Solomons helped them and carried their message, carved on a coconut, through enemy lines to the Allied Forces. On 8/15, the headline of the *Washington Post* read: ***The War is Over! US Cruiser Sunk, 875 Men Lost.*** This referred to the USS **Indianapolis**, which had carried Atomic Bomb equipment to the Pacific war. The winner of the 1943 Caldecott Award was *The Little House* by Burton. This was one of Susie Rose's favorite books, reminding her of the little house where the Bruches lived in Franconia when they came to Virginia after the war.

## Step 144

On the night of October 12, 1944, Lt. **John Wheeler,** USN, died on the USS Cabot while controlling his battery to destroy an enemy bomber and repelling another as they attacked the task force. An Annapolis classmate of Frank Rose, he had learned of his daughter Linda's birth just before the attack. Later, when Frank was looking for someone to keep Richard while Jo received treatment for tuberculosis in Fitz-Simmons Hospital in Denver, he called Betty Wheeler. Richard stayed with Billy and Linda, rode on their Shetland pony, and had chicken pox living in their finished basement. **Virginia Sullivan and Truman Bruch** were married on February 18, 1944 in Kentucky and **Jo Evelyn Gage and Frank L. Rose, Jr.** on April 13, 1944 in Ft. Worth in front of the Towles' living room fireplace at 2245 West Rosedale. Present were Grady and Monte Towles, Frank and Edna Rose, George Louden as Best Man, and Guy Thompson. In the *Fort Worth Star Telegram*: "***Evelyn Gage Bride of Air Force Man***" The ceremony was read by Rev. Ray Towery. Home was to be the Lewis Apartments in Dalhart where Frank was stationed with the Army Air Force. **Frank L. Rose, Sr.** wrote on his tax return: ***Western***

***Union $3250.05, only dependent is Edna***. They were paying down a home loan. In one of her rare escapes from the house in Chicago, **Frances Schimpf** left the household in charge of her older children when she went to St. Louis because her father was ill. Someone in the neighborhood reported that no adult was caring for the children and they were placed in the Angel Guardian Orphanage for two days. On January 3, Ginny wrote, "***Happiness is essentially a state of going somewhere wholeheartedly in one direction without regret or reservation."*** On January 9, 1944 Ginny and Truman planned to go flying, but no plane was free. Instead, they played cards and cracked pecans and Truman proposed marriage. Afterward, Ginny worried about paying off her debts. They saw a movie, *Heaven Can Wait.* She worried that her mother would be hurt because the family would consider Ginny selfish for marrying before her sister. On 1/13, she "danced a little" with Joe Harrison. Sister Jo visited over the weekend (1/14-16). Pages for 1/17-20 were torn out of the diary. She began blacking out references to "Bruce" (Truman). On January 21, she moved to another apartment, owned by Mrs. Neely. After coming back from a date with Truman, she told Jo and her mother that she was engaged and showed them her ring. On 1/23 while going out with Joanne Neely (the landlady's daughter) to visit Firefly at the clinic where he was boarded, Ginny was surprised by her family's sudden arrival. "***I knew right away what it was for. Mummy and Josette*** (Jo) ***are trying their best to stop my marriage. They mean well, I know. Bruce came at 7:00. I drove a little of the way to Fulton. It was such fun. We decided to marry about the middle of February."*** They stayed up until 3:00 a.m. On 1/25, Jo wrote Ginny to wait until her debts were paid off. On 1/26, Ginny & Truman saw *Watch on the Rhine.* On 1/31, they went to the Court House for a license and got medical certificates from Dr. Lattimore. On February 1, Mrs. Neely said it would be all right to live with her until they could get an apartment. On 2/2, she finally began to write "Truman" instead of "Bruce." She worried about what would happen when the CAA left Martin Field after June 30. ***"What will become of us? I am so afraid of everything. Oh, may this not all be a mistake! I love him. That I am most sure of.*** " Sometimes she wrote about the clothes she was buying, about being broke and receiving a dollar in the mail from Jo. On 2/7 she talked with Dr. Lattimore about birth control. ***"I don't think we should have children for at least a year."*** On 2/8 they met with a Methodist minister, Rev. Upjohn, in Troy. On 2/9 her mother talked with both of them. On 2/ll she borrowed $105 from Gladys Fewell for her "trousseau". On 2/12 they put their marriage notice in the newspaper. Blanche and Ginny made Truman some candy. On 2/13, Truman's birthday, the bus back to Union City was stopped by the police, who took off a black passenger accused of murder. Joe Harrison continued to visit, bringing Ginny a valentine and dancing with her. It snowed on Valentine's day and the next day the school furnace failed. Truman and Ginny were married on Friday, February 18, at 6 p.m. in Troy. They then drove to Nashville and stayed in a hotel. Next day, they visited the Parthenon, the Hermitage, her friend, Elsie Richardson, and had dinner where ***"we saw a midget with no*** arms." On Sunday they

went to church in Nashville. "***We stayed in bed this morning until late because it was raining out and cozy in our little room. Then we bathed, dressed and went to the Episcopal church."*** On 2/21 her mother called to ask for details about their marriage for a newspaper article. On 2/22, returning to Hickman, ***"the family was nice, all except Blanchie, who seems to resent that I am married at all."*** On 2/23, she wrote, ***"I have lived enough the last five days that if I should die tomorrow I would have lived far more than many because each moment has been filled with ecstasy."*** Ginny wrote a sonnet about her marriage. The last four lines were: ***"This Spring has come as Springs have come each year before/Yet never has there been one half so sweet as this, /Or will there ever be. My heart has wings to soar / To heaven, enchanted as it is with love's first kiss."*** On 2/26 she bought dog food for Firefly at Kroger's before returning to Union City. Truman had to fly on Sunday unless it rained. He was home all day Monday so they had lunch at Hamilton's. On 2/29, they found an apartment owned by Marie Branch and moved in on 3/3. Lucy moved to take a job in Knoxville for $140. The next day, ***"Truman fixed everything--the curtains, backyard, lamps, furniture. He is so efficient and can do anything."*** Truman bought her a Schaeffer pen. On 3/5 her ***"pancakes were horrible and the dish towel caught on fire."*** On 3/6, Ginny noted that Blanche was still in Chicago. Ginny was upset that Jo had come to Union City and not visited. On 3/11 her mother and Jo painted the woodwork in the Hickman house. Firefly came back with them from Hickman, but Truman insisted he ride on the floor. On 3/12, they saw *Standing Room Only*. On 3/13 they ordered some items from the *Sears and Roebuck's* catalog. She made them biscuits for the first time on 3/14 and the next day they visited another flight instructor named Barnes. His wife had left him. On March 16, Truman received a letter from his sister Mae, on vacation in Tampa. On April 22, Ginny paid dues to the American Association of University Women. In the column "Mrs. Grundy Wants to Know" of the June 16 edition of the *Hickman Courier*, this entry appeared: "***What business woman, now her own boss, says she can think more clearly with her beads on and always wears them?"*** The answer was Virginia Irene Sullivan (Rentie or Renie, Ginny's mother). She was selling stockings and other women's clothing from her home. **MYA Dates: The Silurian Period** began 440 mya**. BCE Dates:** 544 BCE is the traditional date given for the death of **Siddharta Gautama**, founder of the religion of enlightenment, Buddhism. Based upon analysis of mineralized roots found in the excavations of a lower level of the traditional birth site at the Maya Devi Temple in Lumbini, Nepal(2013), where his mother held onto a tree as she gave birth, his death may have been earlier. In about 444 BCE the **Parthenon** was completed, designed by **Iktinos** and **Kallikrates** and decorated by **Phidias**. Its construction was part of **Perikles**'s rebuilding program after the Delian League defeated Persia. In 44 BCE, March 15, The Ides, **Julius Caesar** was assassinated in the portico of the theater of Pompeii, where the Senate was meeting while the burned-out senate building was being repaired. He received 23 wounds. Supposedly, only one was fatal. **CE Dates:** In 1644 CE, the **Manchus** seized

power, installing the **Qing** dynasty. Meaning “Pure:” As with Pakistan and other start-ups, it is always convenient to think of one's own intentions as pure. The new rulers shaved the heads and pig-tailed the hair of the Hans, but Emperor **Kangxi** governed by Confucian principles. On April 19, 1944, **Woody Guthrie** recorded 57 songs with Cisco Houston. In the same month, he also recorded for Moe Asch. By October, he had joined the FDR campaign Bandwagon. He then recorded *Struggle* for Asch records. Also in April, at Slapton Sands in Devon, 749 men were killed on Landing Ship Transports (LSTs) during a rehearsal for the Normandy Invasion. On **June 6, 1944, or “D” Day,** in the Normandy Invasion, the 29th and 1st Infantries were together. The **F Company of the 116th Infantry,** Stonewall Brigade's Blue and Gray 29th Division of US V Corps, was under Bradley's First Army and Montgomery's 21st Army Group, and Eisenhower's Allied Expeditionary Force. Coming originally from South Boston, Virginia and after being in the Army for 3 years of training, they climbed over the sides of their Landing Craft Vehicles and waded onto Omaha Beach under fire at 6:30 a.m. ("***H hour***")on June 6th. On June 4th, the Battalion of the 29th division boarded the Thomas Jefferson Transport ship at Weymouth for **Operation Overlord.** When Eisenhower ordered a 24 hour delay because of the weather, they held position. On June 5th, **Slim Estes** told **Buddy Thaxton:** ***"when you get back home, tell them all I went down swinging.*** He foretold his death a few hours later. Each LVCP held 35 men, who bailed water as they moved to the beach at high tide in darkness. The first companies were Co. A (Bedford, VA) on Dog Green, the West end of the beach, Co. G (Farmville, VA) on Dog White, Co. F (South Boston, VA) on Dog Red, and Co E (Chase City, VA) on Easy Green and Easy Red. Nothing was easy. In rough sea and under heavy cloud cover, the LVCP's had bobbed like corks in a waterfall, making many men seasick. The Navy pilots had trouble guiding the crafts, so F Company landed where Bedford's A company should have landed. The Bedford men landed facing cliffs. German emplacements were strong on Omaha Beach, because the Air Force could not penetrate the fog. Other beaches (Utah, Gold, Juno, and Sword) had been well pounded and disabled by USAFAC sorties. High tides prevented some LVCPs from reaching the shore, forcing men to climb over the sides and swim in heavy gear, falling in underwater holes, slipping on razor-wire barricades, and menaced by Bangalore torpedoes, mines in the sand or attached to crossed railroad trestles, fragmenting mortar shells, machine gun crossfire, and shrapnel. Waves after the 0630 group came at 0700, 0720, 0730, and 0820. Behind the lines, Allied paratroopers had disabled a Germany infantry unit on the day before.

The mission of F Company was to "***Secure Beach Exit D 3.***" Capt **Callahan** jumped out of Lt. Lamb's #3 Boat Team with his runner, **Louis Milan**. Half-way up the shingle he was struck as he climbed down from a tank after telling the tank commander about a target he couldn't see. Unable to walk, he rolled behind a sandbar. Thaxton raced across the beach, jumped into a German trench, saw an unmanned machine gun, called out, and was nearly struck by an American grenade. He read the 23rd Psalm. His 60mm

mortar section reformed to provide close support for the Rifle Platoons. They fired 3 lb shells into emplacements, where the rounds burst into fragments. Every man carried field gear, rifle, rations, ammo, and 6 highly explosive mortar rounds in canvas carriers. Bob Hope sang *Thanks for the Memories* but one of the F Company men named Thomas sang *Yanks full of Misery.* He assaulted a machine gun emplacement and was killed as he called back to warn the squad. By nightfall, the beach (Dog Red) was secure to St. Laurent Sur Mer. They waited in underbrush near a church cemetery, some sleeping on gravestones. The following morning, a German sniper fired on them from the belfry. Back on the beach, bodies floated in the water, doctors and medics triaged the wounded, and many wounded propped under the cliff waited for rescue. Medics took Capt. Callahan to an LST offshore. He went on to the 192nd General Hospital at Cirencester.

***South Boston Man***

**With eighteen pounds of cyclonite I sank**
**when I came off the ramp up to my chin,**
**the oily water in my nose and flares**
**ahead to show the beach too far away**
**because the boat had stuck on railroad ties**
**the krauts had laid with mines. The churn and shove**
**rough water gave the bobbing landing craft**
**made others heave but fishing with my Dad**
**off Deltaville I had sea legs. A roar**
**around us like a screaming ballgame crowd,**
**a steady bullet-river overhead,**
**poured out once we had come in range. I fell**
**into a crater underfoot and dropped**
**and grabbed my gun. My section sergeant kneeled**
**like at confession on the sand ahead.**
**A shell sliced through him and the mortar rounds**
**he carried burst and bloomed around his stump.**

On July 20, assassins failed to kill **Adolf Hitler.** Of December 16, the **Battle of the Bulge**. Charles Speed wrote, "***The Third US Army, under the command of General George S. Patton, Jr., had an illustrious battle record during World War II, landing on the Brittany Coast in France on August 1, 1944 and fighting its way across France, Luxembourg, Belgium, Germany, Austria, and into Czechoslovakia by the end of the war on VE Day in 1945. It had crossed 24 major rivers, liberated or captured 81,500 square miles of territory and 12,000 cities, towns, and communities, and had traveled 1225 miles. In a letter of May 9, 1945, General Patton expressed to the soldiers of***

***Third Army, past and present, his appreciation and thanks for what they had accomplished. In his closing paragraph, he stated: 'During the course of this war I have received promotions and decorations far above and beyond my individual merit. You won them; I as your representative wear them. The one honor which is mine and mine alone is that of having commanded such an incomparable group of Americans, the record of whose fortitude, audacity, and valor will endure as long as history lasts***.'" On December 17, 1944 at **Malmedy,** Belgium, members of the *Kampfgrupper Peiper* (1st SS Panzer Div.) killed their 80 American POWs. On March 7, 1944, Ferdinand Porsche, Himmler and Mulke planned to take Hungarian prisoners from Auschwitz to work at the **Volkswagen** factory to produce **V-I rockets** in mass production lines. Thousands of these rockets landed in Great Britain. The Newbery winner was ***Johnny Tremain*** by Forbes. **Billy Taylor** was the house pianist at **Minton's** in Harlem, where he met and accompanied many of the jazz performers of the era. At the **Trevi Fountain** in Rome on March 23, a bomb killed 33 German soldiers. Second in Command, Erich **Priebke** in reprisal had 335 men and boys killed in the **Ardeantine Caves** outside Rome.

***Omaha, Dog Red***

**Down darkening, starless**
**deeps, none keeps safe, dropping**
**rounds, rifles, and bibles.**
**Wrenched, tipped, slipped and falling,**
**none knowing, once wading**
**near shore through Bangalore-**
**punched passage, scraps; barbed wire,**
**plinth or fame his name bore.**

**Walk the path.**

## Step 145

Bonny Prince **Charles** visited **Kilravock** for dinner in 1745 before the **Battle of Culloden**, even though **Hugh Rose** was a government-loyalist. Roses did not support Stuarts in 1688, 1715, or 1745. **Jess Hobson** died on January 25, 1945**. Frank and Jo Rose** lived at 2245 West Rosedale in Ft. Worth, the Towles's home, from January to April; then they moved to 3141 Forest Park Blvd. **Anton Van de Riet** died on April 14, 1945. Also in April, Frank returned to active duty as a regular Army officer, Air Corps, on July 5. Frank left duty in Aircraft maintenance and inspection and was then sent to 2nd AF at Dalhart, Texas and Rapid City, SD. He had additional schooling at Orlando, Florida and Geiger Field, Spokane Washington, went through Aviation Engineer School,

was assigned to Aviation Engineer Depot Co. as a Platoon leader and Adjutant, and also did Personnel Affairs work at Geiger field. Duties at **Boeing Aircraft** plant in Seattle as aircraft maintenance officer and technical inspector ended December 17, when he was released from active duty as an Air Corps Lt. with three years service. He worked at Consolidated **Vultee Aircraft** Corp. from December to March 1946 as an apprentice tool and die maker at $1.00/hr. A photo from the time shows **Frank and Jo Rose** in New York's Central Park. **Frank L. Rose, Sr.** wrote on his tax return: ***Western Union $3043.56.*** **Susan Irene Bruch** was born in Knoxville TN on May 1, 1945. Her family lived at 601 Henrietta, Knoxville (18), TN. Her physician, Dr. Joe T. Smith, gave her vaccines for Whooping cough (11/20) and Diphtheria (2/22/46). **Richard Lyons Rose** was born in Ft Worth TX on July 23, 1945. He was named for his grandfathers, Charles Richard Gage and Frank Lyons Rose, Sr. **Jack Rose** saw Lt. **George Louden,** his cousin, for the last time in Japan, where George left the army to tour the world. He later returned to Ft Worth with his Oriental girlfriend, argued with his parents, and was never seen again. Dr. **George Louden, Sr**. was a large-animal veterinarian who worked for the meat-packing plants in Ft..Worth; his wife, **Ruth**, was **Edna Mae McFarland,** Rose's sister. When Frank Jr. was in grade school, Uncle George took him into the packing house. Frank was never able to recall the experience without tears. **Bill Chandler,** Louise Simmons Rose's brother-in-law, was a sheep-buyer and rancher who knew Dr. Louden from the Fort Worth stockyards. Birth of Jerry Lynn Warner on October 18. **Frank Mullinax** played the trumpet for an onstage performance of ***Messiah*** at Richmond's Mosque. Perhaps he played with the bass solo in *The Trumpet Will Sound.* **Nancy Gartrell (**later Nancy Schmit) was born in Alexandria, Virginia. **KYA Dates:** About 45kya, *Homo neanderthalis* and *Homo sapiens* coexisted. *H. sapiens* was fully modern in anatomy and behavior during this Upper **Paleolithic or Late African Stone Age.** Hunter-gatherers used a new tool kit, personal ornaments, beads of teeth, shell, and ivory, bird-bone flutes, missile technology, and were avid hunters of large game. They buried their dead with rituals, as did the Neanderthals. Their populations grew dense, their trade networks and language more complex as they pushed into Europe. The burgeoning population led to more interactions and therefore to more inventions such as tools, painting and more words (Derex, in *Nature,* 2013.) Adult English speakers have vocabularies of 60K words of which they routinely use 4K. **Pinker** argues that knowledge is valuable and, since language conveys it readily, humans became **hypersocial**. Know-how, sociality, and language were keys to being human and the combination of traits probably proved to be an advantage over the Neanderthals. Each trait is a selective pressure on the others. All humans are articulate speakers; therefore the change in the ancestral population occurred about 45kya before leaving Africa. It may have been influenced by anatomical change in the **hyoid** bone, to which the tongue is attached. This articulate faculty is also indicated by art, which abundantly appears at this time. (But see 80kya.) Besides graphic symbols, the tools were finely distinguished, the

makers therefore likely also distinguishing them by *names.* The **Forkhead Box P2 (FOXP2) toolkit of genes** on chromosome 7 is responsible for precise orofacial articulation of speech. FOXP2 makes transcription binding factors to fix DNA in the neural development of Broca's, Wernicke's and other left-hemispheric language centers of the brain. Other great apes also conserve FOXP2, indicating that it derives from a common ancestor. It has 715 nucleotide units. **Mice,** which diverged from our common ancestors at 70mya, **differ in only one unit**. But human FOXP2 is **2 units** different from chimps'. Except for rare cases like the KE family (nw), FOXP2 is the same for all *Homo sapiens.* It swept through the population within the last 200ky, quite possibly about 50kya as the final touch on speech before the exodus from Africa. (Most of this information is condensed from Nicholas Wade's *Before the Dawn*. Mistakes are mine.) **In 45 BCE** The modern **Roman calendar** began**.** In 1545 CE, off the southern coast of England on July 19, the overloaded flag ship of the fleet of Henry VIII, **The Mary Rose**, sank after turning too tightly in the **Battle of the Solent**. It was one of the earliest large warships armed with guns to be preserved intact on the seabed. It fired broadside armament. In 1645 during the **Little Ice Age** the sun produced no sunspots for 70 years because of a weakening of magnetic field. Consequently, less radiation reached the Earth and an ice age ensued. In the **Glorious Rebellion** of 1745 **Bonnie Prince** Charlie returned to Scotland and lost at the **Battle of Culloden**. At this time, the American Colonies had the highest per capita income in the world (Walter McDougall's *Freedom Just Around the Corner*). Wilhelm Conrad **Roentgen** was born on March 27, 1845 in Lennep, Prussia. His family moved to Utrecht where he was expelled from the Gymnasium for admitting to a prank that he didn't do. He was denied a *Matura* and therefore could not be admitted to University. He went instead to technical schools. After being a nation, **Texas** became a state on December 28, 1845. Many Texans still live in a different nation, however. On January 15, 1945 the **Pentagon** building project was finally completed**.** On February 8, the survivors in the Philippines were forced onto the **Bataan Death March.**

Drawing by John O'Conner of Loudoun County Schools
for the cover of the program to *Amber*

***"After our stroll across the jungle,***
***Quenching the friendly insects' thirst,***
***Zeros above to guide our footsteps,***
***We fell in with the Ninety-First.***

***It was the Philippine division,***

***Slaughtered in April when we fell.***
***When Dugout Doug returned to save us***
***Their three hundred heads could never tell . . ."***

***from Harry's aria in AMBER (1999)***

***Walk the path.***

On February 1945, Joe Rosenthal photographed Marines raising the American Flag on **Mt. Suriachi** on the Japanese island of Iwo Jima. Felix de Weldon quickly made a small statue from the photo. The statue went up in Washington on June 4. On February 23, led by Sgt. **Ernest Thomas,** from Monticello, Florida**,** a platoon of Marines raised the American flag on **Mount Suribachi**, on the Japanese Island of **Iwo Jima**. Sgt. Thomas died 8 days later. Churchill, Stalin and FDR met at **Yalta** for peace talks that laid the foundation for a somewhat non-retributive restoration of Europe. Americans and Soviets met in the spring on the **Elbe. Franklin D. Roosevelt** on April 12, 1945, just as Edward R. **Murrow** was visiting **Buchenwald.** And **Harry Truman** became President. **Alexander Fleming** et al. received a Nobel Prize for **penicillin.** The Newbery winner was ***Rabbit Hill*** by Robert Lawson. **Korea** was divided at the 38th parallel between the west & Soviet Union. As he had tried to do, years before, **Hitler** finally committed suicide on April 30, 1945 in his Berlin bunker and the city fell on May 2, the Third Reich ending on May 8. Just as former limitations on trade, thought, and warfare had been pushed back, the universe would become larger.The **limit of the universe** was considered to be 500 M light years, but this was before the 200" telescope at **Palomar**. On May 8, 1945 came **VICTORY IN EUROPE DAY**: The **Surrender of Germany**. Also in May, **Tokyo was firebombed.** Following this, the Japanese knew that they had lost the war and began trying to surrender. Truman contended that Japan was unwilling to surrender, but both Nimitz and Eisenhower knew the claim was false. On May 11, 1945 **Kiyoshi Ogawa and Yasunori Seizo**, part of the **Divine Wind** of kamikaze pilots, dove their Zeros into the flight deck of the **USS Bunker Hill** at Okinawa, killing 393 and wounding almost as many. The ship survived, steaming back to Port Angeles, Washington on May 30. This attack demonstrated the fanaticism/dedication of the Japanese and therefore later provided more support to the plan to use an atomic bomb on Hiroshima. Japan had **3.7 million barrels of oil** at this point. This was less than the amount that the U.S. produced in one day. The **Pan African** conference took place in Manchester (GB). The **Immanuel Lutheran** School was established in Alexandria. The first **digital computer** was built, although a mechanical computer had been built in the last century by Babbage and Lovelace. **Auschwitz** was finally liberated. According to Charles Sydnor (rtd, 1/22/2015) ***"It was the largest of the Nazi slave labor and extermination complexes, encompassing three huge concentration camps: Auschwitz I, the main camp and SS administrative center; Auschwitz II, or Birkenau, the industiralized murder mill built just north of***

***Auschwitz I; and Auschwitz III, also known as Monowitz, the slave labor camp attached to the I.G. Farben factory meant to produce synthetic rubber and gasoline for the German war effort at a cost of thousands of inmate lives. When the Auschwitz camps were liberated by the Soviet Red Army . . . Monowitz also operated a network of at least 45 sub-camps spread throughout and beyond the heavily guarded 20-square-mile SS interest Zone that sealed off the camps from the outside world. This Auschwitz 'universe' functioned as the epicenter of the Nazi Holocaust. Between the opening of Auschwitz I in June 1940 and the Russians' liberation of the camps in January 1945, historians estimate more than 1.1 million victims perished at Auschwitz."*** On **July 16, 1945**, Military and scientific workers on the **Manhattan Project** detonated a nuclear bomb of the Mark III type in the **New Mexico** desert of Alamogordo on expropriated lands in White Sands. **Trinitite,** arkosic sand of feldspar, quartz, clay with traces of Strontium 90 and Plutonium 239, was left behind. The spherical and glassy green particles were made from sand kicked up into the air at a height of about 1800 m and fused at 14,710 degrees F (or 8430 degrees K). Some had worried that the chain reaction would proliferate. A science fiction writer, **Chet Raymo** has said they feared it "***might inadvertently turn the entire planet into a chain-reaction fusion bomb.*****"** Most agreed with the calculations of **Hans Bethe**, however, which showed a limited effect. **Edward Teller** said that they had worried the explosion could get "***out of control*****"** but "***we had discussed these things repeatedly and we could not see how, in actual fact, we could get into trouble.***" They watched the fireball from a distance of 20 miles. **Charles Speed** was transferred to the **G-3 Troop Movements Section,** whose main responsibility was ***"coordinating the movements of all units under the command of Third Army, at the particular time there being about 2,000. Subsequent to VE Day, Troop Movements had been assigned the responsibility in conjunction with the United Nations organization of coordinating the movement of all displaced persons in the Third Army area of occupation. This was a tremendously complex undertaking considering the number of prisoners freed from the concentration camps, those working in the German armaments plants, and the German troops who had surrendered. Those captured by the Germans had come from practically all the countries of western and eastern Europe. The health of many of them was in a deplorable state. They were to be returned to the country from which they had been taken. But to what would they return? They had no money, no homes, no families to which they could go. Although the amount of work was staggering and the hours long, there was a very harmonious working relationship among the men. Too, we realized the task we were undertaking was of utmost importance. For the first few weeks at Bad Tolz, our section worked seven days a week; but after we obtained a couple more clerks, we each were given one day off each week. We had occasional night duty assignments as well . . . General Patton's office was just a few doors down the hall from the G-3 Troop Movements Section, and I saw and spoke to him several times in the halls from time to time. He***

***was usually accompanied by some of his staff and his canine companion, Willie. I should not even attempt to to guess Willie's breed, but he undoubtedly must have been the ugliest white dog that was ever born. He had two dog tags around his neck just as all the G.I.'s wore; and as he trotted along, one would hear them jingling long before one was even aware that Gen. Patton was anywhere near. I never checked to see what was on Willie's dog tags; I suppose it was the usual information: name, serial number, blood type, and religion."*** *On* July 18, 1945, Harry **Truman** wrote in his diary that he had received a *"**telegram from Jap emperor asking for peace.***" On July 30, 1945, the **USS Indianapolis** was torpedoed and sunk. Most died. Some said they had escaped the sharks by not moving in the water. On August 3, **Walter Brown** wrote in his diary that he, James Byrnes (Secretary of State), Admiral W.D. Leahy, and Truman all agreed before ordering the bombs to be dropped that the "*Japs (were) looking for peace.*" **Charles Speed** was in Nice. "***On the outskirts of Nice about a fifteen-or twenty-minute drive was a bicycle track. Because of its large seating capacity, it was chosen as the site of the Bob Hope Show which was touring Europe entertaining the troops. A group of us from the hotel decided to take in the show one evening, so walked over to the Red Cross Club for transportation which turned out to be the good ole Army 2 ½ ton trucks. There was a line of military personnel stretching along the Promenade des Anglais for blocks, so it took about forty-five minutes before we could get into a truck. The show was worth the wait, though, and included Bob Hope, Jerry Colona, the singer Gale Robbins, whose autograph I managed to get at the close of the show, the boxer Billy Conn, Maurice Chevalier, and a host of other singers and dancers. It was in Nice while I was sitting at a small sidewalk cafe having a bite to eat that I read in the Stars and Stripes about the atomic bomb that had been dropped on Hiroshima, Japan . . ."*** The atomic bombings of **Hiroshima** with the Little Boy on August 6 and **Nagasaki** with the Mark III (Fat Man) on August 9 ended **World War II.** Each bomb required only about 800 mg of fissile material but delivered the explosive impact of 16,000 tons of TNT, excluding the effects of radiation. With air-pressure-sensitive fuzes to make them explode above the city, they were dropped from the **B-24 Superfortress** planes familiar to Aircraft Maintenance officers like Lt. Frank L. Rose.

## *Walk the path.*

**More approximations. Ever approximation misses the mark; every mark misses the space. More approximations: One hundred eighty steps are like the days in a school year, the degrees in a straight line, the turn-around path of repentance. So also are these trans-sections through experience.** ***And between the steps, as between individuals, between selves, between particles, between samples of space- time, find the potent vacancy, imagination's spacious room. Dwell there. Walk the path.***

## Step 146

**Josephine Van de Riet and Al Krollman** were married on February 9, 1946. **Frank Rose** applied for a regular commission in December and was sworn in as a 1st Lt., Regular Army Air Corps the following year. While he was waiting, he finished his work for a bachelor's degree (B.A., Liberal Arts) in Chemistry from TCU and worked for the City of Ft. Worth in the lab of the Water Department from March 1946 to July 1947, as part-time assistant to the city chemist at $90/mo. The chemist asked him to stay on. During this period he had a very brief acting career in Schiller's *William Tell* as part of his requirement for a German class. Mother **Mary Cabrini** was canonized and at 4 a.m., **Kathleen Mary Cabrini Agnes Schimpf,** the twelfth of the 14 children born to Joseph and Frances Schimpf in Chicago, was born on July 7. **Frank L. Rose, Sr.** wrote on his tax return: ***"Western Union Maintenance $3467.63."*** ***CE*** **Dates:** In 846 CE **Mount Fuji** erupted. On October 16, 1846 Dr. J.C. Warren used **ether** on surgical patient Gilbert Abbott in Mass. General Hospital. It was the first official use of general anesthetic. In July, **Thoreau** was stopped on his way into town and asked to pay his poll tax. Because he opposed the Mexican war to expand the territory for slavery, he refused and went to jail for a night. He began to write his essay, ***Civil Disobedience***, in his cabin on Walden Pond. A copper-covered wooden dome was completed for the rotunda of the U.S. **Capitol.** In **Staunton, Virginia**, the Presbyterian Manse was built. It would be the birthplace of **T.W. Wilson**. The **Aleutian earthquake** of 1946, caused by an undersea landslide, was followed by a hundred foot tsunami which also killed 149 people in Hawaii. Some attributed the landslide to atomic testing. **Gertrude** Stein, author of *Tender Buttons* and *Melanctha,* died in 1946, and in Farmville, VA, another poet and lover of painting, **Carolyn Kreiter,** was born. Around this year, **James Baldwin** published some of his first writing, although he had been writing from an early age, having written a play at the age of nine and written many stories and essays in school, including the school song for PS 24. He was making a name as a book reviewer, but he was also beginning to feel too restricted by racism and his circumstances to be able to work quietly at his best. His first published work was a review of Maxim Gorky's short stories in *The Nation* on April 12, 1947. Despite his limitations as a "***realistic novelist***," Baldwin wrote, Gorky "***sometimes succeeded in projecting . . . the unpredictability and the occasional and amazing splendor of the human being. It is a concept which today . . . is dismissed as mystic or unreal. Without the insight into the main-springs of human needs, desperations, and desires, the concern with squalor remains merely squalid and acts to brutalize the reader rather than to purge him. If literature is not to drop completely to the intellectual and moral level of the daily papers we must recognize the need for further and honest exploration of those provinces, the human heart and mind, which have operated, historically and now, and the no man's land between us and our salvation."*** (tn 2/9/2015) On May 25, 1946, at the end of a national **railroad strike,** trains

began to return to stations. President Truman had threatened that the U.S. Army would take over the trains if train workers did not return to work. Dr. Erwin Potts led the first congregation to form the **Fair Park Baptist Church** in Fairlington, VA. He left in 1949. The church grew for the next 50 years, but by 2006, it had run out of members. A new church, **Convergence**, was founded. In Washington, D.C., another church, the **Church of the Savior**, was begun by **Gordon Cosby**, whose service as a chaplain in Normandy on D-day had changed his religious views. He had received a Silver Star, and determined to found a church focused on service to the local community. Early on, he resolved to keep the church small. The **post-Manhattan** Project at the University of Chicago included research by Edward **Teller** on nuclear fusion, **Libby** on **Carbon 14** dating, and H. **Urey** on **Oxygen isotopes.** Urey studied fossil mollusks to determine the ocean's temperature at the time they were alive. Studying the Carbon 14 in these specimens, Libby used Fourier analysis to discover that the temperature of ocean sediments changed at 100KY intervals, when Earth's orbit was most eccentrically elliptical. At these times, the Earth experienced cooling or **ice ages**.

## Step 147

**Hugh Rose** of Kilravock was captured in 1547 and imprisoned at the **Battle of Pinkie**. He was later Sheriff and Constable of Inverness and died in 1597. In 1947,**Frank Rose** graduated with a B.A. in Chemistry from TCU and in the same week was sworn in as 1st Lt., Regular Army (Air Corps) on July 5 and reported for duty 20 days later. **Jo** taught Richard two prayers, one for bedtime: ***"Now I lay me down to sleep/ I pray the Lord my soul to keep/ If I should die before I wake/ I pray the Lord my soul to take. God bless Mama and Daddy, Granddaddy and Grandma Rose, Granny Gage, Aunt Monte and Uncle Grady and all the boys and girls in the world. Amen."*** And one for meals: **"*Thank you for the world so sweet/ Thank you for the food we eat/ Thank you for the birds that sing/ Thank you, God for everything. Amen."*** **Deborah Lynn Rose** was born to Jack and Louise on September 15. On February 1, 1946 **Frank L. Rose, Sr. and Edna Rose** began monthly installments on a cemetery plot at Mount Olivet. **KYA Dates:** About 47kya, during the Pleistocene , from a larger population (N=5000), a **pioneer group** of perhaps 150 foragers of the *Homo sapiens* type left Africa and traveled across the Gate of Grief from the Horn of Africa. These were behaviorally *Homo sapiens.* The **San** peoples or their ancestors occupied the Eastern half of Africa up to the Northern tip of the Red Sea. Males of the modern **Oromo and Amhara** peoples of Ethiopia carry the earliest Y chromosome haplotype in small frequency. The San, however, carry it at 44%. This finding is confirmed by similar findings on the mitochondrial DNA data from maternal cytoplasmic inheritance. This area of **Ethiopia,** therefore, seems to be the likely place where **language** was perfected, where anatomically modern humans became **behaviorally modern** humans, and from which the main **exodus of humans from**

**Africa** began. **CE Dates:** In 1847 CE **Semmelweiss** established the cause of **childbed fever.** He noticed that victims had been treated by doctors and students who had not washed their hands after dissections on cadavers. Dr. **Oliver Wendell Holmes** had previously discovered this in the US. The obelisk design for the **Washington Monument** was completed and work begun on the base. Virginian **Cyrus McCormick** built his reaper factory in **Chicago** on the site of the first house in the city, the **Du Sable** cabin. **Pakistan** (Land of the Pure) was established in 1947, made by the act of a British functionary who knew nothing about the land or culture of the peoples who lived there. He simply drew a line on a map. **John F. Kennedy** was given Last Rites because of attack of Addison's disease while he was in London. He received Last Rites twice more before 1963. **Rev. Charles Cowsert** was the first pastor of the **Fairlington Presbyterian Church**, which originally met in a movie theater, since destroyed. He remained with the church until 1973. **Texas City's** fertilizer plant exploded, killing 600 and injuring 5000. An excessive amount of fertilizer was kept in the plant, which was near private homes. **Woody Guthrie** completed his novel, ***The House of Earth***, which was not published in his lifetime. His daughter Cathy died in an electrical fire and on July 10, his second child, **Arlo Guthrie**, was born to his first wife, Marjorie.

## Step 148

**Virginia Irene Sullivan Bruch** came to Alexandria, VA from Hickman, KY in 1948 with her husband Truman and their daughter, Susan Irene Bruch. **Frank Rose** served in the 23rd Fighter Wing, 20th Air Force, Guam. His team laid runways before he was reassigned to Rome, NY. On March 1, Rev. Wilbur S. Hogevoll accepted the call to the First Christian Church, Alexandria, VA. He was known as **Preacher Bill**. The congregation launched a building program under John. B. Owen. Photos from the time show **Richard** in Rome, NY, at the Montgomerys' house, and on a tricycle at the Hoopers' house in Oneida. Other photos show him with **Gloria Hobson, Monte Towles,** two children of about his age named "Jo and Frankie," (While probably in NY, where the children lived is unclear.) and with the first family dog, a Boston terrier named **Jiggs**, who cocked his head to stare into the camera. (Other photos from New York show Lt. George, Capt. Boidie, Irma and Wayne Jarda and family, Mary and Al Schrandt, Capt. Spriggs, and Steve & Alice Bordie.) On a visit to her mother, **Jose Gage,** at Oakville Sanitarium in Memphis, **Jo Rose and Richard** stopped in Jackson, MS to see her father, Charles, and a man identified as "***Uncle Al.***" They visited the Overton Park Zoo in Memphis, where Richard rode the merry-go-round. Jose visited **Don Hobson** and **Mary Yager** and other family members in **Liberty, TN. Frank Rose** was stationed at **Tyndall Field,** where Jo took Richard to the Panama City beach. **CE Dates:** In 1348 CE Sir Gilbert de Keighley of Utley near Halifax in Yorkshire was no longer able to support his serfs owing to the **Black Death**. He took over their lands and released them to become small farmers. **John**

**Utley** moved to a farm near Heptonstall, Yorkshire, about 20 miles from the original estate. The families of Utley, Lemon, Whiting, Franklin, Cranley, Pickens, and **Roose, Wrose, or Rose** (from *hrod* or *heid*, meaning "fame" or "type") migrated together, according to church records from the 1500s, and in later migrations to Virginia. (***"The Rose DNA Project has over 700 participants divided into 105 subgroups, one of which is our Rose Group P."*** Judy Wood notes that the Yorkshire ancestors of twenty-first century Roses ***"lived between 16 and 20 generations ago."*** The Rose Group P belongs to the ***"Western Atlantic Modal Haplotype, the most common haplotype in Western Europe. The subbranch for this Rose family is R1b1a2a1a1a or R-U106. It is estimated that the U106 branch developed about 4200 years ago. Haplotype R-U106 represents over 25% of the R haplotype in Europe...found at high concentrations in the Netherlands and northern Germany. Its presence in other parts of Europe can by attributed to 5th and 6th century Germanic migrations. The Frisians and Saxons spread this haplotype to the British Isles . . .***" (JudyWood, *Louisiana Rose Cousins* pp xi-xii). In 1748, at the age of 42, **Benjamin Franklin** had a large enough fortune from printing, invention, sales of ***Poor Richard's Almanack***, and investments to retire and pursue intellectual interests. Christopher **Dauntesey II** died, leaving debts of £1894. **Agecroft** and its lands were leased to tenants until 1761, when John Dauntesey was able to regain possession. In 1848, Thackeray's ***Vanity Fair*** was published. Riots broke out in **Paris** and other cities (unrelated to Thackeray). John Peyton described another city, **Chicago** (See Cutler, 1982), however, as "***situated on both sides of the Chicago river, a sluggish slimy stream, too lazy to clean itself, and on both sides of its north and south branches, upon a level piece of ground, half dry and half wet, resembling a salt marsh, and . . (containing) a population of 20,000. There was no pavement, no macadamized streets, no drainage, and the three thousand houses in which the people lived were almost entirely small timber buildings painted white, and this white much defaced by mud . . . Steam mills were busy in every part of the city preparing lumber for buildings . . . Large establishments were engaged in manufacturing agricultural implements of every description for the farmers who flocked to the country every spring . . . McCormick employed several hundred hands and during each season completed from fifteen hundred to two thousand grain-reapers and grass-mowers . . .***" Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels published ***The Communist Manifesto,*** no doubt considering reapers as some of the many products of capitalism which created ***"object fetishes"*** and ending with these words: "***workers of the world, unite***." Crowley Fire Chief **John W. Miles** was killed in an automobile-train accident. He had been in the volunteer fire department for 50 years, from the time when hose reel and hook and ladder were the horse-drawn "***Rock and Rollie***" brought to every fire. The **Berlin Airlift** began in 1948. In August, **Hal Halvorsen** kept his promise to the children at Tempelhof Airport to drop chocolates from his **C-54 Skymaster**, the ***"little vittles"*** came down on handkerchief-parachutes. **James Baldwin** went to Paris, where he found some acceptance by the French, was able to live openly as a gay Black man, enjoyed the nightlife with other American expatriates, and was able to write his first book, ***Go Tell It***

***On the Mountain.*** He noticed that in France, the ***"niggers"*** were the Algerians, and wrote about this. The winner of the Caldecott Award was ***White Snow, Bright Snow*** by Duvoisin. The **Framington Heart Study,** a longitudinal medical history of 14,000 subjects began. (It continues as of this writing.) **Ralph Bunche** brokered an armistice between **Israelis and Palestinians**, for which he received a Nobel Prize in 1950, one of several prizes for peace in a region where warfare has continued. **Israel** was founded. At the Democratic Convention, **Hubert Humphrey**, Mayor of Minneapolis, endorsed Truman's civil rights policy, saying, ***"There are those who say to you, 'We are rushing this issue of civil rights.' I say we are 172 years late. The time has arrived for the Democratic Party to get out of the shadow of states' rights and walk forthrightly into the bright sunshine of human rights."*** **Strom Thurmond** and other Southern Democrats split from the party to form the segregationist **Dixicrats.** Rossellini and Ingrid **Bergman** had a child, and the scandal knocked Truman's announcement of the **H-bomb** off the headlines. In the Bell Laboratories, two achievements affected the entire culture for the next 100 years: the invention of the **triode semiconductor** (or transistor) and *The Mathematical Theory of Communication* by Claude **Shannon.** The Rodale Press in **Emmaus, PA** printed Bulfinch's ***Age of Fable.***

## Step 149

**Robert Thomas Helm** was born on April 15, 1849. In 1949, **Frank Rose** served in 3rd AF, Caribbean Air Command, Panama and then was assigned to the Air Training Command at Lowry AFB in Denver. Rev. **John Van de Riet** died on April 10, 1949. **Jane Schimpf** was born to Joseph and Frances. Her children were Jason Czarchowski (father Richard C.)and Catherine Crosse and, by marriage with Dennis Crosse, Dennis, Tim and Brian (deceased) Crosse. **Jo Rose** entered Fitz-Simmons Army Hospital, where she had **thoracoplasty**, the removal of a piece of rib and the collapse of her tuberculous right lung. This saved her life, but the imbalance in muscular tension deformed her spine in later life, especially beginning in her late **seventies. CE Dates** In 1649 CE **Oliver Cromwell** was made commander of Ireland, where he massacred Royalists in Drogheda and Wesford as the "***judgment of God***" on the people, enforced the cruel *Puritans' Act of Settlement for Ireland,* and destroyed stained glass and other art. In 1749 Franz J. **Haydn** left St. Stephen's choir school at the age of 17 after an argument with the director. He studied composition, using texts and sonatas like those of C.P.E. Bach, while teaching and doing gigs around Vienna for a dozen years before going to work for Prince Esterhazy in 1761. In 1949, secret negotiations in **Nanking** between US Ambassador **Stewart and Kwang Ha** failed to find common interest between American and China. **Mao** said, "***We must lean to the side of socialism***." The **NATO** treaty was signed in the Andrew Mellon building auditorium on 14th and Constitution. The Caldecott Award winner was ***The Big Snow*** by Hader. **George Orwell's *1984*** was published. **Annegrete**

**Franke** married a piano tuner named Dollitz in Glendale NY. They traveled to West Virginia and later settled in Richmond, where she began to work for radio station WRFK at Union Theological Seminary. Later, working for WCVE, she hosted *The Guitar Hour,* interviewing Charlie Byrd, Jason Vieaux, Andres Segovia, and others. She taught guitar at VCU, VU, and St. Catherine's. A gardener, she collected seeds of Dawn Redwoods from China, grew them to seedlings, and presented them to Ginter Gardens. The **Nuremberg Trials** ended on July 14. In Albert **Schweitzer'**s one visit to the USA he spoke at an event in Aspen, CO honoring Goethe. He spoke of the deep impression made upon him by Goethe's philosophy and by the characters of the self-sacrificial doctor, **Wilhelm Meister** and of the later ***Faust,*** trying to regain land from the sea. **Montague** wrote that Meister, **"*though unprepared for the task, nevertheless became a surgeon so that he might serve a worthy cause*."** Schweitzer in his address on Goethe, said, "***The object of all philosophy is to make us understand how we are to place ourselves in relation to the universe and how we are to act under impulses which come to us from it.***" Of Goethe, he said, "***For this giant among intellectuals there was no work he held to be beneath his dignity*." "*He was always ready to prove the unity of his personality by the union of practical work with intellectual activity . . . The life course I had chosen led me to the point where I was compelled to embrace an activity which lay far from my natural endowment,***"** but **"*Goethe was the comforter who provided the words which helped me through.***"** Montague wrote that **"*he learned from Goethe the secret of facing facts. He was inspired by the manner in which Goethe entered into the life, the thought, and the activity of his times.***" **Eddie Weaver,** organist at the Wurlitzer console of the Byrd theater in Richmond, began a radio show on **WRNL** called "*Weaver's Open House*." On February 14, 1949, the Moore-Stoessel Motor Company on the corner of 9th and Parkerson in Crowley, Louisiana opened its newly refurbished shop for the ***"most modern automobile and truck repair services found in the area."*** Al Stoessel and Jimmy Moore said that the "***next look***" lines of the 1950 Studebakers like the Champion sedan had advanced styling, self-stabilizing coil spring front suspension, luxurious interiors and maximum passenger space.

## Step 150

One day in 1950, after **Aunt Monte** had **bathed** Richard as she took a bath, **Jo** returned home and said, ***"He is getting too old for you to bathe together."*** Richard was puzzled about the tension between them. On November 11, 1950, **Frank Rose** was promoted to Captain, USAF. **Edward N. Yager, Jr**. died on April 10, 1950. **Aunt Ann Kirk** wrote to her sister Frances in Chicago that Uncle Richard's daughter had died from cirrhosis; that Sister Canisius, their sister, was ill, and that John had surgery for a double rupture. **MYA Dates: The Ordovician Period** began about 505 mya and 500 about mya, the first **pelecypods** (clams & allies) appeared in the oceans. Mica schists of **Great**

**Falls, VA** were laid down by sediments of the **Iapetus Ocean.** At 50mya the Earth was 25C degrees hotter than today, consequently releasing from northern seas the deep **methane hydrate** deposits which intensified global warming. (Cox estimates that a 10C degree change by 2100 could release 10 trillion tons of methane hydrates.) The **Rocky Mountains** began their uplift, which continued for another 50 my and extended from S. Colorado northwest to the Canadian border, forming three complex regions: Northern, Middle and Southern Rockies. Between the Middle and Southern Rockies is the **Wyoming Basin** and between Northern and Middle R. is the **Columbia Plateau**, which extends and enlarges westward to the Cascade-Sierras. **KYA Dates:** About 500 kya **Worldwide cooling** occurred due to the extreme eccentricity of Earth's orbit, superimposed over cyclical patters of a rocking axis and the wobble of precession. In Southern Africa, early humans used **spears** to thrust into prey at close range. The end of the **African Middle Stone Age** came about 50kya**.** Possibly during this period, the **FOXP2** mutation swept through the *Homo sapiens* population, leading to **speech**. **BCE Dates:** In 950 BCE the Hebrew tribes divided into **Israel** under Jeroboam I (900 BCE) and **Judah** under Rehoboam and then Asa. By 850BCE Israel had been led by Omri, Ahab, Elijah, Jehu and **Elisha**; Judah by Asa and Rehoboam; and Assyria by Ashur-Nasir-Pal II and **Shalmanese**r. In 750 BCE in **Heathery Burn** a quartz cave was used to cache a Thames chieftain's hoard of objects of gold, lignite jet, iron, and bronze, including iron wagon wheels, a bronze liquor bucket, pins, bracelets, tweezers, razors, spears, and harness. At **Danebury** in Hampshire in 550 BCE a hilltop fort was enclosed and reinforced to protect the settlement of about 300 people. 450 **Xerxes I** ruled Persia in 450 BCE and **Nehemiah** was ruler in Judah. In 50 BCE, Palestine fell to Rome, under **Pompey**. **CE Dates:** The Builders arrived on **Easter Island**, Chile around 50 CE. They began to carve the **moai** sculptures of their revered ancestors and protectors, facing them to the sea. In 1450 **Jack Cade**'s head was impaled on London Bridge. 1850 **Susan B. Anthony** began her activism for prohibition and abolition. After meeting Elizabeth Cady, she put her efforts into the women's suffrage movement, in which activists like Mathilda Joslyn Gage were already engaged. Cady wrote Anthony's speeches. **North Korea attacked** South Korea on June 25, 1950. The Harvard radiotelescope discovered the interstellar signals in the radiofrequency of **Hydrogen**. The Newbery winner was ***The Door in the Wall*** by DeAngeli. **The cook quit** working for **Marjorie Kinnan Rawlings,** author of the Pulitzer-winner, *The Yearling,* who was known for serving sumptuous southern meals at her home on Cross Creek, FL. During the 1940s, Rawlings gained a reputation as a fine cook. Her cook, however, was **Idella Parker**, a Black woman like many others in the period, when *Ladies Home Journal* and other women's magazines ran articles about how ***the help*** should be attired. Rawlings's *Cross Creek Cookery* of 1942 used many of Parker's recipes without attribution. Parker later wrote, **"*Many of the recipes in the book were mine, but she only gave me credit for three of them, including 'Idella's Biscuits.' And of course it was me who did most of the cooking when we were***

***trying our recipes out. All I ever got from the cookbook was an autographed copy, but it those days I was grateful for any little crumb that white people let fall, so I kept my thoughts about the cookbook strictly to myself."*** Mrs. Parker began to work for civil rights and published her memoir in 1992. Her experience was like that of many others, called "Beppie," "Aunt Polly," "Mrs. Clinksales," "Dora Charles," and "Mammy," whose intellectual property concerning the methods of cooking and the proportions of ingredients in dishes like pecan pie and clam chowder made its way into hundreds of cookbooks by "southern cooks" from Marion Brown to Paula Dean. (<NYT 2013072013)

## Step 151

On July 1, 1951 **Charles Richard Gage** ("CR") died. **Frank Rose** left **Lowry** AFB and went into training at **Keesler** AFB, Biloxi, MS, after which he entered the Armed Forces **Special Weapons** Project (AFSWP) at Sandia Base, Albuquerque, NM. It was at Keesler that Richard defended his mother against an enraged neighbor, Mrs. Regetti, who pounded on their door. He saw her coming, raced into the house, and pushed a chest of drawers in front of the door. Her husband had been passed over, while Frank had moved up in rank after training. Mrs. Regetti had previously practiced her beautician trade on Jo's hair. It was unclear exactly why she was so upset, but Jo had no more hair-dos. **Frances Schimpf** wrote to her sister Helen on November 7, 1951 about her hospital stay for a serious breast infection. She also mentioned that her son Jim had just gotten a denture at the age of 20 and that he and his twin, Jerry, were going into the service. She passed on information from a letter from their **Aunt Ann Urwin** (later Ann Kirk) in St. Louis to say that Bob Urwin also would be going into the service. Sadly Kenny is verbally abusive to her. On July 14, 1951, Dr. J.N. Baum recorded a "take" for **Susie's** small pox vaccination. **BC Dates:** In 551 BCE **Confucius** (Kongzi) was born. **CE Dates** In 451CE The **Coptic Church** split from the Catholic Church. By tradition, it was founded by **Pope Mark of Alexandria**, reputedly the author of the *Book of Mark.* In 1551 CE, the **Council of Trent** met to formulate its doctrines against Protestants, atomists, and others. Reverend **Robert Rose** was buried in 1751 at St. Paul's Church in Richmond, VA. A spring-fed lake was discovered on the top of a mountain in SW Virginia. It was called **Salt Pond,** 100 feet deep. A**Submarine telegraph cable** went into English Channel in 1851. **William Henson and John Stringfellow** began working on the 12 foot wingspan fixed wing plane model in 1847. Both were mechanics in the lace-making industry in Chard, where they met at the Chard Institute, one of the early science societies. In the early 1840s after preliminary study of bird wings and deciding that flapping was not feasible, they tested airfoils by tethering wings to moving trains. Early plans for a manned, steam-powered plane were not fulfilled, but with a specially designed miniature steam engine and an Ericsson screw-driven propeller for the power house, their design received a British patent on September 29, 1842 and their **Aerial Steam Carriage**

flew 120 feet in 1851. A brick house was built on Church Hill at the site where William Byrd named the city of Richmond. **Luther Libby** liked the way the house at 1 North 29th Street overlooked the port, where he was co-owner of a ship's chandlery business. On September 1, 1951 **J. Richard Winter** was installed as minister of **Warrenton Presbyterian Church**. President Truman fired **General MacArthur** on April 11, 1951. MacArthur subsequently addressed the military academy, Congress, and other groups talking about "***duty, honor, and country"*** and, in April, saying to Congress, ***"old soldiers never die. They just fade away."*** Not everyone was moved by his speeches. Movies this year included *The Detective*, starring Kirk Douglass, and *Ace in the Hole.* **Stanley Miller** simulated organic evolution in the lab. **Ferdinand Porsche** died at the age of 76 after working for Hitler to produce **Volkswagens**, tanks, and **V-I rockets** and then returning to Austria to design the sports car to be manufactured under his son's direction. For his Nazi work, he spent two years in confinement without charges and without providing any information to his captors. The Newbery winner was ***Amos Fortune, Free Man*** by Yates.

## Step 152

**Frank Rose** left Sandia Base, Albuquerque, and returned to Rapid City, SD in 1952. Dr. J.N. Baum gave **Susie Bruch** vaccine boosters for whooping cough, diphtheria, and tetanus on June 26, 1952. **Loretta** took her sisters Kathleen, Jane and Madonna to visit her family in St. Louis. While they were there, the girls caught chicken pox. The twins **Jimmy and Jerry Schimpf** were sent by the Army to Camp Breckenridge, Kentucky. Judge **Tillman D. Johnson** died ca. November 2, 1952 at the age of 95 in Ogden, Utah. He was the oldest American jurist to sit on the federal bench. (O.W. Holmes retired two months before he was 91.) He was appointed by Wilson in 1915, retired in 1948, and suffered a stroke on September 11, 1952. After being hospitalized he lived in an Ogden hotel. He said his most interesting case was "***the next one."*** In 1927, a bitter claimant whose case had been dismissed fired 5 shots at him, striking the hip and knee. FDR pressed his court reform program in 1937 when Johnson was 80. He said, "***I'm nearing 80, but I have no intention of either dying or resigning."*** Born in a log cabin in Rutherford County, TN in 1858, he attended Cumberland University in Lebanon, taught school for 5 years in Tennessee, and was named principal of the reservation school at Fort Bennet, S.D. in 1885. He practiced law in Ogden for 26 years, and ran unsuccessfully for the House as a Democrat in 1912. His wife, Fannie McCall of Huntingdon, TN, died in 1938. In 1920 he settled a case between farmers and smelting companies. The farmers complained that gases sickened their livestock. He imposed restrictions compelling the smelters to treat the gases and made new requirements for the growing season. **MYA Dates:** About 520mya ***Fuxianhuia protensa***, a 7 cm long Cambrian arthropod, lived. Its 3-part brain in the front of the gut was the oldest known arthropod brain. **CE Dates: Leonardo DaVinci** was born in 1452. **John Speed** was born

in 1552 in Farrington, Cheshire, England. In 1752, one hundred seventy years after the Continent, Great Britain accepted the **Gregorian Calendar.** In Boston, **Abiah Franklin** died at the age of 85 and in the care of her daughter, **Jane Mecom.** Abiah's youngest son, **Benjamin,** had this epitaph inscribed on his parents' head-stone: ***"Josiah Franklin and Abiah, his wife, lie here interred. They lived lovingly together in wedlock fifty-five years. From this instance, reader, be encouraged to diligence in thy calling, and distrust not Providence. He was a pious and prudent man, she a discreet and virtuous woman. Their youngest son, in filial regard to their memory, places this stone."*** (from Jill Lepore's article in NY, 2013). **Fielding Lewis** built **Kenmore** in Fredericksburg, VA. He was married to **Betty Washington,** George's sister. The Fox and the Crow over the mantle was made by Langley. Later came Maria Ball Carter (Mrs. George Tucker, 1784-1823) later lived at Kenmore, and was painted by Thomas Sully (1783-1872). In her journal, Maria wrote, "***Until my twelfth year I resided with my excellent grandmother Washington . . .Placed in that happy medium between poverty and wealth in a populous and friendly neighborhood . . .My youth glided away unmarked by any incident worthy of record except the friendship I early formed for Eleanor Parke Custis*** (Nellie, 1779-1852)***, the granddaughter of Aunt Washington and the beloved protege of the General."*** In 1852, The **Studebaker** Wagon Corporation opened in South Bend, IN. Its wagons went on display in its Chicago showplace. **Agecroft** was renovated. The lime plaster removed, windows replaced, the interior remodeled. The East Lancashire Railway from Manchester to Bolton was plotted to pass through the house. Robert Buck Elizabeth Hull petitioned Parliament to change the route but the petition was denied. The new route passed within yards of the east wing and destroyed barns and other buildings. The main entrance of the house was moved from the East Side to the south. (This information and other information about Agecroft came from a poster on view at its current site in Richmond, VA.) **Turgenev** published *Sketches from a Hunter's Album.* In 1952, **Lady Wonder,** a psychic horse living in Richmond, signaled that a lost boy was hurt but still alive in Kansas. The boy's skull was found a year later near his school in Rhode Island. On February 6, 1952, **King** Edward died. **Queen Elizabeth** was to be crowned at the age of 26. On December 5-9, 1952 the **Killer Smog** struck London. Many suffered from the coal dust and fumes from thousands of small stoves. **High Noon** was directed by Fred Zinnemann and starred Gary Cooper. Theme: "*Do Not Forsake Me.*" Albert **Schweitzer** received the Nobel Peace Prize for his work in Lambaréné and his efforts for world peace. On January 3, 1952, **Dragnet** became a TV show at 9 P.M. on NBC, starring its creator, Jack Webb. Harry Truman founded the **National Security Agency** (NSA). **Hiroji Satoh** won in the world table tennis competition in Bombay and introducing the sponge-covered bat. Several months later, he was beaten by **Marty Reisman**, who used the traditional bat and for the rest of his career protested the use of sponge bats. **Abraham Nemeth** published his ***Braille Code for Mathematics and Science*** Notation. The Nemeth Code became the standard expression of mathematics for the blind. He later developed a calculator for the blind and an audioprogram called Mathspeak. In

November, **Edward Teller and Stanislaw Ulam** at Berkeley set **Ivy Mike** into operation on the Pacific island of **Enewetak.** An atom bomb was used to detonate a larger explosion which stripped the island and threw bits of its coral reef 15 miles away. Residue from the blast contained **new elements**, later named **Einsteinium** and **Fermium**. This was basic science on the machinery of stars; it was also ordnance engineering on the new weaponry of **Hydrogen bombs.** A Douglas C-124 **Globemaster** from McChord AFB headed for Elmendorf AFB in Anchorage with 11 crew and 41 passengers aboard crashed at full speed into Mount Gannett and slid down Colony Glacier, 40 miles east of Anchorage. Some of the wreckage was found a few days later by the Civil Air Patrol but most of it lay under ice until the period of global warming in 2012-2014.

## Step 153

On January 15, 1953, **Don and Barbara Hobson** were married. **Philip Sadeghy** was born on 7/23. On Saturday, May 2, 1953, the cornerstone was laid for the new church building of the **First Christian Church in Alexandria, VA.** after a long building campaign led by **Darryl Dawson** and others, in which "**magic boxes**" of cash were collected from the congregation. **Susie** remembered the excitement of collecting the magic boxes with her parents. This ceremony at 3 p.m. came the day after Susie's eighth birthday. Members of the Andrew Jackson Lodge officiated in the laying of the cornerstone. Darryl Dawson, C.L. **Lescalleet**, and other church members, including **Rev. Hogevoll**, who were also Masons, took part. Mementos from 1953 were placed in the cornerstone. On September 11 **Jim Hobson married Juanita Sadler**. And **Frank Rose** returned to Albuquerque, NM, this time stationed at Kirtland AFB. Richard was taken to a local television studio, where he heard the cowboy host sing live what he sang on television about "***heading for Albuquerque, saddle-bags all filled with beans and jerky.***" Then Frank was sent to Wright-Patterson AFB in Dayton, OH. Richard sometimes watched Ruth Lyons from WLW in Cincinnati with Jo and sometimes Saturday Wrestling with showmen like Golden George in his golden ringlets. At a Reds game in Cincinnati, they saw big Ted Kluzewski hit one out of the park. Other shows they watched in the 50s and early 60s were A*rthur Godfrey, Father Knows Best, The Life of Riley, The Honeymooners,* and *Ed Sullivan*. **Charles Speed** moved from the Atomic Energy Commission enriched-uranium plant in Portsmouth, Ohio to the AEC headquarters in Washington, D.C. **CE Dates: Constantinople** fell in 1453 to the Ottoman Turks**.** The war for control of **France** ended. Only Calais remained to the British. **Oliver Cromwell** was made **Lord Protector** in 1653. George Washington in 1753 surveyed the site which later became **Pittsburgh,** where the Allegheny and Monongahela Rivers join to make the Ohio. The **Wilton** estate was built upriver from Richmond on the James by the Randolphs. In 1853 **Solomon Northrup** managed to get word to his family in New York. Using a state statute against placing residents into

slavery, the governor of New York obtained Northrup's freedom from a plantation in Louisiana. Northrup wrote ***Twelve Years a Slave*** the following year and became active in the abolition movement. In 1953 work began on the building of **Fairlington Presbyterian Church.** In Korea, GIs fought to seize **Pork Chop Hill.** Kenyan Independence came under **Kenyatta**. And **Watson, Wilkins, Crick and Franklin** determined **DNA structure** and published in the April 25, 1953 issue of *Nature*. Fidel **Castro** was unable to become a New York Yankee and therefore took up politics. On September 10, 1953 the new addition to **Warrenton Presbyterian** Church was dedicated. **Queen Elizabeth** was crowned at the age of 27. The **North Korean Armistice** was signed on July 27. The **Orphei Singing Club** was established in the 1300 block of West Irving in Chicago. The same building later became the **Rizal** building, named after Filipino leader Dr. Jose Rizal, who once came to Chicago for 12 hours.

## Step 154

Birth of **Josephine Janes** was born on January 15, 1854. She became **Josephine Helm** and lived on a farm near Como. Grandmother **Helm** married at age 19 and received a black leather horsehair sofa as a wedding gift. It was the red sofa in Jo Sullivan's living room at 4 West Howell which **Ginny** later took with her to the Fountains at Washington House, in Alexandria. In 1954, **Susie** lived at 413A Del Ray Avenue in Alexandria, next to **Beverly Morgan** on the corner and **Beverly Clark.** Her mother, Ginny Bruch, worked at the Federal Trade Commission in the Library Division of the General Services Bureau. Ginny's mother, Virginia I. Sullivan, and sister, Jo Sullivan, lived at 15A Auburn Courts in Alexandria. When Susie visited them she recalled going through the many brick arch-ways, calling them **"*mouse-holes*.**"In Fairborn Ohio, **Richard** was baptized by Rev. Pugh in the font behind the altar, received a Bible, and entered the junior department of the Hillcrest Christian Church in Fairborn, Ohio on September 26, 1954. On June 2, Dr. H.H. Williams gave **polio** immunizations to Richard and other students at Gettysburg Elementary School in Dayton (Montgomery Co.), enrolling them as the National Foundation for Infantile Paralysis's **Polio Pioneers** whose **"*membership is hereby presented for taking part in the first national tests of a trial polio vaccine conducted during 1954, signed by Basil O'Connor, President."*** On 7/24 **Chris Rose** was born. A letter from W.W. Adcock, departing supervisor of the Dallas office of Corn Products Sales Co. (selling Linit, Masola, Kremel, Karo, Argo, Bosco, Niagra, and "dextrose, the food energy sugar." from 3409 Oak Lawn Ave. Dallas, TX) was sent to Grady Towles on 11/21 expressing ***"thanks and praises (to) Grady for his help, for the good-bye dinner and gift"*** and soliciting ***"his help for (my) successor."*** Some of the people who later signed Grady's own retirement card were Gene Morgan, Inez Miller, Jack Brundy, Buddy Hightower, Loren Moses, N.E. Low, and Bill Willard. **CE Dates:** In 1054, a supernova was observed, later called the **Crab Nebula.** In the same year, the Eastern and Western

Bishops excommunicated each other. In 1154, **Henry Plantagenet** became **Henry II,** the first of the Angevin kings and the first of fourteen Plantagenet kings**.** His mother was Matilda and his father was Count Geoffrey d'Anjou, named *planta genista* for the yellow flower on his helmet and later on his family arms. The Plantagenet family divided into Anjou, Lancaster, and York families. Henry married **Eleanor d'Aquitaine.** In 1454 **Henry VI** succumbed to hereditary madness, which came through his mother's line. Richard, Duke of York, became Regent. Henry recovered in 1455. John Philip **Sousa** was born in 1854**.** His father was trombonist in the Marine Corps band. **George Pullman** used 500 men and 2500 jackscrews to lift the **Tremont Hotel** 8 feet ***"without disturbing a guest or cracking a cup."*** Elevation of buildings, using fill from dredging; laying macadam streets and vaulted sidewalks, and (in 1900) changing the course of the river so that it no longer carried sewage into the Lake were some of the measures taken in **Chicago** to prevent disease, improve traffic, and destroy the wetlands, called "***sloughs."*** **Thurgood Marshall** argued in 1954 the case of **Brown vs. Board** of Education before the Supreme Court. A huge anti-immigration effort, called **Operation Redneck,** was followed by the secretive return of many immigrants. Charles Townes used ammonia gas to create a stimulated emission of micrometer light from electrons, the **maser.** The winner of the Caldecott Award was ***Madeline's Rescue*** by Bemelmans. Felix de Weldon made a statue of the Marines raising the flag on **Mt. Suribachi** on Iwo Jima Island, based on the photograph taken by **Joe Rosenthal** (Pulitzer prize). His first monument in 1945 was 12 ½ feet tall and placed in front of a building which later became the Federal Reserve. He paid for it himself. It remained until 1947. Congress then authorized the 32 foot bronze which currently overlooks the Potomac River at the bridge.

## Step 155

On February 13, 1955, **Jo Rose** finished training for the **Gray Lady** service, as a part of the Greene County Chapter of 2750th USAP Hospital and Wright Patterson Air Force Base. **Mark Schimpf,** born on March 14, 1955, was raised by his older sister, **Loretta S. Wolf**, in the Upper Peninsula of Michigan, where he came back to live after a short Army hitch in Germany. On April 3, 1955 **Susan Irene Bruch** was baptized at 5:00 p.m. at First Christian Church, 2723 King Street in Alexandria. Her grandmother **Rentie** wrote this prayer in the back of her own Bible: **"*Confession of love—belief in our Christ. Palm Sunday Baptismal Service. Dear little Susan and her S.S. class. May Susan ever hold her childhood faith of sincerity and worship, though her dear precious life follow in His Steps, always the Star of Bethlehem as her guide, and grow in wisdom of our dear Lord and Savior, as in stature. Blessings of our dear Lord and Savior be with her throughout (her life). Always my prayer for my precious grandchild.***" In a small, white *New Testament* that Susie received, this was written, "***Palm Sunday, April 3, 1955. Presented to Miss Susan Bruch in token of her Christian***

***baptism from The First Christian Church in Alexandria, Virginia, 2 Tim. 2:15,*** **Rev. Wilbur S. Hogevall, Minister.**" Everyone called him "Preacher Bill." On April 27, 1955, **Richard** and **Aunt Monte** went to the *Treasures of the Sea* exhibit at the Fort Worth Children's Museum. On the family's many road trips, Richard watched for Burma Shave signs like these: ***"Within this Vale --- Of toil and sin ---- Your head grows bald ---- But not your chin ---- BURMA SHAVE."*** These were early markers to many close shaves. In this year or a year earlier, the Roses' house at 28 Rockland Drive was just missed by a car coming at high speed across back yards and the front street. It struck the Schusters' picture window and toppled their blue gazing ball. The flamingos remained. On March 18, 1955, **Cindi Price** was born. **MYA Dates:** About 55 mya, the **Eocene Epoch** began**.** ***Archicebus*** lived as an arborial, mouse-sized, insectivorous mammal in China. It is the earliest known primate. **Whales** split from the line of even-toed ungulates (Artiodactyla) such as hippos and deer. **BCE Dates:** In 55 BCE, Caesar made a military expedition to Britain. It didn't go well. **CE Dates** In 1755, **Samuel Johnson** published his *Dictionary.* The **Acadians** were driven from Nova Scotia. They traveled across Canada and the colonial states, many of them finally settling in Louisiana along **Bayou Teche.** During the French and Indian Wars, **Braddock** died near what is now the Pittsburgh suburb of Braddock and Colonel George Washington led the retreat to **Fort Necessity** after ordering Braddock's body to be buried in the middle of the road to hide his death from the enemy. In 1855 at Midlothian, VA, near Richmond, a **coal mine explosion** killed 55 miners, most of them **slaves.** The **Warrenton Presbyterian** Church building was completed. **Heinrich Barth's** *Travels and Discoveries in North and Central Africa* described his five years of exploration for Great Britain. British explorers sought both trade routes and ways to close the slave trade in Central Africa which continued after Britain had abolished it in 1807. **John Phillips,** building on the stratigraphical maps of his uncle, William Smith, classified organisms of the past into three large time eras : **Cenozoic, Mesozoic,** and **Paleozoic**. **Thomas Woodrow Wilson** was born at the Presbyterian Manse in Staunton, VA., where he lived until 1857, when the family moved to Augusta, GA. and then other ministerial positions for Joseph W. in SC, NC, and TN and as Confederate chaplain. When Wilson was born, the continental United States had 30 states. By the end of his life, there were 48. Mrs. Joseph Wilson lay in bed for weeks after his delivery, receiving guests in the bedroom. Her cook and two other servants were slaves rented by the church from a local landowner whose wheat farm didn't require as much labor as was required to pluck cotton or sucker tobacco plants. The terms of their contract specified payments to the servants and special quarters for the cook. The manse had many fireplaces, no running water, and both open hearth and new oven with a ***range*** of temperatures in its different compartments. The servants were therefore kept busy cooking, hauling firewood and water from town, and keeping many irons hot for the clothes laid out on the tables after the meals had been served either in the downstairs or upstairs dining rooms. Tom and his sisters learned not to talk during meals, especially

those served, one course at a time, in the upper dining room. Diners left the dining room between courses so that servants could clear the table and bring up the next course from the kitchen below. Mrs. Wilson had a guitar and melodeon in the parlor, which also served as a church meeting room for the Session and other events like funerals, weddings, services, and discussion groups. The **Old School General Assembly** met in Nashville, TN and published the following statement about slavery: "***In few, if any of our Southern States, are laws enforced forbidding that slaves be taught to read. Usually, as far as among any other class, Sabbath Schools are sustained for their instruction . . . And we believe ourselves to be speaking the sober truth, when we say there are in our southern churches thousands of slave owners, whose desire and effort is to prepare those whom an inscrutable providence has cast upon their care, for a state of liberty and self-control they cannot yet enjoy, and whose fervent prayer it is, that God would hasten the day of safe and salutary freedom to men of every clime."*** In 1955, Dr. **Schweitzer** received honorary O.M. and Dr. **Joyce Brothers** memorized volumes of information about boxing to win the top prize on television's *$64,000 Question* program. She was one of only two to win the top prize. This launched her career as a public adviser. **Lawrence Welk,** a band leader from North Dakota, also began his television career. After TV studio recordings, his orchestra played at the Aragon Ballroom. **William A. Hazel** joined the U.S. Army. He was discharged in 1957 and went into law in Northern Virginia. **Mary Robertson Moses,** or **Grandma Moses,** was interviewed by Edward R. Murrow on the television program ***See It Now.*** The winner of the Caldecott Award was Brown's ***Cinderella***.

## Step 156

**Oliver Towles** was born on March 15, 1856. **Jose Nell (Hobson) Gage** died at 7:03 a.m. in Memphis at the Oakville Sanitarium, at the age of 54 on January 2, 1956. She was the widow of Charles Richard Gage ("C.R."), employee of Memphis Compress. The family of her daughter (Jo Evelyn) was in Dayton, OH. She was survived by siblings Wilson, Jim, Auburn, Franke Yager of McMinnville, Monte Towles of Ft. Worth, and her mother, Mrs. J.E. Hobson (Mary) of Liberty and was buried in the National Cemetery of Memphis. In February, **Frank L. Rose, Jr.** began a course in the Business Graduate Engineering Administration program of the USAF Institute of Technology at Wright-Patterson AFB, Ohio for the degree of MBA. On April 7: Death of **Wilson Hobson**, brother of Jose Nell. **Frank Van de Riet** died February 22, 1956.The family of **Teunis Barendregt** arrived on January 22, 1956 in Springfield Ohio, where they were met by Major John Roberson and C.D. Matlock of the First Presbyterian Church in Fairborn, near Dayton, OH. Church members had cleaned and furnished their new home and prepared a meal for the family when they arrived. The Barendregts came from **Overschie**, a suburb of Rotterdam. The children of Marianne and Teunis were Marianne (14), **Peter Frank** (12), Paul Richard (7), and Marjolyn, (3 mo.) When Peter Frank came to school the next day, he joined Richard's sixth grade class. At recess, he surprised everyone when they were playing with a volley ball by bouncing it from his forehead. Teunis began work at Southwestern Portland Cement and began a course to certify as a CPA. He had been an accountant before being shipped around Holland and Germany in freight cars as part of the Third Reich's forced labor. After being liberated by Americans on March 1, 1945, he initially planned to migrate to New Zealand until learning that he might apply to enter the United States under the **Resettlement Act**. With his father helping, **Richard** did a science project on Robert Fulton, including a report and a tin can steam engine which turned a tiny paddle-wheel. On October 13, the Frank Rose family ate at the Howard Johnson's Restaurant in Dayton. Their waitress, **Ruth Keener**, signed a menu for them. In November, Richard joined the Fairborn YMCA. **Frank L. Rose, Sr.** wrote on his tax return: ***Western Union $4968.18***. On May 24, Karen Kay Raley was born to Colonel Ted and Mrs. **Ginny Raley** in Waco, TX**.** She graduated from Norman HS in 1974. **Ginny** was a friend of **Jo Rose. CE Dates:** Limestone quarry workers found the **first Neanderthal bones** near Düsseldorf in 1856. Premier **Khrushchev** made a "secret speech" to the 20th Congress of the Soviet Communist Party in February 1956 in which he denounced Stalin's crimes and the cult of personality. Political prisoners, including **Solzhenitsyn**, were released. **Suez** War. The **Hungarian uprising** began on October 23, 1956. In November, Khrushchev crushed the Hungarian Revolution. President Eisenhower started the 47,000 mile **interstate highway** system for commerce

and security. In 1919, he had spent more than 2 months making the first transcontinental military convoy over muddy unpaved secondary roads. After seeing the efficiency of the German Autobahn and the Pennsylvania Turnpike, he wanted the same efficiency for transcontinental travel. **Nat King Cole** was attacked on stage by racists in Montgomery, Alabama. Although born in Alabama, he never performed there again. On November 25, 1956 lawyer **Fidel Castro**, 30 years old, made an amphibious assault from Mexico on Batista's Cuba with about 80 commandos, including the Argentinian **Che Guevara**. They failed but survived. By 1959, however, the *Commandantes* Guevara, Castro, and **Morgan**, an American, were in control when Batista left the island on New Year's Day. The Newbery Winner was ***Carry on, Mr. Bowditch*** by Latham. The Caldecott Award winner was ***Frog went a-courtin'*** by Rojankovsky. At the filming of ***The Conqueror*** in St. George, Utah, actress **Susan Hayward** (Edith Mariner) and half the cast and crew were contaminated by radionuclide residues from nearby **atomic tests.** Their cancers developed decades later. In a mid-air collision over the Grand Canyon, two airliners were destroyed and 128 people killed. Congressional inquiries led to the creation of the **Federal Aviation Administration.**

## Step 157

**Rose Van de Riet** died on January 11, 1957. **Bruce Rose** was born on July 25, 1957 to Jack and Louise, and **Susan Ann Rose** on July 12 in Dayton, Ohio. She was delivered by Dr. Burt at St. Elizabeth's Hospital. On February 3, 1957, **Cindy Rutter** was born to Harry and Dolores (Schimpf) Rutter in Chicago. **Richard** began to have nocturnal emissions about this time, culminating in an emission in the bathtub brought on only by warm water. He began to be disturbed by the sight of girls walking by the apartment where the family stayed while Frank finished his master's program. **Frank L. Rose, Sr.** wrote on his tax return: ***Western Union Electrician $5693.74***, and wrote this letter (his misspellings retained) to Frank, Jr. on 7/20: "***Dear Frank, As I take this can of Jacks in hand, I mean this pencil, to congartulate you on getting another little one. They are fine and I wish I had one too, but mama said she didn't think it was advisable as I was taking my retirement in January, we wouldn't have time to get another one through school, but I sure wish I could have a little Suzy Q. I sure thank you for my Papa's day donation. I had just lost on a fight and it came in handy. I wired Francis about your little one when I got your message also Louise. I worried about you all, though the month of June now I'm bothered about Jack. That little one should be here by now. Still no sign of her yet. Well you ask why I took Jan. to retire, well this is how I figure it. I work through to Jan. 1958. On the 1st of Jan I take my vacation get my 4 weeks pay in advance amt. to about $450.00. That I'll soak away. Then I'll have a nice come-back from the Tax office, after you are 65 you get credit for 3 dependence so I should have a nice check comming back to me. Also it will round out 37 years service. I***

***made all the boys mad at me the other day, I told them when Jan. came I was going to put a piece of mistletoe on the seat of my pants when I walked out. They didn't like it very much, especially Bro. Charley (the old Brown Nose). I worked at the Ball Park this AM. It was about 125° up there. I looked like I had fallen in the river when I came out. I'm having a new roof put on the old house. Cost me $244.00. The man is nearly finished with it. How is Dick. Wish he was here last Sunday. Could have used him and his accordion last Sunday. Well, no news so I will close, I'm tired. Pop"*** In Fairborn, **Barbara Bradflute,** the music teacher at South Elementary School who introduced Richard to *The Magic Flute* and *Hansel and Gretel*, had a minstrel show. Richard played the accordion in black face. **Frank Rose** was sent to 3rd USAF South Ruislip, England after receiving an MBA from the USAF Institute of Technology in the course of Business Graduate engineering Administration (Feb 1956 to Aug 1957). He used to tell Richard, ***"The man who knows how will always have a job. The man who knows why will always be his boss."*** The MBA marked the achievement of this goal. From a Depression boyhood when he raised chickens, rabbits, and doves; dug the hole for the water tank with his father and brother and was surprised the following morning to see the tank floating in the hole; put the old Durant on blocks when his father's baseball team broke the axle; threw newspapers and pumped gas and worked at Mrs. Baird's Bread; learned at Annapolis how to sail and navigate; worked as a chemist at the Fort Worth Water Department; learned airplane fuel, electrical and hydraulic systems and jumped from a high diving board in full battle gear into a swimming pool at Yale in 1943; learned to supervise aircraft repair crews at Tyndale Field in Florida; learned to maintain a B-17 Flying Fortress in 1943 in Seattle; gave tours on the Hoover Dam; laid runways on Guam, and moved from one Military Occupational Specialty to the next until he became a manager of nuclear munitions. He had learned how and why. The family traveled on the **USS Buckner**. At one of the many meals with abundant portions, as he listened to engine turn the giant screws, Richard vomited over himself and his father. He spent most of his time on deck after that. In London, Frank leased the home of Mrs. J.H. **Botton** at 15 Hillview Ave. off Gooseacre Lane in Kenton, Middlesex, down the hill from Harrow School and the Richmond district famous for Hampton Palace. Richard later attended high school in Bushey Park. **CE Dates:** In 1457 CE the **Academia** of Greek studies was established in Florence by **Cosimo De'Medici**. The leader was **Marsilio Ficini.** George **Cayley** developed a glider in 1857. **Lilienthal**'s work was based on Cayley's. On September 7-11, 1856, after President **Buchanan** ordered 2500 troops to Utah to combat the "treasonous" Mormons, **Brigham Young** sent his secret police to massacre a wagon train of settlers from Arkansas, called the **Fencher-Baker train**, who had been turned away from getting food or water in Salt Lake City. Both the Mormons and local Payute tribes believed that the settlers were poisoning the water. The settlers were told that they would find water in **Mountain Meadow**, an oasis. There 120 of them were massacred. Only one man was found guilty of the massacre, John D. Lee. **Elias Howe** invented the Automatic

Clothing Closure or **sewing machine. Mary Lee** inherited her parents' estate in **Arlington** in 1857**.** Robert Lee took leave from the Army to supervise remodeling of the house and work on the grounds. In the **Dred Scott v. Sanford** decision, the U.S. Supreme Court ruled that black people "***had no rights which the white man was bound to respect****."* In 1957, Jack Kerouac's scroll, *On the Road*, was published by **Ferlinghetti'**s City Lights. **Strom Thurmond's** Dixicrat party was formed in protest to President Truman's integration of the military. On September 7, 1957, Mormons held a memorial ceremony at Mountain Meadow. **Queen Elizabeth II** spoke from the balcony of the **Wren Building** at Wm & Mary's celebration of the 350th year since the founding of VA at Jamestown. On October 4, 1957 **Sputnik** orbited Earth. Alarm spread about the adequacy of American education. On March 25, 1957, the **Treaty of Rome** began the **European Union.** The **George Mason University** was founded after considerable work by Til Hazel and others who sought its independence from the University of Virginia. **Erika Anderson** filmed **Schweitzer** at the hospital in Lambaréné. The Roses later saw part of it when they visited the Schweitzer Center. On March 6, 1957 **Ghana** became the first African colony to celebrate independence. Prominent attendees were major U.S. Civil Rights leaders attending included **A. Phillip Randolph & Martin Luther King**. President **Nkrumah** was determined that the country would move away from a one-resource (cocoa) economy. **Joseph Farman** used Dobson meters to begin tracking ground-level **ozone** concentrations at the Halley Bay Base in Antarctica. At a seminar at Princeton, geologist **Heezen** presented the data that **Marie Tharp** and he had analyzed showing the **Atlantic Rift Mountain Range** under the ocean—a mile high, extending 40,000 miles into other oceans, and generated from extruded magma which spread the sea floor at about the speed of fingernail-growth. Another geologist at the seminar was **Harry Hess,** who, during World War II, had gathered fathometer readings of the mesas and mountains of the ocean floor. He formulated a theory of **plate tectonics** to synthesize the data of Tharp and Heezen with data concerning ***"continental drift"*** from cartography, oceanography, and stratigraphy. Several years later, this theory was strengthened by data gathered by Vine and Mathews on the bands of material from the rift which still showed magnetic properties related to the periods in which they were extruded. These were called **magnetic anomalies.** And in 1957 the United States began to use nuclear power to generate electricity. More appliances, communications, and automations followed.

**There are no mechanisms of enlightenment.**
**Only paths.**
**As many paths as humans.**
**As many paths as there are trees**
**opening to the given,**
**rooted in their source--**
**trees whose roots and branches bend and turn to what is given.**
**There are no mechanisms of enlightenment.**
**Only interpretations.**
**As many interpretations as humans--**
**humans awakened to how things are and to what is given;**
**humans like trees who flower,**
**open branches and whose roots anacampserote**
**bend hearts always back to love.**

**--from *Healing Breaths* series by R. Rose 2014**

## Step 158

In 1958, **Frank L. Rose, Sr.** received his first pension payment of ***$924.33*** from Western Union. **Jesse Buck Helm**, or "Uncle Jess," died on July 19, 1958. Mrs. **Botton**, the landlady and owner of the Roses' Kenton house, insisted that **Mrs. Hinds** do house-cleaning for **Jo Rose.** But Jo always cleaned and aired the house after Mrs. Hinds had left. Richard was sent to Birdrop hospital for foot surgery, ending many visits to chiropodists about the curling McFarland toenail-pattern received by Edna, Frances, Jack, and Frank. Jack's toenails were so coiled that he simply plucked them off with pliers. Richard never again wanted to wear sandals. **Susan Bruch's** piano teacher, **Gene Prather**, assigned Bach's *Invention Number 8 in F Major* for her to learn. On July 23, 1958, Uncle **Grady Towles** sent a telegram from Ft. Worth to Richard in England ("***Happy Birthday and Many more*.**"). **Richard** began to masturbate about this time, using drawings that he made for erotic stimulation. Keeping the guilty secret was an unwelcome preoccupation for some time until he realized that he was not unique, the desire biologically determined, and a more moderate practice harmless to others. But like defecation, hemorrhoids, flossing, toenail-trimming, nose-picking, and thoughts about why he continued to write and compose in the absence of notice and total rejection of submissions, it remained a personal matter not shared with others. **Laura Lopez** was born to **Virginia Schimpf Lopez** (1936-1995) and **Peter Lopez** (1935-1985). Her sister was **Terry**. Peter also had a son, Michael Baldonieri with Dawn Kujak (1948-1985), who died on June 17, 1993 in a traffic accident on Peck Road in St. Charles (near Aurora, IL). Dawn

was a schoolmate of **Jane Schimpf**. Virginia had another daughter, **Frances,** whose father was unknown. At the age of six, Frances heard the ice cream truck, ran into the street, was hit and paralyzed from the waist down. For several years, her half-sister Terry took care of her. Then Terry married Douglas Valdez and had two children, Peter and Jason, before moving to Michigan with her young son. Frances moved to a different location. Another daughter of Peter and Virginia Lopez was Jeanne Trembly, adopted and raised by another family. Laura married Roberto Serrano. Her children were Emilio (1998) and Taina (1997) and divorced Roberto in 2013. **Dan Rutter** was born in June to Harry and Delores (Schimpf) Rutter. On October 28, 1958, in response to Susie's inquiry, William De Long, who had visited the high school representing the Office of Admissions for **Madison College** (later James Madison University) sent more information to "***Miss Susan Irene Burch*"** at 413 E. Del Ray Ave. Alexandria, VA. (Susie was accustomed to being called *Brush, Burch, Birch, Bruce,* and *Brunch.* It didn't help that Ginny pronounced "Bruch"--the same name as that of Max, the German composer--as if it were a French word: "Bruche.") **CE Dates:** In 1458 Yorkists defeated Lancastrians at **St. Albans. Henry VI** was captured and Richard, Duke of York, again became Regent. **Alaska** became a state in 1958. King **Feisel's** monarchy fell in **Iraq.** John Kenneth **Galbraith** in ***The Affluent Society*** argued that **modern producers mostly satisfy demands that they have created through marketing.** Meanwhile **Charles David Keeling** began to monitor atmospheric carbon dioxide levels at **Mauna Loa**. The reading at that time was 300 ppm. The ***Keeling Curve* for $CO_2$,** developed over the years since then, showed its exponential increase over time. The Newbery winner was ***Rifles for Watie*** by Keith. The Caldecott Award winner was ***Time of Wonder*** by McCloskey.

## Step 159

**Davey Rutter** was born in October of 1959 to Harry and Delores (Schimpf) Rutter. **Jo and Richard** went to Paris. Then **Dana Pillitt** & Richard went to Paris. Frank Rose and family saw **Lowell Thomas** in *Cinerama* and, with **John Rose** and his daughter (not relatives), saw *My Fair Lady* in London. The **Bruches** bought 15 West Howell Ave. Richard visited Belgium and French chateaux on the Loire with **Jack Rose** & Family and then went to the **world's fair** in Bruxelles. **Jo Sullivan** bought 303 E. Windsor for $15,500. In April, **Frank L. Rose**, **Sr**. died in Ft. Worth. He was buried at their plot at Mount Olivet, the last installment being paid on April 26. Edna received his pension of ***$924.33*** per month and, on May 11, a Social Security survivor benefit of ***$87*** monthly plus the one-time death benefit of $255. **Denise** Kelly, daughter of Carol Kelly (later Fletcher) was born on September 23, 1959. **MYA Dates: The Cambrian Period and Paleozoic Era** began 590 mya. **CE Dates** The first systematic collection of weather data occurred in central England in 1659. 1759 b. **Robert Burns** was born in 1759 in Alloway, Scotland. The **Carrington Event** occurred: a coronal ejection from the sun

which disturbed the ionosphere and caused widespread effects such as auroras in the Western states. **Darwin** published *The Origin of Species* and **Wallace** published his monograph on natural selection. A surveyor named **Everest** named a Himalayan peak "***Mountain 15.***"**Pasteur** disproved spontaneous generation of microbes. The **Wren Building** at William and Mary burned. In October, after his abolitionist activities in Kansas and his fund-raising tour in the East, **John Brown** raided the arsenal at **Harper's Ferry, VA.** On October 30, **Thoreau** addressed the Concord First Church to make "*A Plea for Captain John Brown."* As Wen Stephenson observed in *The Nation (5/27/2013)*, Thoreau insisted that Brown was *not* a madman but a sane, courageous person who was acting on principle."***This is what it meant, Thoreau was saying, to be sane in America in 1859.*****"** (p.14) . And Daniel Emmett wrote the pro-segregationist rallying song, ***"Dixie's Land."*** **Project Iceworm** in 1959 commenced in the Greenland icepack, where 600 nuclear silos were dug by the U.S. Army at **Camp Century,** an underground facility for 200 people. Power came from the Alco-PM-2A nuclear reactor. By 1966, it was obvious that the ice moved too much for the project to continue. Frank Rose had once visited a Greenland USAF site to supervise the loading of atomic bombs. He recalled being concerned about the icy conditions as the huge bombs were heaved aboard the planes. A coup in **Iraq** led to Muslim-Christian clashes. **May Department Store** acquired **Hecht's.** On September 28 at East 108th St. in New York City, **Vivian Maier,** on her off-time as a nanny, was taking photographs. In front of an apartment building, a man and woman were talking through the open window to a plump renter leaning on her window-ledge to the left of the entryway. It was a warm day with a chance of rain. Two girls on the stoop, one seated and barefoot, the other in a checked dress and white socks, watched an older boy stride down the sidewalk behind a whitewall tire. A man in shirt sleeves stood under the fire escape watching the shoppers and smiling at the boy with his tire. Staring from the right side of the entryway, two younger children, propped shoulder-to-shoulder on a pillow, also peered at the black boy with the white tire. The **Dalai Lama** fled Tibet after the crushed Tibetan uprising. He fled to **Dharamsala** in Northern India and came to live in one of the villages nearby. A man in Kinshasa, Congo, became the first reported victim of **HIV**, probably contracted from apes. **Jerry Stanhill** began his photometric measurements in Israel, the data to be used for developing an irrigation system. Thousands died of hunger in China during **Mao's famine**, caused by his **Great Leap forward** to industrialization by forcing farmers to produce steel rather than to farm. Thus the fond idea displaced the fundamental need. During this famine, the government of China exported grain. **Batista** left Cuba on New Year's Day. The revolutionaries controlled the country.

## Step 160

**Frances Schimpf died on March 13, 1960**. **Frances,** mother of Kathleen Mary Rose, was buried at St. Joseph's cemetery at Cumberland and Belmont in Chicago. Frances took sick on a Friday, went to the hospital and died on Sunday. Thirteen year-old Kathleen always regretted never saying good-bye to her mother. **Susie** visited Robert and Blanche Johnson and Sis Nell Helm, the eldest sister of Irene and Blanche, who lived with the Johnsons. **Ginny Bruch** wrote, ***"The house is so empty without you, but we know you are having fun and think it is splendid you could go. I know that you are enjoying Sis Nell. She loves you so! Tigger has looked everywhere for you. He has only one meal ticket now, one slave, that is. . . (We) are sitting on the front porch. Daddy has finished putting the chair together. . . Mr. Rubino called. Daddy told him you were in Richmond. (The Johnsons lived in Ashland). He will call next week."*** **Truman** wrote, ***"I sure missed my cook at lunch today. . . Of course, we've rented your room out and that helped some. We have a phantom living up there right now. Have fun and be good and as helpful as you always are and hurry back next Sunday."*** **Mike Sedgely** and Richard biked through Northern France. They visited **Jack Rose &** family in Orleans, France. After President DeGaulle's expulsion of American forces from France in 1960, Jack and Louise Rose returned to the US and settled at 502 Kyle in College Station, Texas. On June 10, Richard graduated from 9th grade at **Bushey Hall** American School. Dana Pillitt, Bill Wilson, and Richard sang "*He who is noble*" and "*Finlandia*," accompanied by their music teacher, William **Smelser,** who also presented Richard with the Best Music Student award from Bushey Hall American School (Bushey Hall Rd. Bushey, Watford, Herfordshire, England Telephone Watford 34334, Warren L. Fairman M.A. Columbia, Principal and Carl Gustafson, M.A. Minnesota, Assistant Principal), a book about the life of Toscanini *(Toscanini: An Intimate Portrait* by Samuel Chotzinoff, 1956). Richard also spoke at the graduation on **"*the importance of our school work*."** **Frank Rose** was granted an MBA from the USAF Institute of Technology, School of Business, which the USAF later closed. He was then sent to FC/DASA (Defense Atomic Support Agency) at Sandia Base in Albuquerque, NM, where he reported for duty in October, 1960 and was promoted to Lt. Colonel. The family moved into 4716-B 17th Loop, on Sandia Base. **BCE Dates:** 660 BCE **Samaticus,** according to Herodotus, enlisted Greek mercenaries from Iona and Kareo to conquer Egypt. This, or a little earlier, may have been the beginning of Greeks' contact and commerce with Egyptians, from whom they learned, among many other things, how to build colossal statues. The Greek statues, however, were, as their statuettes had been up to that time, to be of gods. The large statues were placed in temples. **CE Dates:** The philosopher **Epictetus** was born in 60 CE. The **Temple in Jerusalem** was destroyed by the Romans in the reign of **Domitian.** In 960 CE, the **Sung** Dynasty revived Confucianism. In 1460, at **Wakefield**, the Lancastrians, sponsored by Queen **Margaret d'Anjou,** defeated the Yorkists. **Richard,** Duke of York and Regent**,** and **Richard Neville** were both killed. This was the last victory for Lancaster. In 1660, **John Bunyan** was sent to jail for preaching. He was a Baptist Dissenter whose theology differed from the received version. He stayed in jail

until 1672. While not in jail, he was a tinker and preacher. When he went to the Bedford jail for six months in 1675 he began to write *Pilgrim's Progress.* The practice of impaling heads on London Bridge was ended after the Restoration of **Charles II**. In 1760, when tribes like the **Natchez, Attakapa, Opelousa,** and **Choctaw** who lived or traveled on the Mermentau River were still hunting, fishing, growing rice, and making dwellings by kneading moss into mud, the Spanish government began to give land grants to **Acadians** in Canada who had been exiled from Nova Scotia. As they came into the region which became **Acadia parish**, the new residents spoke patois and cajun, built Nova Scotian homes of mud and moss bricks, and cooked courtbouillon, crayfish, and gumbo. On April 5, 1860, the Hanover Presbytery helped Williamsburg residents to form the Williamburg and **York River Presbyterian** Churches. **Dostoevsky** published *Notes from the House of the Dead.* On June 30, 1860 at the British Academy for the Advancement of Science in the Natural History Museum at Oxford, Dr. John **Draper** argued that **Darwin** was the new Copernicus. Bishop ("Soapy") Sam **Wilberforce** argued that Darwin was irreligious and wrong, saying **"*Rock pigeons are what pigeons have always been.*"** T.H. **Huxley** was challenged to tell whether his grandfather or grandmother descended from a monkey. He replied to Dr. **Brodie**, the physician of the Rogets, "***The Lord hath delivered him*** (i.e. Wilberforce) ***into my hands.***" He said he would be ashamed of having such an ancestor as Wilberforce, who, "***not satisfied with equivocal success in his own sphere of activity, plunges into scientific questions with which he has no real acquaintance.***" Then Robert **FitzRoy**, former master of the HMS Beagle, rose, holding a Bible, to say that Darwin's book was not a "***logical arrangement of the facts,***" as Huxley claimed. On November 6, 1860, **Abraham Lincoln** was elected president. The Republican party was composed of Whigs who favored protective tariffs and infrastructure development, some Know-Nothings, who were anti-immigrant (German & Irish) and anti-Catholic, some dissident Democrats who didn't like the **Kansas-Nebraska Act** that would have allowed ***"popular sovereignty"*** in those territories to determine whether they should have been slave-holding, abolitionists, some Free-Soilers who wanted free land for homesteads in the west—all of them held together by opposition to slavery in new territories. Even in Lincoln's Springfield, however, there were still **Black Laws** prohibiting association, jury duty, intermarriage, and so on. The Democratic party was split, with **Stephen Douglass** for its candidate running against two other Southern contenders. Unlike Lincoln, Douglass traveled throughout the country giving speeches for his candidacy. He was the first presidential candidate to do so. When, after Pennsylvania went to Lincoln, it became obvious to Douglass that Lincoln would win, he continued giving speeches in the South to discourage secession. He was one of the few northerners who believed the threats of secessionists. **Garibaldi** landed in Marsala to overthrow the Bourbons and make Sicily part of the new Italian state, but the peasants of **Brontë** revolted so violently against the aristocracy with looting and murders that Garibaldi sent in **Nino Bixo**, variously described as swashbuckling or thuggish, to take reprisals. This put the **Risorgimento** in a

bad light. Mary Robertson, later known as **Grandma Moses**, was born in Greenwich, NY. The construction of the **Orkney Springs Spa** began in 1860**.** On January 1, 1960, Dr. **Martin Luther King** spoke at the Mosque in Richmond to 2500 listeners. He said, "***We will wear the opposition down by our capacity to suffer****."* At this time, 50% of American male high school students were **dropping out** of school to find work. (By 2006, the percentage was 10%. Perhaps this was also because after 46 more years of automation, offshore contracting and de-skilling of positions, there were fewer jobs for non-graduates--or anyone else.) National Fertility Studies found a decline of **unplanned marital births** in the U.S. across racial and religious groups. (Westoff, Sci. 1/9/1976) Theodore Maiman invented light amplified stimulated emission radiation, the **laser,** using ruby crystals to produce 694 nm red coherent light at Hughes lab in Malibu. **Pete Seeger, Memphis Slim** and **Willie Dixon** played at the Village Gate in New York City. Later, emulating Woody's guitar-motto during World War II, Seeger wrote this statement around the head of his banjo: ***"This machine surrounds hate and forces it to surrender."***

## Step 161

**Mark Clayton Smith** was born on June 21, 1961. In October, **Susan Bruch** wrote a story about the forest for her English class:

> ***"The forest is quiet.***
> ***Sh! It is sleeping.***
> ***Do not disturb the serenity of this late summer day.***
> ***Such days are rare; the summer is too short.***
> ***Let the forest slumber.***
> ***Soon the winter will appear, bringing frost and snow.***
> ***Death will come to the forest at its creatures.***
> ***The leaves will drop from the trees.***
> ***The insect choir will sing its final anthem.***
> ***Do not rob the forest of its last days . . ."***

**CE Dates: Warwick** (the Kingmaker) and **Edward IV** struggled in 1461 for the Crown. Warwick did not want Edward's wife's relations, the Woodvilles, to receive preferment. He conspired with Margaret d'Anjou and LouisXI. In 1561 Sir **Robert Langley of Agecroft** died. The estate was divided among four daughters, with Agecroft, a 12-room house in an L-design, falling to Anne, who before 1570 had married William Dauntesey of London and Wiltshire. The mathematician **Euler** was born in 1761. After the **Secession,** the Confederacy in 1861 adopted a new constitution which denied that all men were equal. Instead, **Little Aleck Stevens** stated in the Savannah Cornerstone Speech that ***"slavery—subordination to the superior race—is the (Black person's) natural and normal condition."*** (Southern Recorder, April 12, 1861). In Russia, **Alexander II** emancipated the **Serfs.** This was the beginning of the formation of the **Land and Liberty Movement.** After **Julia Ward Howe** heard "***John Brown's Body***" being sung

by some men passing by her house in Washington, D.C., she wrote different words to the tune: ***"Mine Eyes have Seen the Glory of the Coming of the Lord,"*** or the "***Battle Hymn of the Republic.***" **Robert E. Lee** was offered command of the U.S. Army but he could not go to war against his home state and chose to serve the Confederacy. His command of the Army of Northern Virginia then protected Richmond. On May 24, 1861, Union forces of 14,000 crossed the Potomac, seized the Custis-Lee property and took over the mansion for offices and the land for camp sites. The fortifications of Richmond included a 65 mile outer ring of defenses ten miles from the Capital, another line four miles from the city, and a line of star forts and breastworks at the city limits, like the trenches at **Cold Harbor.** On Sunday, July 21, 1861, the Union army, under McDowell, initially seemed to have defeated the Confederates at the first battle of **Bull Run,** but later in the day, after the resistance of Stonewall Jackson and the arrival of fresh troops under Beauregard, the northerners were routed. They retreated to Washington in disarray, the civilian picnickers fleeing from their hilltop in Centreville ahead of the army, and the southerners apparently too tired to pursue. Some time afterward, when the haughty **McClellan** had replaced the sick old soldier, General Winfield Scott, as commander, another defeat occurred at **Leesburg,** under Union leader Stone, resulting in the death of the Lincolns' family friend, **Edward Baker**, for whom their deceased son had been named. This was the small battle of **Ball's Bluff**, which Richard learned about when working in Leesburg in 1991. In May, 1961 **Alan Shepherd** went into space. **Solzhenitsn** published *One Day in the Life of Ivan Denisovich.* The Newbery winner was ***Island of Blue Dolphins*** by Scott O'Dell. In June, a sheep rancher named **Ortega** was the first of several people to die of **bubonic plague** in New Mexico. The focus of the plague was a prairie dog colony on Grass Mountain near Pecos. (in Tony Hillerman's *Great Train Robbery*). **Paul Hindemith's** opera, *The Long Christmas Dinner,* based on Thornton Wilder's play, was produced in Mannheim on December 17, 1961. A USAF B-52 broke up in flight over Goldsboro, N.C., dropping two Mark 39 **hydrogen bombs**, each with four megatons of fissile material. Four megatons is 260 times more powerful than the bomb at Hiroshima. Three of four safing mechanisms failed in one bomb. Between 1958 and 1968, there were 1200 accidents involving nuclear weapons.

## Step 162

**Wilhelm or William Schimpf,** from Mildesheim or Hildesheim, was born in 1862 at the Kronenhauer Haus orphanage. In January of 1962, **Susie** was studying the *Virginia Bill of Rights* (1776) and *Statute of Religious Freedom* (1786). She wrote ***"The Virginia Bill of Rights is similar in many respects to the American Bill of Rights . . .also (including) some ideas from the Declaration of Independence. The Virginia Bill of Rights was written by George Mason . . ."*** She was also collecting information about universities such as Mary Washington, Madison, the College of William and Mary, and

other schools to find offers of teacher scholarships. **Pam** Fletcher was born on March 13. She came later to live in Midland, TX**.** Later**,** Her sister, Denise, married Mark Smith. Their son was **Clayton**. On March 24, 1962, **Peter Babich,** a Russian immigrant and teacher, died in Alexandria. Susie wrote, ***"a lonely little man, rather plump, blue eyes, kindly face, sweet smile, white hair, growing bald. Owned two suits, brown and gray, about ten ties. Always wore clean white, starched shirt. Tie off-center as he talked and coat pocket flaps sometimes tucked up in pocket. Trousers rather baggy and too long. Shoulders slumped slightly. Walked with strides longer than usual for a man of his build. Tiny, walnut-ish desk, low enough for child. Used a cafeteria chair and stacked books on the regular desk chair when seated, which was rare. When stooping to pick something up from the floor he looked like a child--such short legs. Kept a bookcase by the desk, upon which, among other things, he kept a hat and 'American Observers.' Hung coat on hanger behind door--a gray overcoat. Hat was also gray. Distinctive habits and methods of doing things. An easy teacher if students made the least effort. Never gave me anything below an 'A' on anything. Liked everyone--the most relaxed atmosphere in class. Never made anyone feel badly about not knowing anything. Would often ask simple--even silly--questions. Had a wonderful mind and was always striving after knowledge. Read newspapers and kept up with current events devoutly. Knew everything that was happening in the world. Spoke several languages fluently and could read and write others. Used to teach Latin at G.W. Loved America and American history with all his heart. Became quite angry to hear the U.S. criticized in international problems; however, he never stepped on anyone's toes. . . His students will never forget him, especially those who had him in his last year of teaching. . . I shall never forget the last question he ever asked me. It was nothing very important or earth-shaking. It was the Friday before he died and near the end of second period. He was talking about the problems of the U.S. in building a can to connect the Atlantic and the Pacific. He was speaking of Panama and the swamp land and mosquitoes. He asked Carolyn Simpson how she would get rid of mosquitoes. She replied, 'by spraying.' I was looking out the window, apparently day-dreaming. But I was listening. Out of the corner of my eye, I saw him nod at Carolyn's answer and look at me. 'And what would you do, Susan?' I looked fully at him in time to catch a little amused, mischievous grin on his face. He thought he had me, but I answered, 'drain the swamps.'"*** In Albuquerque, **Richard** painted a still-life in water-color of a green jug and cup that his mother had bought in New Mexico in 1952-1953. Later he gave the jug to Bill and Jennifer Rose. He was surprised to see how well the colors matched. During this time, he took a craft course in which he made pottery, tooled a bear in leather, cut stones for book ends, and made a raised copper facsimile of Audubon's fish-hawk painting. A member of the church group at the chapel on Sandia Base and of the Youth for Christ group led by **Colin Clark**, Richard was usually asked to play the piano for hymns, including events at the Mission downtown, where men were forced to go through the

religious service before soup was served. **Rev. Dwight Zeller** wanted him to go to the Reformed Episcopal Seminary before enrolling in any other college, thereby protecting himself against godless ideas. Richard wrote to himself, ***"Do you wonder that if the Son of God were to come on earth he would give definite ways of acting? . . .would he want to take sin out of our lives? Sin is important enough to God that he died because of it. So what should be our attitude to sin? If the gate is strait and the way not easy. . . shouldn't we feel the difficulty of it? If you don't feel the difficulty of being "perfect as your Father is perfect," how can you be fully Christian—as illustrated in Mt.7:24ff . . ."*** He worried about how he spent his time: ***". . . the time we don't spend planning for, dreaming about, or fearing the future we spend in the plans, breaking the dreams, dismissing the fear which occupied our minds in the 'todays' of the past. We live as much in the future as in 'today' and this should give us insight . . . All those plans we made yesterday are useless today. Yesterday and today are forever separated; so are we from ourselves of the past. We live in the dream of yesterday . . . It there is no motive for living, then the little tasks and jobs of ordinary existence will be magnified out of proportion . . .(to) suffocate 'today.' . . .Tomorrow cannot be perfect without perfect todays; perfect todays cannot exist without questions, dedication, and the purpose to live as one complete soul in the present."*** Some of these thoughts made their way into essays and Christian apologies written for Ina Miller in French and Miss Howard and Mr. Manley in English: ***". . . the ways of the universe do not agree with the ways of man; so man directs himself in the ways of the universe that he may find truth about it . . . why should anyone be disturbed over . . . Darwin and evolution? God . . . had the power in the beginning (****'and has it now'* the teacher added***). Darwin's insight, though brilliant, could not fathom God . . ."*** Despite what he wrote, Mr. Manley, Miss Howard, and Mrs. Miller encouraged his writing. After reading Richard's paper on missionaries, Mr. Manley invited Richard to his home to meet Dr. Santos, a South American missionary. Later that year, Richard was shocked when Mr. Manley committed suicide. Years later, Mr. Manley appeared in the story "*Three May Keep A Secret"* in *Frameshifts.* Mrs. Miller often gave him a lift in her VW when she saw him walking to school. She also included him and other members of the advanced French class to come to Francophone events with her friends, at which he discovered that she also played the accordion. **Patrick Rutter** was born in March to Harry and Delores. A nurse asked Delores, ***"What will you name him?"*** Delores answered, ***"'Harry,' I guess."*** The nurse shook her head. ***"You don't want to call him that. His birthday's close to Saint Patrick's Day. Why don't you call him 'Patrick'?"*** Harry drove big rigs across the company while Delores, the children and the rat terriers stayed at home. The children called him "Harry" instead of "Dad." After drinking, on one occasion, Harry was angered when Delores's sister Frances and two of her children came to visit. He told her to get out and nearly pushed her downstairs. **Susie** kept a small gift card, "***For Sousan*** (sic)***with love from Sister."*** Susie later wrote on it, ***"Sister Nell's last Christmas."*** **CE Dates: Baghdad** was founded in

762 CE. **Turgenev** published *Fathers and Sons* in 1862. At the Battle of **Puebla**, on May 5, 1862, Mexican General **Zaragoza**'s ragtag army defeated a professional army of the French. This is commemorated in **Cinco de Maio**. William **Morris** founded a furniture company based on designs and principles of the **Arts & Crafts** movement in reaction to industrial manufacture. Its A& C furnishings became common in Victorian homes. **Hubbard and Stickley** brought the ideas to the US. **Lincoln** signed several bills in 1862 with far-reaching consequences, thereby keeping his campaign promises to home-seekers, workers, and those opposed to slavery and making infrastructural changes across the continent: The Second **Confiscation Act,** the **Homestead Act** (160 acres given to anyone who worked the land for >5y), the **Morrill Act** (land-grant colleges), the **Legal Tender Bill** (greenbacks), the **Internal Revenue Bureau** (the beginning of the Income Tax), and the **Emancipation Proclamation** (announced September 23, 1862, effective January 1, 1863). Lincoln saved the proclamation, following the advice of Wm. Seward, until after a military victory. Congress passed legislation on real estate in **insurrectionary districts,** requiring taxes to be paid in person. When Mary Lee's cousin presented $92.07 in taxes on the **Custis-Lee estate**, she was turned away because she was not the owner. The house went into default, was auctioned, and sold to the only bidder, the Federal Government, for $34,000. In 1883, the Supreme Court ruled that the estate had been confiscated without due process, returning it to Mary's eldest, Custis Lee. On May 31, 1862 the Confederate Commander, General Joseph Johnston, attacked McClellan's troops at **Fair Oaks.** The battle was a draw but Johnston was wounded and replaced by General Lee and McClellan became even more cautious about crossing the James River. The Battle of **Antietam,** Md. was a Union victory on September 17, 1862 under **McClellan,** but with 17K wounded and 6 K dead. This came after Pope's defeat at **Bull Run 2** when McClellan refused to send troops to support him. McClellan sought personal advantage from Pope's defeat. He thought that he had gained it when he was given command of the whole army and won at Antietam. He didn't pursue Lee, however, and he refused a direct order to go after the Confederates, so Lincoln finally had cause to remove him, replacing him with **Burnside**, after the November elections for Congress. Burnside was unable to defeat the Confederates entrenched at **Fredericksburg**, and had l3K casualties, but Lincoln preferred his action to McClellan's delays. The **Wren Building** at William and Mary burned a second time. On May 15, 1862 the **Monitor** and three other Federal gunboats and a steamer unsuccessfully attacked Ft. Darling on **Drewry's Bluff.** The Confederates thus prevented the shelling of Richmond. **General Lee** watched the **Seven Days' Battles** from Chickahominy Bluff on the outer defenses of Richmond, where he could see Mechanicsville and the Chickahominy River Valley. Confederates crossed Beaver Dam Creek under fire and ***"waist deep in water"*** in the mill race at Ellerson's Mill on June 26, 1862. The next day, at **Gaines' Mill**, troops from Texas and Georgia broke through the Federal line of shallow trenches at the **Watt House** and Gen. Porter set up headquarters. On July 1, **Malvern Hill** was the last of the Seven

Days' Battles. McClellan withdrew to Harrison's Landing and massed overwhelming fire from infantry and artillery against the Confederates, who were forced to cross open ground because steep slopes on the Union's left and a bog on the right prevented flanking movements. In 1962 **Rachel Carson**'s *Silent Spring* was published. Some of its statements about DDT were corrected in the 1972 Penguin edition. **"*We no longer live in a world where only the actual firing of weapons represents a sufficient challenge to a nation's security*,"** said President Kennedy at the time of the **Cuban Missile** Crisis. **James Baldwin** returned to the United States to participate in the movement for civil rights. **Daisy Jane Cooper** went up the steps of **Thomas Jefferson High School** in Richmond with her mother, Elizabeth, on September 6, the first TJHS opening day to be racially integrated. On October 25, 1962 Chairman **Khrushchev** said to his comrades, **"*We must dismantle the missiles to make Cuba into a zone of peace*."** Danny Thomas founded **St. Jude's** Children's Research hospital, in Memphis TN, keeping a promise to St Jude Thaddeus, the patron of lost causes. **Loudoun Valley High School** was built on 36 acres in Purcellville. After its first principal retired many years later, **Ken Culbert** became principal. **Watson and Crick** won the Nobel Prize for explaining DNA's structure. **Cesar Chavez** developed the staff and union of farm workers. **Penzias** and **Wilson** picked up microwave signals not only from the **Echo** satellite but from a source of static which persisted even when the antenna surface was cooled to -270°C. This was determined to be **residual radiation from the Big Bang** of 13.7 BYA. **Mariner 2** measured **Venus'** temperature at 900°F and its pressure at 90 torr and found abundant carbon dioxide in its atmosphere.

## Step 163

**Cheryl Rutter** was born to Harry and Dolores (Schimpf) Rutter in 1963. Also in 1963: the deaths of Uncle **Wm. Luther Helm** died on 9/20 or 9/22 in 1963; his wife, Aunt **Ivey** Debow Helm, and **Sis Nell Helm** on 6/13 (Nellie Mae Helm), and Marie Adams (5/31). **Margaret Helm**, wife of Uncle Rob Helm, also died in 1963. In the Spring, the music department of **Sandia High Schoo**l presented the musical **"*Rough and Ready*"** by Lee Benjamin and James Leyden. Student David Boos conducted a small ensemble which included **Richard** on accordion. **Andy** Perez was in the stage crew and **Carole Hansen** took tickets. On May 24, Richard received a certificate for school work in **French IV** from **Ina S. Miller** and Leroy Brannon. Susan Bruch and Richard Rose graduated from **George Washington** and **Sandia High Schools**, respectively. **Gary Knight** was born on August 6, 1963. **Jo Sullivan** gave Susie part of her tuition and college expenses for William and Mary. November 22, 1963 was the day of the

a**ssassination of JFK** in Dallas, where local newspapers had recently published inflammatory headlines and articles about the President. Richard was at Lafayette in Religion class in Kirby Hall listening to Dr. **Elwyn Tilden**. At William and Mary, Susie with other students were summoned to the **Wren Building**, where **Dr. Paschal** spoke to the students from the balcony. The next assignment of Lt. Col. **Frank Rose** (MOS 4616) was HQ/DASA in the Pentagon,Washington, D.C. After living for a while off Quantrell Ave. at Kent Towers, across I-395 from Landmark, the family moved to a town house at 4762 Southland Ave, Alexandria 22312. Frank wrote that at that time he was a member of the Disciples of Christ Church at First Christian Church, Alexandria, stood 6 ft. ¾ in., weighed 160 lb., wore 39L, 32W/33L, necksize 15, size 11 socks, 7 ¼ hat, 9 ½ gloves, 8 ½ C shoe, had A positive blood, brown hair and eyes, an appendectomy scar and a 1 ½ inch scar inside his right wrist. On Oct. 16 Richard watched the **Lafayette-Bucknel**l game. It was the only college football game he ever attended. The Leopards ran on without him. Virginia Bruch recorded college expenses ($) per semester for Susan: Room 140, Tuition 176, Laundry 16, Board 225, Books 50, Supplies 10, Laundry and delivery 4.50, Scholarship 175. **MYA Dates:** About 6.3 mya **Ancestors** of chimps and humans may have interbred. (SN 169:308) **BCE Dates: Antiochus IV**, the hated Seleucid who forbade *Shabbes* and sold the priesthood to the highest bidder, died in 163 BCE. Richard wrote about him in *The Books of Daniel*, the opera performed in 1997 and 2009. **CE Dates:** From 1763 to 1767, the English astronomers Charles Mason and Jeremiah Dixon surveyed the land between Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Virginia. Their **Mason-Dixon** line was later used in 1863, when West Virginia was formed, to separate free from slave territory. On January 1,1863 the **Emancipation Proclamation** went into effect. On July 2, 1863, the Union Army, under **Meade**, defeated **Lee** at **Gettysburg** the Confederacy lost 28K, the Union 23K, **but Lee's losses were a third of his army**. The **Polish Revolt** from Russia began in 1863. In Russia, railways began to be built, banks established, factories built, laws reformed, industry expanded, and **District Councils** (Zemstvos) created. The **Old Presbyterian Meeting House** became a hospital for Union soldiers. **Tolstoi** published *The Cossacks.* On July 4, 1863, **Grant**'s army won the siege of **Vicksburg** and, writing about the two battles that had killed so many, **George Templeton Strong** in his NYC newspaper wrote about the effect on gold speculation: **"*The results of this victory are priceless. Government is strengthened four-fold at home and abroad. Gold is 138 today and government securities rising. Copperheads are palsied and dumb*." Copperheads** were the "peace Democrats" of the Union states**. Lincoln** noted that the two victories coming by July 4 reminded him of how two of the founders (Jefferson and Adams) had died on the Fourth, leaving the Union intact as a trust for later generations. On July 6, Lincoln's carriage was sabotaged, causing his wife to be injured. Later in the year, his stable was set on fire, killing his horses. Lincoln had to be restrained from entering the burning building to save them. Eight year-old **Sophie Radford De Meissner** met **Mary Todd Lincoln** on the podium of a public event in the

Capital, which she attended with her mother and Mrs. Paulding. **Draft Riots** shook NYC from July 12-16 when, after incitement by the *Daily News,* the Copperheads and Governor Seymour, a mob of mostly **Irish immigrants** burned the draft board and went after any blacks they could find. Over one thousand people were killed or wounded. The rioters protested not only the draft but the fact that **rich people could buy themselves out of service** by paying $300 and finding a substitute. Lincoln had opposed this provision, but Congress left it in. In November 1863, on Seward's recommendation, Lincoln proclaimed the first national day of **Thanksgiving**, to be held subsequently on the last Thursday of November. Other presidents had also called for occasions of thanksgiving, but surviving and possibly ending warfare made the populace more ready to make it an annual event. **Ethelinda Beers,** a New York poet, wrote the lyrics to ***"All Quiet on the Potomac."*** On November 20, 1863 Abraham Lincoln delivered his poem, the **Gettysburg address.** In the **Chicago *Times,*** an anti-Republican paper, the editor wrote: ***"The cheek of every American must tingle with shame as he reads the silly, flat, and dish-watery utterances of a man who has to be pointed out to intelligent foreigners as President of the United States."*** Orator **Edward Everett** was the other speaker, chosen by organizers to draw a large, paying crowd to the media event to meet the cost of burials and cleaning on the site. Hale sent Lincoln a note, saying that ***"I should be glad if I could flatter myself that I came as near to the central idea of the occasion in two hours, as you did in two minutes."*** **George Gitt**, a fifteen year old standing near the podium, said that the ***"flutter and motion of the crowd ceased the moment the President was on his feet. Such was the quiet that his footfalls, I remember very distinctly, woke echoes, and with the creaking of the boards, it was as if some one were walking through the hallways of an empty house."*** On December 2, 1863, the **statue of Freedom**, cast in iron by the former slave **Philip Reed**, was placed on top of the newly completed **Capitol** dome. **Flaubert** wrote about "***la rage de vouloir conclure"*** in a letter to Mlle Leroyer de Chantepie. ***"Each religion and each philosophy has pretended to have God to itself, to measure the infinite and to know the recipe for happiness. What arrogance and what nonsense! I see to the contrary that the greatest geniuses and the greatest works have never concluded."*** In the Army-Navy game on December 7, 1963, in order to make televised football less boring, CBS introduced the **instant replay**, invented by **Tony Verna**. On March 5, 1963 singer **Patsy Cline** of Loudoun County died in a plane crash. On August 28, 1963 **Odetta Holmes** sang ***"Oh Freedom, Freedom over Me"*** at the **March on Washington for Jobs and Freedom** and **Joan Baez** led the 170,000 blacks and 30,000 whites in ***"We Shall Overcome"*** and **Martin Luther King** addressed a crowd filling the Mall to the Lincoln Memorial after the March saying, ***"We must forever conduct our struggle on the high plane of dignity and discipline. We must not allow our creative protest to degenerate into physical violence. Again and again we must rise to the majestic heights of meeting physical force with soul force . . ."*** After the march, Kennedy met with **Rustin, Wilkins, King** and other leaders in the White House to congratulate them on a peaceful demonstration. The troops kept ready to control a racist

reaction to the March had not been needed. But on June 12, 1963 President Kennedy stated his intention to secure **civil rights** for all Americans and **Medgar Evers** was assassinated, causing riots across the South. Two deaths on November 22, 1963 were those of John F. **Kennedy** by assassination and of Aldous **Huxley** by cancer and suicide from an overdose of LSD. The Newbery winner was ***Wrinkle in Time*** by Madeline L'Engle, a story about walking the curved path of space-time and imagination. The Caldecott Award winner was ***The Snowy Day*** by Ezra Jack Keats. James **Erb** entered the doctoral program for music at Harvard. **Alferov and Kroemer** proposed **semiconductor lasers** using Gallium phosphide or Gallium arsenide, the type later used in **Compact Disks**. In **Danville, VA** on June 10, 1963, a group of civil rights protesters marching to the municipal building was met by armed resistance and suffered 60 arrests and 50 injuries. Later this event was celebrated as **Bloody Monday**. A documentary, ***The Silent Spring of Rachel Carson,*** was shown on television on 4/3/1963. An album by Bob Dylan featured his treatment, building on the work of from Pete Seeger and Woody Guthrie, of an old Reconstruction song about the end of slavery, ***"No More Auction Block,"*** which became famous as ***"Blowing in the Wind."*** Another reconstructed song was ***"Where have all the flowers gone?"*** based on "*Many Thousands Gone*," a song in the ***Army Life in a Black Regiment***, in the collection by **Thomas Wentworth Higginson**. The **Studebaker** plant in South Bend produced its last car. In his first year at **Lafayette College,** Richard Rose used to see an elderly man with a white mustache, a walking stick, and wearing a green felt cape strolling around the campus and going in and out of the Biology building. He was the first biology department chair, **Beverly Waugh Kunkel.** The current chair was **Louis Stableford.** Another professor was the trematode expert, **Bernard Fried**, who had taken the place of parasitologist **Thomas Cheng.** Richard later took Fried's Invertebrate Zoology course. Like Kunkel, Fried stayed on as emeritus professor. He was still mentoring students in 2013.

**A secret revealed: There are no nonsequiturs.**

***Walk the path.***

## Step 164

**John Van de Riet** was born in Beuningen, Holland in the Province of Gelderland on June 8, 1864. Both **Rita Van de Riet** (on 1/29) and **Rob Newton Helm** died in 1964. In the same year, **Richard** decided that he would **pray** with eyes open. On January 26, 1964, Virginia Irene Helm (**Rentie**) fell downstairs. On Saturday, October 3, 1964, **Grady Watterman Towles** died of a heart attack while he sat in the stands at a ball game in Ft. Worth. John S. Butner, Truman T. Graves, Walter Rucks and other fellow Masons from Cleburne (Lodge 315 of AF and AM of Cleburne, TX) wrote, "***A Brother Mason, having completed the designs written for him on life's trestle board has passed through the portals of Eternity and entered the Grand Lodge of the New Jerusalem and hath received as his reward the white stone with the new name written thereon . .*** ." According to the *Fort Worth Star Telegram*, he lived at 2245 W. Rosedale, was member of University Christian Church and of Cleburne Masonic Lodge 315 AF and AM. His survivors were Monte, Emma Lee T., and Frank Towles. The Harveson and Cole Funeral Home (owned and run by Guy Thompson), at 702 Eighth Street, handled the burial on Monday, October 5, Charles Sanders officiating at 1:30 and at 3 p.m. at the graveside. In Alexandria, Virginia Bruch recorded her debts as of May: ***American Security Loan 914, First and Citizens 242, Garfinckel 63, Sears 181, Hayman 48, Lansburgh's 51, Woody's 561, Credit Charge 66, Dr. Cashman (DDS) 12, Dr. Williams (MD) 20, Jeleff 23.*** On November 18, **Jo Sullivan** arranged to sell her property at 303 E. Windsor for $18,250 and buy the property at 4 W.Howell from Col. Mayer for $22K. (The debts and house sales were recurrent topics in letters between Ginny Bruch and Susan Bruch, at William and Mary. Some letters are quoted below.) On August 8, 1964, **Rentie** had two operations. During the summer, **Susie** worked at Woody's in D.C. in the lingerie department. Her Cuban manager was difficult. At W&M, Susie lived at Barrett Hall #329 and her postal address was Bx 806. On Thursday, September 24, she had her first Philosophy class, taught by Dr. Rogers, who also taught the quiz section on Fridays. Philosophy, she wrote, "***is the love wisdom and the pursuits of wisdom . . . the search for a method or system to recognize the essence of things. In Plato's Euthyphro, prosecution of the father is not the point. It's the dialogue about the nature of piety. Philosophers know they know nothing. Not concerned with answers but with questions because if the question is right, the answer will follow. . . Philosophy is a search for absolute truth . . . Philosophy is the search for the real beneath and beyond a world of appearances . . . Philsophy is an enterprise asking what is real, what do I know, and what ought I to do? . . . Philosophy is a peculiarly persistent and unusual effort at logical thinking . . . C. D. Broad said philosophy is essentially the two activities of analysis and criticism to seek clarification."*** On another page of the notebook, as a kind of valedictory, she listed her grade-school friends: Wayne Marshall Kirby (who

gave her valentines she kept), Sandy Pierce, George Mallice, Billy Swan, Doris Pierson, Dody Fonda (whom she met again in 1969 in Kaiserslautern), Karen Cain, Marcy Tredick, Carol Keator, Joan Ross, Rita Kirby, Alicia MacCallum, Billy Prout, Stephen Sears, Danny Daniels, Ricky Whenski, Charles Riley, Cheryl Stokes, Kathy Brewer, Marsha Manning, Phyllis, Mary Sue Buckner, Beverly Clark, David Harris, Pat Karris, David H., Nancy Estis, Linda Estis, Micky Hudson (next door neighbor in Del Ray), Johnny Hudson, Jerry Swift, Jane Patterson, Wanda Jenkins, Ginger Barns, Carole Hoffman, Janice Quicke, Joy Wuicke, Mike Osburn, Jerry Little, Jan Spinks (with whom she played dolls and who later visited her when Susie was dying from Alzheimer's Disease). She went on to list all of the teachers she had in Alexandria schools. ***"Schopenhauer, "*** Dr. Rogers continued, ***"maintains that the entirety of human life exists between pain from desires and boredom from having desires satisfied. He is the prophet of industrialization: satisfaction of the will leads to boredom. The purpose of life is to move between desires and boredom. . . but one can escape by making oneself a spectator, a 'pure, will-less knower' with universal sympathy for all beings in nature. . .***"* After an October game at D.C. Stadium, Susie met her parents after the game at the Sheridan Park Hotel at 10:30 p.m. At an earlier game at the Citadel's homecoming, the band was rained out. As a sophomore during the fall freshman orientation at Lafayette, Richard noticed a father and son walking across the campus, both with the same serious expression: **Jay Parini** and his father. **Wanda Jenkins** (16 W.Caton St.) was sorry to miss Susie at church, she wrote on 10/26. She didn't go because **E. Dunnavant** preached. **Nelle Dunnavant** was engaged. **Linda Swain Marlowe** was expecting. Jan **Spinks** had become part of the 'group and **"*likes us. Such an attitude is wonderful to see*,"** Wanda wrote. Jan Spinks, Susie's childhood friend, with whom she spent many hours playing dolls, later became Jan Van Metre. When Susie died, Richard gave her the chest of doll clothes made by Susie and Aunt Jo. **Harvi Moebs** is a **"*social butterfly in Lynchburg*."** Ginny (10/27) wrote that Harvi's mother was ***"a tyrant who insists that when she comes home from college she stay with parents and not go anywhere, including church.*** (and) ***uses her illness to keep H. under her thumb."*** Eileen Moebs also opposed Harvi taking science to become a research technician, insisting that Harvi learn shorthand. Ginny had Susie's band uniform cleaned & mailed. (10/29) Ginny completed Rentie's hospitalization papers and hoped **LBJ** would win rather than Goldwater. Susie (10/30) was concerned about her grades although **"*doing my best.*"** She stayed up until 3 a.m. for an English paper. Ginny worked on Jo's Windsor house while Truman chopped leaves at Howell (11/2). The kitchen and porch were painted green. At church, it was Children's Book Week/Christian Literature Week. **Maxine Clark**e set it up. Jo and Ginny ordered posters and catalogued the books she had bought for the library at Linda's Church. It was also Ginny's month to clean Communion cups. They watched LBJ's Salt Lake City speech and thought it one of his best. She and Susie talked about bringing the goldfish (Madeline) home during Thanksgiving. **Carole Bayer** said Harvi had been **"*campused*"** at

Lynchburg. ***"Carole said it as if it were funny."*** Carole spent much time working at the Democrat polls and didn't thank Ginny & Jo for the birthday present of clothes for Carolyn until after the voting. Sharon Durrett said Harvi didn't want to come home. **Voting** day was 11/3. **Billy Swan's** mother was an official. She remembered Billy and Susie playing together at the Methodist Kindergarten. Swans lived on Russell Road. Billy was a junior in college. In 2001, when Susie returned to live at 4 West Howell, Billy was again living in the house on the corner. Susie (11/5) worried about tests in Philosophy, French and Sociology and was glad LBJ won in a landslide; sorry Kennedy won in NY, but against LBJ's passing Medicare with a Democratic Congress. She tried unsuccessfully to fix the record player and then asked Truman's advice. "***B. Bear could take Madeline the fish home for Thanksgiving. She lives in Williamsburg.***" Susie said she would wait until the day after Thanksgiving to come to Alexandria. She was glad that Jo had found a buyer. Susie called the Army Library "*Rabbit Knoll*" (after Robert Lawson's *Rabbit Hill*) and expressed concern about Harvi being campused; saying *"**Lynchburg and Mary Washington will campus you for breathing.**"* Quoting Wanda Jenkins's letter, she said that Nelle is as "***ready for marriage as I am to fly.***" She wrote that the Band had only two more games and that she had sent in her scholarship application for the second year after the Dean of Education called to remind her. She hoped to get a summer job working with children's books and signed the letter with her drawing of Pooh. On 11/5 Ginny said it would be better to work that summer than to go to school. "***It's a "warm and sunny day—like spring!***" Jo Sullivan heard from Mr. Howard that Alexandria Schools needed 5-6 people to catalogue 25K new children's books. Dr Albohm, the superintendent, had a special interest in the project. On 11/6 "***Truman took the Ford for inspection. Next month he'll take the Hudson. They gave Carol Lynn Bayer a sweater and skirt***." Next day, Ginny heard the game (W&M vs. UVA) on WPIK and listened for the band as she scrubbed the house and cooked a roast. She was not worried about Susie's grades. **Charles Speed** and Jo framed and antiqued two Siamese cat pictures that Jo had bought—one for Ginny. Truman worked on Saturdays. **James** came to help Jo with her house. Ginny wrote, "***I'll be thinking of you tomorrow, Sweetie, during church time. I always do as we sit in church and I like to imagine you down there in the Baptist Church.***" Jo bought Rentie a new suit and two pairs of shoes.11/7 Susie (at Box 806, Williamsburg) wrote to Rentie (Mrs. Terrell T. Sullivan) thanking her for the Halloween card and telling about making **blue mints** in her room using Rentie's recipe (i.e. sugar, food coloring, peppermint, Pet milk). On November 9, 1964, Ginny and Truman attended the church's **Koionaia** group in what Rev. Bayer called a *trialogue.* "***We will meet 10-12 times together and one has to be there unless an emergency occurs. In fact, there will be no meeting at all if all cannot come***." Truman raked leaves. Jo and Rentie had a mother and daughter to look at her house. They wanted to lower the price to $19K. While Charles's parents were in Florida, Nana was staying with the Bayers. Carole Bayer and Wanda Jenkins were planning something for the

college students at Thanksgiving. **James Clifford** joined the Presbyterian Church at UVA. Ginny wrote, "***I wonder if you saw him, Honey? He is such a fine person, I believe.***" (She referred to the W&M v. UVA game.) **Margaret Spinks** at church "***looks so in pain all the time. Walter stayed with her 2 days and took her to the doctor. Saw Jan at church.***" Ginny was going to Dr. Murphy for a check up before going to meet Susie in Richmond. "***Guess we'll have to bring little brother*** (i.e. Pancho, the dog)." On November 11, 1964, **Truman** felt tired. Ginny persuaded him to ask **Kirstedder** for a day off a week—just any day other than Saturday. "***But K. was very ugly and said he didn't care what other businesses did but he could not afford to give anyone off one day.***" Truman asked to take a day without pay. "***K. said he could take three!***" Truman asked only for one and "***K. looked shocked and agreed but later said it was at the convenience of the shop. Did you ever hear of such a slave driver? Truman said he would quit if he didn't give him the day. We can't afford to be without his salary. If only I could get the 11*** (pay grade)." On his day off, Truman cleaned gutters, dug flower beds, and pruned bushes. Ginny mailed the form to Dr. Albohm for Susie's college loan. Jo didn't know about the summer job for Susie. Ginny wrote that if Susie couldn't get anything better than the job she had last summer at Lansburgh's, then she should go to summer school. Perhaps the IRS refund would pay the tuition. "***Even if you work at the Shirlington branch, the job is too hard.***" The Mayer house (4 West Howell) was reappraised for $22K. Jo feared that Mayer would raise the selling price. Her house on Windsor had not yet been appraised. Ginny helped Jo to paint the sun porch. Dr. Murphy gave Ginny "***new pills for anemia. Stella Pierce died in Florida visiting her niece. She was a nurse in WW I. Susie; your letters did Rentie so much good. I loved your picture pasted on your last letter, but, Honey, I much prefer <u>your</u> drawings.***" Jo and Rentie were to go to Roanoke for Thanksgiving with Cousin **Robert Erle Johnson** and his mother, Blanche Johnson. Ginny and Truman would pick up Susie at college **"*without making a phone call unless absolutely necessary*"** to avoid cost. **"*Please send me a deposit slip from the back of your check book.*"** 11/15 Susie dyed her **"*bedspread rug, and my hands bright red. Nancy Bagby and B. Bear watched. Nancy Dyson exited. I feel like Lady Macbeth. It is under my fingernails and looks awful.*"** She did talk with James Clifford at the game. **"*Things are hard for him at UVA and he hasn't been home. Nancy thought he was handsome.*"** Susie preferred to take the Civil Service test at Christmas break to find a typing job. **Nancy B**. had taken it and said the timed test allowed 5 minutes. Susie really wanted a library job rather than typing. At Thanksgiving's game she planned to leave after half-time in Richmond. She had told Nancy and Barb Ginny's ***"saying"*** and now they used it. (What the saying was is not known.) Ginny and Truman planted tulips and daffodils. Later they sat with Rentie at Stella Pierce's viewing at Cunningham's funeral home. The Lescaleet family asked them to stay for two hours. Charlie and Jo used Susie's room in Ginny's house for more secret work. They secretly painted hat boxes bought for Rentie, who suspected they were up to something. Ginny wrote that Linda Whitley had

told her that the youth group (CYF) was going to visit William and Mary. Truman advised Susie on repairing the record player: **"*Try to put a screwdriver under the turntable to pry it up and at the same time hit the post in the center.*"** About the coming game with University of Richmond, he said, **"*we'll do better in Richmond, won't we? We'll show them spiders.*"** Ginny said they were watching **Carol Burnett** in *Once Upon a Mattress.* It's **"*a crazy hit that just fits her.*"** Because Ginny had not received a letter from Susie for several days, she wrote, ***"Is everything all right? Are you happy?"***11/16 Later, Ginny wrote that CYF (Christian Youth Fellowship) didn't go to W& M after all. After watching *Peter and the Wolf*, she said, **"*I don't know why but I've never liked it very much. I just don't like any little boys going hunting. I feel sorry for the wolf.*"** Sunday was the first of several onerous Trialogues. The first hosts were Harry and Bernice White. Truman found **Charles Bayer**'s article in *Vision* magazine.
Ginny had one more Sunday of Communion Cup Duty but ended up selling books at the church book sale instead. Rentie, Jo, Truman and Charlie helped. Again she wrote to Susie, **"*We are so anxious to hear from you. Is all well with you? I worry so when I don't hear often.*"** 11/18 "***Rabbit***"(Her sister, Jo Sullivan. She was Piglet. Truman was Christopher or Daddy, and Susie was Pooh.) "***has a buyer—that horrid character who rents his house to hoodlums. But if the appraisal falls below $18K, the deal is off. Real Estate people met with us. Daddy was just wonderful the way he could see straight through to the facts.*"** Next, Jo needed to know that Cmdr. Mayer would sell the Howell house for less than $22K. **"*I'm so glad you saw James Clifford!*"** Clearly, Ginny had hopes about James. On 11/20 Cmdr. Mayer accepted Jo's offered price. **"*We had a letter from Ora Lee saying don't forget them at Christmas.*"** Truman asked, **"*How are things in the Wigwam. Is the Tribe ready for battle?*"** On 11/23 the Bruches took **Betty Pratt** to the Trialogue, leaving Little Brother at Jo's. **"*We'll see you at the Stadium Entrance before 1:30. Daddy is going to meet you at the corner as he walks Little Brother.*"** On November 24, referring to Susie's long letter and the enclosed tickets, Ginny said that Susie should take some art classes because she drew so well. **"Rentie is not well enough to travel."** So the Johnsons might come to Jo's. The appraisal came in at $18.5K **"*Be careful staying in Chandler's.*"** Susie had to leave Barrett on Wednesday before 6 p.m. yet remain in town to play in the band for Friday's game, so she stayed at Chandler's. On December 1st, Aunt Jo wrote thanks for ***"willingly and actively transplanting boxwood from Windsor to Howell (thereafter called the Hundred Acre Wood at Howell). John says he owes everyone a huge vote of thanks for doing what he should have done."*** He wanted something back from it when it's old enough to divide in two to three years. The new owner of Aunt Jo's house on Windsor agreed to her transferring plants to her house on Howell but insisted on keeping the *"golden boxwood"*. Jo was glad to leave them since they were dead. Jo's letter was written on the back of a George Washington HS form letter to parents about "D" grades. She taught night school at the university's Extension at George Washington High School. Ginny kept two of the six hemlocks

removed. Jo had heard about Susie's ***"gruesome time at the bus depot on Sunday."*** Jo blamed her settlements concerning Windsor on the 17th and Howell on the 18th—***"hectic morning"*** and afternoon for being the ***"forerunner of the débâcle at the bus station."*** Ginny had been convinced that Jo needed her at settlement. Therefore Susie had to come home by bus and Madeline the fish would either have to come by bus or ***"get an invitation to spend Christmas with B. Bear"*** (Susie's room mate, Barbara). Jo was ***"petrified that FHA will not insure my mortgage."*** She was prepared to lobby her legislators that the ***"FHA is using discriminatory practice against would-be women borrowers of home loan. Mr. Burnette stayed late at the library tonight and typed out the form for Certifications of Employment. Hope he will not lose it before he gets it into the mail. . . I love your hair!"*** She went on to write about helping to find part-time government work for Susie. Also on 12/1, **Susie and Nancy Bagby** made it back to Barrett Hall by 11:30, even though the bus was delayed in Fredericksburg. The following day, it snowed as Susie and **Nancy Dyson** talked about their philosophy readings to prepare for finals. 12/2 Susie's low grade in Sociology was a concern. The professor only had one assignment to grade all semester. On the 4th, **Truman** installed the garbage disposal in Jo's new house. **Charles Speed** helped Jo to mulch the transplanted boxwood with peat and to put up the SOLD sign at 4 West Howell. On December 5 Jo continued to worry about the FHA Loan as she packed. James, who worked at the Pentagon, came to help. **Rentie** was excited by the move. On 12/6, **Blanche** wrote to the Bruches after a dinner at B&W on a warm drizzly day: ***"Truman, we appreciate your having taken us to the train so much. (Sunday night) I do not see how any of you were able to stir but that is nothing like moving will be. We are anxious to hear all the rest of the new about the new place of Jo's."*** On 12/7, Truman and Ginny planted bulbs in Jo's new garden and Charles and James helped to transplant hemlocks and yews from Windsor to Howell. Another of First Christian's Trialogues met. This time, Ginny and Truman were hosts. On December 8, Ginny wrote to Susie: "***Honey, did you get the blouse I sent you? We are so hungry for a letter, Darling. I do hate it about the settlement of Jo's house on the same day (Dec 18) but if we could schedule it early enough that morning, maybe I could still drive down. The new I-95 will be open all the way to Richmond on the 18th. It looks like you may be here for the moving. We had a letter from Blanche today. Daddy sends love.***" On the same day, Susie wrote, "***The stores on Duke of Gloucester St. are all decorated and look so pretty. There is a huge tree with pretty lights too … the girls in the dorm are decorating doors and buying little things for each other . . . Nancy and Barb have a little Christmas tree in this room. Thank you so much for mailing my blouse, Mommie . . Perhaps it would be better all around for me to come home on the bus . . .Nancy is in a hurry to go to dinner . . .I have three papers to do over Christmas and about 1000 pages to read . . ."*** On Thursday, Dec. 10, Ginny wrote to Susie: "***I've been trying to get enough room in the living room for 12 people. This Sunday nite the Trialogue meets. Yesterday we took the Termite letter to Routh Robbins. The letter***

***guaranteed no termites for a year. The application went to FHA and we should hear something by Monday. Your bank account is so low (45 cents) you won't be able to write a check until I put some in. If I come for you, Darling, we'll have to bring Nancy too. I just dread to drive down because the car is so old. Charlie and Jo went to Woody's tonight to buy for Ora Lee and family. They will mail their box tomorrow."*** Truman added: ***"Poncho is using my knee for a pillow. I asked him to write you a line or two but he is too lazy. We are looking forward to seeing you next weekend. If you came on the bus, what time would you get here?"*** On 12/11 Susie wrote: ***"Thank you for the $20 . . You two are just so sweet and I love you so much. I am sitting outside in my favorite study spot in the warm sun*** (probably the bench in the garden of the Governor's Palace)***. The air is balmy and there's a slight warm breeze. We have started concert band. I sit 2nd chair out of 7 flutes. I think Mr. Varner must have confused me with someone else. Everyone is quite glad that marching season is over. I went to the traditional Yule Log ceremony last night. We all stood outside and sang carols and then some boys carried the log into the Great Hall of the Wren Building and put it in the fireplace. Everyone made a wish for the coming year and threw in a sprig of holly that symbolizes last year's troubles. Then we went onto the West porch for some hot apple cider. I had an English test this morning that was rather bad; we had to identify such obscure quotes from Hamlet and to analyze one of Donne's poems--one we were not familiar with. I have a Sociology test Wednesday which I'm worried about, too, and a Philosophy one Tuesday . . . Well the sun is going down. It's getting chilly and I must go to Philosophy quiz section. A lady just walked by with a huge German Shepherd. I'm sure glad he was on a leash! I'm also glad Ponch is a small dog! This would be a lovely place to take him for walks. I wish there were some pretty country near home for that. Well, I must from hence with haste depart. Piglet, whatever you think about my coming home is fine. Just let me know which you'd rather I did. I can make it O.K. on the bus. All my love, S."*** In Chicago, **Donald Rutter** was born to Delores (Schimpf) and Harry Rutter. While Richard was home from Lafayette, **Edna Rose** visited Frank and Jo in Alexandria. They took her to the International **Eastern Star** Temple at the General Grand Chapter building in Washington, D.C. As a past Grand Matron of E.S. Edna had walked the labyrinth and learned the significance of the five women at the points of the star--Adah, Ruth, Esther, Martha, and Electa. She knew how the organization had been started by Dr. Robet Morris from Richland, MS in 1850 as an adjunct to the Masons. But Frank, Jo, Richard, and Susan walked around the richly furnished building with Edna without much understanding of what they were seeing. **CE DATES:** A **solar eclipse** occurred on May 3, 664 CE at 10 a.m., followed by a plague. According to the Venerable Bede, the populations of Northumbria, Ireland, and Southern Britain were decimated. This was also the year of the Council of Whitby, hosted by St. Hilda, at which Catholic rather than Ionian practices were royally mandated. Also called the Synod of Whitby, it established the Catholic method of calculating the date of Easter. In 1264 **Simon de**

**Montfort** captured King **Henry III** and Prince Edward, put them before *parlement*, and attempted to extract a binding agreement with the barons, but Montfort was killed by Prince Edward in 1265 at Evesham. More significantly, the *parlement* became the basis for a representative **Parliament**. On May 11, 1864, General Grant wrote this dispatch, ***"I propose to fight it out on this line if it takes all summer."*** **Jefferson Davis**'s son, Joe, fell off a balcony and died. **Grant attacked Lee**, who was entrenched at the **Wilderness and** on June 1-3 at **Cold Harbor**. Total casualties were 12,737, including deaths and injuries. The Union failed to break the entrenched Confederates and therefore began a ten month siege of Richmond, which Grant began by crossing the James, attacking Petersburg, and capturing Fort Harrison on September 29, 1864. Black Union troops distinguished themselves with 14 Congressional Medals of Honor. Meanwhile, Union Gen. Butler was held back from Richmond at **Parker's Battery.** And **Sherman** moved east to capture **Atlanta** while **Butler** moved north from the James River to **Richmond**. On June 16, 1864, President **Lincoln** went to the **Great Central Fair** in **Philadelphia** for the benefit of the Sanitary Commission. He spoke about perseverance. During Grant's siege of **Petersburg** on June 20, 1864, General **Robert E. Lee** stood on the porch of the **Libby House,** which since 1861 had become the **Libby Prison.** He made a brief speech, delivering the news that Weldon Station had been lost in battle of Petersburg. On July 2, 1864, Lincoln gave a **pocket veto** to a punitive **Reconstruction** bill, calling it a *Procrustean bed*. The Wade-Davis bill had been written in reaction to Lincoln's **ten percent plan,** whereby only 10% of the 1860 voters from a Southern state was needed to swear allegiance to the United States for the state to rejoin the Union. Many in the Congress wanted to exact vengeance. As Grant approached Petersburg from the south, Lee sent Gen. **Jubal Early** with 15K troops up the **Shenandoah** Valley to attack Maryland and Washington from the north. The Shenandoah was named for the warrior Zynodoa, named for a bird who sang at his birth. Bird and Warrior were long gone. General Early was met by **General Lew Wallace** (author of *Ben Hur,* another lost warrior) with about 8K troops at the **Monocacy** River. The Union army lasted long enough for Grant's 6th army to move quickly to the defense of Washington. When the Union army was routed, the Confederates wasted time pillaging Maryland. A brief battle at **Fort Stevens**, 5 miles from D.C. (near the present site of the Pentagon) was the only substantial engagement before the Confederates withdrew. When Lincoln stood up on a parapet to get a closer look at the battle, a Union Captain cried, ***"Get down, you fool!"*** The Captain's name was **Oliver Wendell Holmes II**. On September 1, 1964, **Farragut** captured **Mobile Bay** and **Sherman** captured **Atlanta**. Confederates set all the stores on fire as they left. **Sheridan** destroyed a quarter of **Early's** army in the Shenandoah Valley on September 19, and in August, **McClellan,** the great procrastinator who had needed perfect plans before he would take Richmond, risked running as a candidate for the Democrats. He lost. **Henri Toulouse Lautrec** was born in Albi, France. **George Pullman** invented the railway **Sleeper car,** opening 3500 acres near Lake Calumet in

Chicago for his manufacturing plant. The Pullman-Standard plant continued to produce passenger cars in Hammond-Whiting from 1929 to 1981. At **Lumpkin's Jail** in Richmond, the former Slave Sales House, a school for was established for former slaves. In 1865, the American Baptist Home Mission Society made it the Richmond Theological School for Freedman, and simultaneously established Wayland Seminary. The Theological School later became **Virginia Union University.** On January 13, 1964, a **USAF B-52** flying over Maryland fell after its vertical fin separated from the bulkhead and **crashed into Big Savage Mountain**. Crew members ejected but several died of exposure before they could be rescued. Although the plane already had known problems, the Air Force insisted upon its staying in the air as part of the **Chrome Dome** operation, which was keeping B-52s aloft full time as a nuclear shield. The plane carried two nuclear bombs with fissile material but with the detonators separated. Apparently no nuclear material leaked, but the information was classified and therefore any claims about leakage were unverified. One consequence was the demise of the Chrome Dome idea. The **Civil Rights Act** was signed on July 2, 1964 by **Lyndon Johnson,** who, with the help of Senate Speaker Mike **Mansfield**, overcame the opposition of Eastland, Thurmond, and other opponents who compared the legislation to the punitive Reconstruction bill. Some of the varied pressures which helped to change minds about segregation were **Ella Baker's** 20 years of activism and **Student NonViolent Coordinating Committee,** Station **WDIC** in Memphis, **Martin Luther King**'s **nonviolent activism**, **Malcolm X's** lectures about **revolution,** and, in Detroit, the work of **Grace Lee Boggs** and her **beloved community** and **Barry Gordy's Mo-Town Studios.** In October, Mr. Khrushchev was replaced by Leonid **Brezhnev**, who attempted to bring back some Stalinist methods. The Caldecott Award winner was ***Where the Wild Things Are*** by Maurice Sendak. The **Presbyterian Church** (PUSA) **allowed women to serve** as deacons and elders. Measuring oxygen levels, Danish Geologist **Dansgaard** studied ice cores taken from 0.5 miles down (i.e. 100 kya) at Camp Century in Greenland. He found evidence of worldwide cooling at cyclical intervals. Later, other cores showed warm phases within glacial periods and cool phases within inter-glacials. **Barry Goldwater** polarized the Republican Party and ultimately the nation when he ran for president on a ticket appealing to the **John Birch** society, to racists who didn't like the "**freedom Democrats**" and to others who understood the code words in his political harangues. For Goldwater, it was about having the **"*conscience of a conservative***," but for some other conservatives, like William Buckley, Goldwater's was an offensive kind of conservatism that needed fixing. Black voters left the "***party of Lincoln*****,"** because they also understood the code words. The **New York World's Fair** opened with the script for the exhibit in the United States Pavilion was written by **Ray Bradbury**. He had been chosen because of his essay, "*The Ardent Blasphemers*," comparing Melville's "mad Captain Ahab with Jules Verne's saner Captain Nemo, and viewing the dark of one with the light of the other. **"*My essay shows Ahab daring God to strike him, whereas Nemo***

***plugs into the energy of the universe and ignites the seas...describing the gap between crazed Ahab and the mild lunatic Nemo, and their creative blasphemy.*"** The Roses went to the Fair with Aunt Monte, who injured her leg. **Nelson Mandela** was sentenced to prison for almost 27 years for high treason against South Africa. At his trial, he said that the idea of living together in democracy and harmony with all was the idea he lived for, but that it was also, "***if necessary, an idea for which I am prepared to die.***" **Ruth Harrison** published *Animal Machines*, an exposé of industrial **meat production**, with a preface by **Rachel Carson**, who died of breast cancer on 4/14. **Peter Higgs**, a physicist in Edinburgh, suggested that in the beginning of the universe a **phase transition** or quantum fluctuation occurred, perhaps a trillionth second after the Big Bang, creating a force field and gravitation.

## Step 165

On January 31, 1965, the Registrar sent **Susie's** grades to her parents in Alexandria. At that time she lived at 329 **Barrett Hall** and was taking English Literature, Advanced Readings in French, American History, History of Philosophy, Sociology, and Physical Education. The PE course required students to pass a swimming test because the parents of a student who had drowned had made a large donation contingent upon the requirement. Beth, Susie's friend from Roanoke, struggled even to put her head in the water. Bowling and field hockey were other sports in the program. Years later, Susie still recalled repeatedly practicing *lunges* to satisfy the hockey coach. On April 10, 1965, **Mary Guldi & Joseph Schimpf** were married in Chicago. Joseph had dated several women after Frances's death. In 1964 he took one, named Eva, and his son Mark to a Cubs game. Later, he dropped Eva after she complained that his house on 1525 N. Claremont needed remodeling. He had been born in Germany to **William and Eva Schimpf.** William had been a professional painter or "Decorator" of icons and religious figures in churches around Chicago, including Holy Name. In the home on 1525 N. Claremont he painted a mural of the Rhine in the dining room, a St. George and the Dragon at the top of the stairs, and a Saint Christopher on 1525 N. Claremont. The St. Christopher painting was saved by Harry Rutter when the house was sold, but most of the other paintings for the family and churches were lost. After his father's death, Joseph Schimpf lived in the carriage house in the rear and rented rooms in the main house. Down the street was St. Elizabeth hospital, where Frances Van de Riet had been sent to nursing school at the insistence of her Uncle John, a priest in St. Louis. Joseph met Frances at the hospital when he was a patient. All of their fourteen children were born at St. Elizabeth's Hospital. On the same block was **St. Aloyisius Church** and grammar school, attended by Kathleen and her sisters. Only Loretta and she went on to **Josephinum High School,** on Oakley St., where they excelled, and where Kathleen met **Marcie**, a long-time friend. Her sister Jane and Kathleen's sons Paul and Jeremy went to **St. Benedict's** on Irving Park. Jane went on to the high school, but Paul and Jeremy went to Gordon Tech. Joseph

Schimpf met Mary Guldi after Frances died. They lived for a while at her home on nearby Oakley St. and separated after 8 years. In frustration with him, Mary flattened all his tires. Kathleen's sister, **Rosemary Lapinski**, at first disliked Mary Guldi as a result of a misunderstanding. Joseph had told Mary that his children didn't care about him and did not need to know about their marriage. Mary, therefore, did not invite them to the wedding. Rosemary attributed the cut to Mary, not to her father. On April 26, **Robert E. Johnson** wrote to Irene and Jo Sullivan ( from 2749-A Laburnum Ave. SW, Roanoke, 24015): ***"We have just returned from church and have struck a fire downstairs. Sure wish you all were here with us. The dogwood and other spring flowering trees and shrubs are in full bloom. How worried we were that we couldn't make our brief visit with you my trip to Winchester. Aunt Irene, I know your cake was delicious and I appreciated you thinking of me in that way. We are so anxious for you all to come down for a visit. We are being delayed getting into our new house, however I am sure we can make you comfortable here in the apt. Mrs. Whittington is with her people in Maryland and is having trouble finding a place. I am not unhappy over the delay, however, as it will suit my finances better to close the deal the first of June or July. She is trying to find a place before then, though, as has made us feel free to get the key and go in when we wish, so if you all came before we move we can go over and see it with all Mrs. Whittington's pretty furniture. We are just going to move in and get some extra pieces of furniture as we are able and I can do any redecorating myself. Jo, you are working so hard. I hope you can get off for some relaxation here in Roanoke. . . I was glad to hear that Virginia may get her promotion. Sure hope it comes through for her. My job still continues rather hectic and at times uncertain, but I try not to let it bother me. Company personnel has been reduced 15% this past year and they are still trimming. Mother is busy now enjoying your Christmas present magazine. I thought we had such a nice time Christmas in your exciting new home—and what a wonderful job you did getting moved into it and engineering all the many details of selling and buying. I hope your back yard plantings are faring well with the Spring. It has turned cold and rainey*** (sic) ***here for the last two days and I have enjoyed using my nice umbrella. Mother hasn't been so well lately, but much better the last two days. Must close now and all my love to each of you. R.E."*** On May 3, 1965 Susan Irene Bruch pledged **Phi Mu** at William and Mary. During the summer, Susie worked at National Archives. Jo Sullivan, a GS 11 at the Pentagon Library, Technical Reference Chief, taught night classes for Alexandria Schools and the University of VA. On June 24, Robert wrote to Jo Sullivan: *"**This has been a rugged day at the office—one of those days when I am tempted to buy a trailer and head away with a crust of bread and a song. But I guess that would be impractical. Mother and I are sitting on the patio enjoying a comfortable temperature—not too cool—and watching the birds and squirrels. The apple tree is loaded and promises plenty of apple sauce soon. We miss Aunt Irene so very much these pleasant afternoons on the patio and at night***

***downstairs with a fire. We are looking forward to more visits in the future. Jo, we appreciated each day your two shrubs which you so artistically sculptured and all the drapes which you so cleverly fashioned. Did Aunt Irene tell you that we worked until 12 one night getting hems in the dining room and they all look just perfect. Now you must come back and enjoy a visit of just doing nothing but resting and going places. I cut the lawn last Saturday and trim at least one shrub a day with just four more to go now. I had to buy a new lawn mower and a dehumidifier for downstairs; however, since buying it, I found that the Whittingtons had closed tight all the ventilators under the house and since opening them the dampness was 90% taken care of without the dehumidifier which incidentally cost $120. I have two red birds now. No, there are four—eating peanuts off the stone wall just seven feet from where I sit. And a squirrel is venturing this way. He hasn't seen the peanuts yet and is eating green apples. And here comes a rabbit thru the arch of your two shrubs which you worked on. I found a downstairs front door buzzer which Mrs. W. had disconnected. She thought it was setting the house afire. I am trying to get vacation at a summer resort out from Harrisonburg with Mrs. Wills. Well, I must bring this to a close and let me say again my thanks for all you did while you were here. Tell Virginia and Truman I mean to write them. R.E. P.S.: The Secords are moving to Alexandria week after next. He was principal at Patrick Henry HS here and very highly thought of . He will be principal of the new school there and will live on Russell Rd. near you all. He is very muchly interested in meeting you and having a contact in the Army library. They asked for both of your addresses. They are both intelligent, nice people and I think you will enjoy knowing them. They have a mentally retarded daughter who they keep with them—about 13 years old. Tuesday morning—I'm looking forward to taking advantage of your nice invitation this summer and am on my way to work now."*** On a card picturing "*My Old Kentucky Home"* (the Bardstown residence of Judge John Rowan, Stephen Foster's cousin), **Inez Luten,** Irene Helm Sullivan's childhood friend from Hickman (105 Buchanan St. Hickman, KY 42050) wrote pn 8/6/1965*: **"How much I appreciate your card and letter! I am slow but I am so glad to hear and do hope (all) are fine . . . Nina and Louise were here and I went back to Detroit with them . . . stayed a week with Nina and her two girls, who don't live in Detroit . . . came back to Canton, OH and enjoyed a little visit with a young friend I had lived with in Jackson, KY about twelve years ago—graduated in library science. I was librarian at Lee's College in Jackson when I retired, as you may remember. Virginia and I came back here in 1959. I have been by myself since Cousin Mentor went to Hawes Memorial Nursing Home in Fulton. She misses Hickman friends. However, some of them go over to see her. Not having a car, I don't see her often. I went down to see Marguerite Fuque Luten this afternoon. She has arthritis and doesn't get out much lately. Nell Calvin is coming in a few minutes. Write when you can . . ."*** **Blanche Johnson** (Mrs. Erle Cowan Johnson) wrote to her niece (Jo) and her sister (Irene) on 8/13 at 9:30 a.m.: ***"I have just come running down the hill***

***waving my arm, in full sight of the bus I wanted to catch. He could scarcely keep from seeing me—stopped at the corner to let a passenger off –and (yet) went on his way without me. Now I have a long 15 minute wait and late for my hair appointment. Am scribbling on my purse, sitting on the stone steps of the Baptist Church. R.E. Left early for Bedford and I so wanted to go also. Just a few more days now ere some vacation starts and I find myself wishing to see you all also ant this time, but guess will have to wait the three weeks until. Sure enjoyed your long, newsy letter, Irene. Have really written you each day in my mind for quite some time. Have been working and have gone out quite a bit. Have had two lunch invitations, which means I shall have to get busy. Ha! And I already owe. The neighbors want to have a cookout at the Peaks as well as we but wish to wait until you arrive. . .”*** In the afternoon, she wrote of being busy all day and soon having to prepare dinner because Robert had a meeting at church. Someone she knew gave her a lift from the bus stop. ***“Goldie, the dog next door, has gotten on my sympathy. They leave him at nite and afternoons many times during the week and he cries frantically all the time. He throws himself against all the windows in desperation. I must go take Mrs. Lewis a sack of apples and then get busy at the dinner. I'm really tired of cooking. R.E. Is looking forward to his week there and it is something he really needs. You will enjoy the trip home with me, part of the way, in the new, big car. I've made up your little bed today as will have to clean and wash and iron Friday and Saturday . . .”*** August 23 was **Irene Helm Sullivan's** birthday. She wrote from Roanoke about the gifts she had received in Alexandria before she left—a ***“white gold spinet bed for my special date . . . The fruition of my day, culminating yesterday at our dining table, the 'receiving' of Birthday Gifts galore—Sunday 2 p.m. With the exception of my wonderful free transportation to Roanoke in new car immediately following the 'packing' of boxes, suitcases, etc. for my '2 wks visit' with beloved ones . . . Ah! Indeed exciting . . .”*** She had missed finishing her letter before the postman came. She was surprised by the mosquitoes in Roanoke. She repeatedly thanked everyone for her birthday party and hoped that *“Mister Whiskers”* was okay in his new home and prayed that intruders would stay away from the houses on Howell Avenue. The humidity had upset her equilibrium but after arriving at the Johnsons' beautiful home and getting a night's sleep followed by a cool day, her “***balance***” had returned. ***“Hug dear Susan for me. Will write later. Take best care of selves. Now ever a prayer to him for all His blessings. Until next time, All love, Mother.”*** She was glad to hear that after she had left, Susie spent the night with Jo. She fondly remembered how Ginny had ***“transported Susan, Josephine and myself on a shopping expedition and a dining-eating-out minus dear Truman”*** to choose ***“my dear little spinet bed.”*** The following day, she wrote another letter. Again she thanked everyone profusely for her birthday celebration. *Two* days after her birthday, she wrote to Jo: ***“Another hurriedly written letter—as I've just discovered the 'box hummingbird hose 9 ½” I had in my packing.”*** Since living in Hickman, Irene had sold stockings and other items to earn a little on her own. She was

known as the saleswoman who always wore a pearl necklace. ***"Sunday is superb! Caught my hurried mistake just after Robt. Erle left with my letter to you for mailing post haste this a.m. I—we all were late arising as I'd had my "good bath" last night. I sought all fresh lingeries & clean new hose—opened Box hose (so found 'em)—Lo and behold! A mistake even too small for Blanchie! She was of course in kitchen with cooking breakfast (girl). I like them fine, but impossible for my pedestrian feet! Thus, as I really needed bra—at least a change daily—I'd write & enclose this in the/my already written letter R.E. would mail this a.m. Did not wish to wear again my beautiful (only now 1 pr.) DeLuxe Hose now to be washed I wore over here Sunday as felt was clean. I wash bra and hose (1 pr) now are drying. What a dear wonderful surprise as I now investigated the "box of Hose" to exclaim—as I unfolded them, '—I could wear 'em now.' Stretch Hose—beautiful quality—(fine) and on my feet they glided into a full length of my adjustable lenth & with seams, too! My 'chilled shanks' fitted, truly fitted—so smoothly and not a wrinkle—they really are deluxe & I do feel 'Deluxe fitted' and do I like them? Yes I do—all so wonderful—would like to give a Commercial—for others to enjoy as I'm enjoying these now! And all thank Precious to you for such gifts . . . this happy 80th, thankful, birthday. . ."*** Listing some of the items forgotten in Alexandria, she asked for more lingerie—but not the new bra—Scholl's foot pads, toothpaste and bath powder, but then said she could ***"very nicely do without any of the above."*** Blanche was arranging a dinner for Irene with her neighbors—with ***"fried chicken, broccoli with Hollandaise Sauce, beans, pear salad, and peaches and cream—Mrs. Sloan can't eat sugar, nor cream, perhaps. I have much to tell but am so sleepy. My feet were dreadfully swollen last night. Bath helped. Almost normal this a.m. Am in the den room in a r-chair by the window with feet elevated. A beautiful robin greets me outside. Clematis beautiful is growing in ivy-covered tree . . . If you send anything, it might include that swelling med. Of Dr. U—"*** At 11:30 a.m. on September 2, 1965, Irene wrote to Jo and Ginny that she hoped to receive a message from them when the postman came at 1:30. She was disappointed that Susie would be returning to college. Blanche had made bread. Robert planned to bring Irene back on Friday or Saturday. Then Blanche and he would visit in Alexandria. Irene cautioned Jo not to work too hard in preparing for the Johnsons' visit. Blanche didn't know what clothes to pack. All the shrubbery bloomed—but ***"alas! Not sweet perfume for an allergy victim! I've been sneezing the last few days . . .The pellet sure does the work of all sneezing, etc., slept good, but 'the peculiar effect,' all today is most evident. Nevertheless glad I had it with me. But I'm yet deaf, deaf especially in right ear, which glands behind the ear seem swollen—the sound when ear to throat is rubbed hear a swish as of the wind passing a car, you know. Ever since last Friday 2 wks ago when I washed my hair at home, you know—I've been more or less deaf—and in a week past Wednesday I can scarcely hear at all a conversation, just merely 'a snuffle sound.' Have had to use my ear salve to keep ear from itching. I hesitate to use too often. Alas! The mineral oil Dr. W—***

***prescribed to soften wax is reclining there at home. I hope when I arrive there to use it as soon as possible. Do trust it will make wax melt and I'll hear again. Now can't hear the ticking of clock . . . I do feel 'blue' today so please excuse all narratives concerning all written but am quite nervous from 'the strain' yet have enjoyed all here, for which I'm most grateful . . . Well, Blanchie is out of the kitchen. Mail came and your dear sweet letter. Just read (it). Phoned Robert Erle. Of course, all sorry of Susan not coming yet each understands . . .”*** She thanked Jo for the box of lingerie. The Johnsons were to take her back on Saturday. Since she didn't have her address book, she had only written Jo, Ginny and her church friend, Mrs. Dennis, while in Roanoke. **Ginny** wrote her mother the same day (8/2) to say that she looked forward to seeing them and that it ***“was so dear of Robert to want to come back early just for Susan. But she felt she didn't want him to have to do all that driving after work just to get <u>her</u> back for the wedding, and she didn't want to miss Donna's wedding . . .”*** She said Robert would have an easier time with Labor Day traffic by leaving on Saturday. When Susie had done her last day of work the previous Saturday, the Bruches had visited family in Pennsylvania, coming back on Monday morning at 5:00 a.m. They spent two hours outside Baltimore getting the battery recharged. Truman replaced the generator when they returned home. ***“Last Friday (8/27) was Truman's last day at Springfield. Mr. Kirstedder refused to give him one day off <u>without pay</u>. He insisted on Truman working six days. Said they might even be working seven days. So we just decided since Truman has an ad coming out in phone book next month anyway, we would just give up the Springfield job. I'm glad we have. Mr. Channel is bringing Truman quite a few calls anyway*** (for television repairs) ***from Holiday Inns around town. . .”*** On September 25, 1965, **Jerry Warner and Kathleen Schimpf** were married in Chicago. On October 17 at 8:30 p.m., **Blanche** wrote from Roanoke to Jo and Irene. She and Robert had dinner at the Roanoker in Two Towers Shopping Center with a couple they met in the doctor's office. Blanche was exhausted for two days after a viral infection. ***“I would just be content to lay and rest on the bed—only I didn't get rested! Ha! Sounds funny doesn't it.”*** She was resting up for their Thanksgiving visit to Alexandria. Robert had gone to Lexington. ***“He had some real good news when he came from the office Monday afternoon. He will tell you when he sees you.”*** She ***“paid back some of the nice things that have been done for me”*** by church people and neighbors by making boiled custard and having Robert Erle take it around. ***“Jinny's husband has a job now and we are all happy for them. Margaret and Victor leave Sat. afternoon . . .Mrs. Fansell will be staying here in her apartment across the street. Elva Sloan went blind and dizzy, fell on the street in Salem and sprained her ankle . . .had a nice long letter from Ginny, Jo, & Irene. . . Just talked to R. Erle. . .Was in Waynesboro for the nite . . .”*** She was startled by a noise at the front door and peeped out as a very tall paper boy was peeping in. On November 7 at 8:00 p.m. she wrote that Robert was in Danville over night, but that he would call at nine. Now she was reading the paper and eating popcorn. She thanked them

for cards, letters, and the gift of bath sets in ***"just the right color green."*** She wrote that ***"Jinny brot my mail in yesterday and I showed her my sick card from you and she just laughed. Said the kitchen is where she more often finds me with a tidbit for her to taste! Her husband has not found a job yet. Tomorrow nite we are having the neighbors over for popcorn and apple cider and a fire in the fireplace. . ."*** Neighbors had brought her two meals from Miller and Rhoads Food Shop while she was sick. ***"I can truthfully say this is the first time I've ever been sick. Dr. said it would be a long painful, drawn out affair and it could return in weeks. My side and back are still so sensitive to any clothes for any length of time."*** (Her ailment was probably shingles.) After scrubbing her over with Fuller Brush Oven Cleaner she did her ironing. She would have preferred that they come to Roanoke for Thanksgiving, but was resigned to travel. **Susie** was visiting them for the week-end (11/6-7). ***"Please tell John and poor Tilly I am sorry they won't get to come. I never thought of her as getting well enuf to come over this fall . . . I believe it is next week when you go for your next check-up, Irene. I feel optimistic concerning it and will be looking forward to hearing from you. . . ."*** (The reference was to John Underwood and his mother, Tilly Podborsik, originally from Dubrovnik, Croatia and glad to be free of Tito.) She wrote about receiving beans, stewed tomatoes, spinach with egg, pork chops and cakes from the neighbors and she included a newspaper clipping about three children lost along the trail to **Sharp Top Summit.** ***"They asked every home in the valley or anywhere to be lighted all nite. The children thot them many stars. I saw the comet. They were found at 3:30 a.m. On the most dangerous side of the mountain."*** On November 30, 1965 **Blanche** wrote: ***"Dear Irene, Jo, Ginny, Truman and alas no Susie: It's Hip! Hip! Hurrah! R. Erle bot a <u>Car</u> this afternoon. Truman, Robert Erle says to tell you he wished mightily for you in the buying of a Lincoln Continental, which is not the first one he mentioned, 53,000 miles, one poor tire. You ride on air and never know you are moving at high speed or low, radio and other gadgets for convenience—no air conditioner but a good circulating system, green, which is not to me so pretty, green upholstering, has been well kept inside and out. His Salem Agent put him on to it. The woman's husband—twas her car—died about a month ago and she only wants to keep one car and 'tis she that R. Erle is buying it from for just $900. The woman's car mechanic said it was an exceptional buy as some others who looked at the engine also said. Now we are coming in a <u>car</u> at Christmas and want Irene and Jo to drive back with us Sunday afternoon following Xmas Day and return New Year by train from here. . ."*** She commented that on their train trip from Alexandria, extra cars had been put on to provide enough seats. A neighbor spoke on azaleas at her Garden Club. She thanked everyone for her new hat, for taking her shopping, for the box lunch, and Ginny for dividing her time between them and Susie, who returned to campus. She also sent checks and ***"thanks for attending to them for us."*** **Inez Luten** sent Christmas greetings to Irene on 12/18, thanks for the gift of a towel and calendar, and asked her to visit Hickman in the summer. About her care-

giver, Mrs. Carlton, Inez wrote, "***of course, no arrangement is perfect, but I am hoping she will stay or else I can get some one. However, I feel well enough to stay alone for a while, but I am not anxious to. It isn't easy to put things away, and I do forget where. But enough about me.***" She was glad to see less snow and had gone to the hotel in Union City with Mary Attebery for a "***nice home-like turkey dinner. . . I have just been talking to Mary Stahr and she said she wished I had a car and could come out*** this ***afternoon. I may get colored James Mayberry to take me. He works for me on Fridays and sometimes I get him for a short time on another day when I need a short job. He works for Isic Sanger on Tuesdays. I think so often of our school days when Miss Annie called us the 'cup and saucer.' I have been glad to have had several letters from Tom Powell. He lives in Laguna Beach, California near two of his daughters. . . (he) wrote me while I was in the nursing home in Fulton. He asked about some of his classmates. He still gets the Hickman Courier. . .***" The Stahr family was prominent in Hickman. In school, the Sullivan girls knew the Stahr children. One of Judge Stahr's sons became a Secretary of the Army and was frequently in and out of the Army Library in the Pentagon when Jo Sullivan was Chief of Technical Services and Ginny Bruch was Chief of Cataloguing. On December 22, **Robert** wrote about coming for Christmas and bringing Irene and Jo back to Roanoke. "***Mother has just finished getting out all the candles and hung some bright balls from the dining room chandelier . . . also cooking biscuits, chicken, and boiling custard to bring. And all the neighbors are being given boiled custard, parched nuts and bits of Gertrude's cake. Turnip greens, October beans, steaks, and a ham have been put in the deep freeze. .***" He looked forward to Truman examining his new car. On Thursday he had to leave early to make an agency call in Buena Vista, which would put him in Alexandria at 6:00 p.m. On weekends at Lafayette College, fraternities like DKE broadcast the power chords of the **Kinks'** "*You Really Got Me*." Richard closed his window. At First Christian Church in Alexandria during Christmas break, Richard helped the patterners of **Paul Poland**, son of Harold Poland. Groups of volunteers met regularly to move his arms and legs in the pattern of a baby's crawl, following the ***"patterning"*** concept of **Glenn Doman**, a Pennsylvania physician. Richard assisted, but he didn't think it worked. From William and Mary, Susie had brought home work to do for Human Development, French composition, French literature, Fundamental Math Concepts and Music for Elementary School. **On December 29, 1965 at a Christmas party for the college students in the church at the home of Reverend and Mrs. Charles Bayer, Richard and Susan met.**

**Entrances**

Here I came following elders, following swans
gliding over Lake Klawir, sinuous phantoms
grazing over depths on mucid algal nets
and sprays. Then I surfaced in company of diverse
divers known for the depths to which they sank,

then in the company of twelve selves,
none of them more than less should be,
then walked behind shadows left hanging
when the stage was struck. See them, there in the stalls
without a ticket? Then I reached backwards
from risers rolling under leaping
rat terriers, tiny flags clenched in their jaws
and led by a three-legged mastiff with bad breath,
all of them trotting into the stadium
surrounded by the usual thousands in a meaty event,
and fell into the company of priests, pawnbrokers,
passing tourists, and hedge traders on lunch break.

There I am--a whisker of data, the last beat of a
triple-dotted rest, the whew of a vapor
slipped at last from between sand grains,
lost loosely stitched in coughs and trails of cloth.
Here I made my openings, my entrances
from the rear with bells,
from the four corners with Anone,
from deductions with Euclid,
from subductions with Hephaestus;
drawn, led, sauntering with Thoreau,
Li Po, Lao-tzu, and the Marx brothers,
full to tipping over. I entered the scene.

On December 30, Richard wrote to Susan: **"*After talking with you last night I feel that I would like to become better acquainted with you. Perhaps through the exchange of letters.*"** His feeling was stronger than his writing. At Lafayette, **Colton Chapel** burned. After Richard's class graduated, required chapel would be a past tradition, as would required ROTC and the absence of coeds and the tension of abstention. **MYA Dates:** About 65-66 mya, a massive worldwide **extinction of many species** occurred. But for the diminutive mammals it was a big opportunity. A large asteroid escaped from the Baptistina family in the asteroid belt **striking near the Yucatan Peninsula in Mexico and creating the Chicxulub crater.** Mass extinctions of reptiles and other species followed. The **Great Plains Province** began to form in the **Tertiary**. It is a vast, east-tilting surface formed from deposition eroded from the Rockies. Erosion of this upraised region continued, especially on its eastern margin, as many east-flowing rivers exposed bedrocks. At 64.85 mya, the oldest placental mammals, arboreal insectivores like ***Protungulatum donnae,*** diverged from ancestral lines (65.7mya) and began to fill the niches emptied by expiring reptiles. Within a few hundred thousand years, the various placental groups began to diverge from each other. The **Morphobank** database weighted both anatomical and nucleotide evidence to arrive at

these dates. Those who dissent from the weights have estimated the appearance of placental mammals at 100mya. (<SN 3/9/2013) **BCE Dates:** In 165 BCE, Judas **Makkabi** (Maccabee), the Hasmonean, reentered Jerusalem, defeating the Seleucids under Antiochus IV. In 665, a bronze fish with a glass eye was made by an Egyptian craftsman. It bore the **Crown of Isis** with bull's horns and sun's disk. As she gathered the body parts of Osiris where his brother Seth had strewn them after winning control of Egypt, Isis found his penis in a fish. The **Tempera Papyrus** would tell of Osiris' Resurrection. **CE Dates: Dante** was born in 1265. In 1665, F. **Redi** showed that maggots do not appear in meat spontaneously but arise from the eggs of flies. In 1665, **Roemer** discovered that **light** has a finite velocity. In 1765, a **Presbyterian** Congregation was registered in Williamsburg, VA., following the petitions of Samuel Davies and others for their rights to worship as religious dissenters in a colony dominated by Anglicans. From his brother in Williamsburg, on March 26, **Ned Hawtrey** received a letter from his brother at Brick Court: **"*Dear Ned, Since you left London, I called at the Virginia Coffee House to endeavour to find out Mr. Small, but could learn no Tidings of him, therefore left a note for him desiring him to let me know where I might see him; in consequence of this, he called on me a few days since, and gave me what particulars he knew relating to the College. He is a polite, well-bred man, and said he should be glad to give you any information in his power in regard to the College. As well as I can remember his account is this: The College was founded by Mr. Blair in Wm. And Mary's time, who granted a Charter to a Rector and twenty Visitors of that place, with power to appoint a president and 6 professors, one of which you are appointed, tho' they have given it the name of Grammar School Master. These Visitors have also a power by their Charter to make Statutes for the good Government of the College. Your Salary is £150 Sterling, paid as regularly as if at the Bank of England. Every boy pays a pistole Entrance money and 20s. Sterling per annum, out of which you pay the first Usher (there being two) 5s. . .*"** (From *The Hawtrey Family,* by F.M. Hawtrey, Vol. I, p. 146)**. Robert Fulton** was born in Little Britain, in Lancaster County, PA. He became a painter, inventor, and businessman. **William Crittendon** was born in Anson County, North Carolina. **Captain Cook's** voyages of discovery took him to the Admiralty Isles, New Zealand, and Australia. On January 8, 1865, **Judith McGuire** wrote in her diary after walking back from a Richmond hospital, where she had been with a friend whose brother was dying. "***I passed a house where there were music and dancing. The revulsion of feeling was sickening. I thought of the gayety of Paris during the French Revolution , of the 'cholera ball' in Paris, the ball at Brussels the night before the battle of Waterloo, and felt shocked that our own Virginians, at such a time, should remind me of such scenes . . .***" (from *The Richmond Times Dispatch 1/8/2015).* **Lister** introduced antiseptic techniques using phenol on the broken leg of James Greenlees. **Ulysses S. Grant,** as he had promised, pursued Lee relentlessly at great cost to the Union, finally forcing him to surrender and capturing Richmond. On April 3, 1865,

Richmond resident Sallie Putnam wrote, ***"The roaring, crackling and hissing of the flames, the bursting of shells at the Confederate Arsenal, the sounds of the instruments of martial music, the neighing of the horses, the shoutings of the multitudes . . . gave an idea of all the horrors of Pandemonium."*** Sturdy iron pipe boxes and sewer pipes were installed along West Grace Street in Richmond. They were not removed until October 6, 2013. On April 4, 1865 Lincoln and his son, Tad, walked through **Richmond**. Only eleven days later, Lincoln was shot at Ford's Theater in Washington, on April 15, 1865, and died at 7:22 a.m. Secretary Stanton said, **"*Now he belongs to the ages*."** On June 15, General Montgomery **Meigs** received permission to establish a cemetery on the **Custis-Lee** estate in Arlington. As Quartermaster General, he used his position to make sure that the Lees would not want to return to their estate. He even directed that Mary's rose garden be used for graves. By the end of the month, 2600 soldiers had been buried. Within a year, there were 5000. By 2014, there were 400,000. On June 19, 1865, Texas slaves were told of their Emancipation two years earlier. This was called **June Teenth.** Many were not told they were free. Given no help or care by their disgusted owners, they were simply released--knowing nothing and owning nothing. Those who remembered said they were ***"turned out like cattle."*** On December 18, the 13th amendment was passed, ending **slavery**. U.S.Treasurer **Francis Spinner** spoke about the war, which had cost 618,222 to 750,000 lives, guaranteed free labor, saved the nation-state, changed the practice of warfare, and made dissent suspicious. He said, **"*The thing to be feared now is that we will be running around the world with a chip on our shoulder. If we can avoid this, a glorious future is ours*."** (TN Eric Foner 10/10/2011 ). But Susan Rose, in 1973, copied these words, from *"The World's Wonders"* by **Robinson Jeffers**, into her notebook of commonplaces:

> ***". . . I have seen the U.S. grow up the strongest and wealthiest of all nations, and swim in the wind over bankruptcy.***
> ***I have seen Europe, for 25 hundred years the crown of the world, become its beggar and cripple.***
> ***I have seen my people, fooled by ambitious men and a froth of sentiment, waste themselves on three wars.***
> ***None was required, all futile, all grandly victorious. A fourth is forming.***
> ***I have seen the invention of human flight; a chief desire of man's dreaming heart for ten thousand years; and men have made it the chief means of massacre . . ."***

As Kurt Vonnegut said, ***"And so it goes."*** In 1965, **Cesar Chavez** organized the buyers' grape boycott. On February 21, **Malcolm X** was assassinated. More than 8 million people lived in **London**. In March, President **Johnson** tried to persuade **George Wallace** to call up the National Guard to protect Civil rights marchers in Alabama so that it couldn't be seen as the Federal government going against state's rights, thus hurting the civil rights movement. Wallace was not persuaded. On July 30, Johnson signed the **Medicare** Act. Then the American Medical Association opposed it and some hospitals

opposed racial integration. Johnson compromised with doctors but demanded compliance from the hospitals. **Albert Schweitzer** died on September 4, 1965. Dr. J.F. Montague, author of *The Why of Albert Schweitzer,* had visited with him shortly before his death. At the dock on the Ogowe below the Hôpital Schweitzer at Lambaréné is a lamp, he wrote, **"*which lights the way for patients arriving at the hospital dock. On its globe is inscribed the legend,* 'Here, at whatever hour you come, you will find light and help and human kindness."** Perhaps Schweitzer was recalling Bach's *Cantata No. 139,* about which he wrote in the second volume of his biography of *J.S.Bach: **"Misfortune overwhelms me on every side as with heavy bonds; but suddenly appears the helping hand, and the light of comfort shines on me from afar."*** In Kuwait, **Mohammed Khalid Sheik** was born, later the mastermind of 9/11/01 World Trade Center, Pentagon, and U.S.S. Cole bombings. **T.C. Williams High School** in Alexandria was integrated. At the Savannah River Plant, where **Tritium** was produced for Hydrogen bombs, the **neutrino** was first observed. **James Russell** invented the **Compact Disk**. In December, **Stephen Spender** gave the ΦBK lecture at the College of William and Mary. He compared the great causes of the 1930s with those of the 1960s, referring to Jimmy Porter's soliloquy in Osborne's *Look Back in Anger:* Jimmy **"*has a grudge against society because it does not produce an illusion to bring out the best in him*."** Spender continued, **"*What Jimmy seems to be asking for is a cause better than anything which he has to bring to it. A cause, as such, and apart from the people, does not have virtue. The virtue lies in the truth which people bring to it. In a sense, the cause, though outside them, is the qualities of the people who support it: their truth, their freedom, their sense of justice and so on. Ultimately, then, we are brought back to individuals. For it is they who make the cause what it is and it is they who are submitted to the test of having to continue their lives and practice their values after the cause has become past history."*** In the cause of civil rights, **John Lewis** and others were beaten in July by Alabama state troopers as they attempted to cross the **Pettus Bridge** on the march from **Selma to Montgomery.** On August 6th, eight days after **Bloody Sunday,** President Lyndon B. Johnson signed the **Voting Rights Act.**

**Who can want or need this tangle**
**of dates appointed and unappointed,**
**hours, strangers, family intrigues,**
**and dumb details giving no more**
**than a gray recital of break-**
**fasts eaten, arms and linen folded,**
**finished facts lying athwart**
**the unfinished path like ruins;**
**the deaths, burials, births, and marriages?**
**Is there a point to keep? So art,**

**also a matter of finality,**
**has been made to toe a certain line,**
**play the proud Parnassian tennis match,**
**or whine, conspire, just to exist, or insist**
**we divine its pointy truths, and scrum**
**to push its way between observing**
**and denying rules. Not so much**
**to untangle as to signify**
**by the heaped, quivering formicary**
**our resistance to definition,**
**we define ourselves by all we have left out.**

## Step 166

**Lula (Towles),** mother of Grady Towles, was born on September 15, 1866. On Jan 3, 1966, **Susan** Bruch wrote: **"*Dear Richard, Thank you for your letter. I was both surprised and glad to receive it. Often it is easier to exchange ideas and become acquainted through letters*."** **So it began**. Richard was working with children at **Dock Street** on the South side of Easton. Susie was tutoring second graders at Bruton Heights ES in Williamsburg. At William and Mary, she took "*The Bible as Literature*" from Dr. Holmes, who began on September 26 by telling how, when the *Revised Standard Version* was published in the 1950s, it was publicly burned by a Southern Baptist minister. The burner said that the *King James Version* was good enough for Paul and Peter and the other apostles and it was good enough for him! On January 27, the **Hogg** Hall chapel was used for the first time at Lafayette for inter-religious services. Also, construction began on the **Gourd** coffee house in the same building. It was modeled on the **Potter's** House at the Church of the Savior in D.C. On January 29, Susie took a **Civil Service** exam. When 13 ½" of snow fell in **Williamsburg,** Susie came home to Alexandria on the bus, which ran late due to back-ups. On January 30, **Susie** wrote, **"*I am thinking specifically of Viet Nam and of the President's decision to resume bombing. Should we as Christians oppose his action, or must we as Americans support him?*"** On February 5, **Richard** took the civil service exam at Lafayette. **Frank and Jo left First Christian** Church in opposition to Mr. Charles Bayer's antiwar sermons and **"*non-biblical theology.*"** The **Gustafsons** donated cash to the library of the First Christian Church in Alexandria in memory of Robin, their little girl. **Jo Rose** played bridge with Estelle Rallins, Ella Matthews, and Alice Jones—possibly at Ella's (Bldg. 200 Apt 706 River Towers) or Alice's (4758 Kenmore Ave. Apt. 302) in Alexandria. **Ginny Bruch** bought an encyclopedia set and other books for the church with the donation, and Susie helped her with cataloguing, shelving and posters. Richard took his family to the Church of the Savior, where **Gordon Cosby** spoke. In March, Richard submitted a paper on the

*Westminster Shorter Catechism* and recited the catechism to Rev. F.Peter **Sabey** for the Robinson Scholarship at Lafayette. On 2/14, signing herself *"**Blanchie, Otherwise Miss B,**"* **Blanche Johnson** sent thanks for Valentine's gifts. She expected a visit from the Alexandria relatives on the next week-end (2/19-20) and wrote about her pink lamps, foot stool, den, lamp stand, desk, the Sealy mattress she had for Irene and the ***"little tinkler*** (which) ***hangs between the dining and living room and everyone enjoys making it tinkle as they go by."*** The Sloans next door had spent some of the snowy days in Florida. If the visit is off, she planned to go to Richmond with Robert. He no longer has a problem with his tooth. **"*R.E. says tell you he <u>has</u> to go see Phil first ere coming up there but will as soon as can. He has been studying—tis now nine o'clock and he has closed the book . . .*"** On March 11,1966, the *Alexandria Gazette* reported that "***Susan Bruch, 15 W. Howell Ave. . .*(is on)** ***the Fall Semester Dean's List"*** at the College of William and Mary. In October, **Carolyn Rutter** was born to Delores (Schimpf) and Harry Rutter in Chicago. During break at the end of March, **Susie** enjoyed being home and getting lunch for her father as he recovered from hernia surgery. In April, **Jo Rose** returned to the church to give Bible bookmarks to her former Sunday School students for the Bibles they received upon baptism. **Ginny Bruch** was made acting Head of Cataloguing at the Army Library by Mr. Burnette. At the same time, she was offered a GS-11 at DASA.. To her mother, Susie wrote: "***Is Mr. Asero's offer a real one? Or just supposition? It kinda doesn't seem as if he could make an offer if he's going to a new job himself. But I don't know anything about it, of course. Where is DASA? Courage, Piglet! The 11 will come through.***" She meant that Ginny would get a GS-11 in the Army Library if she waited. Chiding herself for not taking **"*a few minutes to write just three lines,"*** **Blanche** wrote about her neighbor Eva Sloan coming to see her at the back door after hanging her clothes and then driving her to the shopping center. She visited Mrs. Lewis, who had **"*not very successful"*** cataract surgery. Robert was gone most of the time. He had a contest on in the company and said he could never get things out of the way. He was also taking a correspondence course. "***Tomorrow I have an ear appointment and have to wash the limousine and invite a lady guest to our house and go get her and take her home . . . She lives in Salem and I do not like her. She has never been to see us, etc. . . Jinny has been real sick with the flu and I've been busy trying to fix her or her family up so far as food is concerned. She . . .saw I had food when R.E. was gone, as do Margaret and Elva."*** She wrote about her new television cabinet and asked when Jo and Irene and Ginny Bruch's family would visit at Easter. Robert's company was buying other companies again. **Susie** got a ride back to college on Sunday (4/3) with **Joe Healey**, Nancy Abbate, and Oscar (Pat Cullen), whom they picked up at **Oscar**'s home in Fredericksburg near the Mary Washington campus. On Monday (4/4), Susie began hiding gifts around the Phi Mu house for her "little sister." She left clues to the gifts and to whom she was: **"*a lady in white not too long ago (at the pledge dance!), that I had brown eyes & dark hair, etc. Also I asked her to meet me for dinner in a restaurant***

***(Greek's) the next night. So last night (Thursday, 4/7 ), we met, she found out who I was & I treated her to dinner. I also gave her a little jewel box like my big sister gave me. The nicest part about it all is that I really like her a lot! Her name is Pat Verhine. She is a freshman, from Newport News. We came back to the room last night & talked & talked for about two hours*!" **Truman Bruch** wrote to Susie to get **"*all the education you can because you will need it.*"**(4/5) In the college band under Mr. Varner, **Susie** (4/8) enjoyed playing music from *Sound of Music*, *American in Paris*, and particularly, *Portrait of a trumpet*. Then on 4/18, the Band left for Lynchburg, Williamsburg (20-21), and New York (22). She had an exam on 4/18 and an oral French test on 4/21. On 4/8, **Richard** received a driver's license. Before meeting Susie, he had been content to walk or ride a bicycle. On 4/9, **Jo and Irene Sullivan** again visited **Blanche and Robert** Johnson in Roanoke. **Ginny and Truman** took Pancho to Jo's house and fed Jo's cat, "Mr. Whiskers." The band also played for **Parents' Day** on May 7. A letter from Dr. **Davis Paschall** on 2/10/66 stated that this was the first Parents' Day in the history of the College. The Bruches couldn't stay at **Mrs. Faison**'s this time, but she found them a room **"*for 3 at W.L. Keller, 309 Indian Spring Road*,"** Truman wrote. **Phi Mu** had a Sunday Coffee for parents. The Bruches met Mrs. Craimer, the housemother. On May 12, **Jo Sullivan** won five dollars at the **Kentucky Society** meeting at the Lawyers Building when her horse, **Kauai King**, won the Derby. She sent it to Susie and told her to **"*get a steak dinner*."** On 5/20 **Blanche** wrote thanks for the recent visit. She regretted having to do errands, attend meetings and church and garden club, and to see the doctor during the visit. She was preparing to pick up her **"*Salem friend*"** again. Robert had recently been getting home earlier and going for a mile walk after dinner. She made pads for bed patients at Roanoke's Home for the Aged and went with her friend, Margaret, to deliver them. She had been to the farmers' market and bought large country eggs for 55 cents. She was planning a trip to visit Esther. Robert's studies continued. **"*Just wish would run upon something else better than he now has but then he would still be having to learn no matter where he went for that is the kind of world we live in now—so much change going on.*"** Referring to the Army Library, she understood that Ginny also was having trouble getting her **"*just deserts*"** at work. Also in May, the house and land next to **Mount Vernon Elementary School** were cleared for the building of the **Duncan Library**. Later that month, from May 30 to June 3, 1966, Jo attended a Special Libraries Conference in **Minneapolis**. She wrote that she had walked a few blocks from the Leamington Hotel (the Leamington) to the Radisson, where it took an hour and a half to register for the conference even though *"**they had that done on computer cards*."** It was a sunny day, temperatures 52 and 70 degrees. Ginny and Truman took care of Rentie and Jo's "Mr. Whiskers." When Jo returned, they picked up Susie from William and Mary at the end of her junior year. During the summer, **Susie** worked at the National Archives. In June, Richard's college friend, **Bill Stanley** ("Spider"), was killed in his family's Saab near their home in **Revere,** PA. On 7/15, **Blanche** wrote that she enjoyed using cheap

writing paper. Robert had been further south for two days. Tomatoes and cucumbers were abundant. ***"I've been quite worried about R.E. I'm sure he wrote very little about himself. He has had quite a bout with bursitus, throat and teeth. He was quite disappointed in missing out on the schooling he was to get. Is taking a correspondence course now along with his work. Received his papers back from the course after being graded and sent to his head man in Richy*** (Richmond)***. They were marked 'Excellent Report.' You are just a number now in the Company and he was quite surprised. The Company is trying to merge with a larger company now and that is not good news. He and Frank, the man he is with out here, have now been given their separate territories . . . Frank swears he is not going to travel . . . R.E. Says they will just leave the whole territory out here to him. They are so scarce of men and seemingly do not care how nor what they do. Then they could transfer him or just anything. Frank will go this weekend to talk to the man about getting a place in his business, insurance . . ."*** She wrote about entertaining Billie & Berneice and going to the Springs. She wished Susie well on her new job. Before Margaret had a goiter operation, her cat ate a whole nest of mockingbird chicks and left the mess at Blanche's back door. Meanwhile, because of her bout with shingles, Blanche had done ***"a complete . . about face . . concerning my cooking habits. I'm sure you will be surprised."*** Robert was to accompany her to the Sunday School picnic, to which she was bringing salad and squash. Fall Clothes were out but she saw nothing pretty. The pretty Tulle Hat which Irene once wore was no longer in style. On 7/16 **Robert** wished Jo a wonderful trip to Minnesota, which he called ***"a reward for your intelligence, ability and integrity. Jo, I congratulate you."*** He complained of a hot, dry spell. He had traveled to Danville and then to southwest Virginia. ***"They are having storms on the latter area and have thus gotten relief from the water shortage. My job is most difficult now and I hopefully anticipate some changes soon which should make for improvement. My bursitis still lurks in my right shoulder, playing a game of hide and seek. I don't go to the doctor any more—just use common sense . . ."*** For his upcoming vacation he had planned to go to Nashville, Centerville and Huntsville, but the heat and bursitis made him change his mind. He invited visitors to Roanoke. **"*If you can't get Charlie to bring you, Mother and I will drive up for you. . . the neighbors . . .asked when you were coming . . . I killed a rattlesnake last week in the mountains around Grundy. My first encounter with one."*** *On* 7/18 **Robert** wrote that Blanche had shingles again. He was looking at the drawing room drapes appreciatively as he remembered how Irene had hemmed them. He had sent Esther a map to Roanoke and received a **"*peculiar reply."*** It was unclear whether she was coming. He also asked about John and Tilly's plans and made the following comment about **Charlie Speed**: **"*And Jo, I think we should smoke the peace pipe with Charlie. He sent Mother a nice birthday card. I just don't think he knows any better."*** He expressed the hope that Jo would make her trip to Florida. He had stored wood for the winter and set up a work bench and laundry table in the storage room, where he was

working on the **old clock** from Hickman, which he hoped to put in the living room ***"to fill up some of the empty space. The insurance business remains hectic and I see no let up . . ."*** On 7/25, **Robert** wrote that **Forrest and Maxine** called to say that they were going to visit from Alabama when they came to meet Jimmy when he comes to Virginia on his tour with a Canadian singing group touring the East Coast. Once he knew when they were coming, he would be able to schedule a visit to Alexandria. His partner was resigning on September 1, 1966 to go into another agency in Lynchburg, his home town. He wished Irene good results for her next doctor visit. Blanche added a postscript to thank the Alexandria relatives for inviting her to visit for three weeks. On 7/28, **Irene** wrote that ***"our endeavors, for age . . . and for annoyances of allergies, . . . heat, "*** and fatigue prevented her from answering many letters. ***"Indescribably hot. Josephine had to come down stairs . . . and sleep in den. Had to buy air conditioners for health's sake . . .*** **(and)** ***to tide over her spells. In fact, couldn't have kept on her jobs otherwise. Just last night closed Summer School . . . A rest is so much needed with all her jobs. . . But she has done a great work for Education of the public . ."*** She reported that on Saturday (7/23) **Truman** had lacerated his **left thumb** and other fingers when working on the lawn mower. ***"We had just come from a necessary trip to Alexandria leaving Truman at work at home. At 3:30 we returned all tired . . . Josephine had gone upstairs*** (and fallen asleep)***. Here came the Rescue Squad jangling their bells . . . She ran downstairs . . . It was stopping at the Bruches . . . I did not awake . . . all the dear neighbors rushed out to ask J. who and what? She got there as dear Truman was walking out, led by . . . Emergency team. . ."*** Virginia was not allowed in the room where he was taken in the hospital. She waited an hour and a half and was then told by the surgeon that it might not be necessary to amputate any fingers. Truman went home with hand heavily bandaged, had a tetanus shot, and came back a week later.

Both fingers recovered. Truman says it was so foolish. He deliberately put fingers in the motor when it was running and didn't know why he was careless. ***"Oh the blessings God does bestow upon His children. We never give sufficient thanks."*** On September 10, Susie wrote to Richard, "***The death of someone near to us recalls the briefness of life and directs us to our purpose. God fills and he empties. We can only accept this and make the most of each day and hour.***" The next week, Susie moved into the Phi Mu house, where she lived during senior year with her roommate, **Nancy Bagby**. They were proud of their interior decoration of the newly painted room. On October 4, **Susie** wrote **Rentie** (Irene) ***"I was so sorry to hear from Mommie that you had an over-hot bath, but hope you are all O.K. now. I went to a little shop here and bought a little bunch of those tiny artificial flowers like those I gave you. When I come home, I want to add these to your vase on the mantel. Then the ones you have now won't look so alone. Please give Mr. Whiskers a big kiss and hug for me. I hope he has been remembering his manners lately. I've been feeding a sweet little stray kitty who sometimes come around. She is a little tri-colored one and just precious—but, oh, so thin. Nancy and all***

***the the girls here think I'm rather crazy to care about her but I feel sorry for anything hungry and homeless. Rentie, it was so good of you and Rabbit to take Whiskers in. Nancy is sitting here typing and she sends you a big hello. She said today that she would like to come see you when we are home. I must go study. Lots of love and kisses, Susan."*** On the weekend of October 8-9, Richard attended the **Ecumenical Retreat** for the Lafayette College Church as Clerk of Session. On October 25, **Robert** reminded Jo to bring slides from her trip to San Diego when she came at Thanksgiving. He hoped that Irene would be well enough to come. In his job, he expected to remain short-handed and to work long hours until the first of the year. He had been at the Continental Insurance offices in Richmond. **"*Was in Richmond last week and enjoyed seeing all the old sights as well as the many changes. We are now in a new office on the 14th floor of one of the new buildings. Wish I could have had time to have driven up to Alexandria. This coming week my secretary will be out. Her husband is being sent by his company to Jamaica and she of course wanted to join him for the week. . . Extend a most cordial invitation to Charlie if this is your means of transportation. We will toast the dear fellow warmly for bringing us such delightful company."*** On 10/27, **Susie** wrote **"*Dearest Rentie, How sweet and thoughtful of you to send the five dollars in Rabbit's letter."*** (Jo was Rabbit; Ginny, Piglet; Truman, Christopher Robin and Susie, Pooh.) **"*I hate for you to take it from your account though. You should be using that money for something you really want, like a new hat! But you are just too sweet and dear. I was so glad to hear in Rabbit's letter that you are better. Also that Dr. Bateman is moving her office to Alexandria. That will be lots easier for you to get there now. I guess you still go every two weeks? Did you see the little pin that Greg* (her cousin, Greg Johnson) *sent me? I thought that was so sweet of him. I sure was surprised to hear that W.D."*** (W.D. Sullivan, her grandfather's nephew.) **"*had adopted a boy. Did you already know that? Oh, have you heard from Robert and Aunt Blanche? I wonder if they will come to Alexandria on Thanksgiving? Rentie, how are you and Mr. Whiskers getting along? I trust he has behaved himself as to the mantlepiece, your room, and your closet. I'm still hoping that some day (it will be true to say) that 'Rentie loves cats.'. . There are piles of leaves everywhere, and I still go out of my way to walk through them! They make such a delightful crunch, but, oh, shoes get dusty if you don't look out. I saw two big beautiful blue jays this morning on my way to my 8:00 English class. They were so pretty, but were fussing about something or other. . . I have all kinds of papers to do and reading assignments too. This Saturday I must take a 3-hour examination for graduate school. The University of North Carolina at Chapel Hill requires it, along with the other schools I will probably apply to—that is, the U. of Maryland, Drexel, and Rabbit's Peabody. . . The College football team is going (to Boston) to play a game, and so the band will go too! I'm really looking forward to it, but I hate to take the time; I've got so much studying to do . . ."*** On 10/25, Blanche wrote at 2:30 p.m. ***"The time is Art Linkletter's time. I often look at his program,***

***especially the children's part. Irene, I do hope you are up and about and are preparing to come see us this weekend or the next. . . Jo, your trip must have been wonderful. We were so proud of your being the one to go! It is quite an honor . . . R. E. expects to drive over to Lynchburg to meet with some Supervisor Board at 7:30 which means he will leave office soon to come out here and have dinner plus another clean shirt to meet them in. Ha! I've just washed 8 this morning . . . Jo, how long can you stay? We do so want Irene to stay over if you can come back for her . . .”*** On 11/19, Blanche and Robert wrote about their coming visit to Alexandria. *“**I am bringing a cooked country ham (half) and apples. We are on our way to the market now and will pick up what we can find. The place is ablaze with flowers. Hope you** (i.e. Jo) **do not have to teach Monday nite. Mrs. Fansler, the divorcée across the street from us is driving up with us. Ha!”*** Robert added, ***“It will be nice to be together again and perhaps we can relax from our rather hectic mode of existence for a few days. I just know my job will have to get better. We integrate with Boston on Jan. 1. They will move in December and as near as I can determine, another man is being sent from Richmond around the first of the year. I just live from pay-day to pay-day lately and work nights and weekends. Tell Truman my antique still enjoys good health and I am hoping its health remains good .”*** On *November* 22, 1966 the **Sacrificial Meal** for UN Food was held at **Marquis** Hall, Lafayette—bowls of rice all around. On November 30 at 7:30 p.m. **Blanche** thanked Jo for the box lunch. ***“We ate that . . . in the car at a Richmond filling station. The cranberry bread was better than ever and (tell) Catherine (Ginny and Jo's coworker at the Army Library) that it was just about as good as anything could be . . . my eyes were paining me so I stretched out in the Pullman and was promptly lulled to sleep. I awoke to the steady downpour of rain which we had with us all the way home . . .”*** Her neighbor in Roanoke, Ginny, also visited in Northern Virginia for the holiday. In Arlington, they had a flat tire and lost a hubcap in the rain. They still had time to *“**enter Randy in the Swim Place, had lunch with (Ginny's) brother in Bethesda . . . and got in a few minutes ere we did. Ginny was sick all day (the next day) . . .”*** Robert was back to studying for his job. Blanche was sorry she missed Ginny but knew that the Bruches were taking Susie back to the College. ***“Must get to bed. These lines on this paper help my poor old hands and eyes out quite a bit—and you all too. Ha! Nite Nite, Love, Blanchie.”*** On 12/11, **Robert** wrote about the raking, trimming, and other chores he hadn't done. ***“There just isn't time to do all these things. I do have the storm windows—six of them . . . I have now mastered the art and they are no trouble at all. You all were so nice helping us get settled in the new house. Aunt Irene, the dining room drapes still look wonderful thanks to your midnight help in getting them up and adjusted to the proper length. Ginny I think so often about your promotion which you deserve so much. Sure hope it comes through soon. My job is most discouraging. The young man being trained to relieve me of some of my responsibilities resigned last week to take a job for $2000 per year more. . . I was to have driven to Bristol today and work back***

***Monday, Tues. & Wed. Was going on down to Maryville to spend Sun. night with Gertrude and family., Mother was going with me. However, yesterday morning I had an accident and fairly well demolished the company car which leaves me with no car and a court appearance for Monday. Fortunately there was no Bodily Injury, only property damage. A colored gentleman pulled out of a parking lot in front of me and I unavoidably hit him."*** He looked forward to Christmas and New Year's but could not yet make plans, but promised to bring a ham. "***My Christmas list, Jo, is as follows: shaving lotion (not sandalwood or Old Spice), or shaving cream (any kind), or toothpaste (any kind)—I did need a pocket comb, but Aunt Irene gave me a nice one Thanksgiving—or stainless stell Gillette razor blades. These are useful things and would make me a joyous Christmas present. I really think these kinds of gifts will make us appreciate and enjoy Christmas more."*** On December 21, **Aunt Mattie B.** wrote to Jo and family from Bowling Green, KY: **"*I have just gotten able to hold a pen in my right hand. I'm still unable to walk but hope to be out of my wheel chair in a walker soon. After another X-ray. We plan to get on home on Friday after Christmas. Betty"*** (Betty Johnson) **"*will not have anyone with her this trip. Royall and Fran brought us up here. I sort of dread the trip without a strong man to get me in and out of the house. Greg"*** (Greg Johnson was on leave from the service.) "***was here to help when we arrived in Bowling Green. Bless Him. We miss him so. It was wonderful I could be with him here. He was here 25 days. Of course it hurts not to have him for Christmas, but we cannot complain as long as he can stay in this country. Josephine, we were so happy you could have that nice little visit with him in California. Your letter was so sweet and encouraging to me while I was in hospital. Was there almost three months. I have a good lady who stays here with me while Betty is in school. Josephine, your words of hope for World Peace helped me so much while I was so sick in the hospital. May we keep praying. Irene, you have no idea how much I think about you. I was so sorry to know you had been ill. Take good care of yourself. . ."*** **Louis and Mary Helen Aquila** were turned away from the restaurant where they usually ate because of a kitchen fire. They went into a hamburger joint with a pool hall in back. As they were eating, Louis asked whether anyone was playing pool. The owner told him that there was one man playing alone. Louis went into the back, introduced himself, and played a game. The two men hit it off and were friends for forty years. The other man was **Bob Molyneaux,** a mechanical engineer 13 years older than Louis, a formula-one car driver, and survivor of 9 landings and 3 airborne drops in World War II as well as secret duties behind the lines in China and Korea for which his DOD records were expunged, he said, leaving him without military benefits. **CE Dates:** The Battle of Hastings and a visit by Halley's comet occurred in 1066. William the Conqueror defeated Harrald and his weary army, just returned from victorious battles in the north. The event was commemorated in the Bayeux tapestry. In 1266, **Salisbury Cathedral** was completed during the reign of **Henry III,** who also oversaw the rebuilding of Westminster and other structures. During

his reign, the Norman style gave way to English Gothic and Franciscans and Dominicans came to Britain. **James I** (of England) was born in 1566 in Edinburgh (Js VI of Scotland). The **Great Fire** of London, described by Sam Pepys, and the death of **Shah Jahan**, the Indian ruler who designed the **Taj Mahal** both as a memorial to his wife and as an earthly facsimile of the throne of God, occurred in 1666. In 1866, Prussia defeated Austria and expelled it from the **German Confederation**. **Mary Baker Eddy** discovered the idea of Metaphysical Healing, which she called **Christian Science. Mahpiya Luta** (Red Cloud) led an army of 3000 warriors from different tribes to oppose the U.S. Army, led by W.T. Sherman, to take the sacred land, the **Paha sapa** or "**the heart of everything that is,"** which lies south of the Yellowstone River, east of the Bighorns, north of the Platte, and west of the Black Hills. In December, about 75 soldiers led by **Fetterman** followed a warrior on a limping horse. The decoy was the warrior **Crazy Horse** and he led them into an ambush where all were massacred—their eyes and arms removed so that they would neither see nor be able to move in the Next Hunting Ground after death. Sherman had ordered the deaths of warriors over 12 years of age and the seizure of the sacred lands for development and gold mining, but the victory of Red Cloud led to the **Treaty of Ft. Laramie** in 1868, finding that lands had been illegally taken from the Oglala Lakotas and other tribes, and the establishing **Great Sioux Reservation**, where Red Cloud lived thereafter and died at Pine Ridge (<*The Heart of All That Is* by Bob Drury and Tom Clavin, 2013). **Karakozof** failed in his attempt to assassinate **Alexander II.** The novel *Crime and Punishment* was published by **Dostoevsky.** The year 1866 was also marked by the death of **Thomas Campbell,** founder of the Campbellites, later called the **Disciples of Christ.** In 1966, Charles **Whitman** shot and killed 16 people on the **University of Texas** campus, firing safely from a tower. John Berryman later combined stories about Charles Whitman, Walt Whitman and Berryman's father, John Smith, in his work, *The Dream Songs.* The National Time Act established **Daylight Savings Time**. On September 20,1966, **Senator Sam Irvin** presented the historical legal basis for the separation of **church and state**, based upon R. Freeman Butts' ***The American Tradition in Religion and Education***, noting that **"*by the time the first amendment was written, the original States . . . disestablished religion , and did so under constitutions and laws which forbade the establishment of any religion and the levying of taxation for the support of any religion. So, Mr. President, at the time when the first amendment was drafted, the only States in which any establishment of religion was still in existence were (MA, NH, MD, SC) . . .but in those five States there was no single established church at that time. . ."*** He went on to describe the great debate in Virginia's legislature in 1776, during which James Madison ***"was able to persuade the legislature to provide that no dissenters should be compelled to pay any taxes to the established church of Virginia—the Church of England, which had been established there in 1629."*** In 1779, another debate over this in Virginia's legislature led Madison to introduce Jefferson's **bill for religious freedom** in Virginia. (Cong. Record, Senate Sept. 20, 1966, pp.22190-22191). **Frank**

**Rose** took an interest in this debate, copying and highlighting the text. The first plastic **artificial heart** was used in surgery.

**Is there a point to this piffle? Just this—a habit of attention, nourished seventy years. A being always subsiding and reviving, I am many, not one—many systems of relationships, changing and interacting. Not a city, not a tree, biome, or unit, this being has no sufficient analogue. Illusions are my shaping-tools and fictions my most trustworthy facts. What was gathered in this ring of rosies? The disease of life? A crown of thorns? Beloved delusions? Spiraling curricula? The sweet, simple dance of discovery? Yes, all these—and the other sacred circle dances of clouds into sea, floes into flows, cultures sinking into language. Work it out. Every morning ignorance is born anew and understanding seeps into the rising shadowy water-table of the unconscious. Attend and regret, but *walk the path*.**

## Step 167

**John Ewell Hobson** was born in 1867. On January 15, 1967, **Robert Johnson** wrote to the family in Alexandria, ***"Little Brother "***(the dog Poncho) ***"and Mr. Whiskers, I am still enjoying what you all did for me over the holidays. I am trying to remember exactly what my little nephew did—he did allow me to spoil him—and Mr. Whiskers—well, I really don't consider him a relation—just a character who is interesting to know. As for the rest of you, I can think of so many nice things you did and I appreciate them every one. Mother is enjoying her new clothes. Went to church this morning in the red suit, is going calling this afternoon and to church tonight. She went with me to Lynchburg yesterday. Thanks to you for helping her get them. Aunt Irene, I am so glad we got to take the trip to Maryland together. I thought we had a real nice time and Esther seemed to enjoy it. . . . Virginia, I am enclosing to you and Jo my letter from our little family on Bernard Ave. I am sure they owe much more to you than they do to me. I think Faye writes a good hand. May 1967 bring to each of us those good things of life which we strive for. My love to each of you . . ."*** The African-American family on Bernard Ave. was known to the Helms when they lived in Hickman. After moving East, they continued to send them money, especially on holidays. Faye was one of the children. On 2/16, **Blanche** wrote: ***"still in Roanoke, butting around, half seeing and half hearing. . . dressed up in my cranberry suit ready to take the 15 to 12:00 bus to town where I meet Margaret W. & have lunch with her, shop for some little things, and then go to the Good-Will monthly meeting which I am a member of. I always think of C. Mary and what she received from them . . .I wrote Tilly and thanked her for the bread which I did not let her know I forgot to bring home with me. Just hope you all have not given that fact away . . .We still get six ears of corn down on the country market for twenty five cents. The corn pudding recipe is the bery best one I've***

*ever had."* On 2/21 she continued the letter. ***"R.E. Had been over to Richmond for two days to a meeting with officials and he was tired. George, the new man, is in process of getting a new company car, so the driving all fell to R.E. As was also the case since then, when he drove to Greenville, Tenn. To another meeting, where he had to absorb quite a lot of stuff from the Big Wiggs. So all in all, getting R. Erle <u>in</u> and <u>out</u>! . . . Josephine, you are doing just too, too much and it does worry us. But who isn't. Three jobs and here R. Erle wishes he had one that he knew something about! He is learning under this man, tho. What is new to him, R.E. Explains (he is very discouraged) and likewise he enlightens R.E. Whereas Frank pushed him aside so to speak. He was lazy. R.E. Lost time with Frank. This man, George, is threatening to stop. . . there was no fire, radiators as cold as could be. If I hadn't sat still writing this letter I wouldn't have found it out as soon as I did . . . water was not circulating. . . The Troutners are coming as soon as snow time leaves us. Her stepfather died just before Xmas. Mimmie will be 98 years old in April. Her adopted daughter's husband died about a year ago and she is staying with Mimmie. They say she is about as independent as ever not to have very little, if any, eyesight . . ."*** On *3/12,* **Robert** wrote, ***"I do hope this finds you all feeling well and enjoying the good things of life. I have been most busy today attempting to catch up on my office work to the point where I can get out next week. It was certainly nice to talk with you over the phone last time. Do you think you can come down . . . before Easter and I will drive you back . . . I have recently had a letter from Miss Mary. She wants to come to Virginia this summer. I want to go, see Mimmie one week of my vacation. She is 98 and says she thinks she will make it to 100. I think of Susan these days. I know she must be working hard for her approaching finals and graduation . . .Ginny, congratulations on your promotion. I am proud to be kin to you and Jo."*** *Blanche wrote on 3/19:* ***" I brought in (the letter from Irene) but on second thot I went and put it back for I knew R.E. would get a thrill, too . . .everyone has an uncontrollable desire to open the mail box . . . Of course we sat down and read it and were so disappointed (you can't come) . . . It's more pleasure to houseclean or tidy the house up for some wanted guests, is it not? Jo, you are doing too much moonlighting. You just can't work . . day and night! . . . Mr. Wickham, Eva's white help came ere lunch to plant a rose bush and mulch the shrubs . . .We did it together. . . Friday I went to Martinsville for the day with R.E. I went thru Woolworths and two other large stores. R.E. Was going to be late so we ate a leisurely dinner at an old home hotel where two ladies, an 82-year old mother and her daughter, run an excellent place. It is where R.E. Stays—has known them for as long as he has been out here . . . I went to see 'Dr. Schivago.' It was awful in parts. Jo, I sure wish you were around. I've not tried every place here yet to get a Spring coat but no size as yet. They are all Minnies and so high in price . . ."*** On 3/28, Blanche wrote, ***"We had lots of traffic (coming back from Alexandria) but the four lanes took care of us real good, made such good time we got to Lynchburg around seven and went by to see Frank and Garland for more than an***

***hour and arrived home by 9:15. R.E. Had a good bath. We both slept well. . . Margaret W. had to (be given) such strong medicine. Elizabeth and her husband had also been sick. They live with Margaret . . . Ginny and George (her neighbors) had thought they would be with her mother if their lawyer did not call them to Washington. So I know they are not over there . . . Have not heard from Margaret and Victor & Foo yet. She is not much in the mornings. Elva works and I'll see her later too. She always insists upon taking in our mail . . . Irene, I hope you've used your legs. I have really used mine this morning . . . do keep pushing as best you can so you can come see us."*** On the Sunday after Pentecost (May 21) at the Lafayette College Church in Colton Chapel, Rev. F. Peter **Sabey** preached on "*Where will the church be*?" Richard read the opening sentences as outgoing Clerk of Session. **Harry Wagner** was elected next Clerk. Richard chaired the committee on April 6, 1967 for the College Church's ***Gourd Fest,*** a competition in folk song, poetry, drama, art, and short stories taking place at the campus coffee house, modeled on the one at the Church of the Savior. Judges included **Professors Watt, Lusardi, Bradford and Vitelli**. A Thanksgiving service was held at Lafayette for Dr. **James Dyson**, who had studied Arctic ice (memorialized in the poem "**Anomalies**" in the second volume of ***Frameshifts***). Graduation of **Susan Bruch** from the College of **William and Mary** and of **Richard Rose** from Lafayette: The June 2nd Commencement at **Lafayette** was its 132nd and Baccalaureate was at Colton Chapel on June 1, 1967 at 8 p.m. Susie went to live at 1419A Windsor Court, Williamsburg, VA with fellow teacher **Mary Ellen**. On June 3, thinking about the recent death of his friend, the runner, **William Stanley**, Richard began to write a prose-poem composition using multiple perspectives, and portraying both interdependence and intercession. After some elaborations, he finished it in 2011. That evening, Richard and Susie went on the **Lanthorne tour** in Williamsburg. On June 4 they attended the Williamsburg Baptist Church, and then walked around town, occasionally noticing the dark spots of grass where artifacts might be hidden. On June 8, before leaving, he wrote her a poem, *"**We wander, bordering a bypass**."* On June 14 **Frank, Jo and Susan** moved from Alexandria, VA to Hawaii, spending the first night on the road in the Warrenton Motor Lodge. Richard accompanied them. In June they visited in McMinnville, seeing **Bob Grizzell**, Aunt Monte, Aunt Franke Grizzell and her mother, **Mary Reynolds Hobson**, who continued making quilts even as a nonagenarian. See one of her quilts in the ***Afterword***. This visit was described in a poem. On June 20 Richard was sent a letter informing him of being placed on the reserve list for Hahneman Medical School. On June 25 Richard attended Riverside Christian Church with his grandmother **Edna McFarland Rose** in Fort Worth. **Ginny**, Jo and Susie drove their old Ford to the library school at Chapel Hill so that Susie could interview and possibly apply. **Jo,** who was teaching a night class in Children's Literature, wanted Susie to take a library degree and set up the interview with a colleague at the university. On the way back, the car broke down. As Ginny and the mechanic looked up at the car on the lift, Ginny asked what the problem

was. The mechanic answered, "***You need a new car.***" Susie returned on the first of July for a last summer of work on the Jefferson letters at National Archives. Her supervisor was Dr. **Oliver W. Holmes III,** who offered to write her a recommendation for a graduate program in history. On the ninth of July, Richard attended Oakhurst Presbyterian Church in Ft. Worth at Springdale and Bonnie Brae The message was: ***"God's people are sojourners."*** On July 11 Susie taught primary children at church during Christian Family Week. On July 13, 1967, Richard lost his job at **Kirby Vacuum** in Ft. Worth. During the time for testimonies after a sales rally in which everyone sang **"*There is power, power, wonder-working power in the Kirby Vacuum cleaner*,"** the sales staff were asked, in turn, **"*Will <u>you</u> win the Golden Cougar?*"** After abundant affirmations all around, Richard was asked. He answered, **"*Maybe.*"** After the meeting, the sales manager took him aside. Sales required belief in the unbelievable. One wants to be needed for meaningful work, work that demands sustained attention and creative engagement--devotion, even. One seeks to do memorable work that blesses others. One usually wants too much. On July 18 Richard wrote "***The environment remembers for us.*"** The thought was later developed in the prose poem, "Avery Crawley," in *Frameshifts,* second volume. On July 19, Pastor F. **Peter Sabey** told Richard that Prof. **Arthur Montgomery** had offered to help Richard with Medical School costs. On July 19, Dr. Carl Fischer of **Hahnemann**, acknowledged Richard's request to drop him from the reserve list. July 20. Richard decided to enlist for 3 years in order to serve as a medic rather than wait to be drafted. While staying in the **Jackson Hotel in Dallas** awaiting army processing, Richard wrote **"*As I may die soon, I would like to finish (this work)*."** On July 23 he attended his last service at **Riverside Christian** (at 1000 Bonnie Brae) before going into the service. At the induction center, Richard became RA 15808585 as his father had once become 14803A. On October 6 he completed Basic Training at **Ft. Polk,** Louisiana, not far from his grandparents' first home in Alexandria. At **Fort Sam Houston** in October 19, he began a short and unsuccessful training program to learn to drive deuce-and-a-half trucks and ambulances . It ended when, after a brief classroom orientation, he was told to drive in a convoy. He returned greatly relieved, since he had never even driven stick shift before, and guided the truck into the motor pool sign. Afterwards, he was sent back to medic training. On November 28, Richard received orders to leave Ft. Sam Houston and report to **Fort Leonard Wood** Army Hospital in Missouri. **Frank** and family moved into 202 B 2nd St. **Hickam** Field in Hawaii. **Beth Kramer** was born on December 19, 1967**. MYA Dates:** The **Cenozoic Era, Tertiary Period, and Paleocene Epoch** began about 67mya. **CE Dates:** In August of 678 CE a **comet with a long tail** appeared, according to the **Venerable Bede,** during the eighth year of **Egfrid's** reign**.** Egfrid was one of the Northumbrian kings of Deira. **CE Dates:** 1867 Ĕ**mile Zola** published *Thérèse Raquin.* In Chesterfield County, Virginia, the **Clover Hill Colliery exploded** and collapsed. In 1967, on January 27, 1967, **Grissom, White and Chafee** died in a fire on **Apollo I** on the launch pad. In May, the first **heart bypass**

was performed by Rene Favaloro at Cleveland Clinic and later, on May 29, Gamel **Abdel Nasser** Hussein resigned after the defeat of Egypt in the **Six Day War**, but was reinstated and proceeded to appoint himself Prime Minister and to launch reforms . On February 25, the electronic vacuum tube's inventor, Dr. **Lee de Forest**, said, **"*Man will never reach the moon) regardless of all future advances.*"** On October 3, **Woody Guthrie** died of Huntington's disease at the Creedmore State Hospital, Queens, New York. **Thornton Wilder,** whose ***Bridge of San Luis Rey*** and sparsely-set plays ***Our Town*** and ***Skin of Our Teeth*** suspend human existence in an anthropological frame of reference, published ***The Eighth Day*****.** In this book, on December of 1899, two years after Wilder's birthday, the character Dr. Gillies makes a speech about the new century, claiming that the eighth day of creation is the opening of the creative human mind. "***Henceforth, the whole mass will emerge from the cave-dwelling condition where most men cower still—terrified of encroachment, hugging their possessions, in bondage to fears of the Thunder God, fears of the vengeful dead, fears of the untamable beast in themselves. . . Mind and Spirit will be the next climate of the human. The race is undergoing its education. What is education, Roger? What is education, George? It is the bridge man crosses from the self-enclosed, self-favoring life into a consciousness of the entire community of mankind.***" The doctor, of course, knew the people he addressed, the miners and merchants perched on the glacial moraines southwest of Chicago, just as he knew that the outlook for the twentieth century was not so good: "***Coaltown was no worse and no better than any other town. Any community is a portion of the vast body of the human race. You may cut into Breckenridge, Lansing, or the Emperor of China; you will find the same viscera. Like the devil in the old story, you may lift the roofs of Coaltown or Vladivostok; you will hear the same phrases. His midnight reading of the great historians confirmed his sense that Coaltown is everywhere—though even the greatest historians fall victim to the distortion induced by elapsed time; they elevate and abase at will. There are no Golden Ages and no Dark Ages. There is the oceanlike monotony of the generations of men under the alternations of fair and foul weather***." Wilder, as the narrator, wrote: "***This is a history. But there is only one history. It began with the creation of man and will come to an end when the last human consciousness is extinguished. All other beginnings and endings are arbitrary conventions—makeshifts parading as self-sufficient entireties, diffusing petty comfort or petty despair . . . It is only in appearance that time is a river. It is rather a vast landscape and it is the eye of the beholder that moves.***"

Also in this year, both the **Carol Burnett** and **Smothers Brothers** television programs began. They were favorites of Susie's .The US and USSR were drawn into conflict over Gulf of **Aqaba**. **Arab-Israeli War.** The **Glomar Challenger** began to drill sea beds. Over the next 15 years, the ship collected 20,000 cores. The cores were each approximately 2000 feet in length, extending down from the ocean floor, and probing time to 200 mya. Stanley **Milgram** claimed that each person on Earth is linked to every

other by a chain of six or fewer acquaintances, particularly the ***"long distance"*** acquaintances that one might have on other continents ( in the book *Six Degrees*), thus launching greater interest in network theory. On October 27, according to **Norman Mailer,** he made a public appearance as part of the **March on the Pentagon** event in the Ambassador Hotel in Washington, D.C. This became the basis of his **"*history as a novel*"** in which he starred and entitled *The Armies of the Night.* On November 9, the unmanned **Apollo IV** mission went to the moon. **London Bridge** was sold by the Common Council to Robert P. McCulloch for $2.46 million for disassembly and rebuilding in Lake Havasu City, Arizona. **Richter** completed 48 years of ablative research to demonstrate that a patch of neurons behind the eyes routes information about light to the pineal gland, which regulates the production of **melatonin**. This affects the **circadian rhythms** which regulate the timing of alertness, digestion, bowel movements, kidney function, body temperature, tolerances for pain, medicines, and alcohol, reaction times, intensity of dreams, muscular strength, coordination, and release of hormones, such as those controlling sleep and body metabolism and weight. It was called ***Richter's Patch,*** or the **supra-chiasmatic nucleus**. A tornado struck **Oak Lawn,** a suburb of southwest Chicago, killed 33 people, injured 500, and did $50 million in damage.

## Walk the Path

**"What I present to the reader comes from my experience and from what I have invented, but it has all been filtered by literature. That is what matters—the filter."**

—Javier Marias (in an interview mentioned in TLS)

### Step 168

**Susie** wrote to Rentie and Rabbit on 1/12/1968, thanking them for *"**the pretty underwear, cologne, the little tin box and of course, Rentie, the ten dollars . . . I bought a colonial floral print, framed, for my apt. next year—wherever it may be! . . . The little Christmas angel candle holders have gone into my 'hope chest' (now a dresser drawer!), also for my apt. next Christmas. . . . How's the Army Library, Rabbit? And the plutocrat, the*** (Grade) ***12, Chief of Reference!! That's so grand! I surely enjoyed my visit and lunch with you and Piglet. When are you coming to visit me, Rabbit? Please, you must do it before I leave here (if I leave here). . . Rentie, I had hoped to go out more with you in Gretchen, my car, during Christmas. Still, we went on at least one trip. Hope you'll want to go again when I come home. . . I still like to think of Christmas dinner—as all of Jo's dinners—and so does Quiciwin. . .*** Mary Ellen's gray Persian cat which became Susie's when Mary Ellen joined her husband in Egypt and Ginny's in 1969 when Susie and her new husband went to Germany. *Tell Cathleen hello for me."* Cathleen or Kathleen was Rentie's care-giver. She lived with Jo and Rentie at 4

W. Howell but owned a farm in Tennessee and saved enough money to retire on when Irene passed away. On 2/15, **Nancy Bagby Abbate** wrote, ***"Dear Renty and Rabbit, I hope you won't mind my use of your 'family' names but I've heard the Bruches speak of Renty and Rabbit so much that Sullivan sounds foreign! I wish you knew how delighted Marshall and I are with the lovely silver bowl you gave us. It's such an appropriate remembrance of my 'second family' and we appreciate your good wishes. Many, many thanks. I'll be looking forward to seeing both of you again before too long. Such sweet people are too good to forget! . . ."*** From Roanoke, Irene (Rentie) wrote to the Bruches, **"*Sure miss your sweet voices in the midst of our grand visiting here with our loved ones . . . Blanchie will return with us . . . And sweetie Susan, I believe I am correct of your saying your dear school began Tuesday. I just know you are the most wonderful, smart (teacher) . . . Love you more than you can ever guess. You are all everything to me . . . Josephine is taking the bus now . . . Will be seeing you I trust Sunday. Do not know the time. . . Sunday we'll be leaving."*** Jo added**,** **"*We'll be home Sunday. Hope we can leave by at least 12:30 and arrive home by 5:30."*** On April 19 First **Sgt. Ralph White** told Richard and the other lab trainees that the new officer (Maj. Dilavou) was a "hard nose." **Edwards** asked who was supposed to be in charge in the lab at Ft. Leonard Wood. The unspoken answer was that **Dilavou** turned out to be a reclusive student of fungi and no one was really in charge of the lab. Its day and night-time operations were much different. For example, a civilian employee on the graveyard shift made cocktails of Hawaiian punch and absolute alcohol from the histology department. Of course, Ralph White thought he was in charge. And he showed Richard what he knew about cytology by training him to read Pap smears for cancer. ***"It pays well on the outside,"*** he said. On April 20 Richard sent Susie a recording of a hornpipe song, the last music he played on the accordion before it was broken when Aunt Monte shipped it to Germany. He visited **Rolla** and St. Louis, saw *Man of La Mancha*, *The Graduate*, and went to Forest Park and Gaslight Square. **Susie** wrote in her notebook, **"*The importance of little things. Know the big things but forget not the little. A day is made of little things."*** Later, this quotation went onto her mirror at Rock Springs and at 4 West Howell, along with another, by Ardis Whitmore: "***Il faut cultiver le petit bônheur."*** In Kaiserslautern on September 27, 1968, Richard wrote, "***Sgt. Hoelke had seven of us bring the autoclave downstairs and load it on the three-quarter. It wouldn't fit standing because of the roof so it was laid over onto the tire well with the guages forced against the railing on the sides. I processed in and then met him at the warehouse next door to finance, where the truck was parked by one of the yellow loading docks. We threw back the canvas. A Warrant Officer and an E-7 came out of the warehouse and gazed at the autoclave. 'I've never seen anything so --' the Warrant Officer said. The E-7 asked Hoelke, 'Did you ever think of contact dust?' Hoelke answered that Major Green of CMS and a colonel who was a surgeon told him to do it. 'When a bird colonel tells me to do something, I do it. This is the largest vehicle we have.' The E-7 said, 'An***

***expensive piece of equipment to be carried this way--Who did you say told you? You should have called us first. The Warrant Officer went in to call the colonel. Sgt. Hoelke was uneasy."*** On the next day, he wrote,***"Came up to 913th from the library and heard the angry moaning of a man trying to indicate he was being mistreated. I couldn't understand the words. A crowd of cooks in whites, others in uniform, were helping him into an ambulance. Coming closer, I saw three or four men trying to hold another man down. Couldn't see him. A red VW scattered the crowd. After it drove by, I saw two men on the ground, one in whites. The driver got out of the VW. Another man with a gray-fringed western sweater came up from the building. I kept walking. A woman looked up. The door to the 913th Medical Detachment was open. Burkhead came out. 'Is he drunk?' I asked. He nodded. 'First time I've had to use a strait jacket.' From the window on the steps in the stairwell, I could see the strait jacket. He had been strapped on the bed in the ambulance. The jacket held his chest and shoulders. You couldn't see his head for elbows. He moaned again and I noticed his brown belly. Another Black man, a Spec 4, watched as Henry stepped out of the ambulance and closed the doors."*** Richard noticed the yellow-fringed leaves of the buckeye tree across the street, the puddle of green in them disappearing into the petioles. On November 2, in the Ballroom of the Washington Hotel, Susie attended the **Children's Book Luncheon** to hear Lavinia Russ, author of *Over the hills and far away* and an editor of *Publisher's Weekly.* She spoke about not taking yourself too seriously and how to present books as fun. During that summer, Susie took *Library Materials for Children*, Course 742, at Catholic University under Sister Marie Pius (Donnelly) at Shahan Hall #306. She jotted down the words to *L'amour est bleu* in her library science notebook. In early December, Richard wrote, ***"all these plans of mine--these construction programs. I want to construct habits, you know. . . If an attitude of love can be made concrete, 'made flesh,' it will be worth more . . . but how to build it ?--By performing."*** **CE Dates:** The Dutch, under Prince **William of Orange**, revolted in 1568 against Spanish Rule. Wilhelm **Roentgen** in 1868 earned a degree in Mechanical Engineering in Zurich. In the following year, based only upon independent research, he earned a Ph.D. in physics. **Frank Calvert,** an English archeologist living in the Dardanelles met **Heinrich Schliemann,** a wealthy archeology dilettante who was determined to find Troy and after finding it in several places was currently sure that it was in Pinarbasi. Calvert, who had published several papers on his excavations, explained that **Hisarlik** was the most likely site. Schliemann spent a fortune to do a sloppy excavation of Hisarlik, destroying other remains to unearth Trojan relics such as **Priam's Trove** of golden objects, which he took back to Germany. The trove disappeared after the Second World War but reappeared in the basement of the Pushkin Museum in the USSR. Schliemann took all credit for the discovery and dismissed any reference to Calvert which failed to add to the story of his own exploits. Biographies of Schliemann during the Nazi era promoted his Aryan heroism. Subsequent analysis of his papers and over 80,000 letters revealed a different story. (See: Susan H. Allen 1999

*Finding the Walls of Troy*). **Dostoevsky** published *The Idiot.* On April 3, 1968, a bright apparition of the **Virgin** was seen by a Muslim mechanic over the Zeitoun Coptic church. Over the next three years it was seen by many people, including President Nasser, and photographed. April 6 President **Lyndon Johnson** decided to finish his seven remaining months of presidency without campaigning for another term. He halted bombing in Vietnam north of 20°11" and called for peace talks. Following the liberalization of speech and other rights during the "Prague Spring" under the leadership of **Dubček,** the USSR military arrived in Czechoslovakia to crush the reform. Loyalty oaths, demotions, prison terms, corruption and a necessary duplicity followed for the next 20 years. On May 16 a **tornado** passed through **Jonesboro**, Arkansas. Gov. Winthrop Rockefeller sought federal troops to discourage looting. **"*I was sitting in the living room. Jimmy was on the floor and Danny in a chair. Then the roof . . . then the house was gone. It was gone . .*"** Tornadoes affected 11 states; killed 70. **Martin Luther King was murdered** by James Earl Ray at the age of 39 **in Memphis** on April 4. He was staying at the Lorraine Motel with Bill Kyles and Jesse Jackson. On June 5, **Robert Kennedy** was assassinated. On September 9, **Arthur Ashe,** a 25 year-old African American from Richmond who had scarcely been able to play tennis on the courts of the country club where his father had been a grounds manager, was the first winner of the Open Men's Single Tournament in New York, but as an amateur, he could not collect the $14,000 prize. In November, Richard **Nixon** received 309 electoral votes to Hubert **Humphrey**'s ~190, but Nixon's popular vote was 43.4%, Humphrey 43.1%, **Wallace** 13%. Wallace, like Ross Perot in a later election, had stolen votes from the party candidates. On November 9, St Louis had an **Earthquake**. In **Paris,** students rioted. One Lafayette student came back from France **minus an eye**. The **Beatles** (minus Ringo) stayed at the Maharishi's ashram on the Ganges. When they returned, they produced the *White Album.* Also in this year, the 200 lb. **Murchison meteorite** was discovered in Australia, after having landed on Earth possibly 3.5 billion years earlier. On Christmas eve, Apollo astronaut **William Anders** took the photo of **Earthrise** over the moon. This widely published photograph put the Earth and its thin atmospheric skin into a new frame of reference for many of Earth's peoples. It was a moment to slip out of human scale and glance at ourselves in a new perspective. What would happen if Earth's inhabitants lived for awhile within such a frame of reference? We were all soon distracted by news and commercial advertisements, but Richard later imagined such a message arriving to a few people in Northern Virginia through what he called ***"viral telemetry"*** from all the other creatures on Earth--creatures who, without understanding it, embody their places in nature. He called this change of perspective *Frameshifts.* Like D'Arcy Thompson, Haldane, Pilbeam & Gould, and others, **Went** called attention (in American Sci., 1968) to the problems of **size-scaling**, noting that viscosity, size of neurons, and inability to hear very low tones affect the lives of **ants** in such a way that would make it impossible for them to pursue a "human-like" way of life. That is, ants and humans have physiologically

different frames of reference. But **E.O. Wilson** later gave ants their props by writing an ant novel.

## Step 169

On February 1, 1969, **Mary Reynolds Hobson** died, the day before the birthday of her daughter, Franke. Alan Koonce and **Shirley Rose Sparks** married in Ft. Worth. Her mother was Mrs. Harold Sparks, or "Kap." After a refresher course at the **Hickam** AFB Chapel in Hawaii on February 10, 1969, **Jo Rose** taught Vacation Bible School. **Richard Rose and Susan Bruch** were married in the Wren Chapel on Sunday, **June 22, 1969 at 2:00, followed by a reception at 2:30 at the Cascades**. It was a "special destination" wedding before the phrase became common 35 years later. A year later on this date, the Roses were in Aachen, Germany (Aix-La-Chapelle). And 45 years later, on Sunday, June 22, 2014 at 2:00, Richard was leading the second meditation in the *Healing Breaths* series at the Church of the Holy Comforter in Richmond. The meditation was on **transience.** He presented selections from his work: some of the sestina series based on Bryant's poem, the Opponent monologue from *Frameshifts* (about Alzhemer's), a short selection from *The Fisher of the James,* and the parable songs, *The Sower, The Blind Beggar, Strike the Rock,* and *Windows* (written for Susie). This was six years after Susie's death.) On Saturday, August 23, 1969, in Kaiserslautern, Susie wrote, ***"While Dick was at work this morning I washed my hair and wrote letters. Read and embroidered a gold toss pillowslip after lunch. Dick worked on Wolfram."*** *Wolfram* was an earlier version of *The Giants of Einhorn* and "Wolfram" was changed to "Thorstein." She continued, ***"Went to pot luck casserole dinner at the Chapel. Talked with Soila, who is leaving for college tomorrow. Rutgers. Her first year. Before dinner, read in the chapel while Dick worked with the piano. Hot chocolate with marshmallows before bed! Rentie's 84th birthday today. Sunday, August 24: Our talk was in rhymed stories on the way to the Chapel. My second time singing in the Choir--a lively group . . . Later to the snack bar news stand for a paper and home for lunch. More work on Wolfram, hooking the rug, and finished Thomas Hardy's*** *Under the Greenwood Tree*--***a happy romance and outcome for a change! Our discussion on child discipline. Monday, August 25: Dick left at 6:00 today to be ready for an Alert. Went to Vogelweh for groceries and had lunch there ob Dick working. Made my first pie, a cherry one, this afternoon. 'Emma'*** (the stove) ***behaved well. Also made a beef noodle casserole and orange jello with fruit and marshmallows. We went to a movie,*** *The Heart is a Lonely Hunter* ***with Alan Arkin starring. Very sad but quite well done. Our heat is on! We needed it! Weather is quite cool; some people are wearing wool. Dick has his heavy coat out and I'm using my pink raincoat with the lining in . . . Tuesday, August 26: Went to the German farmers' market this morning for the first time. Fascinating people and sights. Held twice a week . . . in the parking lot in front of Wertheim Department Store. Much cleaning and***

***washing up with trucks afterwards. Gaily colored umbrellas set up over the stands. Farmers come from all around in trucks, VW station wagons, etc. to load and unload their produce. Hearty, sturdy men and women. All kinds of good vegetables and luscious fruits. Bought some grapes, peaches, and 5 kilos of potatoes. Took our green basket . . . Home for lunch with Dick . . . Dick is giving a piano lesson tonight. I'm going to do some drawing, reading and sewing. A cold rainy night outside. Our apartment is warm and cozy."*** In Monterey, California, **Jerry and Kathleen Warner** lived near the Presidio, where he was stationed at the language school. At the same time, her sister, **Audrey** Johnson, was there with husband John, a Naval officer. Kathleen had been Matron of Honor for Audrey's wedding. Audrey's children were Kiri and Viki. Charles Hook married Viki. They had three girls, Megan (1997), Madeline (2000), and Meredith (2002). The Hooks lived in Spotslvania Co. VA, St. Louis MO, and Silver Spring, MD and later separated. **CE Dates:** On May 8, 1669, Charles II gave supporters the **Northern Neck Proprietary of Virginia,** a grant of five million acres between the Potomac and Rappahannock rivers from their headwaters to the Bay. In 1869, **Mendeleyev** constructed the **periodic table** in his *Principles of Chemistry*, but the discovery of the octet rule actually had been made earlier by another scientist named Newman. On September 24, 1869, Wall Street financiers tried to **buy up gold** and thereby created a run on banks and crash. The **Suez** Canal was completed. The **Wren Building** was rededicated after the second fire. Attorney **Patrick Henry Aylett** spoke at the ceremony. **Tolstoi** published *War and Peace.* **Apollo X** was launched in 1969**,** using Saturn V. It set down in the Sea of Tranquility on the Moon. Moon mission was July 16-24 and included **Neal Armstrong, Mike Collins and Buzz Aldrin.** All transmissions were tracked independently by the 250' Joddrell Bank radio-telescope in Great Britain. There was less tranquility on Earth. Hurricane **Camille** struck the Gulf coast. M. **Gaddafi** led a bloodless coup to overthrow the monarch of **Libya.** On February 8, 1969, a **Meteorite** struck the state of Chihuahua in Mexico. Its Uranium/Lead ratio indicated an age of 4.67 BY. **Carolyn Kreiter** began teaching at West Springfield HS after graduation from Mary Washington College. The **microprocessor** was invented and followed closely in the 1970's by the first personal computer. **Richard Nixon,** making a parallel with JFK's speech about bearing ***"any burden,"*** said ***"America cannot and will not conceive all the plans, design all the programs, execute all the decisions and undertake all the defense of the free world. We will help where it makes a real difference and is considered in our interest."*** Maximalist presidents who took the US to war overextended the budget on military expenditures. Nixon was trying to avoid this. Other problems he didn't avoid.

## Step 170

**Mary Reynolds**, Jo Nell Hobson's mother, was born on May 18, 1870. In 1970, **Richard Rose** was discharged from the U.S.Army. **Velvet,** the red Persian and the longest-living and favorite of all Susie's cats, which she bought from ChaMar cattery in Md, was born on September 27, 1970. **Crinkle,** the gray male, was about the same age. **Frank Rose** became commandant, AFROTC Detachment 675, at the University of Oklahoma in Norman, OK, instead of at Kent State, where he was originally assigned until the change he requested was granted. This was before the shooting at Kent State. On April 9, 1970, the **Roses** heard birds singing at twilight, making Susie think of ***Maya the Bee***, a story read to her in 4th grade by **Mrs. Dull**. On December 6, 1970, Richard corresponded with Dr. W. **Edward Brown** about his poetry. Brown mentioned that he should also contact another Lafayette graduate, **Jay Parini**. The contact occurred about 35 years later. Richard's great-aunt**, Monte Towles,** clipped a story from the newspaper about a high school freshman in Smithville at Dekalb County High School named **Sarah Cripps**, who was competing in the Tennessee 4-H Horse Show in Shelbyville, ***"where she will compete in two classes, western pleasure and showmanship. According to the University of Tennessee agricultural extension service officials, Sarah is the first blind 4-Her to participate in the event. All of her competitors will be sighted, but their natural advantage is not as great as one would think. Just ask the 4-Hers she beat at the district 4-H horse show."*** Sarah was born with no eyes and a cleft palate. Fourteen operations over 15 years were done on her face. She was at the top of her high school class and intended to go to law school. On August 12, Jo Sullivan wrote to the Bruches who were traveling in England with the Roses. ***"I slept late after arising at 5 as usual with Poncho this a.m. Have been up to 15 W. Howell to take him and to take care of Quick, who is fine. Poncho is more contented at his house. Here, he is rather nervous and jumpy and his little ole ears always straight up . . .Quick and Bee Clarke are very friendly in window communications many times a day. He even calls her if he sees her in the yard. She just adores his paying her attention . . . I brush him every day. I learned the hard way when he has had too much. . . All's quiet at work. Several times yesterday everyone was in the section except Christine."*** Christine Pogue, an artist and librarian, was also the wife of Forrest Pogue, the Sullivan sisters' history teacher at Murray State and biographer of George Marshall. ***"Mary Schafer went to Dr. Lukowsky last Friday. She still coughs. He immediately took a picture of her lungs which showed chronic bronchitis with smoke-filled portion up to ¾. He cut her down to 4 cigarettes a day. She is having withdrawal symptoms . . . No one can stand to talk with her except Lola. Louis says if she begins to orientate the new girl (the one you interviewed, you know) who is coming Monday, he is going to tell her what <u>her</u> position is and what <u>his</u> is, as section chief. He has had too much of her. She is still with him and moved his***

***furniture and files around while he was on leave. He is furious. She is trying to get Mary B. to apply for the JAG library job upstairs, a GS 11, but Mary B said, no thank you, she would wait for a GS 11 in the Army Library, much to Mary's fury. Oh, she is something. Jane tells me she asked John for an office on the 'A' ring like mine! We think we are going to have language Lab abolished and move our ___ in there. Well, Monday, I got 3 letters and one card from you. The last letter I opened, you said in it you had received my first letter. So glad. That took 6 days to get there. Sunday the 9th August I mailed at Alexandria downtown post office a second letter to you, addressed to Windemere. My first one was the one you received at Parkway Hotel, London. This is my third and last one. I am mailing this to the Parkway Hotel, Inverness Terrace, London W2 "*** The letter arrived after the Bruches had left. It was returned to sender. ***"on Wednesday, August 12, hoping it will be there the 19th when you arrive on your way back. I'll be very glad to see you all. I am so delighted you went to Europe. You will cherish every precious sight and experience as I do even now, 16 years later. Ginny I felt tremendously moved, inspired and awed when I visited Keats Grove. I had the urge to express exactly what you, bless you, have the talent for doing. Your 'Keats Grove' moved me to tears. I read it to Kathleen and Mother and told Tom and Bee Clarke about your capturing the experience and locking it forever for yourself and others in beautiful word-pictures. Bee was so impressed that yesterday she got out her Shelley favorite, 'Ode to the West Wind.' . . . Perhaps you should travel more and more and devote all your energies to writing. You certainly have potential. I really have to close and get to work at the Pentagon. Love to each! Jo/Rabbit"*** About Kathleen, her mother's caregiver, Ginny wrote a ballad. Kathleen told many stories about her life in Tennessee, where she still owned a farm. Perhaps this was based on one of them or about herself:

**If I had know then what I know now**
**I never would have let them go,**
**The little brown dog and the tall slim man,**
**I never would have let them go.**

**For never in this world did I see them again,**
**The little brown dog and the tall slim man.**
**She shot them that night by the side of the road,**
**The little brown dog and the tall slim man.**

**Oh, why did she do this wicked, cruel thing?**
**Why did she break my heart?**
**She had a mean streak I do suppose,**
**She wanted us two to part.**

**I will see you tonight, he said to me,**
**Me and my little brown dog.**
**I waved my hand. He blew me a kiss,**
**As they walked into the fog . . .**

**MYA Dates:** In the late **Cretaceous** about 70mya, the **Atlantic Plain or coastal plain province** developed by deposition into a marine environment, later uplifted and then tilted seaward. It was therefore predominantly sedimentary, part of it forming the broad, submerged Atlantic Continental Shelf. Coastal plain deposits overlapped the older, distorted Paleozoic and Precambrian rocks to the north and west. **The mouse family line** separated from the ape family line. **KYA Dates** 700kya **Stone tools** were made along the SE coast of ancient **England**, the oldest known site in Europe (SN 169:29) 70 World-wide **droughts** reduced the early human population to possibly as few as 2000. **CE Dates Thomas à Becket** was murdered at **Canterbury** Cathedral on December 29, 1170. His murderers believed that they were doing the will of **Henry II,** who had come to disagree with his friend about church practices as allowing the ***"neck verse,"*** giving sanctuary to outlaws, and controlling nominations of clerks. (Allowing a neck verse was the practice of certifying a person as a collared clerk provided he could read a verse of Latin.) Murdering Becket made him a martyr. The French in 1470, working with **Warwick**, deposed **Edward IV** and restored **Henry VI**. Edward returned from Burgundy the following year. Warwick was killed at Barnet, Henry's son, Prince Edward was killed by Richard, Duke of Gloucester, and Edward IV was restored to the Crown and then invaded France. Richard later had Edward's sons killed and seized the throne as Richard III. 1770 December 16, 1770 was the birthdate of **Ludwig Van Beethoven** at Bonn-am-Rheine. Replacement of the wooden structure of the **Capitol** dome with cast-iron was completed in 1870. The population of **Chicago** was 300,000. Beginning of the **Franco-Prussian War.** The **Kent State** Shooting was in 1970. The USA **invaded Cambodia**. The first x-ray explorer satellite was the **Uhuru,** named by Richard Jakony. It found x-rays from a **pulsar**, as predicted by Hewish and Bell, indicating that a collapsing star, dense in neutrons, would create a **black hole** that would be an x-ray source. **Patrick Welsh** began teaching English at T.C. Williams H.S., Alexandria, VA. **Solzhenitsyn** wrote, ***"There are no INTERNAL AFFAIRS left on our crowded Earth."*** In December, **Mujibur Rahman**'s **Awami** League in Dhaka, Pakistan won in populous, Bengali-speaking East Pakistan and was ready to gain parliamentary majority to make East Pakistan more autonomous in trade, currency and militia. The military regime of General **Agha Yahya Kahn** in Karachi took action in concert with **Zulfikar Ali Bhutto**'s **Pakistan People's Party** against the Bengalis. There followed a mass strike by Bengalis in Dhaka, which was crushed in **Operation Searchlight.** By December of the following year, hundreds of thousands were dead, the Awamis jailed, and 10,000,000 Bengali refugees arrived in India.

## Step 171

**Eva Brauneis** was born on March 4, 1871 in Seligenstadt, Germany. In 1971, before the birth of her son, Paul, **Kathleen Schimpf Warner** worked for the Gillette Company in Wholesale Customer Service, dealing with hair-care products like *Dippity-*

*doo.* Jerry Warner wanted an acre outside of town. She said yes, dear and he designed the house that was built—a modern house at the end of a cul-de-sac. On March 2, 1971, **Paul Christopher Warner** was born. On April 11, Pastor Chris **Hobgood** preached on "*Tomorrow is Now.*" For Easter at First Christian Church in Alexandria, flowers were given by Mr. **Lescaleet** in memory of Gertrude and by Mrs. Ardelle Elliott in memory of her mother, Gladys Spinks. On July 23, 1971, **Frank Rose** completed the Academic Instructor Course at Maxwell AFB in Alabama in preparation for assuming command of the Air Force ROTC program at the University of Oklahoma. In September, Richard regularly took a bus from Kent Towers to **George Washington University**. Sometimes, if it was late, he would take ABW Bus 14 to Arlandria, where Susie picked him up in front of People's Drug Store. By early August, the Roses noticed that the corn planted in a pot on their balcony had tasseled. They were also keeping a turtle in a tank on the balcony out of the cats' reach. On August 3, 1971, Richard wrote, *"**the moon is like an organ in a loose pink sack.**"* Apartments reminded him of grasshopper heads. Some of these thoughts reappeared in *"The Place in Town,"* a ballad in *Frameshifts.* The Roses discovered a piece of moldy birthday cake in the refrigerator as they watched a pregnant woman and her husband cross the parking lot below. Richard continued to work for American Medical Labs. The odor of serum stayed on his clothes. Susie noticed it. He lamented his introversion, his low threshold for stress, and tried to keep a daily office, which he called "*Presence and Simplicity.*" He often played from the *Well Tempered Clavier* , trying to separate the voices. On 8/8 they watched *The Anderson Tapes,* starring Sean Connery. The following night they visited **Nancy and Marshall Abbate.** The Roses later talked about the visit, agreeing that what children are taught to expect from their family they will come to expect from the world. Writing in the mornings before school and work, Richard on 8/16 continued his "***studies for the single voice***," looking at the poetry of Hart Crane, who said that *"**poetry is self discipline for the purpose of formal integration . . .**"* He cleaned the balcony and went on to do a few hundred more heterophils at AML. Later, he re-read Pascal—***"le distrait et l'ennui."*** He wrote afterward, *"**The soul dies in the body but something remains.***" As they played *Clue*, Richard noticed his difficulty in attending to more than two variables, calling to mind Bruner's ***"conservative strategist."*** Rethinking Hopkins, Richard wrote on 8/26 that **"*language should be for exchange, not 'inscapes'. In Dante, the soul passes through hell to naturalness and simplicity."*** He continued, ***"I will not join this human race, This hue and cry, this hunt and chase."*** And made a note on his need to reflect, study and learn. Richard read on 8/21 that the **Puri** tribe has only one word for yesterday, today and tomorrow. From Thoreau, he copied this comment: *"**I confess that, practically speaking, when I have learned a man's real disposition, I have no hopes of changing it for the better or worse in this state of existence.**"* He read Steinbeck's *The Turtle,* about seed dispersal. Continuing to read *Walden* and Bullough on 8/22-24, he wrote, *"**One is always traveling"*** and ***"any dramatic work is about choice and morality."*** He continued to

recite these mantras, although he didn't know they were mantras: ***"The holy exists,"*** *and* ***"You are my rest . . ."*****.** On 8/25, he asked, ***"What is the purpose of distraction? Delaying choice. At any moment I am all that I am. The whole is expressed in any moment. The part is the way the whole is known."*** Working at Revlon's American Medical Labs in Parkington, he continued to think about how to teach without sacrificing meditation. He was also reading Stanislavski's ***An Actor Prepares.*** *Wasn't teaching a performing art? (*8/27) He was preoccupied with how to balance teaching with other things he wanted to do. He read in developmental and social psychology such as Kenniston. On September 1, 1971, he interviewed for a position at **Hayfield High** School (at 7630 Telegraph Rd. in Fairfax.) The Roses had lunch at Shirlington's Hot Shoppe on 9/5. *"**The salad tastes like it has sand in it."*** On 9/17 he sketched lectures on like and unlike things and the making of concepts, based on Bruner's ideas in ***A Study of Thinking*** and on Piaget's research. *October:* Oct 6 Correspondence continued with **Dr. Edward Brown** in October (10/6) about the initial poems in ***The Profit of Doom,*** at that time entitled *Layerings*. In late September or early October a reply came to one of the applications sent out to local school districts—from a western county named **Fauquier**. The **Roses** went to the Fauquier School Board Offices in the old Warren Green Hotel building in Warrenton, where they met Assistant Superintendent **William Snyder**, a trim and cordial gentleman whom Susie liked immediately. He had come to Warrenton during World War II as a code-breaker in a Signal Corps team which also included high school German teacher, Dr. Paul Young. Snyder showed interest both in Susie's pregnancy and in the fact that she was a teacher. He drove them to Fauquier High School and introduced them to **John Broughton**, the science department chair. Mr. **Diercks** had resigned. His wife, Lucy, was still teaching science at the high school. An elderly retired principal, Mr. **Elson**, was the long-term substitute. Mr. Diercks' classes comprised remedial to advanced levels. After a brief discussion, John **Broughton** asked Mr. **Snyder,** "***Is it necessary to do any more? Can we simply hire him?***" And so it was all settled in the science office in a matter of minutes. Richard was to begin as soon as possible and the school system would waive the courses in student teaching and U.S. History that he hadn't yet taken at GWU. He commenced in Fauquier Schools in October and soon learned how the behavior of Mr. Diercks' students might have led to his nervous breakdown, but the paycheck was welcome. Susie received her last paycheck from ACPS in August. Richard had planned to take another semester at GWU and continue working at the **American Medical Laboratories** in Parkington This lab, owned by Revlon Corp., was located in the lower parking level of the building that is now Ballston Mall. But he was happy to give notice. Susie was also pleased, glad to leave the smell of blood that came back on his clothes when he returned late at night and crawled into bed next to her. She loved the beauty of the Fauquier countryside and the cordiality of the people they met. For the first month, Richard commuted to Fauquier from Alexandria in a used Ford Custom with a slant-six, bought from a Mr. Littel in Maryland. **Truman** drove them to

Littel's house and also checked out the car. Richard hunted for a place to live in Fauquier. The mother of one of his students, **Bobby Clark**, was the manager of apartments for Mr. George **Elmore**. Richard learned that Elmore wanted to rent a garage apartment over his home. The birth of **William Lyons Rose** in Alexandria, VA was on November 22, 1971 in Alexandria Hospital at 2:29 p.m. (He weighed 8 lbs. 2.5 ounces.) Even though the Roses had prepared and rehearsed for the short trip to Alexandria Hospital, when they actually got into the car, it wouldn't start. Richard was glad that they had two cars—the Ford Custom and Susie's Falcon, which she called "*Gretchen*." They moved to the **Elmores** off Route 605 (Dumfries Road, so named when Dumfries was a Scottish shipping port for tobacco from the rich estates of northern Virginia and the Northern Neck. As Quantico River subsided due to agricultural run-off, it became to o shallow for ships. By 1800 the warehouses and town were vacant. The main road used by the Roses for 25 years was Rt. 605, a segment of Dumfries Rd.) in the Kettle Run District of Fauquier County, a few miles west of Warrenton on Route 29. At First Christian Church in Alexandria, on 11/28, the first Sunday in Advent, Mr. Gallamore and the choir sang *Comfort Ye My People, Every Valley Shall be Exalted,* and *And the Glory of the Lord* with Mrs. Vanture on the organ. Mr. Vanture led the Offertory prayer, and the "*Word from a modern prophet*" was a reading from Eliot's *The Wasteland*. According to the minister, the readings from Isaiah and Eliot *"**speak to the emptiness of Judah, and we hear him in music and spoken word. Man, apart from God, is empty. He runs, he hides, he seeks his own answers, but the only conclusion that can be drawn is that man, alone, is empty, and only God can fill the emptiness. It is our emptiness and God's promise that we celebrate today.**"*The rose on the chancel represented "***William Lyons Rose, born Monday to Susan and Dick Rose.*****"** The construction began on **The Washington House** on Fillmore Avenue in Alexandria. In December, former First Christian Church member, **Doris Skelton,** wrote to the Ginny Bruch (The Skeletons now lived at 91 North Hancock in Waltham, MA). Her son Ben was a freshman at Alderson-Broaddus College in West Virginia. On their way to the college, they visited Doris's former college roommate in Bethlehem. Sons Rusty, Peter, and John were high school athletes. Doris had two piano pupils, drove for the Red Cross, managed the audiovisual room at church, and attended the Women's Wayfarers Circle. Skel continued to work for the Maguire Architectural firm in the Boston office on Route 128, Waltham, about seven miles from their home. "***Highway work has been in the doldrums this past year what with Uncle Sam trying to decide how much to cater to the ecologists."*** The Skeltons vacationed for a week on the Maine coast at Acadia National Park and a week in the White Mountains. "***You are so thoughtful to keep us in touch with church friends down there. Poor Flo Solomon. She does seem to have had more than her share of sorrows to bear."*** Randy, her husband, had some problems, but Doris was probably referring to the death of grand-daughter Gail Solomon in a traffic accident on the Washington Beltway. Richard's comment was **"*the Beltway's wasting Washington."*** The Skeltons planned to

visit his sister for Christmas and then to her sister's *"**weather permitting—a stock New England phrase at this time of year. . . Life does go on. I felt rather put out when Peter greeted me 'Hi, half of an antique.' on my last birthday. 'Half a century' isn't much better. I do wish we could get down or you could get up. We thought of Truman as we saw signs pointing to Nazareth . . .**"* Nine year-old **Patrick Rutter** walked into Lincoln Park near his home. All the trees were filled with **Monarch butterflies. CE Dates:** In 1671, Virginia Governor **William Berkeley,** considering the common education offered in New England, wrote the English Commissioners: ***"I thank God there are no free schools nor printing; and I hope we shall not have, for learning hath brought disobedience and heresy and sects into the world and printing hath divulged them, and libels against the best government. God keep us from both!"*** 1771 The **Warrenton Presbyterian Church** was founded in 1771. A great **diamond field** was discovered in South Africa in 1871. The new **German Confederation** was established, with Austria still excluded. Resentment toward German government and minorities grew because Austrian exclusion meant that Czechs or Jews born in the German Confederation could claim German citizenship while ethnically German Austrians could not. **James C. Maxwell** published his *Theory of Heat.* Based on his observations of rainstorms following battles during the Civil War, a scientist named Powers wrote ***Warfare and the Weather,*** which recommended artillery fire to make rain. The population of **Chicago** was 334,000. On October 8, 1871, during a drought, a fire in the **O'Leary** barn on 558 De Koven St., now the Chicago Fire Academy, set ablaze the wooden structures around it, but not the O'Leary house. The fire burned for 2 days, destroying 17,000 mostly wooden buildings, killing 250, making 100,000 homeless, costing $200 million, and turning 4 square miles to rubble. (This and other information about Chicago comes mainly from Irving Cutler, 1967.) People escaped over the Lake Street Bridge and through river tunnels. In its district, only the **Old Water Tower** was left after the Chicago Fire. In the building boom that followed, the city code specified only stone and brick structures for downtown. May 3, 1971 was the first NPR broadcast of ***All Things Considered*.** Its first big story was the anti-Vietnam War March on Washington. Funeral of **Khrushchev** at Novodyevichy Cemetery, in Moscow. Dr.**Graham Smith** was selected to be pastor of Fairlington Presbyterian Church. **Maharishi Mahesh** founded his Transcendental Meditation University in Iowa. **Stearns Limestone Quarry** at 28th and 800 W. Halstead in Chicago began to be filled with incinerator waste. Dr. **Hawa Abdi** opened her obstetrics clinic in her family home near **Mogadishu** to meet the needs of poor women. (nw 8/15/2011). **Patrick Welsh,** teacher at T.C. Williams H.S., encountered educational reform first-hand when the city of Alexandria combined three high schools under one roof, achieving integration of black and white students and avoiding controversy about busing. This followed James Conant's guidelines for the **comprehensive high school**, an idea which, Paul Goodman noted in *Growing Up Absurd,* was focused on educating scientists and leaders rather than on public education for a democracy. Although there

were fewer racial tensions than depicted in the film *Remember the Titans* (2000), Welsh noted that school reorganization did not address the socioeconomic factors which led to an achievement gap between the children of poverty and affluence. The **Mary Rose** wreck was discovered by divers off the southern coast of England. In December, after backing guerrilla warfare by the Bengali rebels, the **Mukti Bahini**, the premier of India, **Indira Gandhi**, with little support from any other nation, sent troops into battle with Pakistan. After a feint to lure out the Pakistanis, the Indians quickly defeated them at the **Battle of Boyra**, had a peace negotiation on December 3, 1971 at Dhaka Airport, and established **Bangladesh** as an independent homeland state for the Bengalis. Millions of refugees left India for their new homeland. Nixon and Kissinger in private conversations compared Gandhi's action to Hitler entering the Rhineland. They feared that Bangladesh would become a center of Eastern Asian Socialism. Instead, it became another struggling, desperately poor developing country which, in the next century India fenced off, fearing a mass exodus as the sea waters rose due to global warming. **Archer Blood,** US Consul to Dhaka, protested the administration's support of General Yahya. Kissinger then ended his diplomatic career. He had no more to protest. Meanwhile, Nixon boasted that he had "***dropped stilettos all over Gandhi***" on her visit to Washington, as Thomas Meaney reported in *The Nation* (*TN 12/09/2013)*, writing about the humanitarian versus the realist views of intervention in other countries' affairs.

## Step 172

On June 14, 1972, **Ginny and Truman Bruch** helped the Roses to buy the property at #314 Rock Springs Road in Warrenton by making the down payment. The Roses began mortgage payments. Dr. Robertson founded **Washington House** on Fillmore Ave. in Alexandria, after serving as the first administrator of the Hermitage, a nursing home across the street. He had previously also founded a church. After his death, his wife resided at the Washington House as the property changed hands at least four times. On July 22, 1972, Dr. Robertson opened the Washington House for business as an old folks home. Later, it was called a senior residence and various other euphemisms over the 33 years before Susie, Ginny, and Richard went there to die. On June 24, 1972, waiting in the car with Billy as Susie shopped for groceries, Richard observed the three African-American children in the next car. The youngest had a facial burn scar which left a white, pitted, hairless stripe across his crown. The indifferent man in the front seat had long sideburns cut to make arrow-heads at his cheekbones. Richard thought about Utanapishtim, Gilgamesh, and his unfinished, ever-expanding ***"flood poem"*** and how Locke described time as a ***"perpetual perishing."*** To meet his impatience with the project, Richard told himself, ***"I will not be disappointed at the slow pace so long as I am living in the work."*** By this he meant for the work to take its time growing out of his life. As Hart Crane said, he told himself, poetry was ***"self discipline for the purpose of a***

***formal integration of experience."*** Two days later, after listing 65 people whom he wanted somehow to include in the ***"flood poem,"*** he wrote, ***"the detail must not overburden the form."*** Maritain said that the poetic self transcends the ego as one gains a sense of people's ***"interiority"*** and a sense of time. Later, Richard bought paint at Sherwin-Williams, hired Conway Clatterbuck to move the piano and china cabinet, and packed boxes at school and with Susie at home to prepare for the move from the Elmore garage-apartment to the house in Rock Springs on July 7, 1972. During this time, he worked daily at school from 8:00 to 5:30, then went to the hospital lab for a few hours to cross-match blood from the Red Cross, then back home for dinner. He was often re-called to Fauquier Hospital early in the morning to draw blood, do EKGs, urinalysis, glucose test, cross-matches and other tests. He also taught piano and accordion lessons to Ruby Conners' children, Gwendolyn, Cynthia, and Hansford. On September 22, from their back window at Rock Springs, the Roses saw a **Ladder-backed woodpecker;** on September 26, a **White-Breasted Nuthatch;** on October 6 a **Red Breasted Nuthatch;** on October 19, a **Slate-colored Junco** and a **Cardinal,** or Redbird, and on November 5, a **Tufted titmouse**. **KYA Dates:** It's believed that **Human clothing** likely appeared slightly before 72 kya. The evidence comes from the appearance of a type of **louse** dependent upon clothing/skins for transmission. (Stoneking, nw) The head louse family line diverged from the body louse at this time, based upon the known rate of accumulations of mutation; so clothing probably appeared somewhat earlier in order to provide selective pressure for the new adaptation. **CE Dates:** In 1572 **Tycho Brahe** observed a supernova. And in 1872 **George Smith**, an amateur archeologist, working on stone tablets at the British Museum, translated passages of the ***Gilgamesh*** epic. The tablets came from the library of Ashurbanipal in Assyria. So we humans began to learn about one of the earliest divine walks, the feast of pride, the devastation of holy forests, the power of comradeship, and the wisdom of grief. **Susan B. Anthony** voted in a presidential election, after which she was convicted of the crime and fined $100, which she vowed never to pay because it was an ***"unjust punishment."*** The **University of Strassbourg**, in German control after the German victory in the Franco-Prussian war, was a more attractive research institution to physicist **Kundt** and his protégé **Roentgen** than the University of Wurzburg, which had denied Roentgen a low-level teaching position (*Privat-docent)* because he lacked a *Matura*. In McMinnville, TN, Clay Faulkner built the Mountain City Woolen Mills, manufacturer of jeans, overalls and other textiles, on Charles Creek. He advertised his **gorilla pants** nationally, built a church and school. **Ralph Hodgson** was born. He later wrote this Blakean poem, saved by Ginny Bruch: '"**Twould ring the bells of Heaven/ The wildest peal for years, /If Parson lost his senses And people came to theirs, /And he and they together/ Knelt down with angry prayers / For tamed and shabby tigers, And dancing dogs and bears,/ And wretched, blind pit ponies, / and little hunted hares**." The **Watergate** break-in was in June of 1972. Nixon paid a surprise visit to Communist China. On August 16, a Spear

fisherman, Stefano Mariotioni, found 2 bronze Greek statues made according to the enlivening guidelines of **Polyclitus**. They were under 30 feet of water off Aggragenta, Sicily and are called the **Riace bronzes**. Autoworkers in **Lordstown** Ohio staged a wildcat strike. An accident released 132 million gallons of impounded mine slurry from a dam into **Buffalo Creek.** On 12/6/1972 **Harry S. Truman** died. **Sepkoski** compiled the first data base in paleontology correlated with the geological time scale.

## Step 173

In 1873, **Robert Helm married Josephine Janes**. Their children were Will, Nelle, Rob, Jesse, Virginia, and Blanche. On July 1, 1973, **Frank Rose** retired from the U.S. Air Force. **"*For Pay Purposes*,"** his military service was July 5, 1947 to June 30, 1973. Also in July, the Roses (Richard's family) visited **Robert and Blanche** Johnson in their Richmond home (4612 Grove Ave. 23221). In August, **Blanche** wrote to Jo about her concern that Robert was overworked, short-handed, and having difficulties with one of his co-workers in Richmond. ***"Clara had an offer for another job. Her husband, in poor health, put his foot down and said, 'you are not to work overtime any more without overtime pay.' So they want R.E. To join her in getting off at leaving time. Just leave the work—which is risky for R.E. Although he said he told her he would do so. But they have not done so yet. Now is the time to do so because the help they had has left. They have worked every Sat. and Sun. straight thru and can't catch up at that. 'Could it be a trap to get rid of R.E.?' That could be what they want to do. Clara would get his place. She is dissatisfied and has an an assistant*** (though) ***her work is not as much as Robert Erle's. She has great sway with Henry. Both are ardent Baptists, etc. etc. Henry does not seem to do anything about it. Just seems to leave it up to them and if R.E. loses out, he will not be in it as far as he is concerned. He would not have put R.E. on the spot! This just might be the case. I've not mentioned it to R.E. Now R.E. Is giving up most of his vacation . . . we leave Aug. 28th when we should leave on Sat. Aug. 25. This just to leave his desk clean . . . Have you found any way by which you might be able to (go) . . . to Mayfield? It's tragic if you can't. Gertrude and Dewey are on vacation, so we'll spend the nite in Abingdon and see them on the way back. . ."*** On September 9, 1973 Richard corresponded again with **Dr. Brown** after his retirement from Lafayette. Before Jeremy was born, **Kathleen** worked for Sears while Jerry commuted 68 miles daily round-trip. He watched the boys when Kathleen worked. Her stepmother **Mary Guldi** did not like them living outside Chicago. They should save, buy a two-flat—one to rent, the other to live in—that was her German thriftiness. To Kathleen, their finances seemed overstretched and their house in the country seemed isolated. On April 18, 1973, **Jeremy Michael Warner** was born. On September 7, 1973, **Susie** started an evening course on Basic Information Sources and Services with Dr. Rovelstad at Catholic

University. Susie compiled an annotated bibliography on children's literature related to transportation and an annotated review of trends related to family and family life as reflected in three standard indices. **CE Dates:** In September of 1673, **Louis Jolliet & Père Jacques Marquette** passed up the river at the lake plain of **Checagou** (Potowatomi word for ***the garlic-smelling place***) as they returned to Canada after exploring the Mississippi Valley for France. In 1773, the *Resolution* made its voyage to 71° 10'S, a place **Captain Cook** called **"*inexpressibly horrid*,"** adding that whatever lay beyond the pack ice **"*would not be worth the discovery*."** During Reconstruction times, on April 13, 1873 in Colfax, Louisiana, sixty armed black freemen were killed by a white paramilitary group in front of the courthouse. Most of the victims were **murdered after they surrendered.** The **Colfax Massacre** was a response to the 14th amendment and to the *Freedmen's Bureau Act of 1866,* which granted blacks the right to bear arms as **"*enjoyed by all the citizens*."** Blacks, whites, and all shades between have paid dearly for this pleasure. **Lyndon Baynes Johnson** died in January of 1973. In February, Senator **Sam Ervin** chaired the **Watergate** Select Committee while Gen. **Pinochet** carried off a coup against **Allende** in Chile, with American help. Spiro **Agnew** resigned the Vice Presidency, pleading *nolo contendere* to charge of tax evasion, no thanks to the nattering nabobs of negativism. The Arab oil cartel began an **Oil Embargo**. And Native Americans at **Wounded Knee**, SD were in 71 day standoff with Federal authorities. Richard **Nixon** was hospitalized with viral pneumonia, preventing him from burning the incriminating **White House tapes**. A 16 month-long economic recession began. Unemployment was 9%. The **World Trade Center** building was completed in New York City. The **Roe vs. Wade** decision made it possible for women to have legal access to abortion. The film **Solyent Green** starred Charleton Heston. It was based on Harrison's 1966 book, *Make Room! Make Room!*, with a foreword by **Paul Ehrlich,** about a future world of population crises. Many of the predictions in book and movie were already surpassed within forty years. **Dr. Wm. Randolph Sengel** wrote *Can these bones live?,* a history of his church, the Old Presbyterian Meeting House.

## Step 174

**William Luther Helm**, "Brother Will," was born on September 4, 1874 and married Ivey Debow in 1909. They had no children. They both died in 1963. **Anton van de Riet** was born on June 24, 1974. **Emma Lee Towles** died on September 30, 1974 at the age of 84. Like her brothers Grady and Frank Towles, she had Type I diabetes. She lived in an apartment near Forest Park. Monte took Dick to see her and then sometimes they went to the zoo with Uncle Grady, who loved the elephants and the train. **Joseph Schimpf** died in a veterans' hospital in Milwaukee on January 3, 1974 at the age of 82. On the same day, working at Fauquier Hospital in the evening, **Susie** wrote to her parents: ***"Dear Piglet and Chris, I should be writing on the pretty new stationery you***

***gave me but I'm at work and will have to use this old xerox paper. Looks like it will be a quiet night, knock on wood. Last night we were quite busy. Several people were admitted and there were all kinds of requests and problems. After it was all over, Mrs. (Elinor) Butler, the lady I work with, asked me to come by her house and see her Christmas tree. So I did that but only stayed a few minutes. I met Barbarella, her cat, that I've mentioned before. She's a beauty. Persian, multi-colored, very playful, and big for a female—almost Crinkle's size. Mrs. Butler is a widow and lives by herself in the house where she raised her three boys. She's really interesting and I'm getting to know a lot about her because she talks incessantly! She's lonely and tells me a lot while we're working. Her Christmas tree was pretty and she really seemed to enjoy telling me the history of each of her ornaments. This job can be depressing at times. It's sad to be always seeing people in trouble. We've had many deaths the past few days . . . It makes me realize how very fortunate I've been. Billy is having a ball with all his Christmas gifts, but do you know what he likes best? His tool bench. He has gone straight to it every morning after breakfast and bath as if to say, 'Well, time to work!' He carries it all around the house and is constantly busy with it. Two trips are required to get the bench, chair that he uses, and all the tools! Yesterday, I was using a screwdriver to take the back off a picture frame and he was watching me. He went and got his big screwdriver and came to help. I've been trying to get the house back together after Christmas and being away. It's a mess! I looked back over all our records, cancelled checks and things. Do you know, I hadn't organized them since last summer! What a job! I had it all out on the bed today and with much help from Billy, Crinkle and Velvet, I finished sorting them all. Sometimes I feel like I have 3 children because they all follow me from room to room and have to be nearby. We're all enjoying our gifts from you all. The books are just lovely. I brought Notre Dame to work yesterday and Mrs. Butler enjoyed looking at it. She's had very little education but, unlike so many people out here, she's interested in learning. She's always asking me questions—which makes me feel a little odd—and (you all should chuckle at this) she's always asking me how to spell words! Well, guess I'd better stop. We're getting busy again. P.S. I'm really enjoying the nice cake plate! Thank you too for taking care of the cats. Love, Susie." In January, some of Billy Rose's words at a few months after two years of age were: "Night Night. Bye Bye. Dada,Mama. What is it? All right. No. Yes. Want up. Get out. Thank you. Now..Kitty nice. More.. Turtles.. Bird.. Dog.. Bye Bye Bear.*** The last phrase was the title of a favorite book. On January 22, 1974, **Susie** began a **Catholic University** course on Book Selection, taught by Father Theall. In February, Billy could put clothes down the laundry chute and set the table and say **"*Yours, Dada*,"** and liked to watch the turtles and birds. In February, **Susie sometimes wanted chili at 1:00 a.m.** At 4 p.m. March 3, 1974, seated with Billy, Richard and her parents at the Downtowner Restaurant in Manassas, **Susie asked "How many are sitting at the table?"** to announce **Robby**'s coming. On March 25, 1974, Susie visited **Dr. Rhodes**. On March 26, 1974

**Billy opened a door for the first time**. March 29: Billy hid Richard's keys in a drawer and his toy shovel under his shirt, saying **"*Gone!*"** On April 24, the Roses planted a **garden** at Rock Springs. On April 30, they saw a **Yellow-throated warbler** , and on May 2, a **Brown thrasher** in the yard, on May 24, an **Eastern bluebird** and on May 20, an **Eastern meadowlark** on a pasture fence near the house at Rock Springs. Susan Ann Rose married Phillip **Sadeghy**. The Roses flew to Oklahoma on American Airlines to attend the wedding. Susie was **matron of honor**. Billy made a point of saying **"*no*"** to people during their visit on June 7, 1974. On June 26, the Roses rode to the **Thunderbird** archeological dig near Front Royal on the South fork of Shenandoah in an army "duck". On July 29, **Billy moved** into the corner room at Rock Springs in preparation for the new baby. On September 6, Billy and Richard read *A Large and Growly Bear*. On September 9, by order of Raymond E. Fogle, Sheriff, **Virginia Bruch** reported for jury duty at the Circuit Court of the city of Alexandria. The birth of **Robert Andrew Rose** in Manassas, VA came on October 18, 1974 at Prince William Hospital. On November 21 Susie separately wrapped each of Billy's animals and circus train cars so that he would **"*have more fun opening them*."** She said that she wanted him to remember his third birthday, as she remembered hers. For bedtime on his birthday, she read him *The Little Engine that Could*. **CE Dates:** In 1674 CE, Anton van **Leeuwenhoek,** the janitor for the town hall, discovered microbes in his own mouth using a microscope. In 1774, the **Old Presbyterian Meeting House** was established in Alexandria, VA. On August 9, 1974, **Richard Nixon** resigned because of the **Watergate scandal** and **Gerald Ford** became the 38th President. Ford pardoned Nixon on September 8, 1974. Later asked why he did this, Ford said that he didn't go through life with unpaying renters living in his head. On February 12, Alexander **Solzhenitsn** was flown out of the Soviet Union by the KGB. **Philippe Petit**, the monomaniacal tightrope walker, walked a cable that his team had strung between the twin towers of the **World Trade Building** on August 8, 1974**.** A film, *Man On Wire* (2008) was later made about his adventure, and how he used and then discarded his friends. **India tested its first atomic bomb.** During 1974, there were 424 **work stoppages** to improve labor conditions in the U.S., each involving at least a thousand workers.

**Billy, Three years old**

Am I to be your sun--
whose indifferent smile
can make you radiant--
whose fractioned energy
shaken off Earth's reins
becomes your heritage--
the embedded grit
you will extrude, admire;

admire and extrude again--
Irritant, Meridian?
Am I to father you out
along time's beam--I
whose powers seldom fuse,
fuse you--I, unsettled,
dissipating stir? No stay
am I--unstable. Why then
do I congratulate myself?

## Step 175

In 1975, **Susie and the boys** were stranded on Highway 29-211 and given a ride by **Norman and Gwyn Jones**, owners of Suffield Farm, where Susie called Chick's for a tow truck. Later (3/29), Susie admitted Mr. Jones to Fauquier Hospital with a heart problem. On April 19, the Roses saw a **Downy** woodpecker, on May 2 a **White-Throated Sparrow** and a **Chipping Sparrow,** and on May 10, a **Ruby-throated hummingbird** in their yard. On May 3, King's Dominion opened its *Lion Country Safari*, and the Roses rode through the simulated savanna to see the lions, hippos, giraffes and antelopes. In 1975, the road was replaced by a monorail. **Arian Louise Woodall** was born on May 6. On 3/6, **Blanche** wrote the Bruches from her home in Richmond: **"*Sometimes I see the lines and sometimes I do not. But writing big helps me. . . My dear, I do hope you are over the worst of that awful flu. R. Erle was off from work seven days plus the first day he was at work with 104°. He came home. . . and was miserably sick. Fixing and carrying trays was most tiring. I was wrestling with arthritis really in my toes . . . but arthritis medicine quickly cured them. Sure did enjoy Jo's calling the other nite. R.E. Sure had had it at the office that day and talking to Jo seemed to do him good. Two women supervisors—Clara was one, although she has not yet been moved along to it yet—got into an awful fight . . . upsetting to R.E. and Henry also . . . The house is deadly quiet to me and I scribble unintelligently . . . As usual, R.E. Is working tonite at the office. Clara is there as usual. She <u>has</u> to work too and both also take work home with them unless they go to the office to do it. Robert took the car to the garage to the tune of $60 and was told it needed to undergo highway travel—long distance not just use around town. Ha! Good advice when we are supposed to save gasoline! Yesterday and today I cleaned the big bath room, top to bottom, plus big washing which I hung on the line in pretty sunshine, cleaned the den extra, also R.E.'s bedroom, washed and ironed after dinner which we had at 5:30 after R.E. left to go back to work there isn't much left to do. I do use TV some but like it loud and fear it invites someone to enter elsewhere in the house and I not hear them. I heard one school teacher on TV tonite imploring help and protection for herself and pupils. One of her pupils was molested in the restroom, took it to the principal, who said there was nothing he could do. So later, I heard her parents were coming on the scene. I have jonquils, japonica in the house and lots of white, red and yellow crocus in the yard. Well, I enjoyed rambling on and on tonite. Give the precious boys a big hug for us. Only wish you all could come to see us. Please do not let anyone see this scribble. Do hope this finds you much better (Ginny). Truman, I hope you and I do not have the flu. Know we care and love you dearly. Nite nite, Blanchie."*** Susie wrote on Tuesday morning, June 5, to her parents: **"*Here is the house check. I'm scribbling this***

***note with one hand while holding Bobby's bottle with the other. We've just taken Dick to work and Billy to nursery school When Bobby finishes his breakfast, he'll have a bath. Then I'll house clean a little while he plays. Then we have some errands to run—general store, etc. Then Billy to pick up, lunch and—hurray—nap time! How are you all? Hope you are both feeling good these days. I'm still 'computering' at work. All is going more smoothly now that most of the necessary information has been keyed in and the computer is almost up to date. Billy and Bobby are fine. Billy's always saying 'Do you remember when Grandmamma and Granddaddy did . . .' something or other. Bobby's getting 2 upper front teeth now and he's fussy. We worked outside last night from dinner (which we ate outside) to dark. Billy and Keller (the little boy next door) enjoy each other thru the fence. How grubby we all were when we came in and how exhausted! However, we bathed and all went to bed about 10-10:30 which is phenomenally early for us. Well, will close. Bobby's finished his milk and would like something else to do now. P.S. The hedge is doing fine. We put it across the back."*** They transplanted privet cuttings from Jo's bushes in Alexandria. On June 27, 1975, Ginny and Jo went to the **American Library Association** meeting in San Francisco on a American Airlines Boeing 727. They changed planes in Chicago and returned the following week. Colleen Borcik, Ginny's neighbor at 5 W. Howell, wrote on September 14, 1975, ***"Dear Jo and Ginny and all, We so enjoyed last evening! The meal was delicious and the company perfect. You have always been such a part of our lives, it makes our leaving even more difficult. We leave behind so much of our hearts here and you shall always have a special part of them. . ."*** Meanwhile, on September 19, 1975, **Susie** began writing her "black thoughts" in a notebook ***"as I used to do in Williamsburg when I roomed with Mary Ellen. It's been a long time since then. I'm only 30 but I feel like 50 most of the time. There is no one I can talk to openly and honestly, so I will start this record again. 'Nevermore alone upon the threshold of the door of individual life' has not been true."*** This was the poem by E.B. Browning which Richard and Susan shared in their courtship. She continued, ***"I must learn to be alone. My thoughts are mine alone. I will share them with no one. I will write them down when they become too heavy to bear and I will hope that this notebook like that of Don Luis in <u>Anthony Adverse,</u> falls into a chasm rather than be read by anyone else."*** Except, here it is, reader. How can it not be read? ***"Alein--that gives a certain freedom. I can write anything, anything at all. How did I arrive at this point of aloneness. I think I must have always been this way. Realization has been sporadic and also gradual. It is a great mistake to have only one child. When I was about the age of Billy, I felt alone. I was so glad to have friends. I felt their loss bitterly each time we moved. I loved school--so many other children. And I found learning easy too. But I was naive and sheltered--another great mistake parents make. Slowly I was left out of things. Children have no time for someone who is different and who doesn't understand some things. There must be some common ground and this decreased as we got older. I was sensitive and***

***grew afraid of being hurt. I withdrew. This is boring. I will stop. Suffice to say that I have lost my best friend, Nancy. I cannot confide in Mommy. I would have to reciprocate and her problems touch me too deeply. Dick is unapproachable--too similar in temperament and different in outlook and ways of solving or meeting problems. It is not an easy lesson, but I will learn it: 'how utterly alone we all are.'"*** A note made in 1982 added, ***"I didn't lose Nancy. It was only a low point in our friendship."*** **KYA** 75 kya **Blombo** Cave dwellers in South Africa made **pressure-flaked points**. During this period it is likely that **behaviorally modern** *Homo sapiens sapiens* appeared, although cold temperatures prevailed as *Homo sapiens neanderthalis* spread through Europe. **BCE Dates: Antiochus IV** became king of Syria in 175 BCE. Resistance to his attempts to Hellenize Judah grew as he tried to destroy sacred documents and use the temple for state religion. The books of **Esther** and **Daniel** were written in resistance to him and he is the one mentioned by another name in the *Book of Daniel* and later in Christian literature as the Anti-Christ, although the prophecies about the Anti-Christ were later more generally applied to a succession of other worthy candidates, such as Pompey, Herod the Great, Caligula, Nero, and Hitler. **CE Dates:** In 1475, **Edward IV** invaded France and claimed the French crown, but at Picquigny, **Louis XI** agreed to pay him 75,000 crowns and an annuity of 20,000 crowns. Edward had already taken the estates of the Lancasters. He therefore acquired a large income for the rest of his life. **Lavoisier** described combustion in chemical terms in 1775. **Fritz Kreisler** was born in 1875 and in London, a cologne manufacturer opened a luxury **barber shop** on Curzon St. in Mayfair. The first of its kind, it set a new standard for barbering. Barbers were no longer to be bleeders, dentists, or cheap surgeons. They were to provide the kind of professional grooming service to those of moderate incomes which had previously only been available to the very wealthy.**Albert Schweitzer** was born on January 14, 1875 in Alsace in the town of Kaysersberg. He was brought up in Gunsbach in the Munster Valley, where he attended the local *Realgymnasium*, was playing the organ at the age of six, and was impressed by a statue in the neighboring village of Colmar. It showed the local hero, Admiral Truat. At the base of the main statue were smaller figures at each corner, one of which was a wistful, melancholy African in chains. The sculptor was F.A. **Bartholdi**, a native of Colmar, who later in his life sculpted the **Statue of Liberty**. Schweitzer wrote about it in his *Memories of Childhood,* ***"...the face wears an expression of thoughtful sadness which I could not forget, and every time we went to Colmar I tried to find the time to go and look for it. The countenance spoke to me of the misery of the dark Continent, and even today I make a pilgrimage to it when I am in Colmar."*** It was during this period, writes Montague in his memoir of Schweitzer, that Schweitzer's **"*fierce desire for independence of thought and action*"** showed itself when he disregarded the reproaches of his schoolmates and refused to stone birds. Later he would refer to this as wanton killing, like the trophy killing of **"great white hunters."** Sometimes killing was necessary, he recognized, as in the use of antibiotics or getting food. But wanton killing

was never justified. **Edmund Starling** was born October 5, 1875 in Hopkinsville, KY, on the eastern side of the Kentucky lakes in Christian County. This was the **pennyroyal** district, from which also came **Ollie M. James,** chairman of the Democratic Convention, and **Alben Barkley** Like Fulton County, home of the **Sullivans and Helms**, and in the west along the Mississippi, Christian County's southern border is the state line. The Starlings were related to such ***"families of mark"*** as McDowells, Bufords, McClungs, Irvines, Marshalls, Prestons, Burneys, McGaviches, Shelbys, and Sullivans. His father had been a Union officer and the family and other sympathizers were members of the First Presbyterian Church, where his father was an elder. In fact, most of the members were Starlings. In 1975, James. Yorke published "*Period Three Implies Chaos*," the defining paper on **Chaos theory**. On April 29-30, 1975 **Saigon fell.** The war had lasted for more than nine years. Over 8.7 million served, over 47.4 thousand died in battle and more than 10.8 from nonbattle injuries and more than 153.3 thousand were wounded. As desperate people clung to the helicopters, so the vicious memory clings to all who lived through it. A Chlorine tank detector buried in the Homestead mine permitted the first measurement and detection of **neutrinos**. The solar neutrinos were found to oscillate, indicating that they had mass. **H. Edward Roberts**, M.D. invented and developed **programming** for personal computers, although Lady Ada Lovelace had thought through the problems involved as Charles Babbage and she worked on the *Analytical Engine* (See James Gleick's *The Information*). His product was the **Altair.** The MITS Altair was on the cover of *Popular Electronics.* Gates & Allen, working for him, developed Microsoft BASIC. **Ernest Callenbach** published **Ecotopia**, a description of a break-away American country devoted to a stable-state economy and way of life.

## Step 176

**Presley Neville O'Bannon** was born in Fauquier County in 1876. Helping to lead the decisive assault in the Battle of Derna as a marine in the **first Barbary War**, he was the first soldier to raise the American flag on foreign soil. **Rose Neyens** was born on June 11, 1876. **Nelle Mae Helm** was born on 12/16/1876. Unlike her sister, Irene, and brothers Will and Jess, she did not marry. Once she gave her niece, Susie Bruch, her pearl ring, saying, **"*I always wanted a diamond.*"** Lillian Heinrich, mother of **Shirley H. Cullom,** was cremated in French Mortuary (1111 University Dr. NE in Albuquerque, NM) on March 22, 1976. On May 13, the Roses saw a nest of three fledgling **Chipping Sparrows** in a yew bush at school, and on May 22, **Susie** saw a **Baltimore Oriole** in their yard at Rock Springs. On June 25, the Roses visited **Kenmore**, home of Betty Washington Lewis, sister of George Washington. The house was built in 1752. **Bill and Rob** raced after each other, hiding and jumping out at each other from the corridors of giant boxwood. On June 2, **Colleen Borcik** wrote to Ginny and Jo (from CINEWSNAVELER Staff FOSIC, Bx. 17, FPO NY 09510): ***"Heard from Marjorie*** (Marjorie Sattleway, who lived across the street from Jo

and next to Nick and Barbara Veloz) ***that both you and Truman have been ill and in hospital. My thoughts and prayers were with you . . . My family's visit kept us on a Merry Go Round . . . Mother went home with pneumonia. The English weather surely didn't agree with her . . . She was so impressed with the National Health Service—the M.D., X rays, medicines all free for her too, as a temporary resident of the UK. They enjoyed the children so much*** (Husband: Paul. Children: Emmett, Meghan, Brigid.)***. . . especially little Brigid . . . Can't believe she's a year old . . . Emmett was moved up a year and is doing much better. He will change schools in Sept. to a fee-paying, strong academic school. Meghan stands 1st in her form and is quite a horse-woman, competing in a class of 12,13, 14 year-olds, she holds her own quite well. Had one nasty fall, but got right back on and came off again. That horse hasn't put her off since. She has no fear! I ride too, once a week, and it's a real test of mental and physical discipline. I'm sticking with it, in hopes that some day I'll look as at ease as does Princess Anne. Emmett has had a good share of wins lately. He helped win the Kingston Boys Shield on 15 May, winning the under 11 Butterfly, and was on three 1st place Relay teams. On May 22nd he won the under 11 freestyle in the Guildford Schools Gala and took 2nd on the under 12 Boys Relay team. We are all proud of them both and they are helping us to properly spoil Brigid Kate! She is such a good-natured baby, eats well, sleeps well and is always smiling. She has taken a step alone, but seems content to hang on and walk on, crawling between holds. She enjoys her play pen still. We took her to the seaside on Monday and she stayed in it and played, chatted, ate, babbled for six hours. After two early walkers . . . I'm very happy not to encourage her. . . She can see horses grazing in the field behind us and watches them all day long. Has the hot, humid weather come to Virginia yet? We've had a lovely Spring but certainly not like D.C. usually is by this date. A.C. is unheard of here. So are screens and I love having doors and windows open and the huge bees are constantly in the house. We get dribbles and drabs of the political scene here and the results of most primaries, but miss the gossip of the Post and all the TV stations. Did just hear of Martha Mitchell's death. And Marjorie wrote about Louie Allan. We think about you often and still miss Howell Avenue. I will say, however, that we fast fallen in love with England and have made many friends in the short time we've been here. Wonderful how quickly the human animal adapts! Hope by now that you and Truman are feeling fine. Know that we think often of you . . . sending our dearest love to you all." On*** 11/15 **Jo Rose** wrote that it was cold in Norman. "***I think fall is my favorite time of year."*** Frank was at the OU-MO game (OU won, 27-20). ***"It's too cold for me to sit there for 3 hours. Your Dad is pleased with his new position now that it's official. He's going to start interviewing applicants for the position that he had. He is busy all the time but that is the way that he likes it."*** Carol said that Orville had transferred to Paul's Valley in Purcell. Orville's family was pleased. ***"I don't know what Frances will do, tho I bet she isn't happy about it. Denise will stay with Frances and Ira until June when she graduates from High***

***School. She plans to enter OU."*** Jo and Frank were going to the First Christian Church because ***"the church that John tried to start failed. He's now in Missouri, going to Ozark Bible College trying to make a new start."*** However, Jo didn't like that the First Christian Church was a member of the National Council of Churches. Susan ***"will not talk about the divorce but keeps everything bottled up within her."*** They have not seen **Philip Sadeghy**. His mother was in Oklahoma until Christmas. Then Philip was going to Europe during the Christmas school break. On December 28, Richard and Susan Rose received the ***Deed of Gift*** from **Truman and Virginia Bruch**, signing over the mortgage to the Rock Springs house. Susie continued to write in her Black Notebook:

> **"He didn't seek to hurt, only said the words as he had just discovered them.**
> **As I wander through the storehouse of my mind**
> **I stumble over them, dust them off, hear them again and again.**
> **They echo until I bury them with other dark thought.**
> **They lie waiting to be found anew.**
> **'I should have been a bachelor,' he said."**

**BCE Dates:** The first **Olympic Games** were played in 776 BCE. The year of 476 BCE is the generally accepted time for the **fall of the Roman Empire,** although it had caved in long before. **CE Dates** In **1176** Peter of Colechurch began the replacement of a timber bridge over the Thames. His **London Bridge** lasted 600 years**.** In 1276, a great drought in the Southwest, along with disease and raids by hostile bands, forced the Basket-making **Anasazi** people to leave the plateau lands and become Pueblo dwellers. This occurred over the years 1276-1299. In 1476, **William Caxton** returned to England after 35 years, set up a print shop in Westminster, and began publishing books, some of them his own translations from French and Latin writers. In 1876, his back to the door as he played poker, holding aces and eights,Wild Bill **Hickok** was killed in Deadwood, S.D. Somehow this fact stuck in Richard's head for 60 years after visiting Deadwood as a child and hearing about Hickok, the gold rush and Calamity Jane when Frank was stationed in Rapid City and assigned to Ellsworth Field, the Strategic Air Command base. It was around the same time that he saw a cartoon about atomic warfare which haunted his dreams. One of the songs in *Jo Evelyn's Boys* (2007) was about Deadwood.

**Deadwood Days**[3]

*"Five, Four, Three… I'm coming for you, Slade."*

Calamity
Is always passing by.
Keep your fail-safe latched
Your draw-hand free,

---

[3] This refers to when the family lived in Rapid City while Frank worked for SAC. They visited Deadwood and Richard wrote two stories for school, one about Wild Bill Hickok and the other about nuclear war.

And the doorway in the corner of your eye.

Hickok held the dead man's hand
But Ellsworth had him beat.
He called the Earth and skies of blue
To meet him in the street.

Calamity
Is always passing by.
Keep your fail-safe latched
Your draw-hand free,
And the doorway in the corner of your eye.

And who drew first or held his peace,
It really didn't matter.
The fat boys and their crews in blue
Were in no mood to flatter.

Calamity
Is always passing by.
Keep your fail-safe latched
Your draw-hand free,
And the doorway in the corner of your eye.

Ellsworth held his grisly fire
For minutes, days; and years,
And faced down death, the cold and blue,
By running off a gang of fears.

Calamity
Is always passing by.
Keep your fail-safe latched
Your draw-hand free,
And the doorway in the corner of your eye.

Frank's ***"quality control***" job in the Air Force was precisely about facing down death by nuclear accidents. **CE Dates:** In an early effort to collect and save Black folk music, Thomas Fenner, Frederick Rathbun, and Bessie Cleaveland in 1876 published the songs they had collected from former slaves in ***Cabin and Plantation Songs.*** Robert **Koch** demonstrated his **postulates** on anthrax. **Schliemann** discovered shaft graves of the **Mycenae.** In November 1976, Jimmy **Carter** became President, but in Fauquier County and Virginia, he lost to Ford. In Fauquier's **Kettle Run** district, where the Roses lived, it was Carter 345, Ford 512. The **Metro opened** for business in D.C. **Bruce Jenner** won the decathlon at the **Montréal Olympics.** Researchers showed **acetylcholine** is depleted in brains of people with **Alzheimer's disease**. Too little acetylcholine meant

messages couldn't travel between brain cells. Perhaps the connection to glycation due to an excess of controllable dietary carbohydrates was not as exciting as brain research.

## Step 177

**Frank Van de Riet** was born August 26, 1877. In Norman, at First Baptist Church on January 3, 1977 (211 W. Comanche in Norman), the congregation celebrated Dr. Lavonn Brown's seventh year. His wife drew a picture of him on the bulletin. He preached on *Luke 13:6-9: "Just One More Year."* And **Jo Rose** wrote a note on her program: ***"Whatever are we in the world? Just occupying space? Uselessness and fruitlessness invite judgments. Nations and individuals as the years pass have opportunities. (Later, a) judgment (will be) required."***On the same day, **Susan Ann Rose Smith** wrote to the Roses: **"*Thank you for Xmas. Carol and Orville moved to Purcell. Grandma Rose is in OK. Aunt Monte, Jim, Juanita, and Franke plan a spring visit. I'm taking the guitar."*** She didn't like living in an apartment, where she had heard an all-night New Year's party upstairs. The *Norman Transcript* reported on May 18 that Susan Ann Rose would marry **Roger Smith** on May 27, 1977 at 7 p.m. in a garden wedding at 2312 Morgan Drive. In attendance would be his mother, Mrs. J.L. Smith (940 Dakota St.) and her parents. ***"The bride-elect is a 1974 graduate of Norman High School, attended the University of Oklahoma, and is employed at Zale's Jewelers. The prospective bridegroom is assistant manager at Zale's Jewelers."*** On 7/19 Susan sent Richard a birthday card (from Mr. and Mrs. Roger L. Smith 1111 SW 24th St.#81, Norman, OK). 10/12 After the **Texas-OU** game, she wrote that they had just returned from Ft. Worth, where Texas had upset OU for the first time in seven years (score 13 to 6). The next injections for Edna would be on the 17th of the month. Susan and Roger were buying a new house and would move in at the end of the month because of Susan's pregnancy. She also referred to Richard having bought a new car, the **"*uncertain weather*"** in OK with Christmas coming, the box they had mailed to the Roses, along with a cake and some spiced tea she had made. On 11/17/77, **Jo Rose** wrote that Frank and she were at a meeting at the Tahlequah Lodge, ***"an Oklahoma State lodge. It's quite peaceful here."*** She looked at the lake and mountains from the window and asked what the Roses would do for Thanksgiving. Frank planned to take Roger and Susan Smith to Tinker AFB for dinner. The Smiths were **"*settled in their house."*** Roger's sister was giving Susan a shower. Grandma Edna Rose was changing to a cancer specialist in Ft. Worth. **"*She's concerned about Debbie driving to pick her up in bad weather and wants a closer doctor."*** At this time, **William Rose** was 6 and **Robert Rose** was 3 years old. The **Frank Rose** family lived on Morgan Drive when the Roses visited and then went to visit the family of **Phil and Debbie Woodall** in Dallas. Photographs from the time show women playing croquet in the yard on Morgan, Debbie with brown hair, **Grandma Edna Rose,** the baby Frank Smith and another child, about two years old. In Dallas, the photos show

the stable-yard, Arian and her horse, and the two boys. **CE** On October 17, 1777 CE, the British surrendered at Saratoga after their defeat in Bennington. In 1877, the Great **Railroad Strike** began in Martinsburg, West Virginia. It was the first strike of its kind in the United States. A war began between **Russia and Turkey.** Visiting his family in Moscow, after completing his studies in the Gymnasium of Taganrog, where he had written *The Stammerer* and sketches and studied Shakespeare, Gogol, Hugo, Buckle and Schopenhauer, Anton **Chekhov** found his father bankrupt and in hiding. The following year Chekhov tried writing for comedy and vaudeville.
In 1977 Carl Woese discovered the **Archaea**, chemosynthetic microbes living in extreme environments, a prokaryotic moneran group separate from Bacteria. **The Lawrence Welk Orchestra** played at the Lloyd Noble Center in Norman, Oklahoma. Jim Hobson from OETA began to produce heritage recordings and special events from the Welk repertoire.

## Step 178

**Thomas Terrell Sullivan** was born on April 28, 1878. **John Joseph Van de Riet** died in 1978. At this time, **Frank & Jo** and family lived at 2312 Morgan Drive, Norman, OK 73069. **Jo Rose** wrote that Grandma Edna Rose had been taken off injections. "***Her stomach is larger than Susan's.****"* The doctor was regularly draining off fluid. Frank and Jo spent a few hours after New Year's with her in Ft. Worth. January 25, **Richard** took a Seminar in Environmental Biology at GMU, led by Don Kelso, *Water Resources in an Urbanizing Environments*. **Frank Jesse Smith** was born on January 5, 1978. (7 lb 7 oz). On 4/15, **Frank Rose** wrote that Grandma **Edna** Rose, had only two to eight weeks left to live. He was working on the annual budget at work. He had planted two Foster hollies and one green ash. **Edna Mae Rose** died on April 19, 1978 and was buried at Mount Olivet Cemetery South in Ft. Worth (6'8" of the West of Lot 96, Gardenia Section, Garden of Memories, Spaces 1&2). Edna (#50, 1894 -1978 Eastern Star, Past Matron, Life Member of North Ft. Worth Chapter #684 until 5/31/1979) was buried to the right of Frank (1892-1959 Masonic). A separate stone was inscribed, "**GONE BUT NOT FORGOTTEN.**" **Jo** Rose sent Richard an obituary for Edna, written by Frank, on May 3, 1978. She thanked the Roses for her birthday gift, mentioned the Federal drive starting Sunday, called the Energy Drive. And said, **"*Your grandmother's illness and death was exhausting.*"** Sally (Aunt Monte), Juanita, and Franke went to Ft. Worth in May to visit Lorena Towles, Grady's sister-in-law. They stopped in Oklahoma on their return to Tennessee. **Frances Rose Redkey** died**.** At Harris Hospital she had been the delivery room supervisor before deciding to specialize in anesthesia. She was later the President of the Texas Association of Anesthesiologists. Kidney failure due to cortisone treatment for arthritis made her an invalid. Jo **Rose** wrote on 6/11/1978: *"**Frances' sudden death was a shock to all of us. She left us peacefully—the way I would like to leave this world if it is God's will. Guess that most of us would, if we could choose, not want to be a burden to anyone and leave***

***this world quietly. Frances really had to struggle to live and I wouldn't want her back again to go through that again. The roses that you sent to both your grandmother and Frances were beautiful.*** " She mentioned that one of her finches had died. "***Susan got quite concerned***." Now they were going to the church which they first attended in Norman, having joined it several months earlier. The minister was 30 years old and had a miraculous healing of liver cancer. It was a growing church and nondenominational. The Tennessee visitors had just left. She mentioned that the Roses would visit in Tennessee and Oklahoma in August. After being with Susie and the boys at Bull Run Park on May 14 (Mother's Day), Ginny wrote, "*For a Young Mother* (Susie)":

***You cannot believe that the merry-go-round***
***With the wild painted horses and the childish figures***
***Giggling and screaming, assailing your ears,***
***Will ever be silent as a golden moon***
***Riding the summer's night.***

*On* May 22, **Jerry and Kathleen Warner** were divorced. On July 8, 1978, **Ginny Bruch** sat by the bedside of her mother, **Irene Sullivan.** ***"Her little white hand with the blue veins showing--so thin--almost transparent, clung to mine--her eyes studied my face--really seeing me for the first time in a long time. She tried so hard to speak. Her lips moved. 'Darling, what do you want to say?' I asked. 'I love you," I said. She said slowly as if each word were such an effort, 'I love you too.' . . . What would the world be without her?"*** Ginny received word on July 22 that her story *"Forever Young"* had been accepted by *Family Heritage* for publication. It was a chapter from her book, *Proud Wanderers.* She met **Susie** for lunch in Springfield. ***"The boys were so dear--so good and so loving. May they always be."*** (And they were, thanks to her and Susie and their own work on themselves.) On August 7, 1978, vinyl siding and guttering and porch work were done on 15 West Howell by Alvin and Walside. Ginny stayed home to watch the pets. **Kathleen Warner** worked for Lincoln Bank in Chicago. Her boss was Lewis Rintigen, who gave her his leather suitcase and some spending money when she traveled to the D.C. area. She and Lewis would have good conversations over lunch or coffee breaks. He died suddenly of a heart attack. His great liking for pastries was a reminder to Kathleen about the consequences of poor nutrition. Later, at a club featuring Frank D'Rone, she met **Louis Aquila**, and thought that she might have liked him at first because, like Rintigen, he was "***calm, a teacher, and had the same name*!" On 7/12/1978, **Jo Rose** wrote,*"**Do you think you all will ever slow down?**"* She was proud of Bill's progress in swimming lessons. Frank was thinking of a trip to Virginia. "***It would be easier for us than for you all***." She wrote that Susan would be 21 tomorrow and that they would move to their new home on Friday. "***They have been packing boxes for several days. Little Frank is growing by leaps and bounds and is discovering new things every day. It's quite hot and there's no rain. Be careful on your outing to the beach and the river. Don't do anything suddenly.***" Discussion topics at the Family Night Supper at the **Warrenton Presbyterian Church** on November 19, 1978 included the recent birth of Laura Beth to Don and Joanna King, the recently shown film *Pilgrim's Progress*, filmed in Northern Ireland, the Book Fair on November 12, the Wednesday Bible studies with Rev. Dick Winter on *Galatians*, the Warrenton Rescue Squad auxiliary Bazaar and Bake Sale on November 18, , the election of officers and adoption of the 1979 budget and the dedication of the new Education Addition on November 26. On December 5, **Virginia Irene (Helm) Sullivan (Rentie) died at 2:00 p.m**. And on

December 8, Ginny wrote at 9:35, ***"Our Dearest Mother called home."*** Rentie was interred on Dec. 12 at lot 241-242, space 2,3/1,2 in Ivy Hill, the same cemetery whose gravestones were catalogued in *Beneath the Oaks of Ivy Hill,* the book written by Ginny and Jo after they had visited and recorded every grave site. Ginny wrote on December 13, ***"Ivy Hill Cemetery--she sleeps."*** and on December 15, quoting Dickinson, "***The sweeping of the heart and putting love away we shall not use again until eternity."*** Susie wrote in her notebook of Black Thoughts, ***"Rentie--December 8, 1978. 'Yea, though I walk through the Valley of the Shadow of Death, I will fear no evil ."*** **CE Dates:** The **Ciompi** revolution in Florence was in 1378 CE. In 1878, **Tchaikovsky** wrote his Violin Concerto (Opus 35) in D after studying the Concerto espagnole of Lalo. It was not performed until 1881, when a critic said it was a stink in the ear. Also in 1878, **Yellow Fever** struck Brownsville, TN. In 1978, one of the many casualties at **Jim Jones'** camp in Guyana was a visiting California Congressman. **The Madonna of Aparecida** was broken into many fragments by a vandal, reassembled at the Museum of Art in Sao Paulo, and returned the the Shrine in the Basilica.

## Step 179

In January, **Susan Rose** wrote in her Black Notebook, ***"I've lost my way through the changes in my life--a paraphrase from a sampler . . . 'Lord, help me find my way through the changes in my life.' Who am I now? I'm empty, alone. I have no meaningful communication with anyone. . . My childhood was too happy. I was too loved. It all slowly slipped away as Rentie's life slipped away. Some day Mommie and Daddy will either be suddenly gone or I will suddenly realize that they are slipping slowly away. My fear of that, of being physically alone, forever, is almost as bad as my concept of the actuality. And that knowledge should bring me closer to them now while I still have them. But it doesn't. Why? Am I insulating myself in some strange way? Deceiving myself into thinking that if I put distance between us now it will be easier later to let them go? Perhaps. But I think it's more than that. I've changed--and not for the better."*** On February 9, 1979, **Susan Smith** (living at 1609 Boyd) wrote to thank the Roses for Frank's suit and the squirrel doll, which he took to bed. **Frank** Rose had taken a picture of little Frank in the suit. Oklahoma had received a heavy snowfall. Susan bowled with a team on Wednesdays and had started guitar lessons again. "***Next time we see you, we'll have a trio—flute, piano, and guitar.***" On Easter Sunday 4/15, **Jo Rose** wrote to Richard "***Spring has finally sprung. From the extra chores you have planned to do around the house, plus your courses at the college, you're going to have another busy summer. By now, that is what you must be accustomed to each year.***" On May 7, **Whitney** wrote to Ginny Bruch, "***Thank you for helping me with these papers. Things are going to be so tight . . . with our new house; I'm hoping this little extra will help pay some of the bills. Grace and I with the two Lindas went to Cathy's wedding***

***Saturday. My sister and Ronnie never made it. They got lost. You've always back me up and help me all the way. I truly miss Everyone. Say hello to Chris and Miss B.****"* On March 2, 1979, **Jo Sullivan** left Miami in Room 375 on the **Statendam** for her cruise on the Holland America Line, along with **Robert and Blanche Johnson and Charlie Speed**. The Roses took a second **deed of trust** for $10K on the Rock Springs house, at a cost of $17K, to add a new room. **Lloyd Simms** did the work. On December 5, 1979, **Auburn Hobson** died. His son-in-law (D.E.G., married to Doris in 1966) wrote "***Pa loved people, politics, and athletics, and sometimes not necessarily in that order . . . Many times he would tell of the Sunday ball games that he (played) as a boy and young man. Many of the men who lived near Liberty . . . tell me stories of Pa at bat. He would grab the bat and run to the plate swinging and shouting, 'Move back boys, Papa Hobson is at bat.' He served the City of Smithville as an alderman for several years and along with Othel Smith, Jim Ammonett, Hobert Hendrixson, Will Herbert Smith and others had a part in the progress of Smithville from a small farming town to the beginning of our industrial growth, building our water and sewer plants that have led to our growth . . . When I would be traveling around several counties for Congressman Evins, he would ride with me and tell me about people, politics and his youth . . .'They were hard times, good times, and happy times. They made for a good life, good friends and happy memories.****"* The **Warrenton Chorale** performed *Christmas in Music* on December 14, 1979. On June 7, **Karen Kay Raley**, who resided at 1928 Logan Drive in Norman, OK, was killed at the age of 33 years. From the *Norman Transcript:* She *"****was alone in an auto headed south toward the interstate highway but had entered the northbound off-ramp at 12th St. in Moore . . . As the car reached the northbound lane it collided with a semi-tractor trailer truck driven by Billy D. McCall, 41, Buckholts, TX.****"* She was the daughter of **Ginny Raley,** the church friend of **Jo Rose.** After Frank's death, Ginny Raley sometimes visited Jo or took her to lunch until Ginny's irritable bowel syndrome kept her in. In May 1979, Ginny Bruch visited the old Helm home, **Cedar Grove**, for the first time. It had been owned by George Blakemore and Elizabeth Mauzy, grandparents of Martha Letitia Blakemore. According to Ginny's grandfather, Robert T. Helm spent some of his childhood there after his father, John Buck Helm, and mother, M. Letititia Helm, returned to Virginia from Clarksville, TN. Robert died in Front Royal in 1854. **KYA Dates:** About 790kya, At **Gesher Benot Ya'aqov**, Israel in N. Jordan on Lake Hula an **Acheulian hominin** culture site was occupied for 100,000 years in the Middle Pleistocene. Different areas were designated for making tools, controlling fire, butchering meat, and preparing food on hearths. Foods included crabs, fish, turtles, fallow deer, elephants, and other grazing animals. Canids and rodents were also present. Industry included bi-face stone cutting, knapping limestone and basalt, and using scrapers and awls around hearths (Sci. 12/18/2009). **CE Dates** On August 23, 79 CE, **Pompeii** and **Herculaneum** were destroyed by the eruption of **Vesuvius**. One inhabitant of Pompeii was the writer and politician **Pliny the Elder,** who was prefect of the Roman Fleet. As

author of *Natural History*, he went in for a closer look to observe the phenomenon and perished. In 1779, **Jean Baptiste Point du Sable,** a trapper who described himself as a ***"free Negro,"*** built a cabin north of the sand-bar bend of a river draining from the southern end of Lake Michigan, near a camp of the Potowatomi tribe, who called the marshy area **Checagou,** or ***"garlic-smelling place."*** His hut was the first European settlement in Chicago. March 14, 1879 was the birthday of Albert **Einstein** in Ulm. His family soon moved to Munich, later to Italy and Switzerland. His father and uncle were involved in an electrical business venture. The parents of **Alice Ruth O'Malley Robinson** were married in Holy Name Cathedral, Chicago. The **Zulus** defeated the British Empire. **Dostoevsky** published *The Brothers Karamazov* and **Tolstoi** published his *Confession.* **Chekhov** studied medicine in Moscow. **Frank Hume**, businessman and ex-Confederate, purchased 600 acres overlooking the Potomac, where he held gatherings, displayed cannons, and built a resort named **Hume Springs**. This is now the area around Dale Street and St. Rita's RC church in Alexandria, VA. **Edison** patented the tungsten-filament incandescent bulb. After the Franco-Prussian War, Bismarck tried unsuccessfully to form an alliance with Russia and Austria-Hungary, but was only able to form the **Triple Alliance.** In 1979, the DC Region had the **Presidents' Day Snowfall.** In the **Iranian Revolution,** the American embassy was seized. The nuclear power station at **Three Mile Island** leaked. The **Sears Tower** was completed in Chicago. It was 1451 feet tall. Such a perspective for so little vision. **Julius Nyerere** of Tanzania drove **Idi Amin** out of Uganda. And **Lê Duan's** regime in Vietnam invaded Cambodia and defeated **Khmer Rouge.**

## Step 180

**Robert Newton Helm** was born on February 28, 1880. He married Margaret Wells Smith in 1908 Their children were Milton, Robert, and Sara, who became Sara Dobbins. In 1980 **Kathleen Warner** and her sons began living at the former home of her step-grandparents, **Paul and Anna Guldi,** 3807 N. Richmond Ave. in Chicago. On January 4**,** the **Roses** went to the "Nutcracker" at Fauquier High School. From March to May the Roses studied *The Book of Mark* with Rev. Richard Winter at the Warrenton Presbyterian Churcn. On May 17, **Richard** received a Master's Degree (M.S., Biology) at George Mason and on August 4 submitted his application for the doctoral program in Education. Dr. Toombs, the Biology Department chair, asked him to consider continuing in the doctoral program for Biology, but Richard explained that his path lay not in more biological research but in teaching science and instructional methods. **Susie** continued to write in her Black Thoughts notebook about ***"being as far away from any meaningful human contacts as ever."*** Bill and Rob were doing well at Fresta Valley, where they took a year off from public schools to gain maturity. Money problems, snubs by the self-satisfied, a "deteriorating relationship" with her mother, and the boys' arguing and fussing all the time disturbed her. She wrote that her mother ***"had it much easier. She had Rentie who fixed dinner and took care of me every day. She had one child and a girl. She tries to understand but when I'm not happy and don't respond to her conversation, which is most of the time, she doesn't understand that I'm just worn out. I can't laugh at trivial stories when I'm worried about money or tired from the day's problems."*** She listed some problems: Robby's chickenpox, her mother's insistence on buying her clothes, her mother's worries about strangers approaching the boys, her mother inviting Robert, Aunt Blanche and Earl to Rock Springs without asking her. And Dick and she were ***"on the verge of arguments ourselves. We currently retreat into silence. Where will it all end?"*** In 1982 , she wrote this beside the last sentence, ***"We have avoided this. Thank God."*** She put this poem by her bed:

**I am like a garden, Lord,**
**A garden filled with weeds.**
**Gently with your loving hands**
**Plant in me the seeds**
**Of love and joy and kindness,**
**Of faith and hope and trust.**
**Pull out the choking weeds of self**
**And those of pride and lust.**
**With your Spirit water me**
**Till I have life anew**
**And all who see this well-worked ground**
**Will know it's kept by You.**

On June 29, Susie was told by Joanne King, her friend at church, that her family was moving to Texas. Susie wrote, ***"I felt as if someone had informed me that the whole family had died. They were to leave our lives just as we were beginning to know them. "*** On July 25, the *Purcell Register* reported that **Pamela Lynn Fletcher** married **Freddie Hall Fitzgerald** at the 1st Christian Church in San Angelo, TX. "***The bride's parents, Louis Orville Fletcher and Carol Ann Fletcher formerly of Purcell, OK now of San Angelo, TX. Reverend and Mrs. Sherman Fitzgerald at 224 W. Apache St., are parents of the groom. The groom is 1979 graduate of Purcell HS, employed by Ratliff Oil Co., Lindsay, OK. The bride attended Purcell HS, graduating in 1980 from San Angelo Central HS. She plans to attend the University of Oklahoma. They plan to live at 405 NW 5th St., Lexington, OK. Also attending: Frank and Jo Rose, Louise Rose, Susan and Frank Smith from Norman, Phil and Debbie Woodall from Duncanville, TX and Nan Gullahorn and Claire Miner from Abilene, TX"***. On August 15, 1980, **Virginia Bruch** (Ginny) retired from the Pentagon Library. On December 28, 1980, Richard performed "*Tennessee Song,*" a musical setting of the poem by James Agee, at Warrenton Presbyterian Church. **Frank Rose** went to Lincoln, Nebraska on 10/16/80. **Jo Rose** wrote, ***"Susan is working and taking her pills daily."*** She also wrote that Susan sought a job with the phone company, and mentioned that the **Hughes** family (Jeffie), who lived in Mineral, VA, had visited on their way to Texas, and that Frank said to "***vote the rascals out on November 4, 1980. Mizpah, Mom****"* On 11/10/1980, **Jo** wrote that they were "***slowly redecorating the house****"* and that Frank was cleaning the kitchen storm windows. At that time they lived at 2312 Morgan Drive in Norman, OK. **Kathleen Warner** (later Rose) lived at 2046 W. Cuyler in Chicago. By that time, her school friend, Marci (later Borkowski) lived in Hamburg, Germany with her husband Mario. **Helen June (Van de Riet)** died on June 20, 1980. **BYA Dates and MYA Dates:** No data trapped. **KYA Dates:** About 800kya, ***Homo erectus*** groups lived in the region of **Ceprano**, Italy. By 80 kya, the first art was produced by humans. Art featuring the human body, however, did not appear until 25 kya. "***And so it goes.***" (K. Vonnegut). **BCE Dates:** In 80 BCE, a Roman ship carrying Sulla's booty from Syracuse wrecked off **Antikythera**. It contained a mechanism for calculating celestial motions. **CE Dates:** In 480, Benedict of Nursia was born. He became **St. Benedict of Monte Casino.** Montaigne's **Essais** were published in 1580. **Guy de Maupassant** published *Boule d Suif* in 1880. In 1980, the radical Muslim men from around the populations in Asia and Europe gathered to fight the USSR in Afghanistan in **Peshawar**, Pakistan. Evidence of single nucleotide polymorphisms (SNPs--about 3 million of them) was catalogued by the Human **Genome Project**. The funeral of Josip **Broz (**Tito) was held in Belgrade, centrifugal forces mounting. A Polish uprising was led by the **Solidarity** Party. On January 21, 1980, President Jimmy **Carter** made a speech about the Iranian revolution and the seizing of the American Embassy with hostages. **Mt. St. Helens** erupted on May 18, 1980, destroying everything within 250 square miles, including **Harry R. Truman** in

his home on the mountainside. He refused to leave. Yakima was covered with ash and a ***Lahar*** poured down the mountain. Like Ranier, St. Helens was a s**ubduction volcano**. In this period, in New Mexico, the 27 radio telescopes of the **Very Large Array** were spread out over 20 miles and connected through interferometry. The **Proposition 13** referendum passed in California, and as school music programs disappeared, **Flea,** the bassist from the Red Hot Chili Peppers band, founded the **Silver Lake Conservatory**.

### *What was this?*

A procession. Not a procedure or a processing. A procession--a walk together, interrupting ourselves on a divine pilgrimage.

"Make something of yourself," our parents said. But they did not mean to make ourselves things, closing off all options and growth. We are more than our procedures, our inanimate and automatic simulacra. They meant, "work on yourselves."

Studios are where and how we work on ourselves. What is made there? As processes--metabolic, evolutionary, social, and imaginative--drive us, what do we become? We are the creatures who make procedures. Be they Lydian scales, scaled drawings, diagrams, recipes, rehearsals, models or making a fire, a souflée, or paragraph; be they folding a parachute or an egg, filing a book or a grievance, placing a bet or coming to bat, or firing a battery; be they formulas, programs, obsessions, subroutines, lists, stories, villanelles, strategies, rules, mechanisms, techniques, or brushstrokes, *our procedures flow from us.* But it helps us to interrupt them, to question and inspect them, to listen to others' stories, engage in disputations and flytings--to walk in the procession.

Like the natural processes from which we arise, our procedures go forth from us and enact us, but they are not us. We are the makers who walk together. No sacrificial bull required. No common step or cadence needed. Polyrhythmic, polyphonic, polycultural, our procession is a walk with many aims--ritualized and free-form, religious and irreligious, symbolic and concrete--moving as a great massed assemblage, shifting from one manifestation to another. Progress is not required or desired. The walk turns, circles, spirals, ever shifting its frames of reference and attention. "*Be, become, give,"* the walkers sing. *"Walk with us. Link arms, link procedures, link all making. Or walk alone. But work on yourself. Walk the path."* And the path is whole, clean, ever-opening, exploratory, surprising, playful, and sacramental--a pilgrimage, dance, story, intention, myth of our being and doing and becoming, an outward representation of inner processes of growth, devotion, submission, and surrender. The studio is *poiesis* of all fictions, contrivances and inventions, the overflowing cauldron of conception and imagination, where with sustained attention to our spacious being and to all that is given, we--we who

are provisional thoughts, transitional forms, transitory energy-states, honey-sweet memories--we shape new gifts. Procedure is not power. Power is the dragon's shadow. It is piling great hoards of data, profits, and stuff and dying under them. To automate, control, and regulate our lives so as to exclude growth, compassion, curiosity, imagination, sustained attention and creative engagement is to enter the shadow of death. No, the walk of the shifting frames of mind is a procession, a chosen assemblage, a marshaled display of possibilities, roles, and ways of being. Like any worthy curriculum, it summons growth, study, and better attention. Better to let the dragon sail shining above us in the bright procession. Join the procession. Work on yourself. *Walk the path.*

**Last Wreath**

Lines and rings,
paths and circles.

Living only forward,
circular rewards
signify the hope
turning never stops
lines and rings,
paths and circles.

Rings of stone, reactions
driving leaf to grow,
cyclical engine,
steaming lava flows--
lines and rings,
paths and circles.

Living only forward,
forward in a line,
then past ending corded,
cyclically entwined
lines and rings,
paths and circles.

Mazes mazes circle,
circles in a line,
labyrinths of myrtles,
thoughts by thoughts defined
lines and rings,
paths and circles.

Lines and rings,
paths and circles.

# Drum Circle

***As even Tuvans, drumming themselves into consciousness, at last, not lacking sound or material, nevertheless cease drumming, so this drumming recitation ends. The circle becomes quiet. But in faint echoes hear Rabinadrath Tagore singing, "Tobu Mone Rekho." Forget me not.***

## Final comments

Transects are long cross-sections through experience, spanning miles or centuries. Each kind of transect has strengths and shortcomings. Multiple transects help to recreate the experiences, to help in the work of remembrance, and to serve as external neural tracts, firing and wiring as they go. Beginning in high school, I wrote little booklets for personal reference—journals, albums, studies, summaries, and drawings. This was the material I used for transecting life experiences. Difficult as it may be to believe, I was very selective. Poetry, music, and fiction also transect, re-collect, and integrate experiences. As Tom Farley in *Frameshifts* says, they are "*trap-lines for the dead."*

The numbering of entries is not entirely erratic. Incomplete and no doubt in error, the transects are offered for your edification, like the turns in a labyrinth, so that you may walk the path. Exactness is not the aim. I only placed the stones. Any measurement is an approximation; any effort is an approximation. Slowly walk through the entries. Notice the turns--sharp, gentle, surprising or predictable. Don't take in too much at one reading. It is a devotional guide, a labyrinth, not a racetrack. Consider both what is given and what is missing. Don't expect to find answers. They are only within you--within the special space you feel when you hold a breath or when you hold the emptiness after exhaling. That is the healing breath which makes whole. There is no mechanism of enlightenment--only a divine path to follow and your healing breaths along the way. Just as breath is given and unbidden, so our lives are given. In his sermons, the Richmond preacher, Alonzo Pruitt, says to ***"love as God loves, without compromise, complaint, or condition."*** In the same way, our paths are given and unbidden. *Work on yourself. Walk your path within the procession*.

| **Sorting Category** | | | | **Sorting Rule: *Show the*:** |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| **INDIVIDUAL DATES** | **00** | **to** | **99** | **last 2 digits** |
| **BYA Dates** | **15** | **to** | **1** | **first 2 digits** |
| **MYA Dates** | **999** | **to** | **1** | **first 2 digits** |
| **KYA Dates** | **999** | **to** | **12 (i.e. 10K BCE)** | **first 2 digits** |
| **BCE Dates** | **9999** | **to** | **1001** | **first 2 digits** |
| **BCE Dates** | **1000** | **to** | **1** | **last 2 digits** |

**CE Dates** **0** **to** **2035** **last 2 digits**

# A stack of references

The *Transects* is only a devotional guide, compiled over many years from varied sources which cannot all be acknowledged except for occasional citations in the text and the general list below, made as I worked down a stack of paper scraps, diaries, drawings, letters, music, cards and books gathered over half a century. The *Transects* were not assembled to satisfy academic or professional requirements or a readership awaiting the next installment but to see what could be used from the precious *débris* left from the whirlwind of experience. As the *Transects* serves as a personal reference and guides your meditation with its collage of apparent *non sequiturs,* so also may this unsorted stack of sources extend your divine walk.

- Family papers and letters, including personal journals (1960-2013). In this were also included interviews, worship services, concerts, classes, and conversations with the beloved dead. Most of these were later discarded.

- Some of the family letters, diaries, and the book, *Proud Wanderers,* of Virginia Sullivan Bruch. Her book, a genealogy of the Helms and allies, and selected papers are in a special collection in the Pogue Library of the Murray State University.

- Newspapers, particularly the *Washington Post (wp), National Observer (no), Richmond Times Dispatch (rtd), New York Times (nyt), Fauquier Democrat (fd* *same as Fauquier Times Democrat*), and the *Alexandria Gazette (ag),* and the 1949 *Fiftieth Anniversary Edition of the Crowley Daily Signal* from Crowley, LA.

- Journals and magazines, particularly *Science (sci), Science News (sn), World Press International (wpi), Time, Newsweek (nw), The Nation (tn), The New Yorker (ny), U.S. News and World Report (usnw), The Times Literary Supplement (tls), The Week (tw), The Smithsonian (smith), In these times (itt), National Geographic (nat.geog.).*

- A website, *Big History*, discovered when the *Transects* project was mostly finished, takes a similar approach, using powers of ten,

interesting graphics like John Sparks's *Histomap,* etc. The site is a curricular resource for teachers.

- An indexed list of some of the writings of Richard Rose, listed elsewhere, available from the author.

- And good talks with many books, some of them stacked below:

*The National Trust Historical Atlas of Britain* (Nigel Saul, Ed.), 1994.
*Trampling out the Vintage,* by Frank Bardacke, 2012.
*Before the Dawn,* by Nicholas Wade, 2006.
*The F Company Men of WWII* by Buddy Thaxton, 1997
*Saxons, Vikings, and Celts,* by Bryan Sykes, 2006.
*The Neolithic Revolution,* by Sonia Cole, 1970.
*The Provinces of France,* by Doré Ogrizek, 1951.
*Kings and Queens of England,* by Eric Delderfield, 1978
*The Pentagon,* by Gene Gurney, 1964
*Call of a Distant Drum,* by Charles S. Speed, 1987,
*Adams County Historical Society* (rootsweb ancestry.com)
*The Universe Within,* by Neil Shubin, 2013
*First Steps into the Human Dawn (Earth, March 1992),* by Noel T. Boaz
*The Geological Time Scales on Wikipedia (as of 6/21/2013) and in the chart created by Haq and Van Eysinga (4th edition, Elsevier)*
*History and other notes* by Susan Bruch, 1962-1967.
*Chronology of the 20th Century* by Philip Waller and John Rowett, 1995.
*Chicago: Metropolis of the Mid-continent* by Irving Cutler, 1982
*Starling of the White House* by Edmund W. Starling, 1946
*Asimov's Chronology of the World,* by Isaac Asimov, 1991
*The Shooting Party* by Anton Chekhov (Folio Society edition of 2006, with notes and chronology by John Sutherland.)

In the unlikely event that this work is read by a wide audience and another author sees the format as replicable to great personal profit, I offer two observations. First, this work earned me nothing. Second, why would you make a "*Transects II, Transects III, . . .* " series **instead of walking your own path?** For example, William Calvin did his own walk in *The River That Runs Uphill,* organized as a hike through the Grand Canyon and time and Asimov made his walk in a *History of the World* and a *Chronology of the World.* He dedicated his work to "***Human history: A dark and turbulent stream of folly, illuminated now and then by flashes of genius***."

Asimov also wrote that perhaps humans are distinguished from their animal cousins by being able to live in times other than the present. Desperate enthusiasm to live in the moment and seize the day may blind us to the wonderful creative engagement to be found by living in the past, the future, and in the imagination. In his nimble *Chronology,* the ever-engaged Asimov was more comprehensive than I have been and his method more orderly, amiable, and admirable. He ended his 649 pages at 1945, the year of what he called a global *discontinuity* with previous human existence on the planet, a year marking the warfare, liberations, technology and population explosions, and adverse environmental effects which may soon render the planet uninhabitable by humans. For the post-1945 period, he proposed another kind of book. I was born in 1945, so I have only known the discontinuity. Here is my book. But a larva's book on his anthill lacks Asimovian circumspection. This isn't the book he would have written, but for my fugitive and incomplete entries of notables and nonentities I lowered the Admission Price. I ask only that you take up your own walk in the Fellowship of the Attentive.

***THE END***